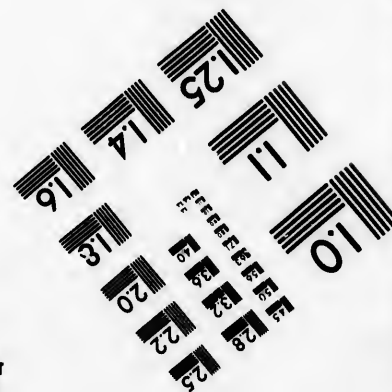
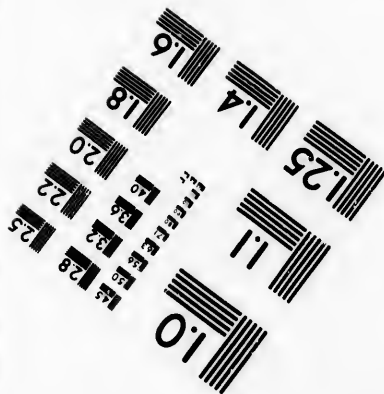
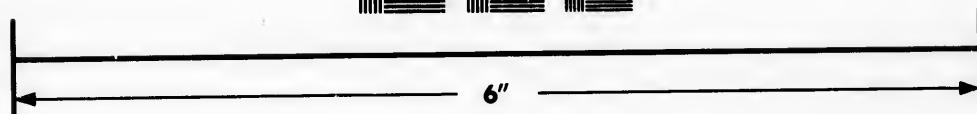
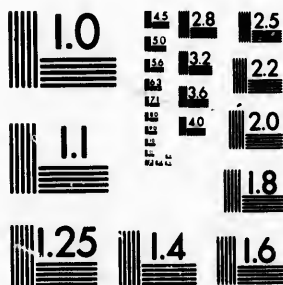


**IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

**CIHM/ICMH
Microfiche
Series.**

**CIHM/ICMH
Collection de
microfiches.**



Canadian Institute for Historical Microreproductions / Institut canadien de microreproductions historiques

© 1983

Technical and Bibliographic Notes/Notes techniques et bibliographiques

The Institute has attempted to obtain the best original copy available for filming. Features of this copy which may be bibliographically unique, which may alter any of the images in the reproduction, or which may significantly change the usual method of filming, are checked below.

L'Institut a microfilmé le meilleur exemplaire qu'il lui a été possible de se procurer. Les détails de cet exemplaire qui sont peut-être uniques du point de vue bibliographique, qui peuvent modifier une image reproduite, ou qui peuvent exiger une modification dans la méthode normale de filmage sont indiqués ci-dessous.

- | | |
|--|---|
| <input type="checkbox"/> Coloured covers/
Couverture de couleur | <input type="checkbox"/> Coloured pages/
Pages de couleur |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Covers damaged/
Couverture endommagée | <input type="checkbox"/> Pages damaged/
Pages endommagées |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Covers restored and/or laminated/
Couverture restaurée et/ou pelliculée | <input type="checkbox"/> Pages restored and/or laminated/
Pages restaurées et/ou pelliculées |
| <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Cover title missing/
Le titre de couverture manque | <input type="checkbox"/> Pages discoloured, stained or foxed/
Pages décolorées, tachetées ou piquées |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Coloured maps/
Cartes géographiques en couleur | <input type="checkbox"/> Pages detached/
Pages détachées |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Coloured ink (i.e. other than blue or black)/
Encre de couleur (i.e. autre que bleue ou noire) | <input type="checkbox"/> Showthrough/
Transparence |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Coloured plates and/or illustrations/
Planches et/ou illustrations en couleur | <input type="checkbox"/> Quality of print varies/
Qualité inégale de l'impression |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Bound with other material/
Relié avec d'autres documents | <input type="checkbox"/> Includes supplementary material/
Comprend du matériel supplémentaire |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Tight binding may cause shadows or distortion
along interior margin/
La reliure serrée peut causer de l'ombre ou de la
distortion le long de la marge intérieure | <input type="checkbox"/> Only edition available/
Seule édition disponible |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Blank leaves added during restoration may
appear within the text. Whenever possible, these
have been omitted from filming/
Il se peut que certaines pages blanches ajoutées
lors d'une restauration apparaissent dans le texte,
mais, lorsque cela était possible, ces pages n'ont
pas été filmées. | <input checked="" type="checkbox"/> Pages wholly or partially obscured by errata
slips, tissues, etc., have been refilmed to
ensure the best possible image/
Les pages totalement ou partiellement
obscurcies par un feuillet d'errata, une pelure,
etc., ont été filmées à nouveau de façon à
obtenir la meilleure image possible. |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Additional comments:/
Commentaires supplémentaires: | |

This item is filmed at the reduction ratio checked below/
Ce document est filmé au taux de réduction indiqué ci-dessous.

10X	12X	14X	16X	18X	20X	22X	24X	26X	28X	30X	32X
							X				

The copy filmed here has been reproduced thanks to the generosity of:

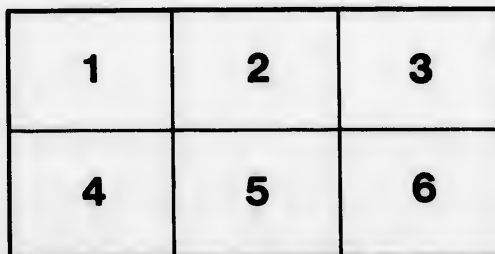
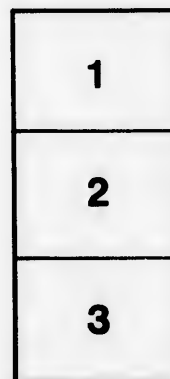
Library of Congress
Photoduplication Service

The images appearing here are the best quality possible considering the condition and legibility of the original copy and in keeping with the filming contract specifications.

Original copies in printed paper covers are filmed beginning with the front cover and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression, or the back cover when appropriate. All other original copies are filmed beginning on the first page with a printed or illustrated impression, and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression.

The last recorded frame on each microfiche shall contain the symbol → (meaning "CONTINUED"), or the symbol ∇ (meaning "END"), whichever applies.

Maps, plates, charts, etc., may be filmed at different reduction ratios. Those too large to be entirely included in one exposure are filmed beginning in the upper left hand corner, left to right and top to bottom, as many frames as required. The following diagrams illustrate the method:



L'exemplaire filmé fut reproduit grâce à la générosité de:

Library of Congress
Photoduplication Service

Les images suivantes ont été reproduites avec le plus grand soin, compte tenu de la condition et de la netteté de l'exemplaire filmé, et en conformité avec les conditions du contrat de filmage.

Les exemplaires originaux dont la couverture en papier est imprimée sont filmés en commençant par le premier plat et en terminant soit par la dernière page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration, soit par le second plat, selon le cas. Tous les autres exemplaires originaux sont filmés en commençant par la première page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration et en terminant par la dernière page qui comporte une telle empreinte.

Un des symboles suivants apparaîtra sur la dernière image de chaque microfiche, selon le cas: le symbole → signifie "A SUIVRE", le symbole ∇ signifie "FIN".

Les cartes, planches, tableaux, etc., peuvent être filmés à des taux de réduction différents. Lorsque le document est trop grand pour être reproduit en un seul cliché, il est filmé à partir de l'angle supérieur gauche, de gauche à droite, et de haut en bas, en prenant le nombre d'images nécessaire. Les diagrammes suivants illustrent la méthode.

laire
s détails
ques du
nt modifier
riger une
le filmage

d/
juées

aire

by errata
ned to

ent
une pelure,
façon à



32X

10. 11. 12. 13. 14. 15.



Ever faithfully yours
Bayard Taylor.

فردوس

م

○

...

4.

Deposited Nov. 21st 1859.

CYCLOPÆDIA OF MODERN TRAVEL:

A RECORD OF

ADVENTURE, EXPLORATION AND DISCOVERY,

FOR THE PAST SIXTY YEARS:

COMPRISING

NARRATIVES OF THE MOST DISTINGUISHED TRAVELERS SINCE THE
BEGINNING OF THIS CENTURY;

PREPARED AND ARRANGED BY

BAYARD TAYLOR.

ILLUSTRATED WITH NUMEROUS MAPS AND ENGRAVINGS.

REVISED AND ENLARGED EDITION.

COMPLETE IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOLUME II.



NEW YORK:

MOORE, WILSTACH, KEYS & CO.,
49 WALKER STREET.

CINCINNATI: 25 WEST FOURTH STREET.

1860.

4. 9 pl. 6 m.

G170
.T233

Entered, according to Act of Congress, in the year 1856, by
MOORE, WILSTACH, KEYS & CO.,
In the Clerk's office of the District Court of the United States for the Southern District of Ohio.

20299

Entered, according to Act of Congress, in the year 1859, by
MOORE, WILSTACH, KEYS & CO.,
In the Clerk's Office of the District Court of the United States for the Southern District of Ohio.

REPRODUCTION BY
THOMAS B. SMITH,

PREFACE TO THE REVISED EDITION.

THE appearance of three important narratives of exploration since the first appearance of this work, in 1856, have rendered a revision necessary in order that it may continue to be a full and exact chronicle of the progress of discovery since the beginning of this century. I have, therefore, carefully prepared, from the original works, an account of Barth's journey to Timbuctoo, of Dr. Livingston's Explorations in Southern and Central Africa, and of Atkinson's Travels in Siberia and Chinese Tartary, omitting no important particular, but endeavoring to give the spirit as well as the substance of each narrative in a condensed form. To the general reader, who wishes to obtain the *results of travel*, without devoting too much time to the personal experiences or emotions of the travelers, the abstract I have given will be found as complete as could be desired.

The work, thus enlarged, and completed up to the present time, is again presented to the public.

BAYARD TAYLOR.

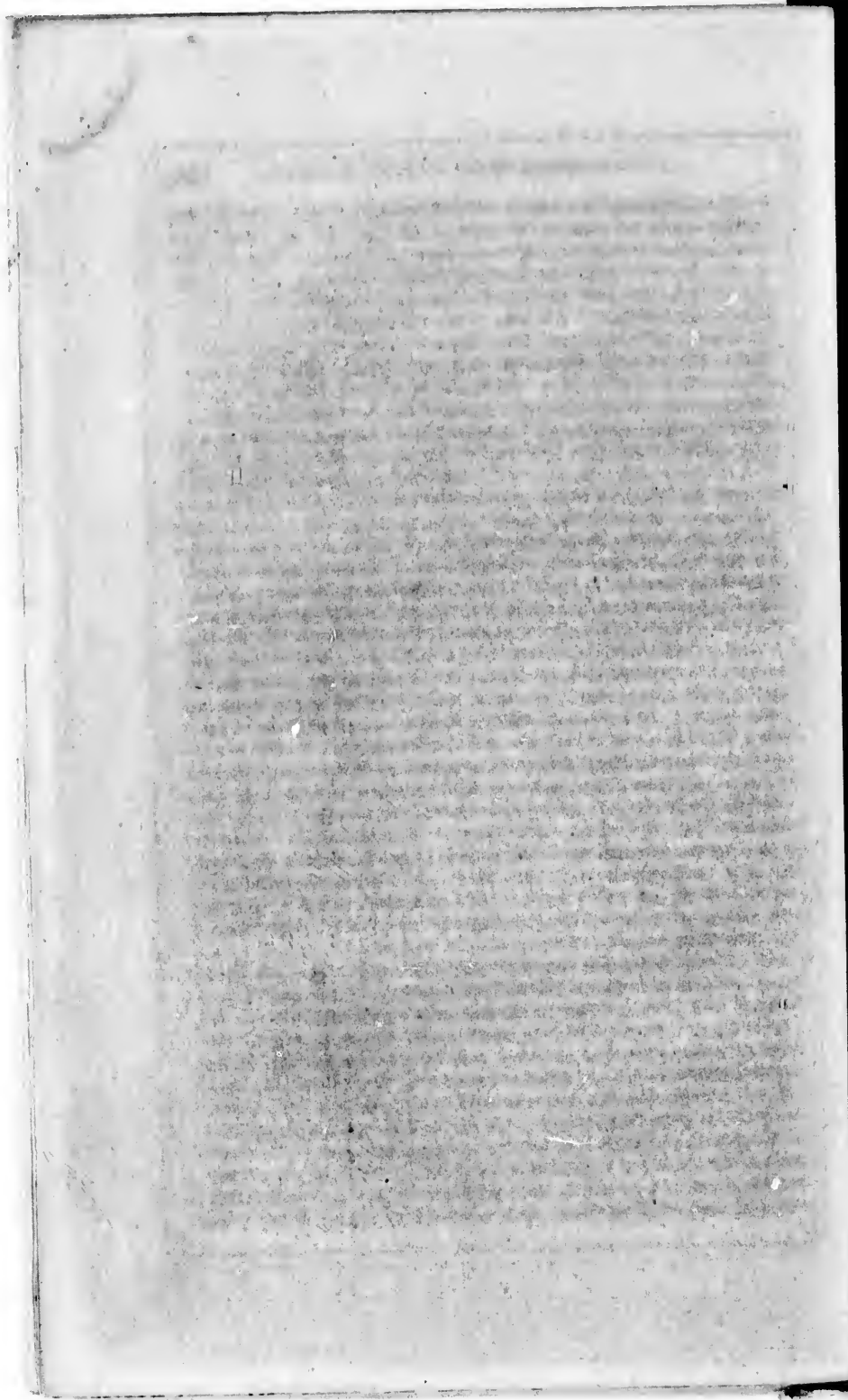
NEW YORK, August 5, 1859.

6, by

thern District of Ohio.

0, by

thern District of Ohio.



as
on
Ca
wh
fo
ma
ye
ha
me
an
Liv
rie
con
he
ob
suf
its

yes
lies
two
nor
by
on
was
of s
war
scor
soor

MOFFAT'S

LIFE IN SOUTHERN AFRICA.

THE Rev. Robert Moffat was sent to South Africa in the year 1817, as an agent of the London Missionary Society. He immediately entered on the duties of his office with zeal, courage, and alacrity, departing from Cape Town, soon after his arrival, into the country of the Bechuanas, where he remained many years, enduring the rude life of one of the lowest varieties of the human race, encountering many dangers and difficulties, but sustained through all by a truly Christian patience and humanity. He labored in this field until 1840—a period of twenty-three years—during which time he became familiar with the character and habits of nearly all the wild Bushmen tribes between the English settlements and the mountains of Bamangwato, far beyond the Orange River, and on the borders of the unknown country recently explored by Dr. Livingstone. In 1842 he published in London an account of his experience entitled: "Missionary Labors and Scenes in Southern Africa," containing much curious information concerning the native tribes. As he was not, strictly speaking, an explorer, and his work is a series of observations and reflections, rather than a connected narrative, it will be sufficient to extract those portions which best describe the country and its inhabitants.

Mr. Moffat gives the following account of the region where so many years of his life were spent: "Great Namaqua-land, as it is usually called, lies north of the Orange River, on the western coast of Africa, between the twenty-third and twenty-eighth degrees of south latitude; bounded on the north by the Damaras, and on the east by an extensive sandy desert, called by Mr. Campbell the Southern Zara, or Zahara. Meeting with an individual, on my journey thither, who had spent years in that country, I asked what was its character and appearance? 'Sir,' he replied, 'you will find plenty of sand and stones, a thinly scattered population, always suffering from want of water, on plains and hills roasted like a burned loaf, under the scorching rays of a cloudless sun.' Of the truth of this description I soon had ample demonstration. It is intersected by the Fish and 'Oup

Rivers, with their numberless tributary streams, if such their dry and often glowing beds may be termed. Sometimes, for years together, they are not known to run; when, after the stagnant pools are dried up, the natives congregate to their beds, and dig holes, or wells, in some instances to the depth of twenty feet, from which they draw water, generally of a very inferior quality. They place branches of trees in the excavation, and, with great labor, under a hot sun, hand up the water in a wooden vessel, and pour it into an artificial trough; to which the panting, lowing herds approach, partially to satiate their thirst. Thunder-storms are eagerly anticipated, for by these only rain falls; and frequently these storms will pass over with tremendous violence, striking the inhabitants with awe, while not a single drop of rain descends to cool and fructify the parched waste.

"When the heavens do let down their watery treasures, it is generally in a partial strip of country, which the electric cloud has traversed; so that the traveler will frequently pass, almost instantaneously, from ground on which there is not a blade of grass, into tracts of luxuriant green, sprung up after a passing storm. Fountains are indeed few and far between, the best very inconsiderable, frequently very salt, and some of them hot springs; while the soil contiguous is generally so impregnated with saltpeter, as to crackle under the feet, like hoar-frost, and it is with great difficulty that any kind of vegetable can be made to grow. Much of the country is hard and stony, interspersed with plains of deep sand. There is much granite; and quartz is so abundantly scattered, reflecting such a glare of light from the rays of the sun, that the traveler, if exposed at noonday, can scarcely allow his eyelids to be sufficiently open to enable him to keep the course he wishes to pursue.

"The inhabitants are a tribe or tribes of Hottentots, distinguished by all the singular characteristics of that nation, which includes Hottentots, Carannas, Namaquas, and Bushmen. Their peculiar clicking language is so similar, that it is with little difficulty they converse with the two former. In their native state the aborigines, though deeply sunk in ignorance, and disgusting in their manners and mien, were neither very warlike nor bloody in their dispositions. The enervating influence of climate, and scanty sustenance, seem to have deprived them of that bold martial spirit which distinguishes the tribes who live in other parts of the interior, which, in comparison with Namaqua-land, may be said to 'flow with milk and honey.' With the exception of the solitary traveler, whose objects were entirely of a scientific character, those who ventured into the interior carried on a system of cupidity, and perpetrated deeds calculated to make the worst impression upon the minds of the natives, and influence them to view white men, and others descended from them, as an 'angry' race of human beings, only fit to be classed with the lions which roar for their prey in their native wilds. Intercourse with such visitors in the southern districts, and disgraceful acts of deceit and oppression, committed by sailors from ships which visited Angra Piquena,

uch their dry and
or years together,
pools are dried up,
r wells, in some in-
draw water, gener-
of trees in the ex-
d up the water in
ugh; to which the
their thirst. Thun-
rain falls; and fre-
is violence, striking
of rain descends to

asures, it is gener-
cloud has traversed;
stantaneously, from
tracts of luxuriant
are indeed few and
very salt, and some
generally so impreg-
ke hoar-frost, and it
can be made to grow.
l with plains of deep
bundantly scattered,
un, that the traveler,
ids to be sufficiently
pursue.

ots, distinguished by
includes Hottentots,
clicking language is
with the two former.
y sunk in ignorance,
her very warlike nor
ence of climate, and
of that bold martial
her parts of the inte-
may be said to 'flow
the solitary traveler,
, those who ventured
nd perpetrated deeds
minds of the natives,
descended from them,
classed with the lions
intercourse with such
acts of deceit and op-
sited Angra Piquena,

and other places on the western coast, had, as may easily be conceived, the most baneful influence on the native tribes, and nurtured in their heathen minds (naturally suspicious) a savage disgust for all intercourse with white men, alas! professedly Christian. It was to such a people, and to such a country, that the missionaries directed their course, to lead a life of the greatest self-denial and privation."

Among these people a chief named Africaner was the terror of the colony. His tribe had removed further and further from the home of their fathers, as the Dutch settlers encroached on their territory, until at length they became subject to one of the farmers. Here Africaner lived several years with his diminished tribe, serving his master faithfully until the cruelties to which his people were subjected at length awakened his resentment and aroused him to vengeance. His master was slain, and he led the remnant of his party to the Orange River, beyond the reach of their pursuers. In their attempts to get rid of him the colonists bribed other chiefs, and a long series of bloody conflicts ensued between the family of Africaner, and the chief Berend and his associates, in which neither conquered. Africaner frequently visited the boundaries of the colony and harassed the settlers. Some, whom he knew to be engaged in a plot against him, fell victims to his fury, and their cattle and other property were carried off. He thus became a scourge to the colonists on the south, and the tribes on the north; mutual provocations and retaliations became common. He paid back the aggressions with large interest, and his name carried dismay even to the remote deserts.

The Rev. J. Campbell, in his first visit to Africa, crossed the interior to Namaqua-land. During his journey he found every village in terror of Africaner's name. On reaching Pella he wrote a conciliatory letter to the chief, and continued his journey. Africaner sent a favorable reply, and soon afterward Mr. Ebner was sent out from Pella. It required no little circumspection and decision to gain an influence over a people whose hand had been against every one, but Mr. Ebner's labors were blessed, and in a short time Africaner, his two brothers, and a number of others, were baptized.

In 1817, Mr. Ebner visited Cape Town for supplies, where he met with Mr. Moffat, who hailed him with delight as his companion and guide in his future labors, upon which he was now entering. After traveling awhile together, Mr. Moffat proceeded to Bysondermeid, in Little Namaqua-land. "As I approached the boundaries of the colony," he writes, "it was evident to me that the farmers, who, of course, had not one good word to say of Africaner, were skeptical to the last degree about his reported conversion, and most unceremoniously predicted my destruction. One said he would set me up for a mark for his boys to shoot at; and another, that he would strip off my skin, and make a drum of it to dance to; another most consoling prediction was, that he would make a drinking-cup of my skull. I believe they were serious,

and especially a kind motherly lady, who, wiping the tear from her eye, bade me farewell, saying, 'Had you been an old man, it would have been nothing, for you would soon have died, whether or no; but you are young, and going to become a prey to that monster.'

After spending a month at Bysondermeid he proceeded, by way of Pella, to Africaner's kraal, (village), where he arrived on the 26th of January, 1818, and was kindly received by Mr. Ebner. The natives, however, seemed reserved, and it was some time before Africaner, the chief, came to welcome him.

It appeared, as Mr. Moffat afterward learned, that some unpleasant feeling existed between the missionary and the people. "After remaining an hour or more in this situation," he continues, "Christian Africaner made his appearance; and after the usual salutation, inquired if I was the missionary appointed by the directors in London; to which I replied in the affirmative. This seemed to afford him much pleasure; and he added, that as I was young, he hoped that I should live long with him and his people. He then ordered a number of women to come; I was rather puzzled to know what he intended by sending for women, till they arrived, bearing bundles of native mats and long sticks, like fishing-rods. Africaner pointing to a spot of ground, said, 'There, you must build a house for the missionary.' A circle was instantly formed, and the women evidently delighted with the job, fixed the poles, tied them down in the hemispheric form, and covered them with the mats, all ready for habitation, in the course of little more than half an hour. Since that time I have seen houses built of all descriptions, and assisted in the construction of a good many myself; but I confess I never witnessed such expedition. Hottentot houses (for such they may be called, being confined to the different tribes of that nation), are at best not very comfortable. I lived nearly six months in this native hut, which very frequently required tightening and fastening after a storm. When the sun shone, it was unbearably hot; when the rain fell, I came in for a share of it; when the wind blew, I had frequently to decamp to escape the dust; and in addition to these little inconveniences, any hungry cur of a dog that wished a night's lodging, would force itself through the frail wall, and not unfrequently deprive me of my anticipated meal for the coming day; and I have more than once found a serpent coiled up in a corner. Nor were these all the contingencies of such a dwelling, for as the cattle belonging to the village had no fold, but strolled about, I have been compelled to start up from a sound sleep, and try to defend myself and my dwelling from being crushed to pieces by the rage of two bulls which had met to fight a nocturnal duel."

Mr. Moffat soon afterward entered upon his labors and was cheered by the interest which Africaner manifested in his instruction. He became a constant reader of the Scriptures, and loved to converse on religious subjects, and at the same time greatly assisted in the labors of the mission. "During the whole period I lived there," continues Mr.

tear from her eye, man, it would have her or no; but you later."

ceeded, by way of on the 26th of Jan- The natives, how- Africaner, the chief,

at some unpleasant ple. "After remain- ues, " Christian Affri- tation, inquired if I London; to which I him much pleasure; should live long with of women to come; I sending for women, and long sticks, like nd, said, "There, you was instantly formed, fixed the poles, tied them with the mats, ore than half an hour. criptions, and assisted I confess I never with h they may be called, n), are at best not very native hut, which very r a storm. When the fell, I came in for a y to decamp to escape ences, any hungry cur ce itself through the y anticipated meal for nd a serpent coiled up es of such a dwelling, old, but strolled about, eep, and try to defend pieces by the rage of "

abors and was cheered s instruction. He be- loved to converse on sisted in the labors of there," continues Mr.

Moffat, "I do not remember having occasion to be grieved with him, or to complain of any part of his conduct; his very faults seemed to 'lean to virtue's side.' One day, when seated together, I happened, in absence of mind, to be gazing steadfastly on him. It arrested his attention, and he modestly inquired the cause. I replied, 'I was trying to picture to myself your carrying fire and sword through the country, and I could not think how eyes like yours could smile at human woe.' He answered not, but shed a flood of tears! He zealously seconded my efforts to improve the people in cleanliness and industry; and it would have made any one smile to have seen Christian Africaner and myself superintending the school children, now about a hundred and twenty, washing themselves at the fountain. He was a man of peace; and though I could not expound to him that the 'sword of the magistrate' implied, that he was calmly to sit at home, and see Bushmen or marauders carry off his cattle, and slay his servants; yet so fully did he understand and appreciate the principles of the Gospel of peace, that nothing could grieve him more than to hear of individuals, or villages, contending with one another."

As the spot on which they lived was not suitable for a permanent missionary station, it was determined to take a journey northward and examine the country bordering on Damara-land, where it was reported that water abounded. On the route they occasionally met with Namaqua villages, whose inhabitants were exceedingly ignorant, though not so stupid as some travelers have represented these people to be. In this connection Mr. Moffat, speaking of the liability of travelers to be led astray, refers to a traveler who, having asked his guide the name of a place, was proceeding to write down the answer "*Ua reng*," when told by Mr. Moffat that the guide merely asked what he said. In another instance "mountains" was the reply, instead of the name of the mountain. "And in reference to points of faith or extent of knowledge," continues he, "the traveler may be completely duped, as I was in the present journey. At an isolated village, far in the wilds of Namaqualand, I met an individual, who appeared somewhat more intelligent than the rest; to him I put a number of questions, to ascertain if there were any tradition in the country respecting the deluge, of which vestiges are to be found in almost every part of the known world. I had made many inquiries before, but all to no purpose. Discovering that he possessed some knowledge on the subject, and being an utter stranger to any of the party, and to all appearance a child of the desert, I very promptly took up my pen and wrote, thinking myself a lucky discoverer. I was perfectly astonished at some of his first sentences, and, afraid lest I should lose one word, I appointed *two* interpreters: but by the time I reached the end of the story, I began to suspect. It bore the impress of the Bible. On questioning him as to the source of his information, he positively asserted that he had received it from his forefathers, and that he never saw or heard of a missionary. I secretly instituted in-

quiries into his history, but could elicit nothing. I folded up my paper, and put it into my desk, very much puzzled, and resolving to leave the statement to wiser hands than mine. On our return, this man accompanied us some days southward, toward the Karas mountains, when we halted at a village; and meeting a person who had been at Bethany, Mr. Schmelten's station, lying north-west of us, I begged him to guide us thither, as I was anxious to visit the place. He could not, being worn out with the journey; but pointing to the deluge narrator, he said, 'There is a man that knows the road to Bethany, for I have seen him there.' The mystery of the tradition was in a moment unraveled, and the man decamped, on my seeing that the *forefather* who told him the story, was our missionary Schmelten. Stories of a similar kind originally obtained at a missionary station, or from some godly traveler, get, in course of time, so mixed up and metamorphosed by heathen ideas, that they look exceedingly like native traditions."

Finding the natives unfriendly, they returned unsuccessful. Once, when they had been a day and a night without water, they drew near some bushes which seemed to skirt on a ravine, and hasted forward with joy. "On reaching the spot," says Mr. Moffat, "we beheld an object of heart-rending distress. It was a venerable-looking old woman, a living skeleton, sitting, with her head leaning on her knees. She appeared terrified at our presence, and especially at me. She tried to rise, but, trembling with weakness, sank again to the earth. I addressed her by the name which sounds sweet in every clime, and charms even the savage ear, 'My mother, fear not; we are friends, and will do you no harm.' I put several questions to her, but she appeared either speechless, or afraid to open her lips. I again repeated, 'Pray, mother, who are you, and how do you come to be in this situation?' to which she replied, 'I am a woman; I have been here four days; my children have left me here to die.' 'Your children!' I interrupted. 'Yes,' raising her hand to her shriveled bosom, 'my own children, three sons and two daughters. They are gone,' pointing with her finger, 'to yonder blue mountain, and have left me to die.' 'And, pray why did they leave you?' I inquired. Spreading out her hands, 'I am old, you see, and I am no longer able to serve them; when they kill game, I am too feeble to help in carrying home the flesh; I am not able to gather wood to make fire; and I can not carry their children on my back, as I used to do.' This last sentence was more than I could bear; and though my tongue was cleaving to the roof of my mouth for want of water, this reply opened a fountain of tears. I remarked that I was surprised that she had escaped the lions, which seemed to abound, and to have approached very near the spot where she was. She took hold of the skin of her left arm with her fingers, and, raising it up as one would do a loose linen, she added, 'I hear the lions; but there is nothing on me that they would eat; I have no flesh on me for them to scent.' At this moment the wagon drew near, which greatly alarmed her, for she supposed that it was an

folded up my paper, resolving to leave the morn, this man accompanied me to the mountains, when we had been at Bethany, begged him to guide me. He could not, being a young man, he said, for I have seen him in a moment unraveled, and a man who told him the same kind originally a goodly traveler, get, in a moment his heathen ideas, that

was unsuccessful. Once, after dinner, they drew near the wagon, and I hastened forward with me, when we beheld an object which I thought an old woman, a livid countenance. She appeared to me as if she tried to rise, but, I addressed her by her name, saying, 'I have charms even the savages will do you no harm.' She was either speechless, or she said, 'I am your mother, who are you, which she replied, 'I have children have left me behind, raising her hands to the sky, and two daughters and two daughters to yonder blue mountains, and they leave you?' I said, 'You see, and I am no more than too feeble to help you to make fire; as I used to do.' This, though my tongue was silent, this reply opened a door that she had escaped, and she approached very near to me, and she put her left arm with her hand on my shoulder, she added, 'I thought they would eat; I am at this moment the wagon supposed that it was an

animal. Assuring her that it would do her no harm, I said that, as I could not stay, I would put her in the wagon, and take her with me. At this remark she became convulsed with terror. Others addressed her, but all to no effect. She replied, that if we took her, and left her at another village, they would only do the same thing again. 'It is our custom; I am nearly dead; I do not want to die again.' The sun was now piercingly hot; the oxen were raging in the yoke, and we ourselves nearly delirious. Finding it impossible to influence the woman to move, without running the risk of her dying convulsed in our hands, we collected a quantity of fuel, gave her a good supply of dry meat, some tobacco, and a knife, with some other articles; telling her we should return in two days, and stop the night, when she would be able to go with us; only she must keep up a good fire at night, as the lions would smell the dried flesh, if they did not scent her. We then pursued our course; and after a long ride, passing a rocky ridge of hills, we came to a stagnant pool, into which men and oxen rushed precipitately, though the water was almost too muddy to go down our throats."

After this journey, which lasted a few weeks, Mr. Moffat lived an itinerating missionary life for several months, and then undertook a journey, at the request of Africaner, to the Griqua country, east of the desert, to inspect a situation offered to him and his people. The journey was long and difficult, but the result was satisfactory to Africaner. Meanwhile the want of intercourse with the colony made it necessary for Mr. Moffat to visit Cape Town, and he proposed that Africaner should accompany him. The chief was startled at this proposition, and asked if he did not know that a thousand rix dollars were offered for his head. Others also made objections, but finally all difficulties were removed, and they set forward. They spent a few days at Pella, while the subject of getting Africaner safely through the territories of the colonists to the Cape, was discussed. Many thought the step hazardous, but it was arranged that, although he was a chief, he should pass for one of Mr. Moffat's servants. As they proceeded, the people often expressed wonder that Mr. Moffat had escaped from such a monster of cruelty, and it sometimes afforded no little entertainment to Africaner and the Namaquas, to hear a farmer denounce this supposed irreclaimable savage. A novel scene which occurred at one farm is thus described:

"On approaching the house, which was on an eminence, I directed my men to take the wagon to the valley below, while I walked toward the house. The farmer, seeing a stranger, came slowly down the descent to meet me. When within a few yards, I addressed him in the usual way, and stretching out my hand, expressed my pleasure at seeing him again. He put his hand behind him, and asked me, rather wildly, who I was. I replied that I was Moffat, expressing my wonder that he should have forgotten me. 'Moffat!' he rejoined, in a faltering voice; 'it is your ghost!' and moved some steps backward. 'I am no ghost.' 'Don't come near me!' he exclaimed, 'you have been long murdered

by Africaner.' 'But *I am* no ghost,' I said, feeling my hands, as if to convince him and myself, too, of my materiality; but his alarm only increased. 'Every body says you were murdered; and a man told me he had seen your bones;' and he continued to gaze at me, to the no small astonishment of the good wife and children, who were standing at the door, as also to that of my people, who were looking on from the wagon below. At length he extended his trembling hand, saying, 'When did you rise from the dead?' As he feared my presence would alarm his wife, we bent our steps toward the wagon, and Africaner was the subject of our conversation. I gave him in a few words my views of his present character, saying, 'He is now a truly good man.' To which he replied, 'I can believe almost any thing you say, but *that* I can not credit.' By this time we were standing with Africaner at our feet, on whose countenance sat a smile, well knowing the prejudices of some of the farmers. The farmer closed the conversation by saying, with much earnestness, 'Well, if what you assert be true respecting that man, I have only one wish, and that is, to see him before I die; and when you return, as sure as the sun is over our heads, I will go with you to see him, though he killed my own uncle.' I was not before aware of this fact, and now felt some hesitation whether to discover to him the object of his wonder; but knowing the sincerity of the farmer, and the goodness of his disposition, I said, 'This, then, is Africaner!' He started back, looking intensely at the man, as if he had just dropped from the clouds. 'Are you Africaner?' he exclaimed. He arose, doffed his old hat, and making a polite bow, answered, 'I am.' The farmer seemed thunder-struck; but when, by a few questions, he had assured himself of the fact, that the former bugbear of the border stood before him, now meek and lamb-like in his whole deportment, he lifted up his eyes, and exclaimed, 'O God, what a miracle of thy power! what can not thy grace accomplish!' The kind farmer, and his no less hospitable wife, now abundantly supplied our wants; but we hastened our departure, lest the intelligence might get abroad that Africaner was with me, and bring unpleasant visitors.

"On arriving at Cape Town, I waited on his excellency the governor, Lord Charles Somerset, who appeared to receive with considerable skepticism my testimony that I had brought the far-famed Africaner on a visit to his excellency. The following day was appointed for an interview, when the chief was received by Lord Charles with great affability and kindness; and he expressed his pleasure at seeing thus before him one who had formerly been the scourge of the country, and the terror of the border colonists. His excellency was evidently much struck with this result of missionary enterprise, the benefit of which he had sometimes doubted. Whatever he might think of his former views, his excellency was now convinced that a most important point had been gained; and, as a testimony of his good feeling, he presented Africaner with an excellent wagon, valued at eighty pounds sterling.

my hands, as if to
 at his alarm only in-
 and a man told me
 ze at me, to the no
 who were standing at
 looking on from the
 bling hand, saying,
 and my presence would
 n, and Africaner was
 few words my views
 uly good man.' To
 ou say, but *that* I can
 Africaner at our feet,
 e prejudices of some
 ation by saying, with
 true respecting that
 n before I die; and
 heads, I will go with
 Y was not before aware
 r to discover to him
 ty of the farmer, and
 n, is Africaner!' He
 he had just dropped
 ed. He arose, doffed
 'I am.' The farmer
 tions, he had assured
 border stood before
 ment, he lifted up his
 thy power! what can
 his no less hospitable
 hastened our depart-
 africaner was with me,

excellency the gover-
 nment with considerable
 far-famed Africaner on
 appointed for an inter-
 est with great affability
 being thus before him
 in the country, and the terror
 of the people much struck with
 which he had some-
 former views, his ex-
 tant point had been
 presented Africaner
 sterling.

"Africaner's appearance in Cape Town excited considerable attention, as his name and exploits had been familiar to many of its inhabitants for more than twenty years. Many were struck with the unexpected mildness and gentleness of his demeanor, and others with his piety and accurate knowledge of the Scriptures. His New Testament was an interesting object of attention, it was so completely thumbed and worn by use. His answers to a number of questions put to him by the friends in Cape Town, and at a public meeting at the Paarl, exhibited his diligence as a student in the doctrines of the Gospel, especially when it is remembered that Africaner never saw a catechism in his life, but obtained all his knowledge on theological subjects from a careful perusal of the Scriptures, and the verbal instructions of the missionary."

After spending some time at Griqua Town, Mr. Moffat joined the mission at the Kuruman in May, 1821. Here he had to labor with a people ignorant in the extreme, and utterly destitute of a system of religion to which he could appeal, or of ideas kindred to those he wished to impart. To tell them of a Creator or of the immortality of the soul, was to speak of what was fabulous and extravagant. "A wily rain-maker," continues Mr. Moffat, "who was the oracle of the village in which he dwelt, once remarked, after hearing me enlarge on the subject of creation, 'If you verily believe that that Being created all men, then, according to reason, you must also believe that in making white people he has improved on his work; he tried his hand on Bushmen first, and he did not like them, because they were so ugly, and their language like that of the frogs. He then tried his hand on the Hottentots, but these did not please him either. He then exercised his power and skill, and made the Bechuanas, which was a great improvement; and at last he made the white people; therefore,' exulting with an air of triumph at the discovery, 'the white people are so much wiser than we are in making walking-houses (wagons), teaching the oxen to draw them over hill and dale, and instructing them also to plow the gardens instead of making their wives do it, like the Bechuanas.' His discovery received the applause of the people, while the poor missionary's arguments, drawn from the source of Divine truth, were thrown into the shade.

"With all their concessions, they would, with little ceremony, pronounce our customs clumsy, awkward, and troublesome. They could not account for our putting our legs, feet, and arms into bags, and using buttons for the purpose of fastening bandages round our bodies, instead of suspending them as ornaments from the neck or hair of the head. Washing the body, instead of lubricating it with grease and red ocher, was a disgusting custom, and cleanliness about our food, house and bedding, contributed to their amusement in no small degree. A native, who was engaged roasting a piece of fat zebra flesh for me on the coals, was told that he had better turn it with a stick, or fork, instead of his hands, which he invariably rubbed on his dirty body for the sake of the

precious fat. This suggestion made him and his companions laugh extravagantly, and they were wont to repeat it as an interesting joke wherever they came.

"Among the Bechuana tribes, the name adopted by the missionaries for God, is *Morimo*. This has the advantage of the names used by the Kafirs and Hottentots, being more definite, as its derivation at once determines its meaning. *Mo* is a personal prefix and *rimo* is from *gorimo* 'above.' From the same root *legorimo*, 'heaven,' and its plural *magorimo*, are derived. The genius of the Bechuana language warrants us to expect a correspondence between the name and the thing designated; but in this instance the order is reversed. *Morimo*, to those who know any thing about it, had been represented by rain-makers and sorcerers as a malevolent *selo*, or thing, which the nations in the north described as existing in a hole, and which, like the fairies in the Highlands of Scotland, sometimes came out and inflicted diseases on men and cattle, and even caused death. This *Morimo* served the purpose of a bug-bear, by which the rain-maker might constrain the chiefs to yield to his suggestions, when he wished for a slaughter-ox, without which he pretended he could not make rain."

The mission among the Bechuanas had now been established five years, but the natives had become indifferent to all instruction, except when it was followed by some temporal benefit. The time of the missionaries was much occupied in building and in attending to the wants of daily life. The light, sandy soil required constant irrigation for the production of any kind of crops, and a water-ditch some miles in length had been led from the Kuruman River, and passed in its course through the gardens of the natives. The native women, seeing the fertilizing effects of the water in the gardens of the mission, took the liberty of cutting open the ditch, often leaving the mission without a drop of water, even for culinary purposes. The missionaries were often obliged to go three miles with a spade in the hottest part of the day to close up these outlets, and obtain moisture for their burnt-up vegetables. As soon as they had left, the women would open the outlets again, and thus they were sometimes many days without water, except what was carried from a distant fountain, under a cloudless sky, when the thermometer at noon would frequently rise to one hundred and twenty degrees in the shade. When they complained, the women became exasperated, and going up with their picks to the dam, completely destroyed it. Moreover, when they had with great pains succeeded in raising their crops, the natives would steal them by night and by day.

"Our attendance at public worship," says Mr. Moffat, "would vary from one to forty; and these very often manifesting the greatest indecorum. Some would be snoring; others laughing; some working; and others, who might even be styled the *noblesse*, would be employed in removing from their ornaments certain nameless insects, letting them run about the forms, while sitting by the missionary's wife. Never

companions laugh ex-
an interesting joke

by the missionaries
e names used by the
erivation at once de-
rimo is from *gorimo*
nd its plural *magori-*
guage warrants us to
e thing designated ;
, to those who know
makers and sorcerers
t the north described
in the Highlands of
es on men and cattle,
e purpose of a bug-
chiefs to yield to his
without which he pre-

been established five
all instruction, except

The time of the mis-
attending to the wants
tant irrigation for the
a some miles in length
d in its course through
seeing the fertilizing
n, took the liberty of
on without a drop of
ies were often obliged
of the day to close up
nt-up vegetables. As
the outlets again, and
ater, except what was
ss sky, when the ther-
ndred and twenty de-
e women became exas-
e, completely destroyed
succeeded in raising
t and by day.

. Moffat, "would vary
ng the greatest indeco-
; some working; and
would be employed in
ss insects, letting them
sionary's wife. Never

having been accustomed to chairs or stools, some, by way of imitation, would sit with their feet on the benches, having their knees, according to their usual mode of sitting, drawn up to their chins. In this position one would fall asleep and tumble over, to the great merriment of his fellows. On some occasions an opportunity would be watched to rob, when the missionary was engaged in public service. The thief would just put his head within the door, discover who was in the pulpit, and, knowing he could not leave his rostrum before a certain time had elapsed, would go to his house and take what he could lay his hands upon. When Mr. Hamilton and I met in the evening, we almost always had some tale to tell about our losses, but never about our gains, except those of resignation and peace, the results of patience, and faith in the unchangeable purposes of Jehovah. 'I will be exalted among the heathen,' cheered our often baffled and drooping spirits.

"The following is a brief sketch of the ceremony of interment, and the custom which prevails among these tribes in reference to the dying. When they see any indications of approaching dissolution in fainting fits or convulsive throes, they throw a net over the body, and hold it in a sitting posture, with the knees brought in contact with the chin, till life is gone. The grave, which is frequently made in the fence surrounding the cattle-fold, or in the fold itself, if for a man, is about three feet in diameter, and six feet deep. The body is not conveyed through the door of the fore-yard or court connected with each house, but an opening is made in the fence for that purpose. It is carried to the grave, having the head covered with a skin, and is placed in a sitting posture. Much time is spent in order to fix the corpse exactly facing the north; and though they have no compass, they manage, after some consultation, to place it very nearly in the required position. Portions of an ant-hill are placed about the feet, when the net which held the body is gradually withdrawn; as the grave is filled up, the earth is handed in with bowls, while two men stand in the hole to tread it down round the body, great care being taken to pick out every thing like a root or pebble. When the earth reaches the height of the mouth, a small twig or branch of an acacia is thrown in, and on the top of the head a few roots of grass are placed; and when the grave is nearly filled, another root of grass is fixed immediately above the head, part of which stands above ground. When finished, the men and women stoop, and with their hands scrape the loose soil around on to the little mound. A large bowl of water, with an infusion of bulbs, is then brought, when the men and women wash their hands and the upper part of their feet, shouting '*pùla, pùla,*' rain, rain. An old woman, probably a relation, will then bring his weapons, bows, arrows, war-ax, and spears, also grain and garden-seeds of various kinds, and even the bone of an old pack-ox, with other things, and address the grave, saying, 'there are all your articles.' These are then taken away, and bowls of water are poured on the grave, when all retire, the women wailing, '*yo, yo, yo,*' with some doleful dirge,

sorrowing without hope. These ceremonies vary in different localities, and according to the rank of the individual who is committed to the dust.

"Years of drought had been severely felt, and the natives, tenacious of their faith in the potency of a man, held a council, and passed resolutions to send for a rain-maker of renown from the Bahurutsi tribe, two hundred miles north-east of the Kuruman station. Rain-makers have always most honor among a strange people, and therefore they are generally foreigners. The heavens had been as brass, scarcely a cloud had been seen for months, even on the distant horizon. Suddenly a shout was raised, and the whole town was in motion. The rain-maker was approaching. Every voice was raised to the highest pitch with acclamations of enthusiastic joy. He had sent a harbinger to announce his approach, with peremptory orders for all the inhabitants to wash their feet. Every one seemed to fly in swiftest obedience to the adjoining river. Noble and ignoble, even the girl who attended to our kitchen-fire, ran. Old and young ran. All the world could not have stopped them. By this time the clouds began to gather, and a crowd went out to welcome the mighty man who, as they imagined, was now collecting in the heavens his stores of rain.

"Just as he was descending the height into the town, the immense concourse danced and shouted, so that the very earth rang, and at the same time the lightnings darted, and the thunders roared in awful grandeur. A few heavy drops fell, which produced the most thrilling ecstasy on the deluded multitude, whose shoutings baffled all description. Faith hung upon the lips of the impostor, while he proclaimed aloud that this year the women must cultivate gardens on the hills, and not in the valleys, for these would be deluged. After the din had somewhat subsided, a few individuals came to our dwellings to treat us and our doctrines with derision. 'Where is your God?' one asked with a sneer. We were silent, because the wicked were before us. 'Have you not seen our Morimo? Have you not beheld him cast from his arm his fiery spears, and rend the heavens? Have you not heard with your ears his voice in the clouds?' adding with an interjection of supreme disgust, 'You talk of Jehovah, and Jesus, what can they do?' Never in my life do I remember a text being brought home with such power as the words of the Psalmist, 'Be still, and know that I am God: I will be exalted among the heathen.'

"The rain-maker found the clouds in our country rather harder to manage than those he had left. He complained that secret rogues were disobeying his proclamations. When urged to make repeated trials, he would reply, 'You only give me sheep and goats to kill, therefore I can only make goat-rain; give me fat slaughter oxen, and I shall let you see ox-rain.' One day, as he was taking a sound sleep, a shower fell, on which one of the principal men entered his house to congratulate him, but to his utter amazement found him totally insensible to what was

y in different local-
who is committed to

he natives, tenacious
l, and passed resolu-
Bahurutsi tribe, two

Rain-makers have
erefore they are gen-
scarcely a cloud had

n. Suddenly a shout

The rain-maker was
at pitch with acclama-
er to announce his ap-
nts to wash their feet.
o the adjoining river.
our kitchen-fire, ran.
e stopped them. By
went out to welcome
collecting in the hea-

he town, the immense
earth rang, and at the
nders roared in awful
aced the most thrilling
ngs baffled all descrip-
r, while he proclaimed
rdens on the hills, and
fter the din had some-
ellings to treat us and
od?" one asked with a
fore us. "Have you not
from his arm his fiery
eard with your ears his
n of supreme disgust,
ey do?" Never in my
with such power as the
t I am God: I will be

untry rather harder to
hat secret rogues were
ake repeated trials, he
to kill, therefore I can
and I shall let you see
eep, a shower fell, on
e to congratulate him,
nsensible to what was

transpiring. 'Héla ka rare (Halloo, by my father), I thought you were making rain,' said the intruder, when, arising from his slumbers, and seeing his wife sitting on the floor shaking a milk-sack, in order to obtain a little butter to anoint her hair, he replied, pointing to the operation of churning, 'Do you not see my wife churning rain as fast as she can?' This reply gave entire satisfaction, and it presently spread through the length and breadth of the town, that the rain-maker had churned the shower out of a milk-sack. The moisture caused by this shower was dried up by a scorching sun, and many long weeks followed without a single cloud, and when these did appear they might sometimes be seen, to the great mortification of the conjurer, to discharge their watery treasures at an immense distance.

"The rain-maker had recourse to numerous expedients and stratagems, and continued his performances for many weeks. All his efforts, however, proving unsuccessful, he kept himself very secluded for a fortnight, and, after cogitating how he could make his own cause good, he appeared in the public fold, and proclaimed that he had discovered the cause of the drought. All were now eagerly listening; he dilated some time, till he had raised their expectation to the highest pitch, when he revealed the mystery. 'Do you not see, when clouds come over us, that Hamilton and Moffat look at them?' This question receiving a hearty and unanimous affirmation, he added, that our white faces frightened away the clouds, and they need not expect rain so long as we were in the country. This was a home-stroke, and it was an easy matter for us to calculate what the influence of such a charge would be on the public mind. We were very soon informed of the evil of our conduct, to which we plead guilty, promising, that as we were not aware that we were doing wrong, being as anxious as any of them for rain, we would willingly look to our chins, or the ground, all the day long, if it would serve their purpose. It was rather remarkable, that much as they admired my long black beard, they thought that in this case it was most to blame. However, this season of trial passed over, to our great comfort, though it was followed for some time with many indications of suspicion and distrust."

In October, 1823, Mr. Moffat having occasion to visit Cape Town with his family, he writes: "As Mothibi (the chief) was anxious that his son should see the country of the white people, he sent him with us, and appointed Taisho, one of his principal chiefs, to accompany him. The kind reception they met with from his excellency the governor, and the friends in Cape Town, and the sights they saw, produced strange emotions in their minds. They were delighted with every thing they beheld, and were in raptures when they met again their old friend George Thompson, Esq., who showed them no little kindness. It was with some difficulty that they were prevailed upon to go on board one of the ships in the bay; nor would they enter the boat until I had preceded them. They were perfectly astounded, when hoisted on the deck, with the enor-

mous size of the hull, and the height of the masts; and when they saw a boy mount the rigging, and ascend to the very mast-head, they were speechless with amazement. Taisho whispered to the young prince, 'A ga si khatha?' Is it not an ape? When they entered the splendid cabin, and looked into the deep hold, they could scarcely be convinced that the vessel was not resting on the bottom of the ocean. 'Do these water-houses (ships) unload like wagon-oxen every night?' they inquired. 'Do they graze in the sea to keep them alive?' A ship in full sail approaching the roads, they were asked what they thought of that. 'We have no thoughts here; we hope to think again when we get to the shore,' was their reply. They would go anywhere with me or Mr. Thompson, for whom they entertained a kindly feeling, but they would trust no one else."

After his return, Mr. Moffat, accompanied by some Griquas, set out on the 1st of July, 1824, to visit Makaba, the chief of the Bauangketsi. A few days afterward, they were joined by another party, under the chief Berend. Before reaching the town the train was met by the messengers of Makaba, who welcomed them, and when they came near, Makaba desired them to conduct the wagons through the principal street, but as it was a narrow path, winding among a number of houses, Mr. Moffat pronounced the thing impossible without seriously injuring the fences. "Never mind that," says Makaba, "only let me see the wagons go through my town;" and on they went, while the chieftain stood on an eminence before his door, looking with inexpressible delight on the wagons which were breaking down corners of fences, while the good wives within were so much amazed at the oxen, and what appeared to them ponderous vehicles, that they hardly found time to scold, though a few did not fail to express their displeasure.

They found a dense population at the metropolis of the Bauangketsi, and early next morning they were surrounded by thousands, so that it was difficult to pass from one wagon to another. "The country of the Bauangketsi is hilly, and even mountainous toward the north and east. The soil in general is very rich; but water is rather scarce, and though I believe rains are pretty abundant, yet, from what I could learn, irrigation would be absolutely necessary to raise European vegetables and grain. The countries to the north and east abound with rivers, and are very fruitful and populous. The mountains are adorned to their very summits with stately trees and shrubs, unknown in the southern parts of the continent, which give the country a picturesque and imposing appearance." On their return they were attacked by a party of Barolongs, who were repulsed only after a fierce encounter and the loss of several lives. Some of Berend's people likewise captured several hundred of the enemy's cattle.

"In the end of the year 1826, having removed into our new habitation, and the state of the country being somewhat more tranquil, a journey was resolved on to the Barolongs, near the Molapo, in order to

s; and when they saw mast-head, they were the young prince, 'A red the splendid cabin, y be convinced that the an. 'Do these water- t?' they inquired. 'Do p in full sail approach- at of that. 'We have a wo get to the shore,' me or Mr. Thompson, t they would trust no

some Griquas, set out chief of the Bauangketsi. Another party, under the in was met by the mes- when they came near, through the principal ng a number of houses, without seriously injur- na, "only let me see the ent, while the chieftain with inexpressible de- corners of fences, while the oxen, and what ap- dly found time to scold, asure.

polis of the Bauangketsi, by thousands, so that it "The country of the ward the north and east. ther scarce, and though hat I could learn, irriga- European vegetables and bound with rivers, and as are adorned to their unknown in the southern a picturesque and impos- attacked by a party of erce encounter and the likewise captured several

ved into our new habita- newhat more tranquil, a r the Molapo, in order to

attend exclusively to the language, which hitherto it had not been possible to do, owing to the succession of manual labor connected with commencing a new station, when the missionaries must be at the beginning, middle, and end of every thing. Mr. Hamilton, who felt that his advanced age was a serious barrier to his acquisition of the language, was anxious for my progress, and cheerfully undertook the entire labors of the station for a short season, preaching to the Batlapis in the neighborhood, and keeping up public service for the few on the station. Two attempts had been previously made for this very purpose, but I had not long left the place before, in both instances, I was recalled on account of threatened attacks."

Arrived at the village of Bogachu, a Barolong chief, Mr. Moffat spent ten weeks attending to the language. He writes: "The people, to please me, would assemble on the Sabbath, as I told them I could not be happy without telling them about their souls and another world. One day, while describing the day of judgment, several of my hearers expressed great concern at the idea of all their cattle being destroyed, together with their ornaments. They never for one moment allow their thoughts to dwell on death, which is according to their views nothing less than annihilation. Their supreme happiness consists in having abundance of meat. Asking a man who was more grave and thoughtful than his companions what was the finest sight he could desire, he instantly replied, 'A great fire covered with pots full of meat;' adding, 'how ugly the fire looks without a pot!'

"A custom prevails among all the Bechuanas whom I have visited, of removing to a distance from the towns and villages persons who have been wounded. Two young men, who had been wounded by the poisoned arrows of the Bushmen, were thus removed from the Kuruman. Having visited them, to administer relief, I made inquiries, but could learn no reason, except that it was a custom. This unnatural practice exposed the often helpless invalid to great danger; for, if not well attended during the night, his paltry little hut, or rather shade from the sun and wind, would be assailed by the hyena or lion. A catastrophe of this kind occurred a short time before my arrival among the Barolongs. The son of one of the principal chiefs, a fine young man, had been wounded by a buffalo; he was, according to custom, placed on the outside of the village till he should recover; a portion of food was daily sent, and a person appointed to make his fire for the evening. The fire went out; and the helpless man, notwithstanding his piteous cries, was carried off by a lion and devoured. Some might think that this practice originated in the treatment of infectious diseases, such as leprosy; but the only individual I ever saw thus affected was not separated. This disease, though often found among slaves in the colony, is unknown among the tribes in the interior, and therefore they have no name for it.

"Although, as has been stated, the term savages, when applied to Bechuanas, must be understood in a restricted sense, there was nothing

either very comely or comfortable in the dress of either sex, yet such was their attachment to it, that any one deviating from it was considered a harlequin. The child is carried in a skin on its mother's back, with its chest lying close to her person. When it requires to be removed from that position, it is often wet with perspiration; and from being thus exposed to cold wind, pulmonary complaints are not unfrequently brought on. As soon as a child is born, its head is shaved, leaving a small tuft on the imperfectly ossified part of the skull; and when but a few weeks old, the little head may be seen hanging over the skin in which it is carried, shining with grease, and exposed to the rays of an almost vertical sun, yet the *coup de soleil* is not of frequent occurrence, either in infants or adults. The natives, however, are far from admiring a hot sun, and it is not uncommon to hear them say, 'letsatsi le utluega yang?' 'how does the sun feel?' and this exclamation is not to be wondered at, for I have known the action of the sun's rays so powerful on the masses of grease and black shining ocher on the head, as to cause it to run down their necks and blister the skin. They are therefore often found carrying a parasol made of black ostrich feathers, and in the absence of these will hold a small branch over their heads. I have frequently observed the Matabele warriors carrying their shields over their heads for the same purpose.

"For a long period, when a man was seen to make a pair of trousers for himself, or a woman a gown, it was a sure intimation that we might expect additions to our inquirers. Abandoning the custom of painting the body, and beginning to wash with water, was with them what cutting off the hair was among the South Sea islanders, a public renunciation of heathenism. In the progress of improvement during the years which followed, and by which many individuals who made no profession of the Gospel were influenced, we were frequently much amused. A man might be seen in a jacket with but one sleeve, because the other was not finished, or he lacked material to complete it. Another in a leathern or duffel jacket, with the sleeves of different colors, or of fine printed cotton. Gowns were seen like Joseph's coat of many colors, and dresses of such fantastic shapes as were calculated to excite a smile in the gravest of us. It was somewhat entertaining to witness the various applications made to Mrs. Moffat, who was the only European female on the station, for assistance in the fabrication of dress, nor were these confined to female applicants.

"Our congregation now became a variegated mass, including all descriptions, from the lubricated wild-man of the desert, to the clean, comfortable, and well-dressed believer. The same spirit diffused itself through all the routine of household economy. Formerly a chest, a chair, a candle, or a table, were things unknown, and supposed to be only the superfluous accompaniments of beings of another order. Although they never disputed the superiority of our attainments in being able to manufacture these superfluities, they would however question our

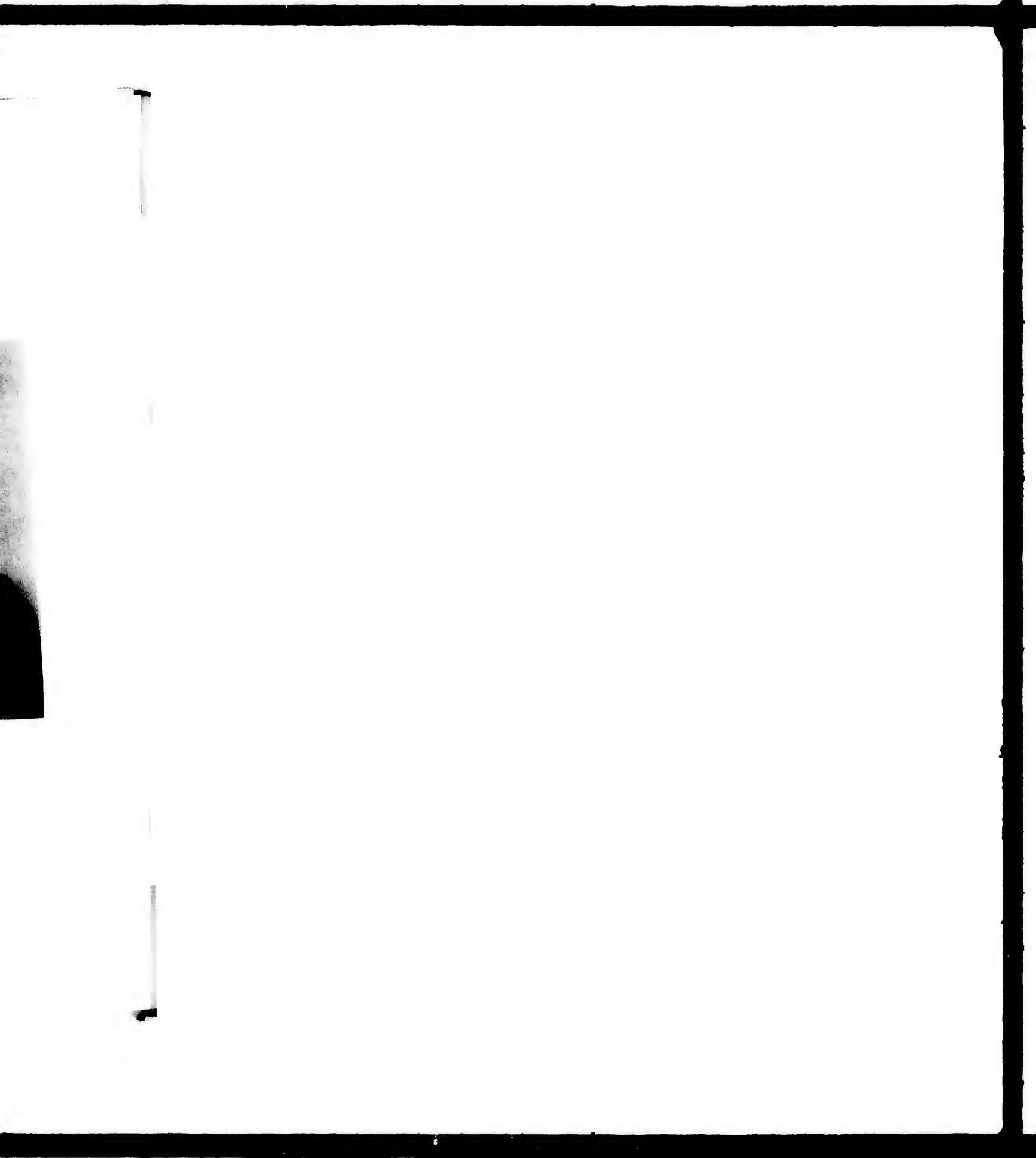
FRICA.

either sex, yet such from it was considered its mother's back, requires to be respiration; and from hints are not unfrequently shaved, leaving the skull; and when hanging over the skin exposed to the rays of frequent occurrence, are far from them say, 'letsatsi' exclamation is not of the sun's rays so much on the head, the skin. They are black ostrich feathers, and over their heads, carrying their shields

make a pair of trousers, intimating that wearing the custom of trousers, was with them. The islanders, a public movement during the time who made no protest, were much amused. This, because the other side of it. Another in a variety of colors, or of fine coats of many colors, used to excite a smile among those who were to witness the vanity of the only European female of dress, nor were

class, including all degrees, to the clean, comfortable spirit diffused itself. Formerly a chest, and supposed to be of another order. Although attainments in being, however question our





c
p
r
-w
y
t
t
sk
d:
m
w
ta
se
th
en

me
be
wr
po
wa
ing
ain
and
ing
tre
cou
me
fini
gro
cov
ing
wis
at
gra
Sev
bran
curi
whi
was
of s
also
stan
hou
spac
villa

common sense in taking so much trouble about them. They thought us particularly extravagant in burning fat in the form of candles, instead of rubbing it on the bodies, or depositing it in our stomachs. Hitherto when they had milked their cows, they retired to their houses and yards, to sit moping over a few embers, seldom affording sufficient light to see what they were eating, or even each other; at night, spreading the dry hide of some animal on the floor, they would lie down in their skin-cloaks, making a blanket of what had been their mantles all day. They soon found that to read in the evening or by night required a more steady light than that afforded by a flickering flame from a bit of wood. Candle-molds and rags for wicks were now in requisition, and tallow carefully preserved, when bunches of candles were shortly to be seen suspended from the wall, a spectacle far more gratifying to us than the most charming picture, an indication of the superior light which had entered their abodes."

In the latter part of the year 1829, Mr. Moffat accompanied two messengers of Moselekatse, a king of a division of Zoolus called Matabele, on their return home. "Having traveled one hundred miles," he writes, "five days after leaving Mosega we came to the first cattle outposts of the Matabele, when we halted by a fine rivulet. My attention was arrested by a beautiful and gigantic tree, standing in a defile leading into an extensive and woody ravine, between a high range of mountains. Seeing some individuals employed on the ground under its shade, and the conical points of what looked like houses in miniature, protruding through its evergreen foliage, I proceeded thither, and found that the tree was inhabited by several families of Bakones, the aborigines of the country. I ascended by the notched trunk, and found, to my amazement, no less than seventeen of these aerial abodes, and three others unfinished. On reaching the topmost hut, about thirty feet from the ground, I entered, and sat down. Its only furniture was the hay which covered the floor, a spear, a spoon, and a bowl full of locusts. Not having eaten any thing that day, and from the novelty of my situation, not wishing to return immediately to the wagons, I asked a woman who sat at the door with a babe at her breast, permission to eat. This she granted with pleasure, and soon brought me more in a powdered state. Several more females came from the neighboring roosts, stepping from branch to branch, to see the stranger, who was to them as great a curiosity as the tree was to him. I then visited the different abodes, which were on several principal branches. The structure of these houses was very simple. An oblong scaffold, about seven feet wide, is formed of straight sticks. On one end of this platform a small cone is formed, also of straight sticks, and thatched with grass. A person can nearly stand upright in it; the diameter of the floor is about six feet. The house stands on the end of the oblong, so as to leave a little square space before the door. On the day previous I had passed several villages, some containing forty houses, all built on poles about seven or

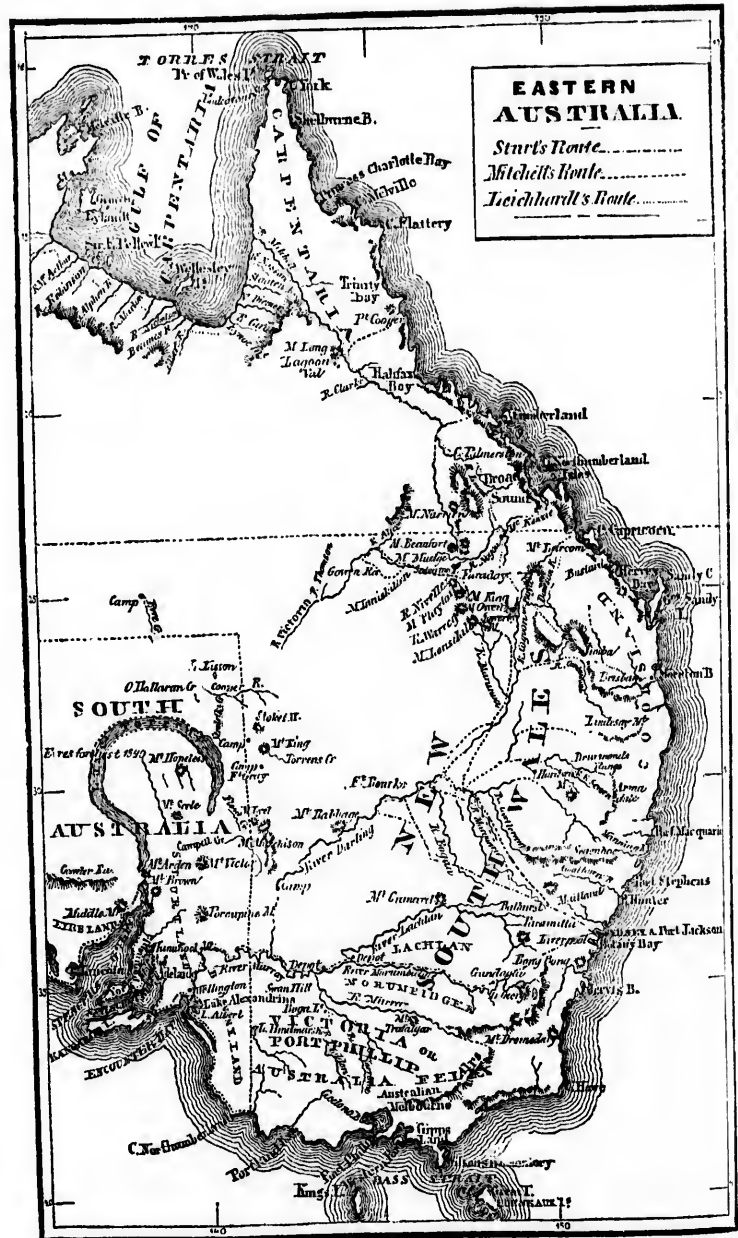
eight feet from the ground, in the form of a circle; the ascent and descent is by a knotty branch of a tree placed in front of the house. In the center of the circle there is always a heap of the bones of game they have killed. Such were the domiciles of the impoverished thousands of the aborigines of the country, who, having been scattered and peeled by Moselekatse, had neither herd nor stall, but subsisted on locusts, roots, and the chase. They adopted this mode of architecture to escape the lions which abound in that country. During the day the families descended to the shade beneath to dress their daily food. When the inhabitants increased, they supported the augmented weight on the branches, by upright sticks, but when lightened of their load, they removed these for firewood."

The king received the missionaries with kindness, and during a long visit Mr. Moffat had frequent intercourse with his majesty, who freely listened to his instructions. On his return Moselekatse accompanied him in his wagon, a long day's journey. Mr. Moffat concludes the story of his long labors in the following words: "Before closing the account of the Bechuana mission, it will be proper to state, that during the years 1837, 1838, a rich blessing descended on the labors of the brethren at home, at the out-stations, and indeed, at every place where the Gospel was read and preached. Large additions of Bechuana to the church at Griqua Town have already been noticed; and in 1838, great accessions were made to that of the Kuruman. Under the very efficient and assiduous superintendence of Mr. Edwards, the number of readers connected with the mission had increased in equal ratio; while the Infant School, commenced and carried on by Mrs. Edwards, with the assistance of a native girl, gave the highest satisfaction. The people made rapid advance in civilization; some purchasing wagons, and breaking in their oxen for those labors which formerly devolved on the female sex. The use of clothing became so general, that the want of a merchant was greatly felt, to supply the demands for British commodities. This induced us to invite Mr. D. Hume, in whom we placed implicit confidence, who had already traded much with the natives, and traveled a great distance into the interior, to take up his constant abode on the station for that purpose. He built himself a house, and the measure has succeeded beyond our expectations."

AFRICA.

e; the ascent and descent of the house. In the bones of game they devoured thousands of scattered and peeled subsisted on locusts, architecture to escape the day the families daily food. When the added weight on the of their load, they re-

ness, and during a long his majesty, who freely oselekatse accompanied ffat concludes the story fore closing the account state, that during the labors of the brethren ry place where the Gos- Bechuanas to the church and in 1838, great accesser the very efficient and number of readers con- ratio; while the Infant wards, with the assistance The people made rapid ns, and breaking in their on the female sex. The want of a merchant was commodities. This in- laced implicit confidence, res, and traveled a great ant abode on the station and the measure has suc-



fer
 th
 gr
 flo
 int
 Au
 the
 Ri
 the
 int
 pu
 the
 bet

wh
 ce
 ilto
 the
 wh
 cem
 exo
 an
 mor
 in t
 sun
 muc
 crow
 too

EASTERN AUSTRALIA

Sturt's Route.....
Fitchett's Route.....
Reichhardt's Route.....



S T U R T ' S

EXPLORATIONS IN AUSTRALIA.

JOURNEY TO THE RIVER DARLING.

THE climate of New South Wales is periodically subject to long and fearful droughts; one of these, which began in 1826, continued during the two following years with unabated severity. The surface of the ground became parched, the crops failed, and the settlers drove their flocks and herds to distant tracts in search of pasture and water. The interior suffered equally with the coast, and it seemed as though the Australian sky would never again be traversed by a cloud. It was therefore hoped that an expedition, pursuing the line of the Macquarie River, would be more successful than the previous attempts to explore the country, which had been obstructed by the vast marshes of the interior. An expedition was accordingly decided upon, for the express purpose of ascertaining the nature and extent of that basin into which the Macquarie was supposed to fall, and whether any connection existed between it and the streams flowing westwardly.

Captain Charles Sturt was appointed to command this expedition, which set out from Sidney on the 10th of November, 1828, and proceeded to Bathurst. After a few days' delay it was joined by Mr. Hamilton Hume, who was associated with Captain Sturt, and they pursued their route down the banks of the Macquarie to Wellington Valley, where they arrived about the end of the month. On the 7th of December they continued their journey down the river. The weather was exceedingly sultry; a few days afterward, when they left the river on an excursion to Lake Buddah, a short day's journey from it, the thermometer stood at one hundred and twenty-nine degrees of Fahrenheit in the shade, at two o'clock, and at one hundred and forty-nine in the sun. The rays were too powerful even for the natives, who kept as much as possible in the shade. At sunset hundreds of birds came crowding to the lake, to quench their thirst; some were gasping, others too weak to avoid the men, who shot a supply of them.

They reached the river again next day and descended to the cataract. The natives they met with here, as elsewhere, were timorous at first, but being treated with kindness they soon threw off all reserve, and in the afternoon assembled below the fall to fish. They took short spears and sank at once under water, at a given signal from an elderly man. In a short time one or two rose with the fish they had taken; the others remained about a minute under water, and then made their appearance near the rock under which they had driven their prey.

The heat increased as the expedition advanced into the interior. The thermometer was seldom under one hundred and fourteen degrees at noon, and rose higher at two o'clock. There was no dew at night; the country was bare and scorched, and the plains were traversed by large fissures. As they neared Mount Harris the Macquarie became more sluggish in its flow, and fell off so much as scarcely to deserve the name of a river. On encamping, Messrs. Sturt and Hume rode to Mount Harris. "Nearly ten years had elapsed," says Captain Sturt, "since Mr. Oxley pitched his tents under the smallest of the two hills into which Mount Harris is broken. There was no difficulty in hitting upon his position. The trenches cut around the tents were still perfect, and the marks of the fire-places distinguishable; while the trees in the neighborhood had been felled, and round about them the staves of some casks and a few tent-pegs were scattered. Mr. Oxley had selected a place at some distance from the river, in consequence of its swollen state: from the same ground I could not discern the waters in its channel. A reflection naturally arose to my mind on examining these decaying vestiges of a former expedition, whether I should be more fortunate than the leader of it, and how far I should be enabled to penetrate beyond the point which had conquered his perseverance. My eye instinctively turned to the north-west, and the view extended over an apparently endless forest. I could trace the river-line of trees by their superior height, but saw no appearance of reeds, save the few that grew on the banks of the stream."

A few days later, after passing over rich timbered flats covered with luxuriant grass, and then crossing a dreary plain, they came to some lofty trees, under which they found nothing but reeds as far as the eye could penetrate. Continuing their course along the edge of the reeds they at length found a passage between the patches and gained the river with some difficulty. They were obliged to clear away a space for the tents, and thus found themselves encamped pretty far in that marsh which they had been anxiously looking for, and upon which, in any ordinary state of the river, it would have been dangerous to venture. As they proceeded, the difficulties increased, and it became necessary either to skirt the reeds to the northward, or to follow the river. Here the party separated, Captain Sturt launching the boat, and passing down the river to determine its course, and Mr. Hume proceeding northward to examine the marshes. The river flowed sluggishly among high reeds

scended to the cat-
e, were timorous at
rew off all reserve,
n. They took short
nal from an elderly
h they had taken ;
nd then made their
ven their prey.

d into the interior.
nd fourteen degrees
as no dew at night ;
were traversed by
Macquarie became
rcely to deserve the
Hume rode to Mount
captain Sturt, "since
two hills into which
in hitting upon his
till perfect, and the
rees in the neighbor-
staves of some casks
l selected a place at
swollen state: from
n its channel. A re-
ese decaying vestiges
fortunate than the
penetrate beyond the
fy eye instinctively
over an apparently
es by their superior
ew that grew on the

ed flats covered with
they came to some
eds as far as the eye
the edge of the reeds
and gained the river
away a space for the
y far in that marsh
upon which, in any
dangerous to venture.
it became necessary
low the river. Here
at, and passing down
roceeding northward
ly among high reeds

which often shut out every other object, and the channel maintained its size for several miles, when suddenly it ceased altogether and the boat grounded. Captain Sturt, finding every outlet closed, returned to the camp. He supposed the waters of the river to be spread over the surrounding level country, and Mr. Hume, who had also returned, had found a serpentine sheet of water, twelve miles to the northward, which he supposed to be the channel of the river.

The whole party then proceeded to the channel found by Mr. Hume, but after a few miles it likewise became unnavigable. Thinking that the Macquarie must eventually meet the Castlereagh, and their united waters form a stream of some importance, Mr. Hume was sent north-east to explore the country in that direction, while Captain Sturt crossed the river on an excursion to the interior, each accompanied by two men. Next day, January 1st, 1829, the captain came upon a numerous tribe of natives. A young girl, who first saw the approaching party, was so frightened that she had not power to run away, but threw herself on the ground and screamed violently. The people then issued from the huts, but started back on beholding the strangers. In a moment their huts were in flames, and each one with a firebrand ran to and fro with hideous yells, thrusting it into every bush he passed. Captain Sturt walked his horse quietly toward an old man who stood before the rest, as if to devote himself for the preservation of his tribe, but he trembled so violently that it was impossible to get any information from him; the party therefore passed on.

They returned to the camp late on the 5th of January, having penetrated more than a hundred miles into the western interior, and seen no traces of a stream from the highest elevations. Mr. Hume returned next day; he had traversed the country in various directions to the north and north-west, and found here and there a creek partially dried up, but nothing like a channel of the river, although he had obtained an extensive view of the country from a high range of hills, which he called New Year's Range.

Captain Sturt now returned to Mount Harris for supplies, and prepared to strike at once into the heart of the interior, being convinced that the river no longer existed. Not finding the expected supplies, he rejoined Mr. Hume, who had advanced fifteen miles, and found the whole party suffering from fatigue and the want of water. With difficulty they at length passed through the marshes, and on the 13th of January proceeded over a more pleasant country. In the forest, next day, they surprised a party of natives, who immediately ran away; but presently one of them returned, and stood twenty paces from Mr. Hume, until Captain Sturt began to advance, when he poised his spear at him, and the captain halted. The savage had evidently taken both man and horse for one animal, and when Mr. Hume dismounted, he struck his spear into the ground and walked fearlessly up to him. They made him comprehend that they were in search of water, when he pointed to the west, and a few hours

afterward they came to a creek of fresh water situated on the eastern side of New Year's Range. Following the course of this creek, which was continually diminishing as they advanced, they proceeded in a north-westerly direction toward Oxley's Table Land, an elevated ridge, near which they encamped on the 23d.

They ascended the hill in search of some object to direct their course, but seeing no indications of a larger stream, they determined to make an excursion to D'Urban's Group, which lay at a distance in the south-west. Accordingly, Captain Sturt and Mr. Hume left the camp on the 25th, and soon afterward entered an acacia scrub of the most sterile description. The soil was almost pure sand, and the lower branches of the trees were decayed so generally as to give the scene an indescribable appearance of desolation. Next day they entered upon a plain which was crowded with cockatoos, until within a mile of the mountain group, where the country was covered with luxuriant grass, which waved higher than the horses' middles as they rode through it. The view from the summit was magnificent, but they were again disappointed in the main object of their search. A brighter green than usual marked the course of the mountain torrents in several places, but there was no glittering light among the trees, no smoke to betray a water-hole, or to tell that a single inhabitant was traversing the extensive region they were overlooking.

They returned to the camp on the 28th, and leaving Oxley's Table Land on the 31st, they pursued a northern course until they reached the creek. It had increased in size and in the height of its banks, but was perfectly dry. They therefore moved westwardly along its banks in search of water, but encamped after sunset without having found any. In his anxiety Captain Sturt then went down to the bed of the creek, where he was rejoiced to find a pond of water within a hundred yards of the tents. At their next encampment they were again without water, and at a loss what course to take, but finding traces of the natives, they followed a path toward the north, which led them to the banks of a noble river. The channel of the river was from seventy to eighty yards broad, and inclosed an unbroken sheet of water, evidently very deep, and literally covered with pelicans and other wild fowl. "Our surprise and delight," says Captain Sturt, "may better be imagined than described. Our difficulties seemed to be at an end, for here was a river that promised to reward all our exertions, and which appeared every moment to increase in importance to our imagination. The men eagerly descended to quench their thirst, which a powerful sun had contributed to increase; nor shall I ever forget the cry of amazement that followed their doing so, or the look of terror and disappointment with which they called out to inform me that the water was so salt as to be unfit to drink. This was, indeed, too true; on tasting it, I found it extremely nauseous and strongly impregnated with salt, being apparently a mixture of sea and fresh water. Our hopes were annihilated at the moment of their appa-

rent realization. The cup of joy was dashed out of our hands before we had time to raise it to our lips. Notwithstanding this disappointment we proceeded down the river and halted at five miles, being influenced by the goodness of the feed to provide for the cattle as well as circumstances would permit. They would not drink of the river water, but stood covered in it for many hours, having their noses alone exposed above the stream." After the tents were formed, Mr. Hume walked out in search of water, and coming to the river at some distance below, found a reef of rocks which formed a dry passage from one side to the other. Curiosity led him to cross it, when he found a small pond of fresh water on a tongue of land. It was too late to move, but they had the prospect of a comfortable breakfast in the morning.

They followed the course of the river in a south-westerly direction, and on the 5th of January, passed through a large native village. Soon afterward they came suddenly upon the tribe of the village, who were engaged in fishing. They gazed upon the strangers a moment, then starting up, assumed an attitude of horror and amazement, and presently gave a fearful yell and darted out of sight. Soon a crackling noise was heard in the distance, and the bush was on fire. Captain Sturt and his party being on safe ground, patiently awaited the result. When the fire had come near, one of the natives came out from the same spot into which he had retreated, and bending forward with his hands upon his knees, gazed at them awhile, but seeing that they remained immovable, he began to throw himself into the most extravagant postures, shaking his foot from time to time. When he found that all his violence had no effect, he turned his back to them in a most laughable manner, and absolutely groaned in spirit when his last insult failed of success.

As they continued their journey down the river they discovered that there were salt springs in the bed of the stream. They had occasionally found ponds of fresh water, but these began to fail them. The animals were already so weak from bad food and the effects of the river water, that they could scarcely carry their loads. They therefore turned back on the morning of the 6th, and started for the nearest fresh water, which was eighteen miles behind them. They were still unwilling to quit the pursuit of the river, and Captain Sturt proposed to take the most serviceable horses down the stream, so that in the event of finding fresh water they might again push forward. He accordingly set out on the 8th accompanied by Mr. Hume, and two men, with a supply of provisions and water. They made about twenty-eight miles and slept on the river-side, but as the horses would not drink the river water, they were obliged to give them some from their own supply. Next day they crossed several creeks, in none of which they could find water, and when they halted at noon the supply had diminished to a little more than a pint. The day was warm and they were now forty miles from the camp, consequently their further progress became a matter of serious consideration, for however capable they were of bearing additional

ALIA.

and on the eastern
this creek, which
ceeded in a north-
vated ridge, near

direct their course,
etermined to make
tance in the south-
t the camp on the
he most sterile de-
wer branches of the
ne an indescribable
upon a plain which
the mountain group,
which waved higher
The view from the
pointed in the main
l marked the course
re was no glittering
hole, or to tell that a
ion they were over-

aving Oxley's Table
ntil they reached the
f its banks, but was
y along its banks in
ut having found any.
e bed of the creek,
hin a hundred yards
again without water,
s of the natives, they
o the banks of a noble
o eighty yards broad,
very deep, and liter-
Our surprise and de-
ined than described.
as a river that prom-
ed every moment to
en eagerly descended
tributed to increase;
followed their doing
hich they called out
unfit to drink. This
remely nauseous and
a mixture of sea and
oment of their appa-

fatigue, it was evident their animals would soon fail. Therefore, as soon as they had bathed and finished their scanty meal, they set out on their return to the camp. They named the river "Darling," in honor of the governor.

In returning along the river they occasionally met with parties of the native tribes, who, though armed with spears, were quite inoffensive. "The natives of the Darling," says Captain Sturt, "are a cleanlimbed, well-conditioned race, generally speaking. They seemingly occupy permanent huts, but the tribe did not bear any proportion to the size or number of their habitations. It was evident their population had been thinned. The customs of these distinct tribes, as far as we could judge, were similar to those of the mountain blacks, although their language differs. They lacerate their bodies, but do not extract their front teeth, as is done by the latter tribes."

At Mount Harris they found the party with supplies, awaiting their arrival. The fresh horses being in excellent order, Captain Sturt made preparations to explore the region of the Castlereagh, and determine the course of that river. On the 7th of March, the tents were struck, and the party left the Macquarie and proceeded in a north-easterly course. The thickets were frequently so dense that they found it impossible to travel in a direct line; after many difficulties they reached the Castlereagh on the afternoon of the 10th. The channel at this point was not less than one hundred and thirty yards in breadth, and yet there was apparently not a drop of water in it. They therefore suffered much from thirst as they descended the river, the weather being very sultry, although the heat was not so intense as they experienced in crossing the marshes of the Macquarie, when it melted the sugar in the canisters and destroyed all the dogs.

One day they surprised a party of natives who were engaged in preparing dinners of fish, evidently for a larger party than was present. They instantly fled, leaving every thing at the mercy of the strangers. In the afternoon they returned and crouching with their spears, seemed to manifest hostile intentions. Mr. Hume then walked to a tree, and broke off a short branch. As soon as they saw the branch, the natives laid aside their spears, and two of them advanced in front of the rest, who sat down. Mr. Hume then went forward and sat down, when the two natives again advanced and seated themselves close to him.

The natives of this region appeared to be dying out, not from any disease, but from the scarcity of food. From the want of water it was feared that the journey would have to be abandoned, when, by good fortune, the party deviated from the river and came upon a creek of fresh water, which again revived them. They thus continued their route until the 29th, when they were checked by a broad river. "A single glimpse of it," says Captain Sturt, "was sufficient to tell us it was the Darling. At a distance of ninety miles nearer its source it still preserved its character. The same steep banks and lofty timber, the same

Therefore, as soon they set out on their "ing," in honor of the

met with parties of were quite inoffensive. Sturt, "are a clean- They seemingly occupy proportion to the their population had as, as far as we could s, although their land- do not extract their

plies, awaiting their, Captain Sturt made reach, and determine the tents were struck,

l in a north-easterly at they found it im- difficulties they reached e channel at this point s in breadth, and yet they therefore suffered e weather being very they experienced in melted the sugar in the

who were engaged in arty than was present. ery of the strangers. h their spears, seemed walked to a tree, and e branch, the natives d in front of the rest, nd sat down, when the s close to him.

ing out, not from any e want of water it was done, when, by good ame upon a creek of r thus continued their by a broad river. "A fficient to tell us it was r its source it still pre- lofty timber, the same

deep reaches, alive with fish, were here visible, as when we left it. A hope naturally arose in our minds that if it was unchanged in other respects, it might have lost the saltness which had rendered its waters unfit for use; but in this we were disappointed—even its waters continued the same."

They now retraced their steps to the creek of fresh water, whence they made an effort to penetrate the country to the north-west; but they entered a waste where all traces of the natives disappeared, and not even a bird was to be seen. Captain Sturt was, therefore, convinced of the inutility of further efforts, and made preparations to return with the expedition. They reached Mount Harris on the 7th of April, and, moving leisurely up the Macquarie, arrived at Wellington Valley on the 21st, having been absent from that settlement four months and a half. The waters of the Macquarie had diminished so much, that its bed was dry for more than half a mile at a stretch, nor did they observe the least appearance of a current in it until after they had ascended the ranges above Wellington Valley.

VOYAGE DOWN THE MORUMBIDGEE AND MURRAY RIVERS.

The late expedition having settled the hypothesis of an internal sea, and ascertained the actual termination of the rivers it had been directed to trace, it became important to determine the ultimate direction of the Darling, which was evidently the chief drain for the waters falling westwardly from the eastern coast. The difficulty of approaching that central stream without suffering for want of water made it necessary to regain its banks at some lower point, where it could still be identified. The attention of the government was consequently fixed upon the Morumbidgee, a river said to be of considerable size and of impetuous current. Receiving its supplies from the lofty ranges behind Mount Dromedary, it promised to hold a longer course than those rivers which depend on periodical rains alone for existence.

Another expedition was accordingly determined on, and the governor instructed Captain Sturt to make the necessary preparations for tracing the Morumbidgee, or such rivers as it might prove to be connected with, as far as practicable. As it was likely they would sometimes have to depend wholly upon water conveyance, he had a large whale-boat constructed so as to be taken in pieces for more convenient carriage; he also supplied himself with apparatus for distilling water, in the event of finding the water of the Darling salt, on reaching its banks.

The expedition left Sidney on the 3d of November, 1829. At Brownlow Hill Mr. George M'Leay, son of the colonial secretary, joined Captain Sturt as his companion, and on the 19th they arrived at Yass Plains, situated above the junction of the Yass River with the Morumbidgee. A few days afterward they encamped on the latter river, in a

long plain surrounded on every side by hills. The scenery around was wild, romantic, and beautiful. The stream was full, and the waters, foaming among rocks or circling in eddies, gave early promise of a reckless course. Its waters were hard and transparent, and its bed was composed of mountain debris, and large fragments of rock. They proceeded along its banks, and on the morning of the 27th reached Whaby's Station, the last settlement on the river. They were now to be thrown on their own resources, yet the novelty of the scenery and the beauty of the river excited in them the liveliest anticipations of success.

As they were one day passing through an open forest one of the blacks took a tomahawk in order to get an opossum out of a dead tree, every branch of which was hollow. As he cut below the animal it became necessary to smoke it out. The fire soon kindled in the tree, and dense columns of smoke issued from the end of each branch, as thick as that from the chimney of a steam-engine. The shell of the tree was thin, but the black fearlessly climbed to the highest branch and watched anxiously for the poor creature; and no sooner did it appear than he seized upon it, and threw it down with an air of triumph. The roaring of the fire in the tree, the fearless attitude of the savage, and the association which his color and appearance, enveloped as he was in smoke, called up, produced a singular effect in the lonely forest. Soon after they left the tree, it fell with a tremendous crash, and was consumed to ashes.

At length the country became less hilly, and early in December they saw indications of a level region before them. In a few days they reached a dreary plain, where the cattle began to suffer, and they were obliged to shorten their journeys. Amid the desolation around them the river kept alive their hopes. If it traversed deserts, it might reach fertile lands, and to the issue of the journey they must look for success. The apparently boundless plain continued, and the sand became a great obstruction to their progress. At length they came to a reedy country, resembling that around the marshes of the Macquarie, and were alarmed at the prospect of losing the river. Captain Sturt therefore ordered a smaller boat to be built, but on further examination being convinced that they were still far from the termination of the river, he had the large boat put together, and resolved to send back the drays. In a week they had fitted up a boat twenty-seven feet long, had felled a tree from the forest, with which they had built a second of half the size, and had them painted and ready for loading.

On the 6th of January, 1830, the boats were loaded, the flour, tea, and tobacco, were placed in the whale-boat, and in the small one the meat-casks, still, and carpenters' tools. Captain Sturt then left a portion of the men with Robert Harris, and directed him to remain stationary for a week, after which he would be at liberty to return; while the boats were to proceed at an early hour of the morning down the river, —whether ever to return being a point of the greatest uncertainty.

scenery around was full, and the waters, early promise of a rock, and its bed was com-
ck. They proceeded reached Whaby's Sta-
now to be thrown on and the beauty of the
success.

en forest one of the m out of a dead tree, below the animal it be-
dled in the tree, and each branch, as thick
shell of the tree was at branch and watched
did it appear than he triumph. The roaring
savage, and the asso- as he was in smoke,
ly forest. Soon after and was consumed to

arly in December they In a few days they
o suffer, and they were desolation around them
deserts, it might reach must look for success.
e sand became a great me to a reedy country,
arie, and were alarmed ert therefore ordered a
ation being convinced of the river, he had the
back the drays. In a long, had felled a tree
nd of half the size, and

e loaded, the flour, tea, d in the small one the
sturt then left a portion m to remain stationary
to return; while the morning down the river,
atest uncertainty.

The advancing party embarked in high spirits, and although they used but two oars, their progress down the river was rapid. The channel offered few obstructions, but on the second day the skiff struck upon a sunken log, and immediately filling, went down in about twelve feet of water. With difficulty they succeeded in hauling it ashore, but the head of the still and several articles had been thrown out. As the success of the expedition might probably depend on the complete state of the still, every effort was made for its recovery. The whale-boat was moored over the place, and the bottom searched with the oars. When any object was felt, it was pushed into the sand, and one of the men descended by the oar to the bottom. The work was most laborious and the men at length became much exhausted, without having recovered the still-head. In the morning they resumed the search, and were finally successful.

As they advanced, the banks of the river became lined with reeds on both sides, while trees stood leafless and sapless in the midst of them. Wherever they landed the same view presented itself—a waving expanse of reeds, and a country perfectly flat. Their ardor was damped by the dread of marshes, as the channel became contracted and was impeded by immense trees that had been swept down by the floods.

On the 13th they passed a stream flowing in from the south-east, the first in a course of more than three hundred and forty miles. The river had become more open, but on this day's passage it was again filled with trunks of trees whose branches crossed each other in every direction, and in the evening the danger was increased by rapids, down which they were hurried in the darkness before they had time to foresee the difficulty. They halted at the head of more formidable barriers, down which, with great exertions, they passed in safety next morning. At length the river took a general southern direction, but, in its winding course, swept round to every point of the compass with the greatest irregularity. They were carried at a fearful rate down its gloomy and contracted banks, and in the excitement of the moment had little time to pay attention to the country through which they were passing. At three o'clock they approached a junction, and were immediately hurried out into a broad and noble river. The force with which they had been shot out of the Morumbidgee carried them nearly to the opposite bank of the capacious channel into which they had entered, and when they looked for the one they had left, they could hardly believe the insignificant opening that presented itself was the termination of the beautiful stream whose course they had successfully followed. This river was evidently the great channel of the streams from the south-eastern quarter of the island. The Morumbidgee entered it at right-angles, and was so narrowed at the point of junction, that it had the appearance of an ordinary creek.

The new river was from one hundred and fifty to two hundred yards in width, and improved as they descended. Its reaches were of noble

breadth and splendid appearance. At length it began to change; the banks became steep and lofty, and water-worn. On the 22d the boats came suddenly to the head of a foaming rapid, which it was too late to avoid, and their only safety was in making a clear passage. But the boat struck with the fore part of her keel upon a sunken rock, and turning round, presented her bow to the rapid, while the skiff floated away in the strength of it. They succeeded, however, in getting her off, without great injury.

The river became wider as they advanced, and the wind being fair, they hoisted sail and made rapid progress. As they were sailing in a reach with the intention of landing, a large concourse of natives appeared under the trees and seemed disposed to resist them. As they continued to approach, the savages held their spears ready to hurl at them. Wishing to avoid a conflict, Captain Sturt lowered the sail, and putting the helm to starboard, passed quietly down the stream. The disappointed natives ran along the banks, endeavoring to secure an aim at the boat, but, unable to throw with certainty, in consequence of its onward motion, they flung themselves into the most extravagant attitudes, and worked themselves into a state of frenzy by loud and vehement shouting. The boat was at length stopped by a sand-bank which projected into the channel, and the savages here renewed their threats of attack. Finding it impossible to avoid an engagement, Captain Sturt gave arms to the men, with orders not to fire till he had discharged both his barrels. On nearing the sand-bank, he made signs to the natives to desist, but without success. He then leveled his gun, but when his hand was on the trigger McLeay called out that another party of blacks had made their appearance on the left bank of the river. There were four men, who ran at the top of their speed; the foremost threw himself from a considerable height into the water, and struggling across, placed himself between the savages and the boat. Forcing them back from the water, he trod its margin with great vehemence; at one time pointing to the boat, at another shaking his clenched hand in the faces of the most forward, and stamping with passion on the sand; his voice, at first distinct and clear, was lost in hoarse murmurs. The party in the boats, astonished at this singular and unexpected escape, allowed the boat to drift at pleasure, and after pushing off from a second shoal, their attention was attracted to a new and beautiful stream, coming apparently from the north. The bold savage who had so unhesitatingly interfered in behalf of the whites, had been in their company for several days, and had sometimes assisted them in return for their kindness to him. He now continued in hot dispute with the natives on the sand-bar, and Captain Sturt was hesitating whether to go to his assistance, when he saw a party of about seventy blacks on the right bank of the newly discovered river. Hoping to make a diversion in favor of his late guest, he landed among them, at which the first party ceased their wrangling, and came swimming across the river.

pres
The
the
orde
chee
it th
over
24th
with
to a
He
to sh
bird
often
only
gone
fallen
with
beca
same

ran to change; the
 on the 22d the boats
 it was too late to
 passage. But the
 nken rock, and turn-
 e skiff floated away
 in getting her off,

the wind being fair,
 they were sailing in a
 course of natives ap-
 sist them. As they
 ears ready to hurl at
 lowered the sail, and
 n the stream. The
 ing to secure an aim
 n consequence of its
 most extravagant atti-
 y loud and vehem-
 y a sand-bank which
 renewed their threats
 rement, Captain Sturt
 e had discharged both
 igns to the natives to
 an, but when his hand
 er party of blacks had
 ver. There were four
 ost threw himself from
 ng across, placed him-
 them back from the
 at one time pointing
 n the faces of the most
 his voice, at first dis-
 party in the boats, as-
 owed the boat to drift
 shoal, their attention
 g apparently from the
 y interfered in behalf
 al days, and had some-
 him. He now contin-
 ar, and Captain Sturt
 en he saw a party of
 ewly discovered river.
 est, he landed among
 ling, and came swim-



JUNCTION OF THE MURRAY AND THE DARLING.

Before proceeding, they rowed a few miles up the new river, which presented a breadth of one hundred yards, and a depth of twelve feet. The conviction was at length impressed upon Captain Sturt that this was the Darling, from whose banks he had been twice forced to retire. He ordered the union jack to be hoisted, and the whole party gave three cheers.

On re-entering the channel of the first-discovered river, they named it the Murray, in compliment to Sir George Murray, who then presided over the colonial department. The skiff was then destroyed, and on the 24th they proceeded down the Murray. They had now daily intercourse with the natives, who sent ambassadors forward regularly from one tribe to another, to the great advantage and safety of Capain Sturt's party. He was careful to do nothing to alarm them, although he made a point to show them the effects of a gun-shot by firing at a kite or any other bird that happened to be near. "Yet," continues the captain, "I was often surprised at the apparent indifference with which the natives not only saw the effect of the shot, but heard the report. I have purposely gone into the center of a large assemblage and fired at a bird, that has fallen upon their very heads, without causing a start or an exclamation, without exciting either their alarm or their curiosity." They sometimes became weary of this constant communication with the natives. "Their sameness of appearance," observes Captain Sturt, "the disgusting diseases

that raged among them, their abominable filth, the manner in which they pulled us about, and the impossibility of making them understand us, or of obtaining any information from them, all combined to estrange us from these people, and to make their presence disagreeable. Yet there was an absolute necessity to keep up the chain of communication, to insure our own safety."

The river at length began to flow southward, a circumstance which gave much satisfaction to Captain Sturt, for he was beginning to feel some anxiety about the men. Their provision was becoming scanty, their eyes were sore, and they were evidently much reduced. After a long deviation to the north-west, the river again flowed southward. It increased in breadth, and soon lost its sandy bed and its current, and became deep, still, and turbid. The hills towered up like maritime cliffs, and the water dashed against their base like the waves of the sea. Other indications of the approach to the sea appeared from time to time. Some sea-gulls flew over their heads, at which one of the men was about to shoot, when Captain Sturt prevented him, for he hailed them as messengers of glad tidings, and thought they ill-deserved such a fate. The natives with whom they communicated on the 6th and 7th of February, distinctly informed them that they were fast approaching the sea, and from what they could understand, that they were nearer to it than the coast-line of Encounter Bay made them.

On the 9th they found a clear horizon before them to the south. They had reached the termination of the Murray; but instead of the ocean, a beautiful lake was spread out before them. The ranges of mountains which were visible on the west, were distant forty miles; they formed an unbroken outline, declining gradually to the south, but terminating abruptly at a lofty mountain northwardly. This was supposed to be the Mount Lofty of Captain Flanders, and the range to be that immediately eastward of St. Vincent's Gulf.

"Thirty-three days had now passed over our heads," says Captain Sturt, "since we left the dépot upon the Morumbidgee, twenty-six of which had been passed upon the Murray. We had, at length, arrived at the grand reservoir of those waters whose course and fate had previously been involved in such obscurity. It remained for us to ascertain whether the extensive sheet of water upon whose bosom we had embarked, had any practicable communication with the ocean." The greatest difficulty they had now to contend with was the wind, which blew fresh from the south-west; and the men were too much reduced for any violent or prolonged effort. Before morning, however, a breeze sprang up from the north-east and they set sail early for the extremity of the lake. They made a good passage, and in the evening arrived at the entrance of a channel about half a mile wide, leading to the south-west. It was bounded on the right by some open, flat ground, and on the left by a line of hills. Upon the first of these hills they observed a large body of natives, who set up the most terrific yells as they ap-

pro
wer
of p
rior
gun
inst
belo
rose
with
arou
occe
mcla
I
was
obst
boat
men
cross
deep
one o
the l
incre
throu
chan
The
amids
sum
Encou
to ex
the m
theret
the la
as fair
Fo
lake, h
tinual
began
heavily
the riv
the bo
Th
next m
as the
with th
water
and the

anner in which they
understand us, or
ed to estrange us
receivable. Yet there
mmunicati, to in-

circumstance which
as beginning to feel
as becoming scanty,
h reduced. After a
owed southward. It
l its current, and be-
like maritime cliffs,
ves of the sea. Other
time to time. Some
e men was about to
ailed them as messen-
such a fate. The na-
and 7th of February,
roaching the sea, and
nearer to it than the

o them to the south.
; but instead of the
hem. The ranges of
tant forty miles; they
to the south, but ter-
. This was supposed
d the range to be that

heads," says Captain
bidgee, twenty-six of
ad, at length, arrived
arse and fate had pre-
ed for us to ascertain
e bosom we had em-
h the ocean." The
was the wind, which
ere too much reduced
ng, however, a breeze
arly for the extremity
he evening arrived at
leading to the south-
n, flat ground, and on
hills they observed a
rific yells as they ap-

proached, and came down to meet them with violent threats. They were fully equipped for battle, and were not to be pacified by any signs of peace. Captain Sturt therefore drew off, and the most daring warriors crept into the reeds with their spears poised. He took up his gun to return their salute, but they seemed perfectly aware of the instrument and fled precipitately. He then landed on a flat a mile below, where they could not be taken by surprise. "The full moon rose as we were forming the camp," observes Captain Sturt, "and notwithstanding our vicinity to so noisy a host, the silence of death was around us, or the stillness of night was only broken by the roar of the ocean, now too near to be mistaken for the wind, or by the silvery and melancholy notes of the black swans as they passed over us."

In the morning they attempted to pass the channel to the sea, which was visible at two and a half miles distance, but the passagu was so obstructed with shoals that they were sometimes obliged to drag the boat a quarter of a mile, while wading knee-deep in mud. While the men were thus engaged Captain Sturt and M'Leay, with one of the men, crossed over to the sea-shore. He found they had struck the south coast deep in the bight of Encounter Bay. "Our situation," he writes, "was one of peculiar excitement and interest. To the right the thunder of the heavy surf, that almost shook the ground beneath us, broke with increasing roar upon our ears; to the left the voice of the natives echoed through the brush, and the size of their fires at the extremity of the channel seemed to indicate the alarm our appearance had occasioned. The mouth of the channel is defended by a double line of breakers, amidst which it would be dangerous to venture, except in calm and summer weather; and the line of foam is unbroken from one end of Encounter Bay to the other." Captain Sturt would fain have lingered to examine the beautiful country between the lake and the ranges, but the men were weak from scanty diet and great bodily fatigue. He therefore reluctantly yielded to necessity, and returning to the head of the lake, the party re-entered the river on the 13th of February, under as fair prospects as they could have desired.

For some days they were greatly assisted by the breezes from the lake, but, on the 18th, calms succeeded and obliged them to labor continually at the oars. They lost ground fast, and the spirits of the men began to droop under their first efforts. They fancied the boat pulled heavily. The current was not so strong as when they passed down, and the river had fallen so that in many places they were obliged to haul the boat over the shallows.

They reached the rapids of the Murray on the 6th of March, and next morning attempted to pass them with the aid of ropes. As soon as the boat entered the ripple it spun round like a top, and went away with the stream. The ropes were too short, and they had to get in the water and haul the boat up by main force. The rain was falling fast and they were up to their arm-pits in water, when suddenly a large body

of natives, with their spears, lined the banks above them. As defense was impossible, nothing remained but to continue their exertions. It required but one strong effort to get the boat into still water for a time, but that effort was beyond their strength, and they stood in the stream, powerless and exhausted. At length one of the natives called to them, and they immediately recognized the voice of him who had saved them from the attack of the savages. A man swam over to him for assistance, which was readily given. A second, more dangerous rapid remained to be passed. Fastening a rope to the mast, the men landed and pulled upon it, and the boat shot up the passage with unexpected rapidity. The natives were filled with wonder, and testified their admiration of so dexterous a maneuver by a loud shout.

On the 16th of March, to their great joy, they re-entered the narrow and gloomy channel of the Morumbidgee.*

In the night of the 21st the blacks were discovered stealthily approaching the camp. They were suffered to come near, and two or three had hidden behind a fallen tree, when M'Leay fired a charge of small shot at them. They made a precipitate retreat, but in order to alarm them more effectually a ball was fired into the reeds, which was heard cutting its way through them. All was quiet until three o'clock, when a poor wretch, who had probably thrown himself on the ground when the shots were fired, mustered courage to get up and make his escape. Next day they tried to gain favor with the whites, but Captain Sturt threatened to shoot any that approached, and they kept at a respectful distance, dogging the party from tree to tree. In the evening they remained around the camp, which they again attempted to surprise in the night, but were effectually dispersed by a shot, and retreated across the river. Their spears were found at the fires in the morning, and were all broken up and burned, except those of a black who had befriended the party. As he had kept aloof from the others, Captain Sturt took his spears, nets, and tomahawk, and set out in search of him. On coming near enough, he stuck the spears into the ground, and approaching the man, presented to him his tomahawk. The poor man was speechless, and seemed both ashamed and surprised. He gave a short exclamation at sight of his tomahawk, but refused to grasp it, and it fell to the ground. While they were standing together his two wives came up, to whom, after pointing to the spears and tomahawk, he said something, without looking at Captain Sturt, and they both instantly burst into tears and wept aloud.

* "Whenever we landed on its banks," observes Captain Sturt, "we found the *caulostemma* in full flower, and in the richest profusion. There was also an abundance of grass, where before there had been no signs of vegetation, and those spots which we had condemned as barren were now clothed with a green and luxuriant carpet. So difficult is it to judge of a country on a partial and hurried survey, and so differently does it appear at different periods. I was rejoiced to find that the rains had not swollen the river, for I was apprehensive that heavy falls had taken place in the mountains, and was unprepared for so much good fortune."

them. As defense
 their exertions. It
 still water for a time,
 stood in the stream,
 natives called to them,
 who had saved them
 to him for assistance,
 us rapid remained to
 en landed and pulled
 unexpected rapidity.
 their admiration of so

re-entered the narrow

discovered stealthily ap-
 come near, and two or
 eay fired a charge of
 retreat, but in order to
 the reeds, which was
 quiet until three o'clock,
 himself on the ground
 get up and make his
 the whites, but Captain
 and they kept at a re-
 tree. In the evening
 n attempted to surprise
 y a shot, and retreated
 e fires in the morning,
 se of a black who had
 om the others, Captain
 et out in search of him.
 to the ground, and ap-
 wk. The poor man was
 rised. He gave a short
 used to grasp it, and it
 together his two wives
 and tomahawk, he said
 and they both instantly

in Sturt, "we found the ca-
 ere was also an abundance of
 , and those spots which we
 en and luxuriant carpet. So
 ed survey, and so differently
 that the rains had not swollen
 en place in the mountains, and

On the 23d they reached the dépôt where they had first embarked on the Morumbidgee, but the men were sadly disappointed in finding no supplies. They continued up the river, which now became swollen with the rains, and poured along its turbid waters with great violence. For seventeen days the men pulled against the current with determined perseverance, but at length they began to give way. Their arms appeared to be nerveless, their faces became haggard, their persons emaciated, their spirits wholly sank; nature was so completely overcome, that, from mere exhaustion, they frequently fell asleep during their most painful and almost ceaseless exertions. No murmur, however, escaped them. Captain Sturt frequently heard them in their tent, when they thought he had dropped asleep, complaining of severe pains and of great exhaustion. "I must tell the captain to-morrow," some of them would say, "that I can pull no more." To-morrow came, and they pulled on, as if reluctant to yield to circumstances. Macnamee, one of the men, at length lost his senses. He related the most extraordinary tales and fidgeted about continually while in the boat; he was, therefore, relieved from the oars.

On the 11th of April they gained their old camp opposite Hamilton's Plains, and Captain Sturt resolved to abandon the boat and send two of the men forward to the plain for assistance. This decision was received with joy, and Hopkinson and Mulholland set forward at the earliest dawn next morning. At length the party that remained at the camp had consumed all their provisions. They therefore buried their specimens and other stores on the evening of the 18th, intending to break up the camp in the morning, when their comrades returned. "They were both," says Captain Sturt, "in a state that beggars description. Their knees and ankles were dreadfully swollen, and their limbs so painful that as soon as they arrived at the camp they sank under their efforts, but they met us with smiling countenances, and expressed their satisfaction at having arrived so seasonably to our relief. They had, as I had foreseen, met Robert Harris on the plain, which they reached on the evening of the third day. They had started early next morning on their return with such supplies as they thought we might immediately want. Poor Macnamee had in a great measure recovered, but for some days he was sullen and silent: the sight of the drays gave him uncommon satisfaction."

They left the camp on the following morning, and reached Pondebadgery on the 28th, where they found Robert Harris, with a plentiful supply of provisions. He had been at the plain two months, and intended to move down the river immediately, had they not made their appearance. On the 5th of May they pursued their journey, and in a week arrived at Yass plains; on the 14th they continued their route, and reached Sidney by easy stages on the 25th, after an absence of nearly six months, during which they had made some very important geographical discoveries.



ney
tinu
anxi
from
man
at th
of co
repu
som
to B
I
an e
and
Capt
both
temp
time
fathe
his J
rescu
Capt
waro
was
at th
cient
S
Arct
furth
besid
cano

BACK'S ARCTIC LAND EXPEDITION.

FROM the year 1826, when Franklin made his second overland journey to the Polar Sea, until 1833, no attempt was made by land to continue the survey of the northern coasts of America. But in 1832 great anxiety began to be felt about the fate of Sir John Ross, who had sailed from England in the year 1829, and had not been heard of. He commanded a small vessel called the *Victory*, which was fitted out entirely at the expense of himself and the late Sir Felix Booth, for the purpose of continuing his northern discoveries, and enabling him to vindicate his reputation as an able and enterprising navigator, which latter had been somewhat doubted in consequence of the ill success of a previous voyage to Baffin's Bay.

It was accordingly resolved by the friends of Captain Ross to send an expedition overland to the shores of the Arctic Sea in search of him, and a fitting leader for it was found in the well-trying and experienced Captain Back, who, as Lieutenant Back, had accompanied Franklin in both his expeditions. He no sooner heard of such a project being contemplated, than he hastened from Italy, where he happened to be at the time, and offered his services. Mr. Ross, the brother of Sir John, and father of Captain James Ross, drew up a petition to the king, "praying his Majesty's sanction to the immediate dispatch of an expedition for rescuing or at least ascertaining the fate of his son and brother;" and Captain Back's name being inserted as a leader, the petition was forwarded, and shortly after received the royal assent. A grant of £2,000 was also made by government, while a public subscription soon placed at the disposal of Captain Ross's friends a sum that was more than sufficient to defray all the expenses of the undertaking.

So great was the anxiety felt by the public and private friends of the Arctic explorer, that every thing was done that could be devised for the furtherance of the searching expedition. The Hudson's Bay Company, besides supplying a large quantity of provisions, two boats, and two canoes, gratis, took the expedition under their special protection, by

issuing a commission under their seal to Captain Back as commander, thereby assuring him the co-operation of all the agents throughout their territories. In the instructions given to him by the Admiralty, Captain Back was directed to proceed to Great Salt Lake, and to winter on or near the head-waters of the Thlew-ee-choh-dezeth, or Great Fish River, which was supposed to flow from that lake, to follow the river to the sea the ensuing summer, and to explore the coast around Cape Garry, where the *Fury* was wrecked, searching everywhere for traces of the lost explorers. Armed with this authority, as well as by that given to him by the Hudson's Bay Company, Captain Back, Mr. King, surgeon and naturalist to the expedition, and three men, two of whom had served in a former expedition under Captain Franklin, embarked in the packet-ship *Hibernia*, Captain Maxwell, from Liverpool, and on the 17th February, 1833, sailed for America.*

From New York, Captain Back and his party proceeded by way of Montreal, the Ottawa, Lake Nipissing, and Sault St. Marie to Fort William, on Lake Superior, where they arrived on the 20th of May. Here the large canoes were to be exchanged for smaller ones, and a short delay took place in consequence of the difficulty the men had in dividing the lading among them. Resuming their journey, on the 6th of June they reached Fort Alexander, on Lake Winnipeg, where Captain Back found it necessary to remain a few days, to await the arrival of Governor Simpson, who was expected daily. During this period he and Mr. King employed themselves in making a set of observations for the dip of the needle, while the men busied themselves in unpacking and drying the provision and packages, which had got slightly damp during the voyage.

As most of the men for the expedition were yet to be engaged, it was necessary that they should proceed to Norway House—a dépôt of the company near the opposite extremity of Lake Winnipeg—where the brigades of boats from the distant regions of the interior converge on their way to the sea. Captain Back reached there on

* "Eight months after their departure, Captain Ross and the survivors of his party, whom a merciful God had brought in safety through dangers and privations unparalleled in arctic story, arrived in England after an absence of four years and five months. During this protracted period they had made very important geographical discoveries; fixed the position of the northern magnetic pole, and experienced hardships and privations, and encountered dangers, that fill us with admiration and wonder at the endurance and fortitude of the men who dared and overcame them all. Their little vessel, the *Victory*, having become unfit for use, had been abandoned, and the wanderers were at last providentially discovered by a whaler, the *Isabella* of Hull, which conveyed them from the icy regions, where they had been so long immured, to the sunny shores of their native land. Although the principal object of the expedition under Captain Back was thus obviated, yet the dispatches containing the intelligence did not overtake him until after he had reached his winter quarters in the sterile and romantic regions of the north; so that, even had it been desirable, he could not have returned home. As it was, however, he received the intelligence early enough to prevent his wasting time in the now unnecessary search; and he accordingly turned his undivided attention to the second object of the expedition."—*Tyler's "Northern Coast of America."*

the
wer
dem
thei
gag
Cap
long
Hou
awai
cano
Now
antic
come
erran
E
the 5
by M
with
two r
ninet
eight
other
of Ju
to tak
this c
boats
vance
A
men v
dition
expre
Back
qualif
Fort
taino
were
for m
ment
which
shoal
Mr. K
evenin
Or
Lake
sound
them,

Back as commander, ants throughout their Admiralty, Captain and to winter on or or Great Fish River, low the river to the around Cape Garry, re for traces of the as by that given to , Mr. King, surgeon two of whom had lin, embarked in the verpool, and on the

roceeded by way of . Marie to Fort Wil- 20th of May. Here ones, and a short demen had in dividing , on the 6th of June where Captain Back arrival of Governor od he and Mr. King ons for the dip of the king and drying the p during the voyage. yet to be engaged, way House—a dépôt f Lake Winnipeg— gions of the interior ck reached there on

the survivors of his party, nd privations unparalleled s and five months. During ical discoveries; fixed the ships and privations, and at the endurance and fertile vessel, the *Victory*, hav- derers were at last provi- onveyed them from the icy shores of their native land. n Back was thus obviated, ke him until after he had ons of the north; so that, . As it was, however, he time in the now unneces- sion to the second object of

the 17th, but found it a difficult matter to engage men, some of whom were reluctant to encounter the perils of the journey, while others demanded exorbitant rewards, and others again were prevented by their wives. Finally, eighteen able and experienced hands were engaged, part of whom were sent off in advance with Dr. King, while Captain Back, retaining sufficient to man his canoe, remained a few days longer; and then, on the 28th of June, 1833, started for Cumberland House, where two boats and a large supply of stores and provisions awaited him. "This," says he, "was a happy day for me; and as the canoe pushed from the bank, my heart swelled with hope and joy. Now, for the first time, I saw myself in a condition to verify the kind anticipations of my friends. The preliminary difficulties had been overcome. I was fairly on my way to the accomplishment of the benevolent errand on which I had been commissioned."

Entering the Saskatchewan River, they ascended its stream, and on the 5th of July arrived at Cumberland House, where they were received by Mr. Isbister, the company's agent, and Mr. King, who had arrived without accident. Here the greater number of the party embarked in two new *batteaux*, each being laden with a cargo of sixty-one pieces of ninety pounds each, making for both ten thousand nine hundred and eighty pounds, exclusive of men, bedding, clothes, masts, sails, oars, and other spars. They sailed, under the command of Mr. King, on the 6th of July, while Captain Back, still retaining his canoe, remained behind to take some observations and write dispatches for England. Although this occupied him a few days, yet in a very short time he overtook the boats in his light canoe, and proceeded on his way, leaving them to advance more slowly to their wintering ground.

At the Pine Portage they met Mr. A. R. M'Leod, one of the gentlemen who had been appointed by the governor to accompany the expedition. This gentleman no sooner heard of the appointment, than he expressed his willingness to go, and during the following year Captain Back had reason to rejoice in the acquisition of a man who was eminently qualified for the service in all respects. On the 29th of July they reached Fort Chipewyan. Here some slight, though vague, information was obtained from the Indians, regarding the position of the river of which they were in search. They also completed their stock of provisions, leather for making moccasins, guns, and implements for building an establishment in which to pass the winter. Another canoe was also obtained, which, it was thought, might prove convenient in the event of finding shoal rivers to the north; and further instructions having been left for Mr. King, on his arriving with the *batteaux*, they left the fort late on the evening of the 1st of August.

On reaching the Salt River, they met with a large body of Slave Lake Indians, who notified their approach by horrible and discordant sounds. As it was hoped some information might be obtained from them, a council was called by Mr. M'Leod, which was ceremoniously

opened by passing round the pipe according to Indian custom, from which each counsellor drew a few puffs in solemn silence, and with imperturbable gravity; after which there was a very large amount of talk, resulting in a very small amount of information. On the 8th of August they reached Great Slave Lake, and arrived at Fort Resolution. At this post they remained some days to arrange about an interpreter, complete their stock of necessaries, and repair the canoes; and then, launching forth again, they coasted along the northern shores of Great Slave Lake.

At the eastern extremity of this lake, a river entered it which, it was supposed, flowed from the country where the Thlew-ee-choh took its rise; and toward this river Captain Back directed his course with increasing hope, notwithstanding the account given of it by the Indians, who assured him that it was full of rapids and waterfalls. On the way he experienced the usual alternations of storm and calm, rain and sunshine, while his route was enlivened by occasionally meeting with Indians. One of these fellows, to show his respect for the white men, put on a *surtout* which he had purchased at the fort; and, as the *surtouts* sent out for the fur trade are made of snuff-colored brown cloth, in the cut of the last century—with a rolling collar about four inches wide reaching half way up the back of the head, single breast, particularly long skirt, and peculiarly short waist—it may be supposed the awkward son of the forest did not improve his appearance by the adoption of such a garb. Being allowed to remain unbuttoned, it disclosed the fact that he was unprovided with inexpressibles, which produced an irresistibly comical effect.

They now approached the eastern extremity of Great Slave Lake, where was the river whose sources, it was said, rose near the springs of the Thlew-ee-choh. Captain Back had great difficulty here in getting a satisfactory answer from the Indians who accompanied him, as to the whereabouts of this river. Many of them said that it existed, but only one admitted that he had ever seen it; and as that was long ago, when he was a little boy, while hunting with his father in the barren grounds, he expressed great doubts as to his being able to find it. We can not but admire the steady persevering energy of Captain Back, in facing and overcoming the innumerable and often vexatious difficulties which were thrown in his way by these lazy natives. They thwarted him continually; told lies with imperturbable gravity, and sometimes, under pretense of paying a visit to their relations, deserted him altogether.

On the 18th of August they at last reached the object of their search—the river which was to conduct them to a chain of lakes leading to the Thlew-ee-choh. It broke upon them unexpectedly, when rounding some small rocks which shut out from their view a bay, at the bottom of which was seen a splendid fall, upward of sixty feet high, rushing in two white and misty volumes into the dark gulf below. Here they landed, and set about thoroughly repairing the small canoe which was to proceed up the rapids, while the other, and the greater part of the bag-

ga
Ma
nie
but
can
the

the
the
the
belo
bar

gent
pend
know
an o
unde
tome
forts
culti
and p
succ
Thei
heme
sick.
tain
much
whic
made

T
hung
hero
the b
that
rapid
dexte
falls,
padd
and,
woul
and e
along
O
in sea
neigh

Indian custom, from
 silence, and with im-
 mense amount of talk,
 on the 8th of August
 a Resolution. At
 an interpreter, com-
 mands; and then, launch-
 ing the canoes of Great Slave

erred it which, it was
 Thlew-ee-choh took its
 its course with in-
 of it by the Indians,
 waterfalls. On the way
 a calm, rain and sun-
 connecting with Indians.
 the men, put on a sur-
 the surtouts sent out
 cloth, in the cut of the
 wide reaching half-
 cularly long skirt, and
 ward son of the forest
 such a garb. Being
 et that he was unpro-
 istibly comical effect.
 of Great Slave Lake,
 se near the springs of
 culty here in getting a
 npanied him, as to the
 at it existed, but only
 at was long ago, when
 in the barren grounds,
 o find it. We can not
 ain Back, in facing and
 difficulties which were
 arded him continually;
 mes, under pretense of
 ogether.

the object of their search
 ain of lakes leading to
 ctedly, when rounding
 w a bay, at the bottom
 ty feet high, rushing in
 gulf below. Here they
 small canoe which was to
 greater part of the bag-

gauge, was left in charge of La Prise, who undertook to deliver them to Mr. McLeod; that gentleman having been deputed to choose a convenient situation, at the eastern extremity of Great Slave Lake, whereon to build a winter residence, while Captain Back should proceed in his light canoe as far down the Thlew-ee-choh as practicable, returning again to the establishment before the winter fairly set in.

The true work of the explorers had now fairly begun. Before them the gushing stream, which was called the Hoar Frost River, roared down the scattered rocks like the thundering cannonade which streams through the breach of a stormed fortress, while the forlorn hope of *voyageurs* below prepared to storm the stream, and take possession of the unknown barren grounds that lay beyond.

"A new scene," says Back, "now opened upon us. Instead of the gentle paddling across the level lake, by which we had been enabled to penetrate thus far, we had to toil up the steep and rocky bed of an unknown stream, on our way to the high lands, from which the waters take an opposite course. The labors which had hitherto been so cheerfully undergone, were little more than those to which *voyageurs* are accustomed; but in what was to come, it was evident that extraordinary efforts and patient perseverance would be required to overcome the difficulties of our route." Up this stream, then, they went, carrying canoe and provisions over rocks, mountains, and plains, in order to avoid a succession of rapids which intercepted them all the way up the river. Their old friends the sand-flies, too, assailed them here with extreme vehemence, and, to add to their miseries, Maufelly, the interpreter, fell sick. Having only a box of common pills, and a bottle of brandy, Captain Back at first refused the Indian's request to doctor him, but, being much pressed, he at last indulged him, first with the contents of the box, which made him worse, and then with the contents of the bottle, which made him better.

The scenery here was exceedingly wild. High beetling cliffs overhung dark gorges, through which the water rushed impetuously, while here and there lay quiet sheets of clear water, reflecting on their bosoms the bold outlines that towered overhead, and the variously-colored mosses that covered the rocks and enriched the scene. Among these wild rapids, De Charlot, the bowman, exhibited admirable adroitness and dexterity. In the midst of dangers the most imminent from rapids or falls, he was cool, fearless, and collected; and often, when the pole or paddle was no longer available, he would spring into the curling water, and, with a foot firmly planted, maintain his position, where others would have been swept away in an instant. But, in spite of all his care and exertion, the canoe was sorely buffeted, and the bark hung in shreds along its sides, ripped and broken in every quarter.

On the 29th of August, while the men were out scouring the country in search of the Thlew-ee-choh, which it was supposed must be in the neighborhood of the spot where their tent was pitched, Captain Back

sallied forth with his gun. "Becoming anxious," says he, "about the men, I took my gun, and following a north-north-west direction, went out to look for them. Having passed a small sheet of water, I ascended a hill, from the top of which I discerned, to my great delight, a rapid, evidently connected with the stream which flowed through the narrow channel from the lake. With a quickened step I proceeded to trace its course, and, in doing so, was further gratified at being obliged to wade through the sedgy waters of springs. Crossing two rivulets whose lively ripples ran due north into the rapid, the thought occurred to me that these feeders might be tributaries of the Thlew-ee-choh; and, yielding to that pleasing emotion which discoverers, in the first bound of their transport, may be pardoned for indulging, I threw myself down on the bank, and drank a hearty draught of the limpid water."

That this was actually the source of the river of which they were in search, was speedily confirmed by the men, who returned soon afterward, saying that they had discovered it on the second day, and described it as being large enough for boats. Proceeding across some small lakes and portages, they traveled toward the river until their canoe, which had been showing unmistakable symptoms of a broken constitution, became at last so rickety as to render it advisable to return. From the appearance of the country, and especially of some blue hills in the distance, it was conjectured that the river was full of rapids, and that their work of next summer would not be child's play.

Their route back to winter quarters was even more harassing than their advance. The rickety canoe having nearly gone to pieces in several rapids, was finally abandoned, and her cargo strapped to the backs of the men, who set off to walk back over land. The account of this journey, as given by the indefatigable leader, is particularly interesting, but our limits forbid our entering upon it in detail. Over hill and dale, through swamp, jungle, and morass, they pursued their toilsome march; now crashing with their heavy loads down the tangled and bushy banks of a small creek, and then slowly clambering up the craggy sides of the opposite bank; sometimes plodding through a quaking swamp, at other times driving through a wood of stunted trees; and all the while assailed by a host of sand-flies and mosquitoes. At last, however, their sorrows, for a time, came to an end. "We had now," says Back, "reached the lake where, in my letter of the 19th of August, I had directed Mr. M'Leod to build an establishment. Proceeding onward, over the even and mossy surface of the sand-banks, we were one day gladdened by the sound of the woodman's stroke; and, guided by the branchless trunks that lay stretched along the earth, we soon came to a bay, where, in agreeable relief against the dark green foliage, stood the newly-erected frame-work of a house. Mr. M'Leod was walking under the shade of the trees with La Prise, and did not hear us till we were within a few yards of him. We were ranged in single file, the men having, of their own accord, fallen into that order; and, with

says he, "about the west direction, went of water, I ascended great delight, a rapid, through the narrow proceeded to trace its being obliged to wade rivulets whose lively occurred to me that ee-choh; and, yielding the first bound of their myself down on the water."

er of which they were returned soon after the second day, and de- proceeding across some river until their canoe, s of a broken constitu- it advisable to return. ially of some blue hills was full of rapids, and child's play.

en more harassing than y gone to pieces in sev- o strapped to the backs d. The account of this particularly interesting, tail. Over hill and dale, ed their toilsome march; tangled and bushy banks p the craggy sides of the quaking swamp, at other es; and all the while as-

At last, however, their e had now," says Back, e 19th of August, I had ent. Proceeding onward, l-banks, we were one day roke; and, guided by the e earth, we soon came to dark green foliage, stood Mr. McLeod was walking nd did not hear us till we raged in single file, the nto that order; and, with

swollen faces, dressed and laden as we were, some carrying guns, others tent-poles, etc., we must have presented a strangely wild appearance, not unlike a group of robbers on the stage."

Captain Back and his hardy companions had now reached their winter quarters. In the cold heart of the wilderness, thousands and thousands of miles from the dwellings of civilized men, between whom and them lay the almost impassable barriers of broad foaming rivers and sea-like lakes, whose waters were becoming crusted with the fine intersecting needles of ice, which, ere long, would solidify them nearly to the bottom—high, broken, rugged mountains, dreary morasses, boundless prairies, and dense, dark, interminable forests. "The following day," says he, "being Sunday, divine service was read, and our imperfect thanks were humbly offered to Almighty God for the mercies which had already been vouchsafed to us; and though in this imperious climate, with every thing to do, time was certainly precious, yet, feeling that the first opening of the sacred volume in this distant wilderness ought not to be profaned by any mixture of common labor, I made it a day of real quiet and repose."

Mr. King, who, as has been previously mentioned, was left behind with the two boats, rejoined the party on the 16th of September, having incurred not a little difficulty in consequence of his want of experience in these climes, and had been occasionally imposed upon by the *voyageurs*. The whole party now set briskly to work to complete their buildings. Trees were soon felled, branched, squared, and put together, with a celerity peculiar to Canadians and half-breeds, who, being all but born with the ax in their hands, become very expert in the use of it. Though the trees were small, a sufficient number for their purpose were speedily procured; slabs and planks were sawn, stones chipped, mud and grass collected for mortar; and, in a few days, as if by magic, a dwelling-house was raised, sufficiently weather-tight to shelter the whole party during a winter that was to last fully eight months. All establishments in the Indian country, however lowly and innocent in appearance, being dignified with the title of *Fort*, Captain Back thought proper to call this one Fort Reliance. Its exact position was in latitude 62° 46' north, longitude 109° west. It consisted of a house fifty feet long by thirty broad, having four separate rooms, with a spacious hall in the center for the reception and accommodation of Indians. Each of the rooms had a fireplace and a rude chimney. A miserable apology for a room, with many a yawning crevice inviting the entrance of the cold elements, was, out of courtesy, called a kitchen; and another house, standing at right angles to this one on the western side, formed a dwelling for the men. An observatory was also constructed at a short distance from the establishment, wherein certain mysterious and complicated instruments were fixed and erected; iron in all forms being carefully excluded, and a fence run round it to guard it more effectually from the men, as they walked about with their guns, ice chisels, and axes.

The site of the establishment was a level bank of gravel and sand, covered with rein-deer moss, shrubs, and trees, looking more like a park than an American forest. It formed the northern extremity of a bay, from twelve to fifteen miles long, and from three to five miles broad, which was named after Mr. M'Leod. The river Ah-hel-dessy fell into this bay from the westward, and another small river from the east. In



ANDERSON'S FALLS.

the Ah-hel-dessy, not far from their winter-quarters, there was a magnificent cascade, to which Captain Back gave the name of Anderson's Falls.

Here they took up their abode, and the miseries through which they were doomed to pass during that dreary winter began even at this time. Fish, upon which they depended in a great measure, began to fail at the very commencement of the season. From one place to another the nets were shifted, with the hope of finding a larger supply; but, so far from succeeding in this, the men who were sent found that there was scarce sufficient to maintain themselves from day to day, and on more than one occasion returned to the fort, being unable to support themselves. Deer also failed them; for, although there were plenty of these animals in the

ION.

f gravel and sand,
g more like a park
xtremity of a bay,
o five miles broad,
h-hel-dessy fell into
from the east. In



ers, there was a magnifi-
cance of Anderson's Falls.
ries through which they
began even at this time.
sure, began to fail at the
place to another the nets
supply; but, so far from
and that there was scarce
y, and on more than one
support themselves. Deer
ty of these animals in the

country, they kept so far away from the fort, and continued so long among the barren grounds, where it was exceedingly difficult to approach them, that very few were obtained, and these at long intervals. The bags of pemmican which Mr. King had brought in his boats were intended for the expedition of the following summer; and as it could not be carried on without that article of food, nothing but the utmost extremity would induce Captain Back to break upon it.

During all this period, and for months afterward, the fort was besieged by starving Indians, who flocked to it in the vain hope of obtaining assistance from its almost equally unfortunate inmates. As this, however, was a disposition which it would have been ruinous to the expedition to encourage, Captain Back positively refused any assistance in the shape of food, except to those of them who, from infirmity or sickness, were absolutely incapable of going forth to hunt. One of this class was picked up in the woods and brought to the fort. A miserable old woman, "clad," says Back, "in deer-skin, her eyes all but closed, her hair matted and filthy, her skin shriveled, and feebly supporting, with the aid of a stick held by both hands, a trunk which was literally horizontal, she presented, if such an expression may be pardoned, the shocking and unnatural appearance of a human brute. It was a humiliating spectacle, and one which I would not willingly see again. Poor wretch! Her tale was soon told: old and decrepit, she had come to be considered as a burden even by her own sex. Past services and toils were forgotten, and, in their figurative style, they coldly told her, that 'though she appeared to live, she was already dead,' and must be abandoned to her fate. 'There is a new fort,' said they, 'go there; the whites are great medicine men, and may have power to save you.' This was a month before; since which time she had crawled and hobbled along the rocks, the scanty supply of berries which she found upon them just enabling her to live." This pitiable object was brought to the fort, fed and taken care of—being permitted to live in the hall, where she crawled about on all fours at will, moaning over the fire, or creeping into Mr. King's room, whom she found to be the only one who could alleviate her sufferings. These, however, had been greater than she could bear. Notwithstanding all their care, she sank from day to day, until she appeared a living skeleton, and was found dead at last in a tent, beside the ashes of a small fire.

Famine in its worst form now began to stare them in the face. Day after day brought fresh intelligence from the various fisheries of their ill success, while parties of starving natives arrived from the hunting grounds, in the hope of getting a few scraps of food at the fort. Captain Back, with characteristic benevolence, imparted to them as much as could be spared from his own little stock, endeavoring to revive their drooping spirits and urge them on to action. It was in vain, however. The scourge was too heavy, and their exertions were completely paralyzed. No sooner had one party been prevailed on to

leave the fort, than another, still more languid and distressed, feebly entered, and confirmed, by their half-famished looks and sunken eyes, their heart-rending tale of suffering. They spoke little, but crowded in silence round the fire, as if eager to enjoy the only comfort remaining to them. And, truly, fire was a comfort of no ordinary kind, when it is remembered that the temperature during that terrible winter fell to seventy degrees *below zero* of Fahrenheit!

It is difficult for those who have not experienced it, to comprehend the intensity of this degree of cold. Captain Back and his friend Mr. King made a few experiments during their long dreary winter, which will serve to convey some idea of it. A bottle of sulphuric ether was placed on the snow when the temperature was sixty-two degrees below zero. In fifteen minutes the interior upper surface of the bottle was coated with ice, while the ether became viscous and opaque. A small bottle of pyroligneous acid froze in less than thirty minutes at a temperature of fifty-seven degrees minus; and a surface of four inches of mercury exposed in a saucer became solid in two hours, at the same temperature. On the 4th of February so intensely cold was it, that a higher temperature than twelve degrees above zero could not be obtained in the house, even although there were eight large logs of wood blazing in the chimney of a small room. As might be imagined, cold, of such a peculiarly sharp nature, used to prove inconvenient in more ways than one, and Captain Back tells us that his ink froze, and that in making an attempt to finish a water-color sketch he signally failed—the material becoming frozen even while he sat so close to a huge fire as considerably to endanger the legs of his trowsers!

On the 25th of April, 1834, while the snow still lay deep on the ground, and every thing wore the same unchanging, and seemingly unchangeable, aspect that it had worn ever since October, the winter-packet arrived, bringing intelligence of the safe arrival of Sir J. Ross and his crew in England. To those who were to have devoted the ensuing summer to the search, this was a subject of unmixed pleasure, both as assuring them of the safety of their enterprising countrymen, and as setting them free to devote themselves entirely to the secondary object of the expedition.

Part of the men were now sent to the only clump of pines which afforded trees of a sufficient size to saw up into planks for building a boat—this conveyance being deemed better than a canoe for the summer journey. The famine still continued to press heavily upon them. Many of the natives died, while some of them tried to allay the cravings of hunger by eating parts of their deer-skin shoes and coats. At the fisheries little or nothing was caught, and at the fort they were obliged reluctantly to break upon the supply of pemmican. The solitude and desolation of the establishment was extreme, and perhaps no better idea of it could be conveyed than by the quotation of a paragraph from Back's journal in which he speaks of the death of two tame ravens.

distressed, feebly
and sunken eyes,
little, but crowded
comfort remaining
any kind, when it is
ible winter fell to

it, to comprehend
and his friend Mr.
reary winter, which
sulphuric ether was
-two degrees below
e of the bottle was
l opaque. A small
ty minutes at a tem-
ce of four inches of
hours, at the same
y cold was it, that a
o could not be ob-
t large logs of wood
e be imagined, cold,
nconvenient in more
ink froze, and that
he signally failed—
close to a huge fire
s!

still lay deep on the
ng, and seemingly un-
October, the winter-
arrival of Sir J. Ross
to have devoted the
of unmixed pleasure,
rprising countrymen,
irely to the secondary

clump of pines which
planks for building a
a canoe for the sum-
ness heavily upon them.
d to allay the cravings
es and coats. At the
fort they were obliged
an. The solitude and
perhaps no better idea
n of a paragraph from
h of two tame ravens.

"For the last fifteen days," says he, "our habitation had been rendered more cheerful by the presence of two ravens, which having, by my express direction, been left unmolested, had become so tame as scarcely to move ten paces when any one passed them; they were the only living things that held communion with us, and it was a pleasure to see them gambol in their glossy plumage on the white snow. A party of men had arrived over night, and among them was an Iroquois, who, perceiving the birds together, and being ignorant of my wishes, could not resist the temptation of a double shot, and so killed them both. In any other situation such an event would, perhaps, have seemed too trifling to be noticed; but in our case the ravens were the only link between us and the dreary solitude without, and their loss therefore was painfully felt. * * * When they were gone, I felt more lonely, and the moaning wind seemed as if complaining of the barbarity."

On the 7th of June, things being considered in a sufficiently advanced state to permit of operations being commenced, Captain Back and his party set out once more upon their travels. The boat, which was thirty feet long, was placed upon runners, and dragged over the yet unmelted ice of the lakes and swamps, across many of which they had to pass ere they could launch upon the Thlew-ee-choh. The men had each a small sled, or runner, on which to drag a certain amount of the baggage and provisions—averaging about one hundred pounds—and away they went with great merriment at the grotesque appearance they cut as they stumbled and slipped over the jagged surface of the ice. In a very short time this work began to tell upon the runners of the sledges, which peeled up, and otherwise evinced symptoms of very speedy dissolution. In this dilemma the captain bethought himself of two pitsaws which they had with them. These were got out, cut into strips, nailed to the runners, and in a few hours away they went again with increased speed, and very much diminished tear and wear.

Mr. McLeod, with a party of Indians, was sent on ahead of the main body to hunt, and make *caches* of the meat, to be picked up as the party behind came up to them. An encamping-place of this advance-guard was fallen upon by Captain Back while he was straying a little from his party. As he stood looking at it, he observed a tin kettle half buried in the snow, which on examination was found to contain thirty-four balls, a file broken in three pieces, an awl, a fire-steel, and a crooked knife. This, the most valuable portion of an Indian's possessions, had been thrown away, according to a custom prevailing among that people, either as an expiatory sacrifice for some calamity, or as a token of extreme affliction for the loss of a wife or child. The captain usually kept ahead of his party, being desirous of finding the caches, and laying the meat on an exposed place in his track, so as to avoid waste of time in collecting it. In this way they continued their route for many days, over every sort of lake, pond, river, swamp, creek, or pool, that can or

can not be imagined ; sometimes comfortably, and sometimes miserably. The want of fire was their chief discomfort.

Toward the middle of June the weather became very cold and boisterous, especially Midsummer's-day, which was the coldest, blackest, and most wintry day they had. On the 22d of June, being Sunday, divine service was read in the tent, where, to the credit of the men, be it mentioned, they all came clean and shaved, notwithstanding the discomforts to which they were exposed.

On the 28th they arrived near the banks of the Thlew-ec-choh, and on the afternoon of the same day were fairly launched upon its head waters. These, however, were full of ice, and it was not until several days afterward that Captain Back felt it safe to dismiss his extra hands, and the Indians who had accompanied him thus far to carry provisions. On the 3d of July, however, having assembled them on the bank of the river, he relieved them of their burdens, and arranged the party which was to accompany him to the Polar Sea. And greatly did it surprise the Indians to see a boat manned by Europeans, and stored with the provision of the southern country, after having been hauled, carried, and dragged over every imaginable kind of obstacle for full two hundred miles, at last fairly launched on the clear waters of the barren lands. Mr. McLeod was dismissed at this point, with instructions to collect provisions against their return, and to meet them again in September on the banks of the Thlew-ec-choh.

While he and his party were debating as to which part of the country would be best to return by, provisions being somewhat scarce, the fog cleared away, and discovered the branching antlers of twenty reindeer spread over the summit of the adjacent hills. "To see and pursue was the work of a moment, and in a few minutes not an active hunter remained in the encampment. It was a beautiful and interesting sight; for the sun shone out, and lighting up some parts, cast others into deeper shade; the white ice reflected millions of dazzling rays; the rapid leaped and chafed in little ripples, which melted away into the unruffled surface of the slumbering lake; abrupt and craggy rocks frowned on the right, and, on the left, the brown landscape receded until it was lost in the distant blue mountains. The foreground was filled up with the ocher-colored lodges of the Indians, contrasting with our own pale tents; and to the whole scene animation was given by the graceful motions of the unstartled deer, and the treacherous crawling of the wary hunters."

The very first day introduced them to the perils which they were to encounter in that rugged river. Coming up to a strong rapid, and fall, down which the boat could only be run in a light state, all the baggage was carried over the rocks, and four good hands left in the boat. They pushed off into the stream, and ran the first fall in safety; but having steered too much to the left, they were drawn on a ledge of rock, forming part of the second; this brought the boat up with a crash which

threatened immediate destruction, and called forth a shriek from the prostrate crew. The steersman jumped out on the rock and tried to lift her off, but without success. Another moment, and the fierce current swung her stern round, and it seemed as if nothing could save her from descending in a gush of green water straight on to a sharp rock below, against which a wave of five feet high was breaking. Happily the steering-oar had been left projecting out astern, and, as the boat swung, it caught a rock, which pitched her out broadside to the current, when she was carried down in safety.

The party now consisted of eight boatmen, Mr. King, and the commander, and seldom has so small a band of adventurers experienced such a hazardous, comfortless, and truly rough-and-tumble journey as they did. The weather, which had been all along boisterous and cold, became worse and worse as they went on, so that they were frequently wet all day, and owing to the want of firewood, they were of necessity wet all night. The river expanded sometimes into immense lakes, which often detained, and sometimes threatened to arrest them altogether; at other places it narrowed into a deep and rapid stream, which gushed in a black boiling mass through high cliffs, or foamed over a rugged bed of broken rocks and boulder-stones—terminating not unfrequently in a stupendous fall. Obstacles of this kind, however they may interrupt the progress of ordinary men, are no barriers in the way of nor'-westers; so they swept through the gorges, maneuvered skillfully down the rapids, and made portages to avoid the falls, with a degree of facility and safety that was little short of miraculous. In one place they had a narrow escape, which is but a specimen of what was of daily occurrence. "A little sheet of water," says Back, "bounded to the right by mounds and hills of white sand, with patches of rich herbage, where numerous deer were feeding, brought us to a long and appalling rapid, full of rocks and large boulders; the sides hemmed in by a wall of ice, and the current flying with the velocity and force of a torrent. The boat was lightened of her cargo, and I stood on a high rock, with an anxious heart, to see her run it. I had every hope which confidence in the judgment and dexterity of my principal men could inspire; but it was impossible not to feel that one crash would be fatal to the expedition. Away they went, with the speed of an arrow, and, in a moment, the foam and rocks hid them from my view. I heard what sounded in my ear like a wild shriek, and saw Mr. King, who was a hundred yards before me, make a sign with his gun, and then run forward. I followed, with an agitation which may be conceived; and, to my inexpressible joy, found that the shriek was the triumphant whoop of the crew, who had landed safely in a small bay below. This was called Malley's Rapid, in consequence of one of the party, so called, having lost himself in the adjacent willows for some time."

On the 13th of July, a glimpse of sunshine tempted the captain to halt for the purpose of taking observations, and, while he was thus engaged, the men were permitted to scour the country in pursuit of deer and

musk-oxen, which literally swarmed in the barren grounds, and infused life and animation into many a wild, picturesque scene. The hunters soon returned with four fine bucks, which afforded them an agreeable change from the customary meal of pemmican.

The latitude was $65^{\circ} 38' 21''$ north, and longitude $106^{\circ} 35' 23''$ west. At this place the river began to take an easterly bend, which perplexed and annoyed them much; causing great anxiety as to whether it would ultimately lead them to the frozen sea, or terminate in Hudson's Bay. In any case, they had nothing for it but to push on, and their labors were rewarded afterward by their finding that the river trended again in a northerly direction, and their hopes were further increased by the discovery, on the 16th of July, of some old Esquimaux encampments. Once, indeed, they thought they saw tents of the Esquimaux ahead, but on a nearer approach they turned out to be some luxuriant clumps of willows, which were inhabited by thousands of geese. They had selected the spot as being a convenient one for the operation of casting their feathers. Geese, while in this condition, are most superb runners, and put the hunters to their utmost mettle sometimes to catch them; leading them through bog, pool, and swamp, with a dexterity that often brings their pursuers into many an awkward and watery predicament.

On the 28th of July, they met the first Esquimaux, who, as usual on their first seeing Europeans, exhibited at once their consternation and astonishment, by shouts, yells, antics, and gesticulations of the most savage character; laboring under the impression, apparently, that by so doing they would frighten their new visitors away. As is also usual on such occasions, of course they found themselves mistaken, for the boat continued to approach the shore despite the brandishing of spears and other belligerent demonstrations; whereupon the whole nation formed in a semi-circle round the spot where the boat grounded, and stood on the defensive. Captain Back, however, soon established friendly relations with them, by walking boldly up, unarmed and alone, at the same time calling out *Tima*—peace—with great emphasis, tossing up his arms in true Esquimaux style, and, finally, shaking hands all round. This quieted them, and they soon mingled with the men, from whom they received a few buttons with great delight.

A portage had to be made at this place; so, to divert the attention of the poor natives, and prevent their being tempted to steal, Captain Back went up to their tents and sketched them. He describes them as being neat and well-made, not so cunning as those further to the west, and altogether a harmless, inoffensive race. His description of the taking of a portrait is so humorous that we give it in his own words: "The only lady," says he, "whose portrait was sketched, was so flattered at being selected for the distinction, that, in her fear lest I should not sufficiently see every grace of her good-tempered countenance, she intently watched my eye; and, according to her notion of the part I was penciling, protruded it or turned it, so as to leave me no excuse for

L
their
first
This,
and t
ning
line
*
represe
Rae, th
stato
posite
view v

ON.

ounds, and infused
ene. The hunters
hem an agreeable

106° 35' 23" west.
l, which perplexed
o whether it would
in Hudson's Bay.
on, and their labors
river trended again
er increased by the
naux encampments.
e Esquimaux ahead,
ome luxuriant clumps
f geese. They had
operation of casting
most superb runners,
etimes to catch them;
a dexterity that often
ratory predicament.
aux, who, as usual on
their consternation and
culations of the most
apparently, that by so
y. As is also usual on
mistaken, for the boat
dishing of spears and
e whole nation formed
grounded, and stood on
stablished friendly rela-
and alone, at the same
asis, tossing up his arms
hands all round. This
men, from whom they

to divert the attention
mpted to steal, Captain
l. He describes them as
hose further to the west,
His description of the
ve it in his own words:
was sketched, was so flat-
t, in her fear lest I should
mpered countenance, she
her notion of the part I
to leave me no excuse for

THEY REACH THE POLAR SEA.

611

not delineating it in the full proportion of its beauty. Thus, seeing me look at her head, she immediately bent it down, stared portentously when I sketched her eyes; puffed out her cheeks when their turn arrived; and, finally, perceiving that I was touching in the mouth, opened it to the full extent of her jaws, and thrust out the whole length of her tongue!" From these friendly natives they received assistance in carrying the boat over a very bad portage—a task to which the men were quite unequal; so that to them Captain Back was indebted for aid, without which he would not have reached the sea at all.



VIEW SEAWARD FROM MONTREAL ISLAND.*

Leaving these interesting denizens of the north, the party pursued their way, and, on the 29th of July, were gladdened with a sight of the first headland in the Polar Sea, which was named Victoria Headland. This, then, was the mouth of the Thlew-ee-choh, which, after a violent and tortuous course of five hundred and thirty geographical miles, running through an iron-ribbed country, without a single tree on the whole line of its banks, expanding into fine large lakes with clear horizons,

* This view derives a more than ordinary interest at present from the fact that it represents the spot, where, according to the accounts of the Esquimaux, as given to Dr. Rae, the bodies of a part of Sir John Franklin's company were found. These accounts state that the unfortunate explorers perished upon the western bank of the river, opposite Montreal Island, and consequently upon the very spot from whence the above view was taken.

most embarrassing to the navigator, and broken into falls, cascades, and rapids, to the number of no less than eighty-three in the whole, pours its waters into the Polar Sea in latitude $67^{\circ} 11'$ north, and longitude $94^{\circ} 30'$ west.

The mouth of the Thlew-ee-ehoh opened into a broad firch, the western shore of which was so beset by ice, that they resolved on coasting to the eastward, which was more open, till some favorable opportunity offered for crossing over. So stormy was the weather, however, that they succeeded in this at length with great difficulty, after having been detained several days on an island which they mistook for the main. This they called Montreal Island. By slow degrees they proceeded along the ice-girt shore, sometimes advancing a few miles, when a favoring breeze opened a lane in the ice, but more frequently detained in their dreary encampments, in which they suffered much from cold and rain. In reading the graphic account of the journey of Captain Back, one can not fail to be struck by the constant repetition of such sentences as the following: "The morning set in with rain, for which custom had now taught us to look as a thing of course; but a faint hope was excited by the view of a narrow lane of water, which had opened, how or from what cause we knew not, outside, between the grounded ice and the main body; and preparations were already making for a start at high water, when the wind suddenly chopped round from south-east to north-west, and fixed us once more to the spot;" and, again: "A wet fog ushered in the morning of the 14th of August, and left every object dark and indefinable at eighty or ninety paces distant. The breeze increased, and was fast packing the seaward body of ice, which now came with considerable velocity toward the shore, and threatened to lengthen our tedious and most annoying detention." To render their position even more deplorable, scarcely any fuel was to be found, and they experienced the greatest difficulty in procuring sufficient to cook their food, often being obliged to breakfast, dine, and sup on a morsel of dry pemmican and a cup of cold water. One day three deer came within shot, and were killed. No savoury steaks, however, gratified their palates with an unaccustomed meal;—they could not be cooked for want of dry fuel. The low flat country, too, was the picture of desolation. It was one irregular plain of sand and stones; and had it not been for a rill of water, the meandering of which relieved the monotony of the sterile scene, one might have fancied one's self in one of the parched plains of the east, rather than on the shores of the Arctic Sea."

Nevertheless, with unflinching ardor did Captain Back and his gallant crew push forward, in the hope of reaching a more open sea, and connecting their discoveries with those of Captain Franklin at Point Turnagain. Indeed, a spirit of endurance and cheerfulness distinguished the whole party, which nothing seemed capable of damping. On the 7th of August they reached the extreme point of land which terminates

the
ward
west
Boot
they
ice b
the s
have
Back
ish fl
siastic
the pl
On
they r
In the
and on
at San
many
of thei
"after
health
in the
Pre
wildern
and the
nets w
ranged
ample
ing the
On
regions
tember,
of the p

the wide mouth of the river, and whence the coast trends to the westward. This was named Point Ogle, and another cape, seen far to the west, was named Point Richardson. Several portions of the coast of Boothia Felix were also seen in the distance to the northward. Here they were completely baffled in every attempt made to advance. The ice became more firmly wedged every day; one of the men fell sick; the season was far advanced, and any further attempts to proceed would have been foolhardy; so, under these untoward circumstances, Captain Back resolved to retrace his steps. Before doing so, however, the British flag was unfurled, and the land taken possession of, with three enthusiastic cheers, in the name of his majesty William IV. The latitude of the place was $68^{\circ} 13'$ north, longitude $94^{\circ} 58'$ west.

Our limits do not permit us to follow the adventurous *voyageurs* as they retraced their route up the foaming cataracts of the Thlew-ee-choh. In the middle of August they left the cold precincts of the Arctic Sea, and on the 17th September met Mr. McLeod, according to appointment, at Sand-Hill Bay. He had long been expecting them, and had spent many an anxious hour in watching the distant objects in the direction of their route. With this gentleman they returned to Fort Reliance, "after an absence of nearly four months; tired, indeed, but well in health, and truly grateful for the manifold mercies we had experienced in the course of our long and perilous journey."

Preparations were soon set on foot to spend another winter in the wilderness. Once more the woods resounded with the woodman's ax, and the little rooms glowed with the blazing fires of wood. Again the nets were set and the guns loaded, and the white man and the red ranged the woods in company; while Captain Back and Mr. King found ample and interesting occupation in mapping their discoveries and writing their journals.

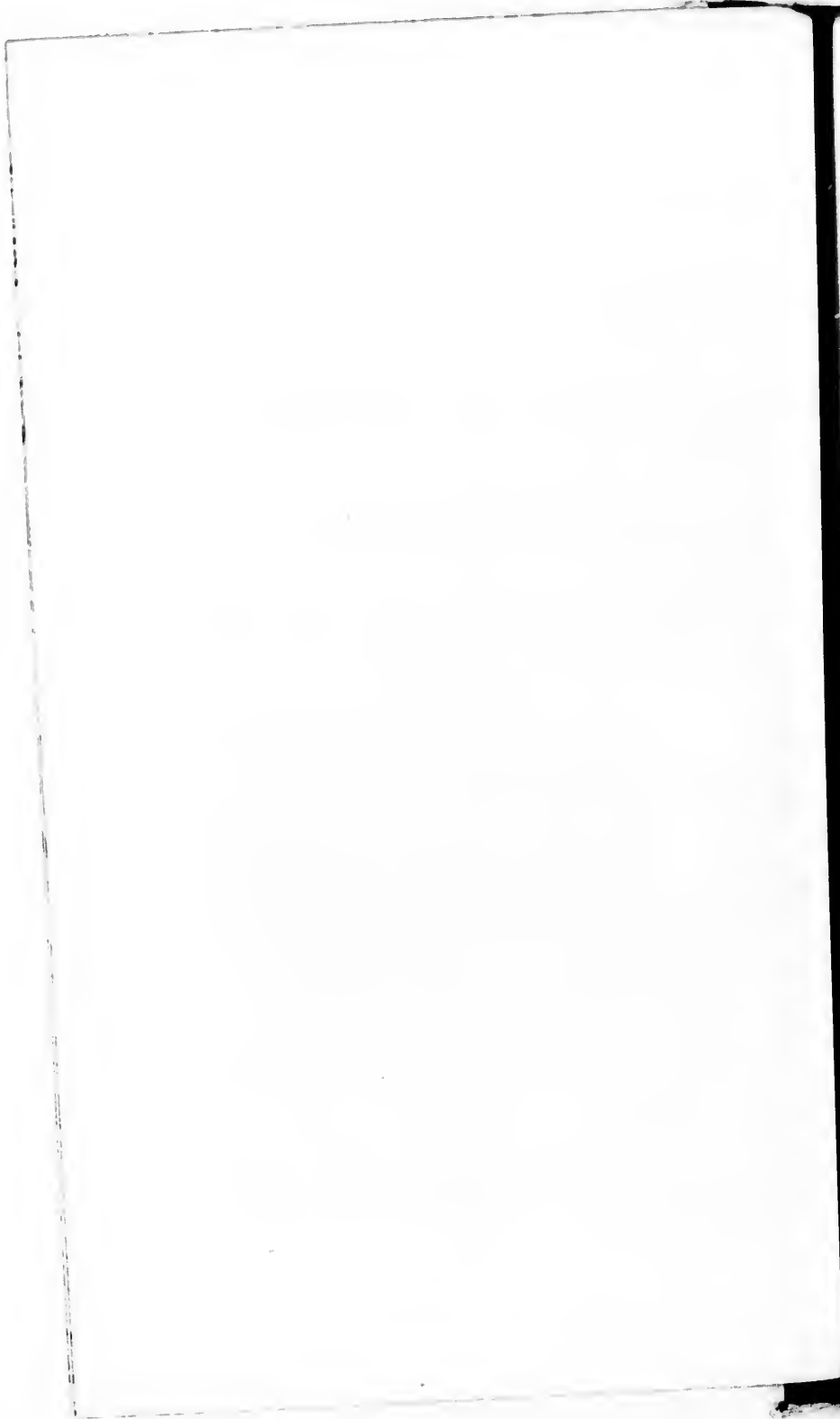
On the 28th of May, 1835, Captain Back bade adieu to the polar regions and returned to England, where he arrived on the 8th of September, after an absence of two years and seven months. The remainder of the party returned by the Hudson's Bay Company's ship in October.

DN.

alls, cascades, and
the whole, pours
and longitude 94°

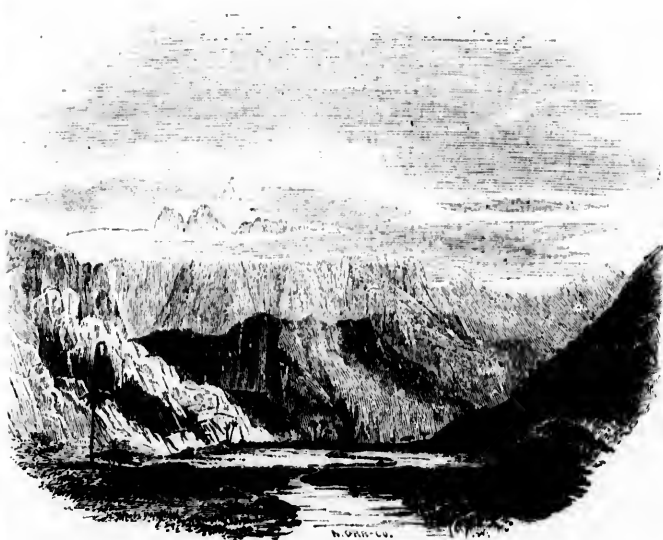
broad firth, the
resolved on coast-
favorable opportu-
weather, however,
culty, after having
ey mistook for the
degrees they pro-
g a few miles, when
frequently detained
d much from cold
journey of Captain
it repetition of such
with rain, for which,
rse; but a faint hope
r, which had opened,
etween the grounded
already making for a
ed round from south-
e spot;" and, again:
of August, and left
ninetly paces distant.
seaward body of ice,
ward the shore, and
ying detention." To
y any fuel was to be
in procuring sufficient
ast, dine, and sup on a
One day three deer
steaks, however, grat-
;—they could not be
ntry, too, was the pic-
f sand and stones; and
g of which relieved the
ncied one's self in one
on the shores of the

tain Back and his gal-
a more open sea, and
tain Franklin at Point
ceerfulness distinguished
e of damping. On the
f land which terminates



I
years
taken
his a
of th
pany
of Y
troop

WELLSTED'S
TRAVELS IN OMAN.



SCENERY OF OMAN.

LIEUTENANT WELLSTED, of the Indian Army, was employed for some years in the survey of the southern and western coasts of Arabia, undertaken by the government of the East India Company. During this time his attention was directed toward attaining a knowledge of the interior of the country, and for this purpose he applied for permission to accompany the army of Mohammed Ali, which was dispatched to the conquest of Yemen; but before he received the necessary authority, the Pasha's troops were defeated with great slaughter in the defiles of Assair. He

then determined to proceed to Muscat, visit the interior of the country of Oman—that part of Arabia bordering on the Persian Gulf—and endeavor, if possible, to penetrate to Derreyeh, the capital of the Wahabees, in the interior of the peninsula. Furnished with the sanction of the Indian government and a letter to the Imam of Muscat, he sailed from Bombay in November, 1835, and on the 21st of that month landed at Muscat.

Upon visiting Seyd Sayid, the Imam, the latter showed the utmost willingness to further Lieutenant Wellsted's views. He presented him with a noble Nedjid steed, a brace of gray-hounds, and a gold-mounted sword, offered to defray all the expenses of camels, guides, etc., and ordered letters to be sent to the chiefs of the different districts of Oman, requiring them to receive him with all possible attention. "To persons arriving from seaward," says the traveler, "Muscat, with its fort and contiguous hills, has an extraordinary and romantic appearance. Not a tree, shrub, or other trace of vegetation is visible, and the whitened surfaces of the houses and turreted forts in the vicinity, contrast in a singular manner with the burned and cindery aspect of the darkened masses of rock around. Similar in its aspect to most eastern cities when viewed from a distance, we first discern the level roofs of the dwellings, the domes of the mosques, their lofty minarets, and other prominent features, and the view retains this attractive character until we land, when the illusion quickly disappears. Narrow, crowded streets and filthy bazaars, nearly blocked up by porters bearing burdens of dates, grain, etc., wretched huts intermingled with low and paltry houses, and other dwellings more than half fallen to decay, but which yet continue tenanted, meet the eye in every direction." The population of the city is between fifty and sixty thousand.

After visiting the hot springs of Imam Ali, which are near the coast, about twenty miles from Muscat, Lieutenant Wellsted embarked in a boat for Sur, a small sea-port near the southern extremity of the peninsula of Oman. Here he was received by the shekh of the place, and furnished with guards until camels and a guide could be procured for the country of Jailan, inhabited by the tribe of Beni-Abou-I-Iassan. He set out on the 1st of December, and, after a day's journey among the hills, reached the encampments of the shepherd-tribe of Beni-Khaled, by whom he was received with true Bedouin hospitality. He had no sooner seated himself on a skin before the door of one of their huts, than some young and handsome girls arrived, bringing with them a huge bowl of milk. "Out of compliment to them," says he, "I took a long draught; but no, this was insufficient. Was it bad?—try again, and again! In vain I extolled it to the skies; I was not permitted to desist until I had swelled almost to suffocation, and sworn by the beard of the Prophet that I could and would take no more. They were then delighted, and we became such excellent friends that, with the assistance

of a few presents and some fair speeches, we parted with expressions of mutual regret.*

On the evening of the 3d, Wellsted reached the tents of the tribe of Beni-Abou-Hassan. As soon as the intelligence of his arrival spread, he was surrounded with numbers of the Bedouins. Their curiosity was unbounded, and they expressed their astonishment at all they saw in the most boisterous manner, leaping and yelling as if they were half crazy. The shekh, however, endeavored to dissuade him from going on to the tribe of Beni-Abou-Ali, saying that they hated the English, who, under Sir Lionel Smith, had defeated them with great slaughter in 1821. No Englishman had visited their country before or since this foray (which was undertaken on account of piracies alleged to have been committed by the tribe), and Lieutenant Wellsted himself was not without apprehensions of his reception; but he determined to proceed.

The next afternoon he reached the tents of Beni-Abou-Ali. He says: "No sooner had I proclaimed myself an Englishman, and expressed my intention of passing a few days among them, than the whole camp was in a tumult of acclamation; the few old guns they had were fired from the different towers, match-locks were kept going till sunset, and both old and young, male and female, strove to do their best to entertain me. They pitched my tent, slaughtered sheep, and brought milk by gallons. A reception so truly warm and hospitable not a little surprised me. Before us lay the ruins of the fort we had dismantled; my tent was pitched on the very spot where we had nearly annihilated their tribe, reducing them from being the most powerful in Oman to their present petty state. All, however, in the confidence I had shown in thus throwing myself amid them, was forgotten. After their evening prayers, the young shekh, accompanied by about forty men, came to the tent, and expressed his intention of remaining with me as a guard during the night."

After Wellsted had visited the wife and sister of the old shekh, who was absent on a journey to Mecca, the whole of the tribe, consisting of two hundred and fifty men, assembled for the purpose of exhibiting their war-dance. "They formed a circle, within which five or six of their number entered. After walking leisurely around for some time, each challenged one of the spectators by striking him gently with the flat of

* At this place Lieutenant Wellsted received the following letter from the Imam, which is curious as a specimen of Oriental correspondence:

"In the name of God, Most Merciful, from Seyd the Sooltan, to his Excellency, the esteemed, respected, beloved, the perfect Captain Wellsted, from the Eastern Government, peace be with you from the Most High God; and, after that your letter reached us, which was a proof of your love in remembering us, we greatly rejoiced at your arriving at Sur, and your departure for Jailan, which is as we directed it, and from thence to Semmed, and which was gratifying to you, and therefore pleasing to us: and, furthermore, any thing which you require from us, whether little or much, it is only for you to request it, and it is on our part to grant it. Peace be to you, and farewell.

True:

SEYD, SOOLTAN."

his sword. His adversary immediately leaped forth, and a feigned combat ensued. They have but two cuts, one directly downward at the head, and the other horizontally across the legs. They parry neither with the sword nor shield, but avoid the blows by leaping or bounding backward. The blade of their sword is three feet in length, straight, thin, double-edged, and as sharp as a razor." After exercising their skill in firing at a mark, during which some capital shots were made, they all dispersed. Toward evening a large party of Geneba Bedouins arrived, and two of their camels were matched to run against the same number belonging to the Beni-Abou-Ali. The animals did not appear to take an equal relish in the sport with their masters, for they could not be set going without much trouble, and were afterward very untractable. Their speed, when at full gallop, was not very great, perhaps a third less than that of a horse.

Finding that the shekh of the Genebas was a lively, intelligent fellow, Wellsted proposed to accompany him into the desert for a few days, and received a ready consent. They set off the next morning with their camels, and were soon careering over the sands. "While sweeping across these solitary and boundless wastes," remarks the traveler, "although destitute of trees, mountains and water, or any of the features common to softer regions, there is something in their severely simple features, their nakedness and immensity, which reminds me of the trackless ocean, and impresses the soul with a feeling of sublimity. The aspect of my companion is in perfect keeping with the peculiar attributes of his native land. His sinewy form, and clean and compact limbs, are revealed by the scantiness of his garments; his dark and ruddy countenance is lighted up by the kindling of his resolute eye; his demeanor is honest and frank, and his whole appearance breathes a manly contempt of hardship. 'You wished,' said the shekh, 'to see the country of the Bedouins—*this*,' he continued, striking his spear into the firm sand, '*this* is the country of the Bedouins.'

The Beni Geneba, or "Wandering Children," are a scattered race of about three thousand five hundred men, the greater number of whom are found occupying the south-eastern shore of Arabia. They present some peculiarities which render them, in a measure, distinct from other Bedouins. It is a remarkable fact that a race in many respects similar is found in almost every part of the coast of Arabia, and even along the north-western shore of India. In some districts they are considered as a separate and degraded race, with whom the Bedouins will neither eat, intermarry, nor associate. The whole coast abounds with fish, and as the natives have but few canoes, they generally substitute a single inflated skin, or two, with a flat board across them. The whole of this tribe are in bad repute with their neighbors, and it is said that they make no scruple of plundering boats which may be unfortunate enough to fall into their clutches. It was the Beni Geneba who approached the American sloop-of-war *Peacock*, when aground near Mazurah, in 1835,

with th
howeve
two da
night, s
passed

On
the tow
he, "be
case th
great s
whole
Hassan
will hav
of our
This I
with al
mutual
which
week s
travels.

Lea
of the
leading
miles h
is conv
with g
oases
never-f
is thus
or veg
sponta
an exa
and sa
teemin
and sta
tide su
enorm
trees,
date-p

For
the 13
and fu
follow
desert
perien
is sat

with the intention, it was supposed, of plundering her; this intention, however, they stoutly denied to Lieutenant Wellsted. The latter was two days in reaching their encampment, where he remained but one night, and then returned to Beni-Abou-Ali. The country over which he passed was low and sandy, with here and there a few stunted bushes.

On the 10th, he resumed his journey, directing his course northward to the town of Semmed, and the Akhdar Mountains. "The old men," says he, "begged I would come again and pass a month with them, in which case they promised to build a house like those in India, and keep me in great state. The ladies were equally pressing in their entreaties, and the whole tribe accompanied me to the skirts of the village of Beni-Abou-Hassan. 'If you will visit us next year,' said young Sooltan, 'my father will have returned from Mecca, and I will accompany you with a party of our own and the Geneba Bedouins, as far as the limits of the Maharas.' This I promised, if circumstances permitted, and after shaking hands with all present, which they had learned was our custom, we parted with mutual expressions of regret. I can not forget the unaffected kindness which I experienced from this simple people, and shall ever recall the week spent with them and their neighbors as the most agreeable in my travels."

Leaving these hospitable people, Wellsted traveled along the edge of the desert until he entered the Wady Bethá, a long, shallow valley, leading to the mountain region of Oman. After a march of forty-two miles he encamped at the hamlet of Bediah, in a little oasis. The water is conveyed from springs in the hills, by subterranean channels, made with great labor, to the fertile plains below. All the large towns and oases have four or five of these artificial rivulets, which afford them a never-failing supply for irrigation. "The isolated spots to which water is thus conveyed possess a soil so fertile, that nearly every grain, fruit, or vegetable, common to India, Arabia, or Persia, is produced almost spontaneously; and the tales of the oases will be no longer regarded as an exaggeration, since a single step conveys the traveler from the glare and sand of the Desert into a fertile tract, watered by a hundred rills, teeming with the most luxuriant vegetation, and embowered by lofty and stately trees, whose umbrageous foliage the fiercest rays of a noon-tide sun can not penetrate. The almond, fig, and walnut-trees are of enormous size, and the fruit clusters so thickly on the orange and lime-trees, that scarcely a tenth part can be gathered. Above all towers the date-palm, adding its shade to the somber picture."

For two days further the route followed the Wady Bethá, and on the 13th, he reached the town of Ibrah, where he was kindly received, and furnished with a sheep and several bowls of milk. He gives the following description of the place: "The instant you step from the desert within the grove a most sensible change of atmosphere is experienced. The air feels cold and damp; the ground in every direction is saturated with moisture; and, from the density of the shade, the

whole appears dark and gloomy. There are still some handsome houses at Ibrah; but the style of building is quite peculiar to this part of Arabia. To avoid the damp, and catch an occasional beam of the sun across the trees, they are usually very lofty. A parapet encircling the upper part is turreted; and on some of the largest houses guns are mounted. The windows and doors have the Saracenic arch, and every part of the building is profusely decorated with ornaments of stucco in bas-relief, in very good taste. The doors are also cased with brass, and have rings and other massive ornaments of the same metal. Ibrah is justly renowned for the beauty and fairness of its females. Those we met in the streets evinced but little shyness, and on my return to the tent I found it filled with them. They were in high glee at all they saw: every box I had was turned over for their inspection, and whenever I attempted to remonstrate against their proceedings, they stopped my mouth with their hands. With such damsels there was nothing left but to laugh and look on."

Beyond Ibrah, the road was infested with predatory parties of the desert Arabs, who sometimes appeared in view, but did not venture to attack the caravan. One day Lieutenant Wellsted was chatting with the guide Hamed, who rode beside him, concerning camels, and the latter related many singular cases of the attachment which the Bedouins bear to those animals. "In order to draw further information from him," says the traveler, "I professed my incredulity on certain points which he had mentioned. A party at this moment happened to be approaching from an opposite direction, and Hamed, somewhat nettled, proposed to test the truth of his statements by what I should witness. The parties approached: 'May God Almighty break the leg of your camel!' bawled out Hamed to the foremost of the party, who was riding somewhat in advance of the others. Without a moment's hesitation the stranger threw himself from his beast, and advanced sword in hand on Hamed, who would probably have had but little reason to congratulate himself on his experiment, if several of our party had not thrown themselves before him, and explained the story. But the Arab still appeared deeply offended, and replied to all that was brought forward in explanation by asking, 'Why he abused his camel, and in what manner it had harmed him?' The matter was adjusted by a few presents, and I passed on, determined in my own mind not to trust again to an Arab's delicacy in settling a question of this nature."

On the 16th he reached the oasis of Semmed. The shekh, who lived in a large and strongly-built fort, invited him to breakfast. The meal was sumptuous and plentiful; but so strictly do the Arabs regard the laws of hospitality, that it required much entreaty to induce the shekh, who was a man of high birth, to take his seat at the table with his guest. He insisted upon waiting on him in the capacity of an attendant, in order that he might not be neglected. On returning to his tent, Wellsted found a great crowd collected there, who were kept in order by a little

urchin
in that
The b
of his
sword
laid ab
number
sation
highly

At
come fr
out for
was inf
a rugg
thus de
vation
ron, an
clamat
Arabia
a descr
miles a
our pa
agrecal
liciousl
turning
at least
regard

The
size, at
once to
castle-g
side.
form, o
superst
and fif
stay th
Neswal
Derrey

The
Mount
Tanuf,
mounta
may ap
deavore
little b
of the

the handsome houses
 ar to this part of
 nal beam of the sun
 arapet encircling the
 est houses guns are
 enic arch, and every
 naments of stucco in
 ased with brass, and
 me metal. Ibrah is
 females. Those we
 n my return to the
 igh glee at all they
 nspection, and when
 edings, they stopped
 ere was nothing left

datory parties of the
 it did not venture to
 l was chatting with
 g camels, and the lat-
 t which the Bedouins
 er information from
 ility on certain points
 at happened to be ap-
 d, somewhat nettled,
 what I should witness.
 reak the leg of your
 party, who was riding
 oment's hesitation the
 ced sword in hand on
 reason to congratulate
 had not thrown them-
 he Arab still appeared
 ht forward in explana-
 n what manner it had
 a few presents, and I
 ust again to an Arab's

The shekh, who lived
 o breakfast. The meal
 o the Arabs regard the
 ty to induce the shekh,
 he table with his guest.
 f an attendant, in order
 g to his tent, Wellsted
 ept in order by a little

urehin about twelve years of age, whose father, a man of great influence in that region, had been killed by the Bedouins a few years before. The boy had taken complete possession of the tent, and allowed none of his countrymen to enter but with his permission. He carried a sword longer than himself, and also a stick, with which he occasionally laid about him. He appeared to be perfectly well acquainted with the number, resources, and distribution of the native tribes, and his conversation on these and other subjects was free and unembarrassed, and highly entertaining to the traveler.

At Semmed, Wellsted was joined by Lieutenant Whitelock, who had come from Muscat across the mountains, to meet him, and the two set out for Neswah, accompanied by a guard of seventy men, as the road was infested with robbers. On the 21st, after two days' journey through a rugged country, they reached the town of Minnâ, which the traveler thus describes: "Minnâ differs from the other towns in having its cultivation in the open fields. As we crossed these, with lofty almond, citron, and orange-trees, yielding a delicious fragrance on either hand, exclamations of astonishment and admiration burst from us. 'Is this Arabia?' we said; 'this the country we have looked upon heretofore as a desert?' Verdant fields of grain and sugar-cane stretching along for miles are before us; streams of water, flowing in all directions, intersect our path; and the happy and contented appearance of the peasants agreeably helps to fill up the smiling picture. The atmosphere was deliciously clear and pure, and as we trotted joyously along, giving or returning the salutation of peace or welcome, I could almost fancy we had at least reached that Araby the Blest, which I have been accustomed to regard as existing only in the fictions of our poets."

The next day the travelers reached Neswah, a place of considerable size, at the foot of the range of Djebel Akhdar. They proceeded at once to the residence of the shekh, whom they found seated before the castle-gate, with an armed guard of about fifty men, standing on either side. The fort, which the natives consider impregnable, is of circular form, one hundred yards in diameter, and ninety feet in height, with a superstructure of equal strength, rising to the height of one hundred and fifty feet. The shekh gave the travelers a house, and during their stay they were not molested in any way by the inhabitants. They made Neswah their head-quarters, and while preparing for the journey to Derreyeh, made several excursions into the surrounding country.

The first of these was to the celebrated Djebel Akhdar or Green Mountains. After a ride of three hours they reached the town of Tanuf, where the shekh resides, whose authority is paramount on the mountains. Here they were lodged in the mosque, which, strange as it may appear, is generally used in Oman as a caravanserai. The shekh endeavored to dissuade them from going further, representing the natives as little better than savages, and drawing frightful pictures of the dangers of the paths, but they persisted in setting out next morning. When,

however, the path led up the steep side of the rocky height, with a precipice yawning below, they began to suspect that the dangers were not much exaggerated. Along the face of one of these their route continued for some distance; "the path was a stair-like projection, jutting out from the face of the cliff, and overhung by threatening masses of rock, while below it sank perpendicularly to the depth of seven or eight hundred feet."

After several hours of such travel, they reached a village called Seyk, the inhabitants of which hospitably pressed them to stay for the night, but they were anxious to push on to a place called Shirazi. "Our reception there, however," remarks Wellsted, "led me to regret that I did not take advantage of the kind offer of these villagers; for a wilder, more romantic, or more singular spot than was now before us, can scarcely be imagined. By means of steps we descended the steep side of a narrow glen, about four hundred feet in depth, passing in our progress several houses perched on crags or other acclivities, their walls built up in some places so as to appear but a continuation of the precipice. These small, snug, compact-looking dwellings have been erected by the natives, one above the other, so that their appearance from the bottom of the glen, hanging as it were in mid-air, affords to the spectator a most novel and interesting picture. Here we found, amid a great variety of fruits and trees, pomegranates, citrons, almonds, nutmegs, and walnuts, with coffee-bushes and vines."

At Shirazi they were denied entrance into the houses, and conducted to a sheep-pen, from which they were soon ejected by the owner of the sheep. They then encamped under a rock to shelter them from the wind, kindled a fire, and passed the night in tolerable comfort. The next morning the people were a little more courteous, and brought them some dates, milk, and dried fruits. They found Shirazi to be a place of about two hundred houses. The next three days were spent in traversing the country in various directions, in order to determine the position and extent of Djebel Akhdar. The range is about thirty miles in length, and some of its peaks are seven thousand feet above the sea. The valleys are extensively cultivated, and supply an abundance of fruit. The most important production is the vine, which is raised on terraces along the mountain-side, watered by artificial rills. In some of the valleys, where brambles and dense thickets are very numerous, wild-boars, foxes, and hyenas, are said to abound. The Beni Riyam, who inhabit this region, are a small tribe, and quite distinct from the Bedouins of the plain, who call them *kaffirs*, or infidels. They drink wine to excess, and are considered to be niggard and sullen in the exercise of their hospitality. Their manners are far more rude and unfriendly than those of the wild tribes of the desert below.

"During my progress in this country," says Wellsted, "with a view to initiate myself into their manners and domestic life, I mixed much with the Bedouins, frequently living and sleeping in their huts and

tents.
degree
were ca
proved
sistance
The ch
With a
He wil
coffee,
off to t
ever th
lips. In
ever, be
that th
the arti

From
saw no
capital
lock, w
necessar
money,
elers w
ing of
funds th
cution o
servants
recover
Neswah

On t
twen t
Cadjan
Weary
joy the
a tree.

my conc
he proff
sparklin
ning wa
breast, t
and pass
of that
that I h
emotion

On t
had not
By the

tents. On all occasions I was received with kindness, and often with a degree of hospitality above, rather than below, the means of those who were called upon to exercise it. The medical character which I assumed proved then of much service to me, although I was often teased for assistance where it was not required, or where it was wholly unavailing. The character of the Bedouin presents some singular contradictions. With a soul capable of the greatest exertions, he is naturally indolent. He will remain within his encampment for weeks, eating, drinking coffee, and smoking his narghileh; and then mount his camel, and away off to the Desert, on a journey of two or three hundred miles. Whatever there may be his fatigues or privations, not a murmur escapes his lips. In excuse for their slothful habits at other periods, it may, however, be observed that the Koran prohibits all games of chance, and that their own rude and simple manners completely relieve them from the artificial pleasures and cares of more civilized life."

From what he was able to learn from the Arabs, Lieutenant Wellsted saw no reason to doubt the possibility of penetrating to Derreyeh, the capital of the Wahabees, and he therefore dispatched Lieutenant Whitlock, who had agreed to accompany him, to Muscat, to procure the necessary funds. The British Agent, however, refused to advance any money, owing to some informality in Wellsted's papers, and the travelers were in a state of great perplexity until the Imam of Muscat, hearing of their dilemma, immediately offered to furnish them with what funds they needed. The delay, however, was fatal to the present prosecution of their plans. During his stay at Neswah, Wellsted and all his servants were attacked with fever and delirium, and their only chance of recovery was to return at once to the sea-coast. He accordingly left Neswah on the 22d of January, 1836, for the port of Sib.

On the 28th, the party halted at Semmayel, the half-way station between the two places, and took up their quarters in a small, but neat Cadjan hut. "A beautiful stream of water glided along before the door. Weary and faint from the fatigue of our day's journey, in order to enjoy the freshness of the evening breeze, I had spread my carpet beneath a tree. An Arab passing by, paused to gaze upon me, and touched by my condition and the melancholy which was depicted in my countenance, he proffered the salutation of peace, pointed to the crystal stream which, sparkling, held its course at my feet, and said: 'Look, friend; for running water maketh the heart glad.' With his hands folded over his breast, that mute but most graceful of Eastern salutations, he bowed and passed on. I was in a situation to estimate sympathy; and so much of that feeling was exhibited in the manner of this son of the desert, that I have never since recurred to the incident, trifling as it is, without emotion."

On the 30th they reached Sib, on the coast, the climate of which had not been exaggerated, and the whole of the party rapidly recovered. By the 20th of February Wellsted judged that they were able to re-

rocky height, with a
at the dangers were
these their route con-
ke projection, jutting
reatening masses of
both of seven or eight

a village called Seyk,
o stay for the night,
l Shirazi. "Our re-
me to regret that I
illagers; for a wilder,
now before us, can
ended the steep side
, passing in our prog-
colivities, their walls
inuation of the preci-
gs have been erected
appearance from the
ffords to the spectator
found, amid a great
s, almonds, nutmegs,

houses, and conducted
l by the owner of the
melter them from the
terable comfort. The
urteous, and brought
ound Shirazi to be a
ree days were spent in
rder to determine the
e is about thirty miles
nd feet above the sea-
an abundance of fruit.
h is raised on terraces
s. In some of the val-
numerous, wild-boars,
i Riyam, who inhabit
from the Bedouins of
y drink wine to excess,
e exercise of their hos-
friendly than those of

Wellsted, "with a view
estic life, I mixed much
ing in their huts and

sume their march, and accordingly wrote to the Imam, requesting a guide to Bircimah, the frontier station of the Wahabees. Although the season was far advanced, he hoped to be able to join some caravan for Derreyeh. He was greatly disappointed, however, on learning that the Wahabees had made a sudden irruption into the northern parts of Oman, and that the inhabitants of Abree, on the road to Bircimah, were engaged in hostilities. Nevertheless he determined to make the attempt, and accordingly left Sib on the 24th. The party followed the coast as far as the port of Suweik, where they arrived on the 1st of March. Here they were hospitably received by the shekh, Seyd Hilal, who was a cousin of the Imam, and who lived in more state than any other chief in Oman. Wellsted says: "A huge meal, consisting of a great variety of dishes, sufficient for thirty or forty people, was prepared in his kitchen, and brought to us on large copper dishes twice a day during the time we remained. The shekh, after his evening meal, usually passed several hours with us. On one occasion he was accompanied by a professed story-teller, who appeared to be a great favorite with him. 'Whenever I feel melancholy or out of order,' said the shekh, 'I send for this individual, who very soon restores me to my wonted spirit.' From the falsetto tone in which the story was chanted, I could not follow the thread of the tale, and upon my mentioning this to him, the shekh very kindly sent me the manuscript, of which the reciter had availed himself. With little variation, I found it to be the identical Sinbad the Sailor, so familiar to the readers of the Arabian Nights. I little thought, when first I perused these fascinating tales in my own language, that it would ever be my lot to listen to the original, in a spot so congenial and remote."

On the 4th they left Suweik, and turned inland toward Bircimah. They were accompanied for some distance by Shekh Hilal and his warriors, who galloped at full speed over the plains on their steeds of the purest Arabian blood. The whole country was in a state of great alarm, owing to an anticipated visit from the Wahabees, and the very first night their guard decamped, taking with them all the camels. The travelers procured others the next day, however, with a ragged guard of six men, and, after riding several hours, encamped at the entrance of a pass in a branch of the Djebel Akhdar. Their course the next day lay through this pass; the mountains rose on either hand in steep precipices of bare rock, to the height of from three to four thousand feet, terminating in abrupt and pointed forms. On the 7th they reached the town of Muskin, in the territory of the Beni Kalban. Their progress through this part of the country was rendered slow and tedious, in consequence of its being divided into separate districts, all in a manner independent of each other, and acknowledging but slightly the power of any general authority. On the 10th they left Muskin and proceeded to Makiniyat, the shekh of which place strongly urged them to return. Persons were plundered every day on the road beyond, and the authority of the Imam

was
pus
san
inhab
muc
ever
look
whic
lette
answ
sage
begg
of, th
was,
falli
as co
TI
duct
slight
his re
dently
things
been c
for son
presen
would
theref
wide
taini
town.
the lo
The sh
exerci
It was
noise
mean
ute; t
some
pretex
noises
beyon
town
hospit
Arabs
teeth,

was but slightly regarded. Nevertheless, the travelers determined to push forward, and after two days' journey over a succession of barren, sandy plains, reached the town of Obri.

This is one of the largest and most populous towns in Oman. The inhabitants are mostly husbandmen, and agriculture is carried on to a much greater extent than in any other part of the country. Toward evening the travelers were visited by the shekh, who was a sinister-looking person, and did not receive them in the friendly manner to which they had been accustomed. "Upon my producing the Imam's letters," says Wellsted, "he read them, and, without returning any answer, took his leave. About an hour afterward he sent a verbal message to request that I should lose no time in quitting his town, as he begged to inform me, what he supposed I could not have been aware of, that it was then filled with nearly two thousand Wahabees. This was, indeed, news to us; it was somewhat earlier than we anticipated falling in with them—but we put a good face on the matter, and behaved as coolly as we could."

The next day the shekh came again. He positively refused to conduct them to Bireimah, and all their arguments failed to produce the slightest effect. They then requested a letter to the Imam, containing his refusal in writing, which he promised to give. His object was evidently to force the travelers away from the place, and the appearance of things was such that they had no wish to remain. The Wahabees had been crowding around them in great numbers, and seemed only waiting for some pretext to commence an affray. "When the shekh came and presented me with the letter for the Imam," says Wellsted, "I knew it would be vain to make any further effort to shake his resolution, and therefore did not attempt it. In the mean time news had spread far and wide that two Englishmen, with a box of 'dollars,' but in reality containing only the few clothes that we carried with us, had halted in the town. The Wahabees and other tribes had met in deliberation, while the lower classes of the townfolk were creating noise and confusion. The shekh either had not the shadow of any influence, or was afraid to exercise it, and his followers evidently wished to share in the plunder. It was time to act. I called Ali on one side, told him to make neither noise nor confusion, but to collect the camels without delay. In the mean time we had packed up the tent, the crowd increasing every minute; the camels were ready, and we mounted on them. A leader, or some trifling incident, was now only wanting to furnish them with a pretext for an onset. They followed us with hisses and various other noises, until we got sufficiently clear to push briskly forward; and, beyond a few stones being thrown, we reached the outskirts of the town without further molestation. I had often before heard of the inhospitable character of the inhabitants of this place. The neighboring Arabs observe that to enter Obri a man must either go armed to the teeth, or as a beggar with a cloth, and that not of decent quality, around

his waist. Thus for a second time end our hopes of reaching Derreyeh from this quarter. I did not yet despair, however, but determined to push on for Sib, embark there, and endeavor, from the port of Schinas, to cross over to Bircimah.

"On my return from Obri to Suweik," Wellsted continues, "contrary to the wish of the Bedouins, who had received intelligence that the Wahabees were lurking around, I left the village where we had halted alone, with my gun, in search of game. Scarcely had I ridden three miles from the walls, when, suddenly turning an angle of the rocks, I found myself within a few yards of a group of about a dozen horsemen, who lay on the ground, basking listlessly in the sun. To turn my horse's head and away, was the work scarcely of an instant; but hardly had I done so ere the whole party were also in their saddles, in full cry after me. Several balls whizzed past my head, which Seyd acknowledged by bounding forward like an antelope. He was accustomed to these matters; and their desire to possess him unharmed, alone prevented my pursuers from bringing him down. As we approached the town, I looked behind me. A shekh, better mounted than his followers, was in advance, his dress and long hair streaming behind him, while he poised his long spear on high, apparently in doubt whether he was sufficiently within range to pierce me. My good stars decided that he was not, for reining up his horse, he rejoined his party, while I gained the walls in safety.

"The day before Seyd came into my hands he had been presented to the Imam by a Nedjid shekh. Reared in domesticity, and accustomed to share the tent of some family in that country, he possessed in an extraordinary degree all the gentleness and docility as well as the fleetness, which distinguish the pure breed of Arabia. To avoid the intense heat, and spare their camels, the Bedouins frequently halted during my journey for an hour about mid-day. On these occasions Seyd would remain perfectly still, while I reposed on the sand, screened by the shadow of his body. My noon repast of dates he always looked for and shared. Whenever we halted, after unsaddling him, and taking off his bridle with my own hands, he was permitted to roam about the encampment without control. At sunset he came for his corn at the sound of my voice, and during the night, without being fastened, he generally took up his quarters at a few yards from his master. During my coasting voyages along the shores of Oman, he always accompanied me, and even in a crazy open boat across the ocean from Muscat to India. My health having compelled me to return to England overland, I could not, in consequence, bring Seyd with me. In parting with this attached and faithful creature, so long the companion of my perils and wanderings, I am not ashamed to acknowledge that I felt an emotion similar to what is experienced in being separated from a tried and faithful friend."

On the 19th of March the travelers reached Suweik, where the shekh

recei
but
that
sever
with
which
the p
to the
less, i
at Bir
Waha
being
travels

reaching Derreyeh
but determined to
the port of Schinas,

ed continues, "con-
ed intelligence that
lage where we had
scarcely had I ridden
an angle of the rocks,
about a dozen horse-
the sun. To turn my
instant; but hardly
ir saddles, in full cry
which Seyd acknowl-
e was accustomed to
unharmful, alone pre-
As we approached the
mounted than his fol-
reaming behind him,
in doubt whether he
ood stars decided that
ed his party, while I

e had been presented
domesticity, and accus-
untry, he possessed in
docility as well as the
Arabia. To avoid the
uins frequently halted
n these occasions Seyd
the sand, screened by
es he always looked for
dling him, and taking
tted to roam about the
me for his corn at the
out being fastened, he
om his master. During
he always accompanied
ocean from Muscat to
n to England overland,
a. In parting with this
panion of my perils and
e that I felt an emotion
d from a tried and faith-

Suweik, where the shekh

received them with all his former kindness. He was much amused, but by no means surprised at their ill success, and seemed to wonder that they had gotten off so well. He did not encourage them to persevere, but as they insisted on proceeding to Schinas, he furnished them with a boat. After a voyage of four days they reached the latter port, which is a small, insignificant place. The shekh was absent, and from the persons left in charge of the town, they could obtain neither answers to their questions, nor common civility. Wellsted succeeded, nevertheless, in procuring a messenger to carry a letter to the Wahabee chief, at Bireimah; but, after waiting four days, received intelligence that the Wahabees were advancing southward. All hope of reaching Derreyeh being thus cut off, he returned to Muscat, which was the end of his travels in Oman.

EX

ART
will be
turned
of there
disappo
by the
compan
believes
access t
the exp
countri
Dinkas,
fleet as

This
and WI
advance
which v
golden
a secon
bold Ci
lected t
by the
the voy
river sw
for the
who ha
the dep

Dr.
tempora
toun, f
but did
country

EXPLORATIONS OF THE WHITE NILE.

WERNE'S VOYAGE.

AFTER the conquest of Shendy and Sennaar—(an account of which will be found in "Caillaud's Journey to Ethiopia")—Mohammed Ali turned his attention to the exploration of the White Nile, in the hope of thereby reaching the gold region of Central Africa. He had been disappointed in the scanty results obtained in the mountains of Fazogl by the expedition under Ismail Pasha, and by a later one, which was accompanied by the German mineralogist and traveler, Russegger, and believed he should find in the White Nile a more convenient means of access to the rich auriferous districts inhabited by the negro tribes. In the expeditions which had been undertaken for the subjugation of the countries of Soudan, the river had been ascended to the land of the Dinkas, in latitude 10° north, and he now determined to send an armed fleet as far as it should be found navigable.

This expedition sailed from Khartoum, at the junction of the Blue and White Niles, in November, 1839, and, by the 27th of January, 1840, advanced as far as the country of the Elliabs, in latitude 6° 35' north, which was the extreme point reached, without finding any tokens of the golden region. Mohammed Ali, dissatisfied with these results, appointed a second voyage of discovery, the very same year. Suliman Kashif, a bold Circassian, who had commanded the first expedition, was also selected to take charge of the second. The preparations were all completed by the beginning of November, which is the most favorable season for the voyage, as the wind is fresh from the north and north-east, and the river swollen by the summer rains. They were obliged to wait, however, for the arrival of Messrs. D'Arnaud and Sabatier, two French engineers, who had been detained at Korosko, in Nubia, waiting for camels, and the departure did not finally take place until the 23d.

Dr. Ferdinand Werne, a German physician, who, with his brother, had temporarily entered the Egyptian service, traveled from Cairo to Khartoum, for the purpose of taking part in the first expedition up the river, but did not succeed in his object. He spent the summer of 1840 in the country of Takka, on the Atbara River, during which time he gained

the good-will of Achmet Pasha, the Governor of Soudan, and was permitted to accompany the second expedition. He kept a very complete journal of the voyage, and although he devotes too much space to ill-natured comments on D'Arnaud and Sabatier, and the Egyptian officers, he gives a great many interesting particulars concerning the scenery and inhabitants of this hitherto unexplored river. In spite of its faults, his work, which was published in Berlin in 1848, with an introduction by the celebrated geographer, Karl Ritter, is the most animated and picturesque which has yet appeared on the subject.

Leaving Khartoum on the afternoon of the 23d of November, 1840, the vessels of the expedition rounded the point of junction, and sailed into the White Nile, before a light northern wind. "The decks of the vessel," says Werne, "with their crowd of manifold figures, faces, and colored skins, from the Arabian Rats who plies the oar, to the ram which he thinks of eating as the Paschal Lamb; the towering latteen sails, with the yard-arms, on which the long streamers, adorned with the crescent and star, wave before the swollen sails; the large crimson flags at the stern of the vessel, as they flutter lightly and merrily over the ever-extending waters; the singing, mutual hails and finding again, the ships cruising to and from the limit fixed for to-day; every thing was, at least for the moment, a picture of cheerful, spiritual life. With a bold consciousness, strengthened by the thought of many a danger happily overcome, I looked beyond the inevitable occurrences of a threatening future to a triumphant re-union with my brother."

On the 29th they passed the village of El Ais, on the road from Senaar to Kordofan. This was the limit of Egyptian rule, and the southern boundary of the dominions of the Arabian races of Ethiopia: beyond it lay the territories of the native negro tribes. Cartridges were served out and muskets loaded, for the vessels were now in a hostile country; but the carelessness with which this was done did not augur well for the discipline of the Egyptian forces. The powder-room stood open, and the men, with lighted pipes, passed continually to and fro unrestrained, over the open hatchway. The vegetation on the river banks became more dense and luxuriant as they advanced; the stream expanded in breadth, and was studded with bowery islands. "Among the trees standing in the water were large, white aquatic flowers, visible even at a distance, which glistened forth magnificently from a floating world of flowers, in the moist splendor of the morning. It was the double white lotus."

A later traveler gives the following description of the scenery of this part of the river: "The forests were taller and more dense than in Egyptian Soudan, and the river more thickly studded with islands, the soil of which was entirely concealed by the luxuriant girdle of shrubs and water-plants in which they lay imbedded. The *ambak*, a species of aquatic shrub, with leaves resembling the sensitive-plant and winged, bean-like blossoms of a rich yellow hue, grew on the edge of the shore,

wit
for
whe
ests
drin
and
whic
ling
stret
in th
Som
their
pear
A
reac
upon
tered
small
At n
gethe
that
aquat
this fl
every
fibrou
no flo
der w
princ
of co
the c
cups.
bloo
gigan
bloo
flow
striet
O
the e
villag
dista
shiel
an ex
ation
beyo
swan
othe

udan, and was percept a very complete much space to ill- e Egyptian officers, ing the scenery and te of its faults, his an introduction by animated and pic-

of November, 1840, junction, and sailed "The decks of the d figures, faces, and the oar, to the ram he towering latteen rs, adorned with the e large crimson flags and merrily over the d finding again, the y; every thing was, al life. With a bold any a danger happily ces of a threatening

n the road from Sen- ule, and the southern Ethiopia: beyond it rtridges were served in a hostile country; d not augur well for room stood open, and and fro unrestrained, river banks became stream expanded in "Among the trees owers, visible even at m a floating world of was the double white

a of the scenery of this more dense than in dded with islands, the riant girdle of shrubs he *ambak*, a species of tive-plant and winged, the edge of the shore,

with its roots in the water and its long arms floating on the surface. It formed impenetrable ramparts around the islands, and shores, except where the hippopotamus and crocodile had trodden paths into the forests, or the lion and leopard had come down to the river's margin to drink. Behind this floating hem of foliage and blossoms appeared other and larger shrubs, completely matted together with climbing vines, which covered them like a mantle and hung from their branches dangling streamers of white, and purple, and yellow blossoms. They even stretched to the boughs of the large mimosa, or sont-trees, which grew in the center of the islands, thus binding all together in rounded masses. Some of the smaller islands resembled floating hills of vegetation, and their slopes and summits of impervious foliage, rolling in the wind, appeared to keep time with the rocking of the waves that upheld them."

After passing the island of Aba, in the country of the Shillocks, they reached a spot where the river was crossed by a ledge of flat rocks, upon which it can be forded during the summer. "A number of scattered water-plants," says Werne, "form floating islands of large and small dimensions, frequently presenting quite a surprising appearance. At noon we came so close to such an island, which had been held together by a kind of water couch-grass, and was joined on to the shore, that we tore off one entire portion of it, and set it moving like a little aquatic world of the most diversified description of plants. The base of this floating, vegetable world was formed by the pale green velvet-plant everywhere met with, and which spreads itself like the auricula, has fibrous roots, and is intermixed with green reeds, but appears to have no flowers. The stalk-like moss, spreading under the water, with slender white suckers, like polypi on the long streaks beneath, was another principal ingredient in the formation of this island. Then comes a kind of convolvulus, with lilac-colored flowers, with its seeds, like those of the convolvulus, in capsule-like knobs, and leaves like those of buttercups. The character of the whole of this island-world acquires such a blooming appearance here, that one believes one's self transported to a gigantic park situated under water. Entire tracts are covered with the blooming lotus. The trees, shrubs, and creepers, with their manifold flowers, enjoy a freedom unknown in Europe, where every plant is restricted to its fixed season."

On the 1st of December they saw the mountain of the Dinkas, on the eastern bank of the river, and the next day discovered one of the villages of this tribe. Werne remarks: "The Dinkas were seen at a distance, jumping in the air while they raised one arm, and struck their shields with their spears. This appeared to me rather a challenge than an expression of joy, as I concluded from the war-dances, the representation of which I had before witnessed. Their city is said to stretch far beyond this ridge, which the trees prevented us from remarking. Long swampy islands, with reeds and other plants, entwined one with the other, extend from their country to the middle of the stream. This is

the case also, though on a reduced scale, on the other side. The distance of the shores from one to another is more than an hour. The reeds form in this manner a protection, which even when the water is at the highest is not to be overcome. In the same manner the Shillooks on the western shore have a marsh of reeds, under water, for protection.

"The right shore is a magnificent low country. Tamarinds, creepers of a large species, and the lotus shining in great numbers, like double white lilies. This stellated flower opens with the rising of the sun, and closes when it sets. I noticed, however, afterward, that where they are not protected in some way from the ardent heat, they likewise close when the sun approaches the zenith. Some of their stalks were six feet long, and very porous; from which latter quality these stems, as well as the flower and the larger leaves—dark-green above, and red-brown beneath, with a flat serrated border—have a magnificent transparent vein; but become so shriveled, even during the damp night, that in the morning I scarcely recognized those which I had over night laid close to my bed on the shore. The ancient Egyptians must, therefore, have been quick in offering up the lotus. The extraordinarily small white seed lies in a brownish, wool-like envelop, and fills the whole capsule. Not only are the bulbs, as large as one's fist, of the lotus eaten, but also the seed just mentioned; they mix it with sesame, and other grain, among the bread-corn, which circumstance I ascertained afterward, as we found a number of these lotus-heads strung in lines to dry. To our taste, the best way to dress the bulbs, and to free them from the marshy flavor they leave behind in the mouth, is to drain the water off several times in cooking them; they then taste nearly like boiled celery, and may be very nourishing."

For several days they sailed slowly over this sea of water and grass, past marshy shores fringed with the lotus. The river became narrower, with firm banks, at some points, and here they were enabled to notice the density of the population. The lower grounds were cultivated with fields of okra and rice, and flocks of sheep were seen. Werne estimates the Shillook tribe at two millions of souls, which is probably not an exaggeration. He says: "There is certainly no river in the world, the shores of which are, for so great a distance, so uninterruptedly covered with habitations of human beings. We cannot conceive whence so many people derive their nourishment. There are some negroes on the left shore, lying without any clothing on them, in the grass; therefore the ground can not be covered to any height with water. They made gestures, and greeted us with uplifted arms; but our people thought that we could not trust such a friendly welcoming, for they might have concealed their spears in the grass, in which, perhaps, a whole troop of men were hidden. Neither these Shillooks nor the Jengâhs, up the river, possess horses or camels, but merely sheep and cows. When they take a horse or camel from the Turks, they do not

kill it—
eyes as

The
slender
bottom,
digitate
the after
only tri
Its sour
kingdom
hundred
return
than the
elevated
as far a
land of
and the
ostriches

On t
ered wit
by narrow
visible fr
region, a
accident
fidence a
tion. "
had, in a
jumped o
on the p
Captain r
helm and
and appe
other ves
to throw
prevented
standing
and began
For the
until I th
for the lo
some sign
down. O
of awaken
him up a
fall thric
the Keran

er side. The dis-
an hour. The
when the water is
anner the Shillooks
water, for protec-

Tamarinds, creepers
umbers, like double
sing of the sun, and
l, that where they
, they likewise close
stalks were six feet
these stems, as well
bove, and red-brown
nificant transparent
mp night, that in the
over night laid close
must, therefore, have
dinarily small white
s the whole capsule.
e lotus eaten, but also
me, and other grain,
ertained afterward, as
lines to dry. To our
p free them from the
to drain the water off
arly like boiled celery,

ea of water and grass,
he river became nar-
they were enabled to
er grounds were culti-
of sheep were seen.
ons of souls, which is
e is certainly no river
t a distance, so uninter-
ings. We cannot com-
ment. There are some
othing on them, in the
ed to any height with
with uplifted arms; but
a friendly welcoming,
e grass, in which, per-
her these Shillooks nor
els, but merely sheep and
the Turks, they do not

kill it—probably not eating the flesh of these animals—but put out its eyes as a punishment for having brought the enemy into their country.”

They here met with the beautiful *dhelleb*-palm, which has a long, slender shaft, swelling in the middle, and tapering toward the top and bottom, crowned with a feathery crest of leaves. The giant *adansonia digitata*, or baobab-tree of Senegambia, also made its appearance. On the afternoon of the 7th, they passed the mouth of the River Sobàt, the only tributary stream which comes to the White Nile from the east. Its source is supposed to be in the country of the Gallas, south of the kingdom of Shoa. Its breadth, at its entrance into the Nile, is six hundred and fifty feet. Werne ascended it about eighty miles, on the return voyage of the expedition, and found that its shores are higher than those of the Nile, and that the surface of the country became more elevated as he ascended. From this fact he infers that the White Nile, as far as it has been explored, flows in a depressed basin of the tableland of Central Africa. They here left the territories of the Shillooks and the Dinkas, and entered the land of the Nuehrs. Giraffes and ostriches were occasionally seen on the shores.

On the 9th, the river expanded into an immense shallow lake, covered with reeds and water-plants, through which they made their way by narrow and winding channels. In some points the firm land was invisible from the mast-head. Swarms of gnats hovered over this stagnant region, and became a dreadful pest to the voyagers. On this day an accident occurred, which gave Werne an opportunity of gaining the confidence and good-will of the black soldiers who accompanied the expedition. “One of them,” he writes, “a *tokruri*, or pilgrim from Dar-Fur, had, in a quarrel with an Arab, drawn his knife and wounded him. He jumped overboard to drown himself, for he could not swim, and was just on the point of perishing when he drifted to our ship, where Feizulla-Captain no sooner perceived him than he sprang down from behind the helm and saved him, with the assistance of others. He was taken up and appeared nearly dead, and on intelligence being conveyed from the other vessels that he had murdered a Moslem, some of our people wished to throw him again immediately into the water. This, however, being prevented, they thought of making an attempt to resuscitate him, by standing him up on his head. I had him laid horizontally upon his side, and began to rub him with an old cloth belonging to one of my servants. For the moment no one would assist me, as he was an ‘*abd*’ (slave), until I threatened the captain that he should be made to pay the Pasha for the loss of his soldiers. After repeated rubbing, the *tokruri* gave some signs of life, and they raised him half up, while his head still hung down. One of the sailors, who was a *fiskeer*, and pretended to be a sort of awakener of the dead, seized him from behind, under the arms, lifted him up a little, and let him, when he was brought into a sitting posture, fall thrice violently on his hinder end, while he repeated passages from the Kcran, and shouted in his ears, whereupon the *tokruri* answered

with a similar prayer. Superstition goes so far here, that it is asserted such a pilgrim may be completely and thoroughly drowned, and yet retain the power of floating to any shore he pleases, and stand there alive again."

On the 10th, Werne writes: "A dead calm throughout the night. Gnats! No use creeping under the bed-clothes, where the heat threatens to stifle me, compelled as I am, by their penetrating sting, to keep my clothes on. Leave only a hole to breathe at; in they rush, on the lips, into the nostrils and ears, and should one yawn, they squeeze themselves into the throat and tickle us to coughing, causing us to suffer real torture, for with every respiration again a fresh swarm enters. They find their way to the most sensitive parts, creeping in like ants at every aperture. My bed was covered in the morning with thousands of these little tormenting spirits—compared with which the Egyptian plague is nothing—which I had crushed to death with the weight of my body, by continually rolling about. I was not only obliged to have a servant before me at supper-time, waving a large fan, made of ostrich-feathers, under my nose, so that it was necessary to watch the time for seizing and conveying the food to my mouth, but I could not even smoke my pipe in peace, though keeping my hands wrapt in my woollen bournus, for the gnats not only stung through it, but even crept up under it from the ground. The blacks and colored men were equally ill-treated by these hungry and impudent guests."

The grassy sea in which they found themselves was the *Bahr El Ghazal*, or Gazelle Lake, into which an unexplored stream, called the Gazelle River, flows from the south-west, and adds its waters to those of the White Nile. They were three days in crossing this lake, as the wind was very light. The plague of gnats continued, and the vessels were in some danger from the herds of hippopotami, which threatened to overturn them, by rising suddenly from the muddy bottom. On the 12th they left the lake, and entered a region of marshes, through which the Nile found its way in a number of narrow and tortuous channels. "High reeds," says Werne, "but more low ones, water couch-grass, and narrow grass, the pale-green aquatic plant, the lilac convolvulus, moss, water-thistles, plants like nettles and hemp, form on the right and left a soft, green mixture, upon which groups of the yellow-flowing ambak-tree rose, and which itself was partly hung round with luxuriant creepers, covered with large cup-like flowers, of a deep yellow color. * * * One can scarcely form an idea of the continual and extraordinary windings of the river. Half an hour ago we saw, on the right, the Muscovite's vessel, and on the left the other vessels ahead *on a line* with us, separated, however, by the high grass, from which their masts and sails joyfully peeped forth. I could scarcely persuade myself that we had proceeded from the one place, and shall steer to the other. There is something cheerful and tranquilizing in this life-like picture of ships seeking and finding each other again in the immeasurable grass-sea,

which g
of this r

They
entered t
villages.
selves, as
tection a
creatures
way of g
close to h
had an iv
last must
head in l
voyagers
in a circle

For tw
river was
vessels ha
various a
which aft
would sud
plex, that
miles, in o
mostly cal
little use
heavy whi
and the de
themselves

Werne
looked up
Nature, in
clouds cov
The all-pow
like the bil
able hue of
forth on ev
into this fl
in the cent
kindled wit
most confin
to be looke
stacles or
attending
other, draw
solving mo
mightiest p

ere, that it is asserted
drowned, and yet re-
and stand there alive

throughout the night.
where the heat threat-
etrating sting, to keep
; in they rush, on the
wn, they squeeze them-
causing us to suffer real
swarm enters. They
ing in like ants at every
with thousands of these
the Egyptian plague is
weight of my body, by
d to have a servant be-
de of ostrich-feathers,
h the time for seizing
ld not even smoke my
n my woollen bourmus,
crept up under it from
e equally ill-treated by

elves was the *Bahr El*
ored stream, called the
adds its waters to those
crossing this lake, as the
ntinued, and the vessels
tami, which threatened
uddy bottom. On the
marshes, through which
and tortuous channels.
water couch-grass, and
lilae convolvulus, moss,
on the right and left a
yellow-flowing ambak-
ed with luxuriant creep-
p yellow color. * * *
and extraordinary wind-
n the right, the Musco-
ahead on a line with us,
ch their masts and sails
de myself that we had
to the other. There is
ife-like picture of ships
immeasurable grass-sea,

which gives us a feeling of security. It must be a sight to the people of this region that they can not comprehend, owing to the distance."

They saw no more natives until the 20th of December, when they entered the land of the Keks, or Kyks, and passed two or three wretched villages. The people were of a livid color, and naked; they smear themselves, as the Shillooks are said partly to do, with Nile-slime, as a protection against the stings of gnats. On seeing the vessels, these poor creatures lifted both hands high in the air, and let them slowly fall, by way of greeting. A woman likewise saluted them by placing her elbows close to her body, and waving her hands, with the palms upward. She had an ivory ring around her head, and another around her neck; which last must have been either ingeniously put together, or slipped over her head in her youth. A man turned toward his hut, as if inviting the voyagers in; another stood alone, lifted his hands, and jumped around in a circle upon one spot.

For two weeks after leaving the Gazelle Lake, the navigation of the river was the most tedious and perplexing that can be imagined. The vessels had great difficulty in finding the true channel, on account of the various arms of the stream, and the deceptive sloughs, or estuaries, which after leading them some distance into the marshes on either hand, would suddenly terminate. The windings were so frequent and so complex, that on one occasion they were obliged to sail a distance of fifteen miles, in order to make two miles in a straight line. The weather was mostly calm, and on account of these windings, they could make very little use of the wind, when there was any. The sky was obscured by heavy white mists, or exhalations, which arose from the stagnant waters and the decaying vegetation, and symptoms of fever began to manifest themselves on board the vessels.

Werne gives the following description of a sunrise in this region: "I looked upon the rising sun with the blissful heart and kindly humor that Nature, in her majesty, calls forth with irresistible power. Dark brown clouds covered the place where he was to disclose himself in all his glory. The all-powerful light of the world inflames this layer of clouds; ruffled, like the billows of the ocean, they become lighted up with an indescribable hue of blue Tyrian purple, from which an internal living fire beams forth on every side. To the south-east, a vessel dips its mast and sails into this flood of gold. Filmy rays and flames of gold display themselves in the center of that deep blue curtain, the borders of which only are kindled with luminous edging, while the core of the sun itself, within the most confined limits, sparkles through the darkest part like a star never to be looked upon. At last he rises, conquering all the atmospheric obstacles of the vaporous earth; the latter stand like clear flakes of gold, attending him on the right, while two strata of clouds, embedded in each other, draw a long beautiful train to the north, ever spreading and dissolving more and more. I write—I try once more to embrace the mightiest picture of ethereal life, but the ship has, in the mean time,

turned, and the sails cover the sun, so as not to weaken the first impression."

On the 27th, they landed at a Kek village, the inhabitants of which had fled, except one man, who was surrounded and taken on board the commander's vessel. He was of a livid color, owing to the ashes in which he had slept. Suliman Kashif was able to converse with him, through some Dinka slaves who were on board. "When he approached the cabin," said Werne, "bending his body forward in a comically awkward and ape-like position, perhaps to denote subjection, he slid round on the ground, dropped on his knees, and crept into it, shouting repeatedly with all his might, 'Waget tohn agéhn, agiht agiht-waget tohn agéhn agiht agiht,' by which words he greeted us, and expressed his astonishment. He had several holes in the rims of his ears, containing, however, no other ornament than a single little stick. Strings of beads were brought out and hung about his neck; there was no end to his transports; he struck the ground so hard with his posteriors, that it resounded again, and raised his hand on high, as praying. When I bound a string of beads round his wrist, he could not leave off jumping, at such an invaluable ornament, and never once kept still; he sprang up, and threw himself down again, to kiss the ground; again he rose, extended and contracted himself, held his hands over all our heads, as if to bless us, and sang a very pretty song, full of the simple melody of nature. He had a somewhat projecting mouth; his nose and forehead quite regular, as well as the cut of the face itself; his hair was sheared away short, to about the length of half an inch. He might have been about thirty years of age; an angular, high-shouldered figure, such as we have frequently perceived among the Dinkas. There were two incisors wanting above, and four below, which is also the case with the Dinkas; They pull them out, that they may not resemble wild beasts. His attitude and gestures were very constrained, arising, perhaps, partly from the situation in which he found himself; his shoulders were raised, his head bent forward in unison with his bent back; his long legs, the calves of which were scarcely to be perceived, seemed as if broken at the joints of his knees; in short, his whole person hung together like an orang-outang's. Added to this, he was perfectly naked, and no hair, except on his head, to be seen. His sole ornament consisted of leathern rings above the right hand. What a grade of humanity is here! This poor man of nature touched me with his childish joy, in which he certainly felt happier than any of us. He was instructed to go forward and tell his countrymen not to fly before us. Kneeling, sliding along, jumping, and kissing the ground, he let himself be led away by the hand like a child, and would certainly have taken it all for a dream, had not the glass-beads convinced him to the contrary."

On the 3d of January, 1841, they reached a large Kek village, and Werne perceived, to his surprise, that the men and women lived in separate portions of it. "Polygamy prevails here," he remarks, "as gener-

ally on
privileg
time, I
whole
of the
nearly
that th
lie, as i
long, w
of the
in the
this tin
and hav
ward.
hierogl
shoulde
through
here qu

The
peared
in broa
agers.
Bohrs,
look lik
is vario
would b
placed
protrud
shore, s
to the
tion; f
bacco,
plain of
teeth, v

On
violent
awoke
along i
large c
to mov
the rec
was be
attacks
At the
a weak
full lus

ally on the White Nile; only, however, the more opulent enjoy this privilege, for the women are bought. I remarked here, for the first time, bodily defects, which, like elephantiasis, are so very rare in the whole land of Soudân. One had hernia, and many suffered from diseases of the eyes, and wanted medical assistance. Their eyes, indeed, were nearly all suffused with red, as I had previously remarked; and it seems that these people must suffer uncommonly in the rainy season, when they lie, as it were, in the morass. The hair of some of them, who wore it long, was of a reddish color, having lost its natural black hue by the ley of the ashes and water, and heat of the sun; for we did not perceive this in the shorter hairs, and they did not know how to explain the cause of this tinge. The cattle are generally of a light color, of moderate size, and have long beautifully-twisted horns, some of which are turned backward. The bulls have large speckled humps, such as are seen in the hieroglyphics; the cows, on the contrary, only a little elevation on the shoulders. The small reed tokuls, with half-flat roofs, are neat, and serve throughout the day for protection against the sun. I wandered about here quite alone, without being molested or sent back by the people."

The voyage now became a little less difficult: the firm shores appeared on either hand, the main current of the river was no longer lost in broad morasses, and the plague of gnats ceased to torment the voyagers. On the 8th they reached the territories of a tribe called the Bohrs, who are thus described: "The men, though *only* seven feet high, look like trees, in their rough and naked natural forms. Their tonsure is various; large ivory rings adorn the upper part of their arms. They would like to strip these off, but they sit too tightly, because they were placed on the arm before it was thoroughly formed. Now the flesh protrudes above and below the rings. They seat themselves on the shore, sing, and beg for beads, pointing with their forefinger and thumb to the roundness of them. They have bad teeth, almost without exception; from this circumstance, perhaps, that they chew and smoke tobacco, partly to alleviate the eternal tooth-ache. If they did not complain of tooth-ache, yet they showed us the entire want or decay of their teeth, when we gave them biscuit to masticate."

On the 10th, while walking on the shore, Werne was seized by a violent attack of fever, and fell upon the ground in a swoon. When he awoke it was already dark; he fired a gun for assistance, and stumbled along in the direction of the vessels, but suddenly came upon twenty large crocodiles, stretched out in the sand. The beasts instantly began to move, scenting human flesh: he hastened away, plunging through the reeds, and was fortunately found by his servants just as his strength was beginning to fail. For four or five days after this, he had repeated attacks of delirium, and was only saved from death by profuse bleeding. At the end of this time the fever gradually left him, but he remained in a weak condition, and for two or three weeks was unable to support the full luster of the noonday sun.

Meanwhile the vessels continued slowly to ascend the stream, having already passed the extreme point attained by the expedition of the previous winter. Leaving behind them the Bohrs and the Zhirs, they passed through two other tribes, called the Bundurials and the T-hierrs. The river still came from the south-east, and flowed with a full, strong current. On the afternoon of the 17th, Werno was startled by the cry of "*Djebel!*" (a mountain!) "In spite of the sun," he says, "and all remonstrances, I drag myself up on deck, and see the mountain to the south-west, at a distance of about twenty hours. It seems to form an accumulation toward one point, and may surely be the forerunner of other mountains; therefore, after all, there are Mountains of the Moon. City crowds on city; and the Egyptians look out from the mast for herds of cattle, which are not, however, numerous. An innumerable population moves on the shores; to express their number our crew say, 'As many as flies;' and we sail always by the shore, which is quite black with people, who are standing as if benumbed with astonishment."

These scenes were constantly repeated during the following three or four days. The shores were firm and fertile, the vegetation wonderfully rich and luxuriant, the sky clear, and the people of giant stature, finely developed, and very agile. Every thing indicated their entrance into a region of totally different character from any they had yet seen. The country appeared to be as populous as that of the Shillooks, but the natives, although naked like the former, gave evidence of superior intelligence. The Egyptian captains, however, looked upon all these tribes with equal contempt, calling them "slaves." On the afternoon of the 20th, a great crowd of natives collected on the bank, making signs that they wished for beads, such as had been given to the tribes below. They threatened, in a laughing, jeering manner, to prevent the sailors from towing the vessels unless their requests were heeded. The captain of one of the vessels immediately ordered his men to fire, and ten or twelve of the negroes fell. The remainder of the tribe came running from the villages, but soon hesitated, fearing the effect of these mysterious weapons which they had never before seen. "We halted a moment," remarks Werno; "the unhappy creatures or relatives of the slain came closer to the border of the shore, laid their hands flat together, raised them above their head, slid upon their knees nearer to us, and sprang again high in the air, with their compressed hands stretched aloft, as if to invoke the pity of heaven, and to implore mercy of us. A slim young man was so conspicuous by his passionate grief, that it cut to my heart, and—our barbarians laughed with all their might."

Fortunately for the expedition, the poor creatures were too much overawed to resent this inhumanity, and the vessels proceeded on their course. They learned that they had entered the land of the Baris, the sultan of which, named Lakono, resided at a town further to the south. The bed of the river was now broken with islands; the current became more clear and swift, and on the 23d they reached an island called

Tsam
ing a
the l
soon
capit
distan
in the
and f
time
a gird
tion t
Of
quite
to thro
althou
ian rac
a broad
design
up to a
have s
are in t
head ar
als, ho
the and
little de
akin to
portion
the four
when th
Some w
nape of
the mo
which
counter
are, per
The
whose
naked r
noon th
cotton
the oth
togethe
was stu
ing the
leader
fingers.

Tsanker, or Tchanker, at the end of which was a reef of rocks, extending across the stream, forming a rapid beyond which, it was evident, at the low stage of the water, the vessels could not pass. "We landed soon afterward on the right shore, as the nearest landing-place to the capital, Belènja, on the mountain of the same name, which was at some distance. They gave us the names of all the mountains lying around in the horizon. As I once looked for the alpine world from Montpellier, and found it, trusting to my good eye-sight, so now I gazed for a long time on this region of heights; their peaks were clearly hung round with a girdle of clouds, apparently shining with a glimmering light in opposition to the clouds hanging before them in our neighborhood."

Of the Baris, Werne says: "The features and form of the head are quite regular among these gigantic people, and are a striking contrast to those of our black soldiers, with their more negro-like physiognomy, although *they* are not, on the whole, ugly. I compare the true Caucasian races, who are present, with these men, and find that the latter have a broader forehead. The inhabitants of the kingdom of Bari might be designated a protoplasma of the black race; for not only do they shoot up to a height of from six and a half to seven Parisian feet, which we have seen also in the other nations, but their gigantic mass of limbs are in the noblest proportions. The form of the face is oval, the forehead arched, the nose straight, or curved, with rather wide nostrils—the ale, however, not projecting disagreeably; the mouth full, like that of the ancient Egyptians; the orifice of the ears large, and the temples a little depressed. The last we do not find in the Baràbras, and the races akin to them in Abyssinia. The men of Bari have, besides, well-proportioned legs, and muscular arms. It is a pity that they also extract the four lower incisors, for not only is the face disfigured by this custom when they are laughing, but their pronunciation also becomes indistinct. Some wear their hair like a cock's comb from the forehead down to the nape of the neck; others have scarcely the crown of the head covered; the most, however, wear tolerably long hair, in the natural manner, which gives a significant look to many faces. Their good-natured countenances correspond also to their jokes among themselves, which are, perhaps, occasionally directed against us."

The next day the vessels were visited by King Lâkono and his suite, whose approach was previously announced by his brother, a gigantic naked negro, smeared from head to foot with red ashes. In the afternoon the king came, attended by a large retinue of followers. His cotton garment and head-dress distinguished his tall figure above all the others. He carried with him his throne—a little wooden stool—together with a scepter, consisting of a club, the thick knob of which was studded with large iron nails, to inspire greater respect. On entering the cabin, he took Selim Capitan, the second in command, to be the leader of the expedition, and saluted him by sucking the ends of his fingers. "When we little expected it," says Werne, "the sultan raised

his voice, without commanding silence beforehand with his scepter, and sang—his eyes directed firmly and shining on us—a song of welcome, with a strong, clear voice. This was soon ended, and the song had brightened him up surprisingly, for he looked quite merrily around, as far as his eyes, which were apparently affected by a cataract, would allow him. This misfortune might be the cause also why he walked, as if in a mist, with an insecure step on the vessel. According to the translation passed by two interpreters from one to the other into Arabic, he chanted us as being bulls, lions, and defenders of the virgins. He is of an imposing figure, with a regular countenance, marked features, and has somewhat of a Roman nose. We noticed on all the bare parts of his body remains of ocher, apparently not agreeing very well with the skin, for here and there on the hands it was cracked. He was the first man whom we had hitherto found clothed."

On the 25th Werne writes: "King Lākono visited us to-day a second time, and brought with him a young wife from his harem. He took off his hand the orange-colored ring, on which Selim Capitan fixed a long-ing eye, and presented it to him with a little iron stool, plainly forged in a hurry. We gathered further intelligence about the country, and Lākono was complaisant enough to communicate to us some general information. With respect to the Nile sources, we learn that it requires a month, the signification of which was interpreted by thirty days, to come to the country of Anjan toward the south, where the Tubirih (White Nile), separates into four shallow arms, and the water only reaches up to the ankles. Thirty days seems indeed a long time, but the chain of mountains itself may present great impediments, and hostile tribes and the hospice stations may cause circuitous routes.

"The favorite sultana had certainly not much to boast of in the way of beauty, but she was an amiable-looking woman: she was not at all shy, and looked freely around her. A number of glass-beads were given to her, and she was too much of a woman and negress not to be exceedingly delighted at them. Lākono restrained himself, as at the first time, on the sight of such presents, within the limits of pleasing surprise, without betraying the least symptom of the childish joy which is indigenous in these men of nature. She was, however, very cordial with him, and he with her; he helped her even to pack together her ornaments in a handkerchief, and gave it over to her with a benevolent look. I had the honor also of a friendly smile from her, which I naturally returned. She remarked this immediately to her lord and master, whereupon the latter bowed his entire approbation, and smiled at me.

"We could not get a clear conception of their ideas of religion—the less so, because the interpreter translating into Arabic was a heathen Dinka. It seems that they worship a spirit of nature, for we had been previously told that their god was grander than the mast of our vessel. Whether they reverence him under a tree, as the criminal court of Lā-

kono
teeth
to be
King
spear,
under
and as
Or
great
who w
southe
days,"
Pillars
expedit
contrib
thought
declarat
possible
natives
lances i
and dre
down, an
about tw
to empl
them far
all the v
shots to
esting m
made by
accordin
The
necessed
blew str
damage
asionally
found th
After th
fering in
once mon
days to
they had
Suliman
the river
days, in
progress
The ban

kono seems to denote, is a question I do not venture to decide. Horns, teeth, and amulets point to some sort of worship. Legislation appears to be in a peculiar state in the country of Bari. We were told that King Lâkono slew criminals with his own hand, by a thrust with a spear, and very quickly (goâm, goâm), without any ceremonies; he sits under a large tree, with a heavy spear in his hand, to pass judgment, and assumes a very angry look."

On the 28th of January, Suliman Kashif determined to return, greatly to the joy of the Egyptian soldiers, and to the regret of Werne, who was anxious to push on to the mountains which beckoned from the southern horizon. "We have remained here at the island three entire days," he writes, "and the *ne plus ultra* is not so much inscribed on the Pillars of Hercules in the water, as desired in the hearts of the whole expedition. The war-dance, which the blacks performed yesterday, has contributed certainly to the final determination to return. Even I thought yesterday that I heard and saw in the fearful battle-song, a declaration of war, and a challenge to the contest. It was almost impossible to persuade one's self that it was merely a mark of honor. The natives marched up and down the island, in columns, brandishing their lances in the air, sang their war-songs, with threatening countenances and dreadful gestures, then fell into still greater ecstacy, ran up and down, and roared their martial chant. It was the middle of the day, about two o'clock, when Selim Capitan, in order to take his leave, and to employ the dreaded people at the moment of our departure, and keep them far from us, threw ten cups of beads on shore, and the cannons on all the vessels were discharged, to bid solemn farewell with twenty-one shots to the beautiful country which must contain so many more interesting materials." The island of Tsanker, according to the observations made by D'Arnaud and Selim Capitan, lies in $4^{\circ} 30'$ north latitude, but according to later calculations in $4^{\circ} 49'$.

The descent of the White Nile was a repetition of the scenes witnessed on the upward voyage, except that whenever the north wind blew strongly, the vessels became unmanageable, and created great damage and confusion by driving against each other. They landed occasionally in the lands of the Keks, Elliabs, and Nuehrs, and invariably found the natives well-disposed, though exceedingly ignorant and stupid. After threading again the bewildering mazes of the region of grass, suffering insupportable torments from the clouds of gnats, they debouched once more into the Gazelle Lake, on the 4th of March, and halted three days to allow D'Arnaud to make a survey of its shores. On the 11th, they bade farewell to gnats, and reached the mouth of the Sobât, which Suliman Kashif designed to explore. The vessels accordingly entered the river, heading to the south-east, and slowly advanced for twelve days, in which time they only made eighty miles, when their further progress was stopped by sand-bars, and they were forced to return. The banks of the river were steep and bold, and the upland country

lying behind them abounded with herds of deer and antelopes, some of which numbered three or four thousand.

During this excursion, Werne met with an exciting adventure. He went out to shoot some birds, and was just taking aim at two beautiful finches, when an immense lion suddenly stood before him, as if he had arisen from the earth. "At first," says he, "we stared at each other mutually; he measured me from top to toe, but disregarded the Turkish accouterments and sun-burnt countenance, for my red cap which he seemed not to despise. At last he turned his face from me, and went away slowly with a dreadfully pliable movement of his hinder parts, and his tail hanging down, but could not restrain himself from turning round to look at me once more, while I was trusting to the effect of one or two shots in the eyes or jaws, if it came to a contest of life or death; but I cast a searching look over my shoulders every now and then, right and left, expecting that he might make a spring like a cat, and I kept him in sight before me, when I was about to jump down from the shore on to the sand where the vessels and crew were. I confess openly that I felt an evident throbbing of the heart, and that my nose seemed to have turned white."

On the 26th of March, the vessels again entered the White Nile, and resumed their course toward Khartoum. Their progress was slow, on account of head-winds, and they did not approach the capital until the 22d of April, when messengers came forward to welcome them. On the following day they descended to the junction, and sailed up the Blue Nile to the city, having been absent exactly five months. Werne's journal closes with the following words: "The thunder of cannon rolled down from the vessels—joy and pleasure. I wished to describe our return, but I did not see my brother. Black thoughts suddenly shook me as if a fit of ague had attacked me. When I saw even the window-shutters of our divan closed, where he might wait for me so comfortably in the shade, I trembled violently, and my knees tottered so that they laid me on the bed. I soon, however, got up, and sat before the cabin; and just at the moment when our vessel touched the land, some one pointed him out standing on the shore. I jumped ashore from the deck, and fell down: my brother raised me up. Eleven days after this happy meeting he died in my arms, completely broken by the effects of the climate."

DOCTOR KNOBLECHER'S VOYAGE.

The Government Expedition up the White Nile demonstrated the fact that the native negro tribes possessed an abundance of ivory, and suggested to the Egyptian merchants the benefit of establishing a trade with them. The experiment was tried, and found successful; the natives willingly exchanged their rings and elephants' teeth for glass beads and other cheap trinkets, and a system of barter was thus established, which

NILE.

antelopes, some of

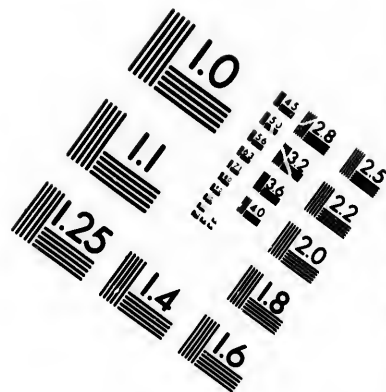
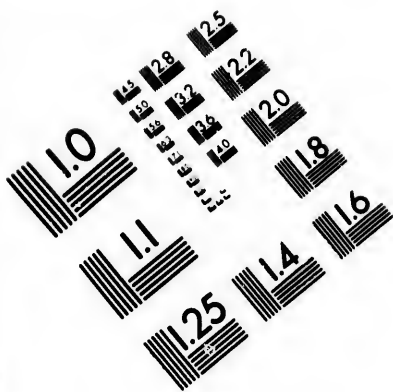
ing adventure. He
aim at two beautiful
e him, as if he had
stared at each other
regarded the Turk-
ay red cap which he
from me, and went
his hinder parts, and
from turning round
effect of one or two
life or death; but I
and then, right and
cat, and I kept him
n from the shore on
onfess openly that I
nose seemed to have

the White Nile, and
progress was slow, on
the capital until the
come them. On the
I sailed up the Blue
nths. Werne's jour-
der of cannon rolled
ed to describe our re-
ts suddenly shook me
ven the window-shut-
me so comfortably in
ered so that they laid
before the cabin; and
nd, some one pointed
rom the deck, and fell
ter this happy meet-
ffects of the climate."

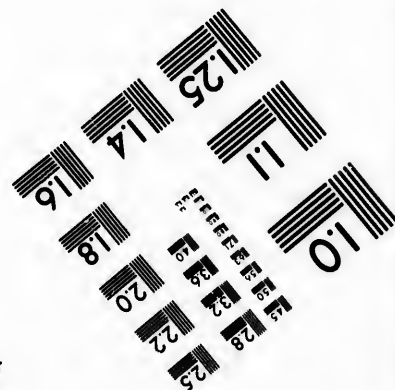
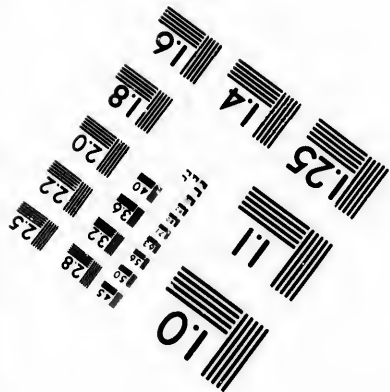
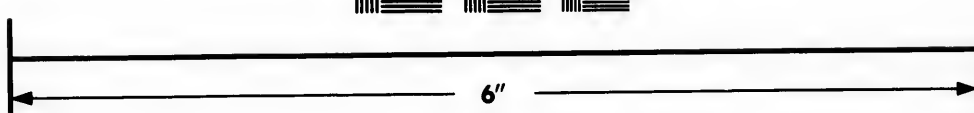
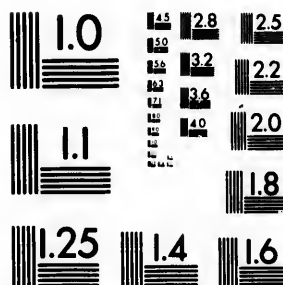
YAGE.

Nile demonstrated the
undance of ivory, and
of establishing a trade
successful; the natives
th for glass beads and
thus established, which





**IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

1.5 2.8 2.5
1.5 3.2 2.2
1.5 3.6 2.0
1.8

**CIHM/ICMH
Microfiche
Series.**

**CIHM/ICMH
Collection de
microfiches.**



Canadian Institute for Historical Microreproductions / Institut canadien de microreproductions historiques

1.5
1.8
2.0
2.2
2.5
2.8
3.2
3.6

© 1983

has be
vessel
which
None
know
which
the R
which

Di
at Ro
langu
Catho
missio
of the
forbid
the in
Knob
exped
ticabi
negro
outset
the c
practi
broug
exped
There
the sr

*
blecho
from P
throug
near th
were n
court,
and a
room,
dows
grant
grant
monks
slightl
plexion
breast,
but co
of dark
guages
plorati
and de
habita

has been continued up to the present time. An annual fleet of trading vessels leaves Khartoum in November, and after obtaining all the ivory which has been collected during the year, returns in March or April. None of these expeditions, however, have contributed much to our knowledge of the river beyond the point reached by Werne, except that which left Khartoum in 1849, and was accompanied by Dr. Knoblecher, the Roman Catholic Apostolic Vicar for Central Africa, an account of which was published in the Augsburg *Allgemeine Zeitung*, in 1851.*

Dr. Ignatius Knoblecher was specially educated, in the Propaganda at Rome, as a missionary for Central Africa. After studying the Arabic language for a year in Syria, he proceeded to Khartoum, where a Catholic mission had already been established. There, however, the mission found its sphere of operations circumscribed by the jealousy of the government, as all attempts to make proselytes of Mussulmen are forbidden, and the highest ambition of the slaves who are brought from the interior is to be considered faithful followers of the prophet. Dr. Knoblecher was therefore directed to accompany the annual trading expedition up the White Nile, for the purpose of ascertaining the practicability of establishing a missionary station among some of the native negro tribes near the equator. He experienced much difficulty at the outset, on account of the jealousy of the Egyptian traders, who find the company of a European a restraint upon their violent and lawless practices, but through the influence of the pasha, who was at last brought to give his consent, the missionaries secured a place in the expedition, and on the 13th of November, 1849, set sail from Khartoum. There were seven vessels in the flotilla, and that of Dr. Knoblecher, though the smallest, proved to be the best sailer and usually kept the lead. He

* "On the day of my arrival at Khartoum, Dr. Reitz proposed a visit to Dr. Knoblecher, the Apostolic Vicar of the Catholic Missions in Central Africa, who had returned from Europe about twenty days previous. Preceded by two attendants, we walked through the town to the Catholic Mission, a spacious one-story building in a large garden near the river. Entering a court, in the center of which grew a tall tamarind-tree, we were received by an Italian monk, in flowing robes, who conducted us into a second court, inclosed by the residence of the Vicar. Here we met two other priests, a German and a Hungarian, dressed in flowing Oriental garments. They ushered us into a large room, carpeted with matting, and with a comfortable divan around the sides. The windows looked into a garden which was filled with orange, fig, and banana-trees, and fragrant with jasmin and mimosa blossoms. We had scarcely seated ourselves when the monks rose and remained standing while Dr. Knoblecher entered. He was a small man, slightly and rather delicately built, and not more than thirty-five years of age. His complexion was fair, his eyes a grayish blue, and his beard, which he wore flowing upon his breast, a very decided auburn. His face was one of those which wins not only kindness, but confidence from all the world. His dress consisted of a white turban, and a flowing robe of dark purple cloth. He is a man of thorough cultivation, conversant with several languages, and possesses an amount of scientific knowledge which will make his future explorations valuable to the world. During my stay in Khartoum, I visited him frequently, and derived from him much information concerning the countries of Soudan and their inhabitants."—*Bayard Taylor's "Journey to Central Africa."*

had on board a faithful and experienced Nubian pilot, named Suleyman Abou-Zeid.

After fourteen days' sailing, the expedition passed the islands of the Shillooks, and reached that part of the river where the banks are covered with continuous villages. The number of these is estimated at seven thousand. It is worthy of notice that their circular tokuls of mud and reeds are precisely similar in form and construction to those of the tribes on the Niger and Senegal Rivers, with whom the Shillooks have no communication, and from whom they differ in language, appearance, and character. While threading the mazes of the archipelago, a violent whirlwind passed over the river and completely dismayed one of the boats. Beyond the islands the river expands so that the marshy shores are barely visible in some places. The lotus grows abundantly in the shallows, and the appearance of the thousands of snowy blossoms as they flash open at sunrise, is described as a scene of vegetable pomp and splendor, which can be witnessed in no other part of the world.

On the 28th of November the expedition succeeded, after some difficulty, in establishing an intercourse with the Dinkas and Shillooks, who inhabited the opposite banks of the river. The latter in consideration of some colored glass-beads, furnished a number of oxen for provisions. Dr. Knoblecher described their running, when they drove the cattle together, as resembling that of the gazelle; they leap high into the air, drawing up their long legs as they rise, and clear the ground at a most astonishing speed. The next day the vessels reached a large town called Vav, where the people received them without the least appearance of fear, and brought quantities of elephants' tusks to trade for beads. Herds of wild elephants and giraffes were now frequently seen on the banks of the river, and the former sometimes threw up their trunks and spirted water into the air when they saw the vessels. Numbers of white herons were perched composedly upon their backs and heads. The giraffes, as they gazed with wonder at the fleet, lifted their heads quite above the tops of the minnosa-trees. On the 2d of December, the expedition passed the mouth of the Sobat River.

From latitude $9^{\circ} 26'$ to $6^{\circ} 50'$ north there is a complete change in the scenery. The magnificent forests disappear, and the shores become marshy and unhealthy, covered with tall grass, whose prickly stalks render landing difficult, and embarrass the navigation of the shallows. The air is heavy with noxious miasmas and filled with countless swarms of gnats and mosquitoes. The water of the river is partially stagnant, and green with vegetable matter, occasioning serious disorders to those who drink it. Dr. Knoblecher clarified it by means of alum, and escaped with a sore mouth. In order to sleep, however, he was obliged to wear thick gloves and muffle up his face, almost to suffocation. The *Bahr el-Ghazal*, or Gazelle Lake, lies in latitude $9^{\circ} 16'$ north. It is thus named from the Gazelle River, which flows into it on the western side, and which has never yet been explored. Its depth is about nine feet,

but the reeds and water-plants with which it is filled reach to the surface, and render the navigation difficult. Its shores are inhabited by the Nuehr negroes, a stupid, imbruted race, many of whom are frequently carried off by the traders and sold as slaves. For this reason it is now very difficult to procure elephants' teeth from them.

After leaving the Gazelle Lake, the course of the White Nile becomes exceedingly tortuous, and its current sluggish. Innumerable estuaries, or blind channels, which lose themselves among the reeds, perplexed the pilots, and delayed the progress of the expedition. The land of the Kyks succeeded to that of the Nuehrs, which terminated about the eighth parallel of latitude. The former are a race of herdsmen, who have great numbers of cattle and sheep. Dr. Knoblecher found them exceedingly shy, on account of the threats of one of their *kogiurs*, or soothrayers, who had warned them against holding any intercourse with the traders. On the 22d of December they reached the village of Angwen, where the king of the Kyks resided. The monarch received them with great kindness, and paid distinguished homage to Padre Angelo Vinea, Dr. Knoblecher's companion, whom, on account of his spectacles and gray beard, he took to be a magician. He begged the Padre to grant him four favors, viz.: abundance of children; the death of the enemy who had slain his father; victory in all his fights, and a cure for the wound in his head. The latter gift was easily bestowed, by means of a plaster, but he was not satisfied until an image of the Virgin had been hung around his neck.

South of the Kyks dwell the Elliäbs, who are less timid than the southern tribes, because they come less frequently into contact with the traders. In their country the White Nile divides into two branches, and here the expedition separated, each division taking a different channel. The water was so low that the vessels stuck fast in the mud, but were relieved by the friendly natives, who dragged them through the shallows by means of long tow-ropes. For this service they were paid in glass-beads. The further the vessels went into regions where intercourse with the Egyptian traders is rare, and therefore fewer outrages are perpetrated, the more friendly, confiding, and unconcerned was the behavior of the natives.

On the 31st of December the expedition reached the country of the Zhirs. The people came down to the water's edge to greet them, the women clapping their hands and singing a song of welcome. On the 2d of January, 1850, Dr. Knoblecher saw in the south-east the granite mountain of Nierkanyi, which lies in the Bari country, in about the fifth degree of north latitude. It was the first elevation he had seen since leaving Djebel Defafangh, in the country of the Dinkas, in latitude $10^{\circ} 35'$. All the intervening space is a vast savannah, interspersed with reedy swamps of stagnant water. The Zhirs own numerous flocks and herds, and cultivate large fields of sesame and dourra. They are very superior to the Nuehrs and Kyks in stature, symmetry of form, and

their manner toward strangers. In all these tribes, the men go entirely naked, while the women wear a narrow girdle of sheep-skin around the loins. Dr. Knoblecher, however, confirmed the statement of Werne as to the modesty of their demeanor and the evident morality of their domestic life.

After leaving the Zhirs the expedition entered the country of the Baris, and on the 14th of January reached the rapids of the White Nile, at the island of Tsanker, in $4^{\circ} 49'$ north. This was the furthest point reached by all previous expeditions, as they found it impossible to advance further with their vessels. The Nubian pilot, Suleyman Abou-Zeid, determined to make the attempt, and on the following day, aided by a strong north wind, stemmed the rapid and reached the broad, lake-like expanse of river above it. Continuing his voyage, Dr. Knoblecher sailed sixteen miles further, to the Bari village of Tokiman. The country was exceedingly rich and beautiful, abounding in trees, and densely peopled. The current of the river was more rapid, its waters purer, and the air seemed to have entirely lost the depressing miasmatic exhalations of the regions further north. The inhabitants of Tokiman showed great astonishment at the sight of the vessels and their white occupants. Nothing, however, affected them so much as the tones of a harmonica, played by Dr. Knoblecher. Many of the people shed tears of delight, and the chief offered the sovereignty of his tribe in exchange for the wonderful instrument.

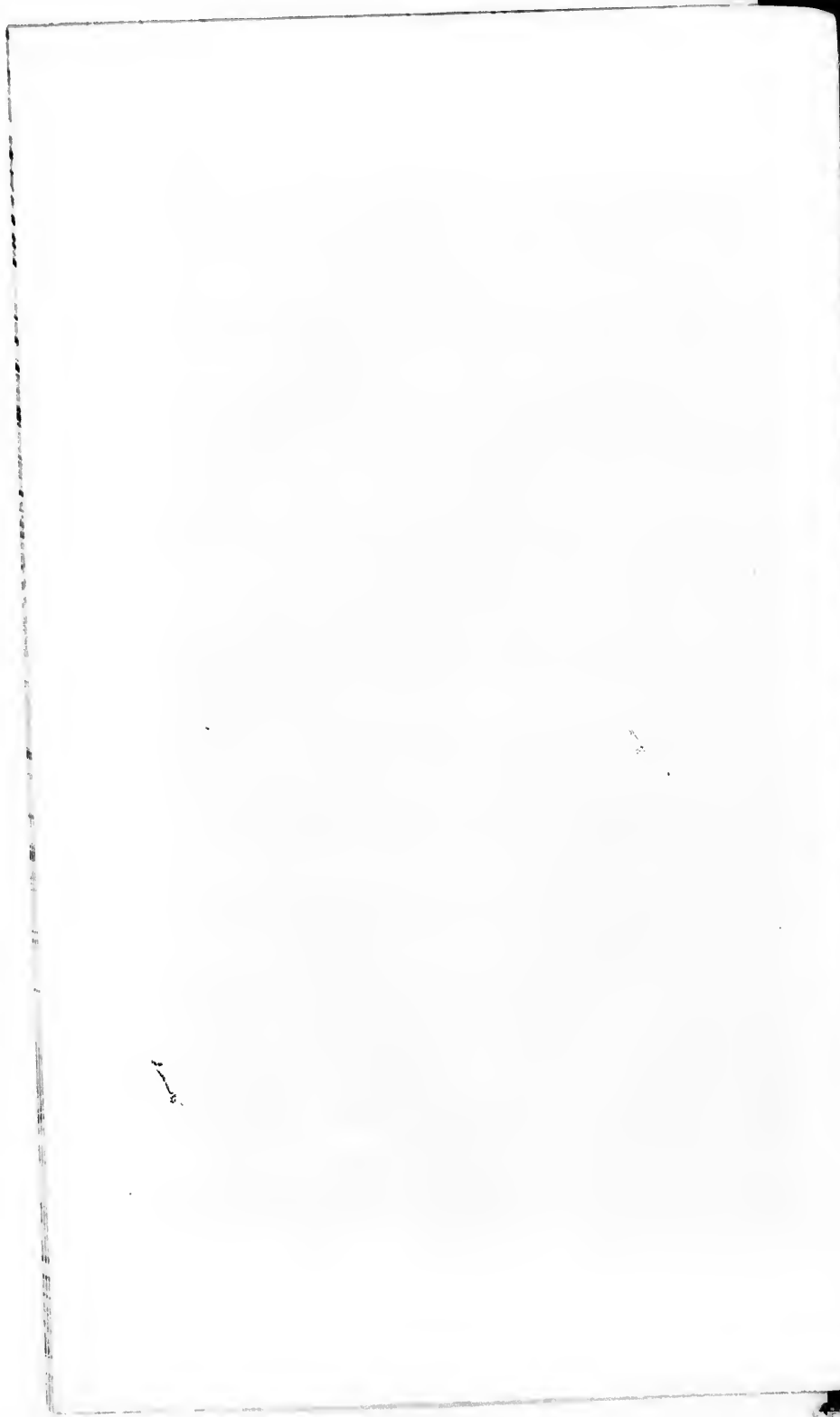
On the 16th, the expedition reached the village of Logwek, which takes its name from a solitary granite peak, about six hundred feet high, which stands on the left bank of the Nile. It is in latitude $4^{\circ} 10'$ north, and this is the most southern point which has yet been reached on the White Nile. Dr. Knoblecher ascended the mountain, which commanded a view of almost the entire Bari country. Toward the south-west the river wound out of sight between the mountains Rego and Kidi, near which is the mountain of Kereg, containing rich iron mines which are worked by the natives. Toward the south, on the very verge of the horizon, rose a long range of hills, whose forms could not be observed with exactness, owing to the great distance. Beyond the Logwaya range, which appeared in the east, dwell the Berri tribes, whose language is distinct from the Baris, and who are neighbors of the Gallas—that warlike race, whose domain extends from Abyssinia to the wilds of Mozambique, along the great central plateau of Uniamesi. The natives of Logwek knew nothing whatever of the country to the south. The furthest mountain-range was probably under the parallel of latitude 3° north, so that the White Nile has now been traced nearly to the equator. At Logwek, it was about six hundred and fifty feet wide, and from five to eight feet deep, at the time of Dr. Knoblecher's visit, which was during the dry season. Such an abundance of water allows us to estimate with tolerable certainty the distance to its unknown sources, which must undoubtedly lie beyond the equator.

The great snow mountain of Kilimandjarò, discovered in 1850 by Dr. Krapf, the German missionary, on his journey inland from Mombas, on the coast of Zanzibar, has been located by geographers in latitude 3° south. It is therefore most probable that the source of the White Nile will be found in the range of mountains, of which Kilimandjarò is the crowning apex. The geographer Berghaus, in a long and labored article, endeavors to prove that the Gazelle River is the true Nile, and makes it rise in the great lake N'Yassi, in latitude 13° south. Dr. Knoblechter, however, who examined the Bahr el-Ghazal at its mouth, says it is an unimportant stream, with a scarcely perceptible current. He considers the White Nile as being, beyond all question, the true river. He also states that, while at Logwek, some of the natives spoke of people white like himself, who lived far toward the south.

The shortness of Dr. Knoblechter's stay among the Baris did not permit him to obtain much information concerning them. They appeared to be worshipers of trees, like the Dinkas and Shillooks, but to have a glimmering idea of the future existence of the soul. They are brave and fearless in their demeanor, yet cheerful, good-natured, and affectionate toward each other. Werne frequently observed the men walking along the shore with their arms around each other's necks. They are even more colossal in their stature than the Shillooks, many of them reaching a height of seven feet. Their forms are well-knit, symmetrical, and indicate great strength and activity. In smelting and working up the iron ore of Mount Kereg they show a remarkable skill. Many of the spears in Dr. Knoblechter's possession are as elegantly formed and as admirably tempered as if they had come from the hands of a European blacksmith. They also have war-clubs of ebony, which are nearly as hard and heavy as iron. One end is of a sloping, oval form, and the other sharp, and they are said to throw them a distance of fifty or a hundred yards with such precision that the sharp point strikes first, and the club passes through the body like a lance.

On the 17th of January the expedition left Logwek on its return to Khartoum, the traders having procured all the ivory which the natives had collected since the previous year. The missionaries were prevented from accomplishing their object by the jealousy of the traders, who persuaded the Bari chiefs that they were magicians, and that if they were allowed to remain, they would bewitch the country, prevent the rains from falling, and destroy the crops of dourra. In consequence of these reports the chiefs and people, who had been on the most friendly terms with Dr. Knoblechter and Padre Angelo, suddenly became shy and suspicious, and refused to allow the latter to take up their residence among them. The design of the mission was thus frustrated, and the vicar returned with the expedition to Khartoum.

The pictures which these recent explorations present to us, add to the stately and sublime associations with which the Nile is invested, and that miraculous flood will lose nothing of his interest when the mystery which veils his origin shall be finally dispelled.



MAJOR HARRIS'S MISSION TO SHOA.

In the beginning of the year 1841, the government of the East India Company determined to send a mission to the kingdom of Shoa, in Southern Abyssinia, for the purpose of making a commercial treaty with Sáhela Selássie, the monarch of that country. With the exception of Drs. Krapf and Isenberg, German missionaries, the former of whom was then residing at Ankober, the capital of Shoa, the country had not been visited by Europeans for nearly two centuries. The nearest point of access by sea was the port of Tajura, in the country of the Danakil, a short distance west of the Straits of Babelmandeb, and thither the mission was directed to proceed. The command was given to Major W. Cornwallis Harris, of the Bombay Engineers, assisted by Captain Douglas Graham; the other persons attached to it were Drs. Kirk and Impey, surgeons; Lieutenants Horton and Barker; Dr. Roth, natural historian; Messrs. Bernatz and Scott, artists; two sergeants, fifteen privates, and five other assistants.

The members of the embassy left Bombay toward the close of April in the steamer *Auckland*, and were conveyed to Aden, whence they shipped for Tajura in the brig-of-war *Euphrates*, on the 15th of May. Dawn of the 17th revealed the town of Tajura, not a mile distant, on the verge of a broad expanse of blue water, over which a gossamer-like fleet of fishing catamarans already plied their busy craft. The tales of the dreary Teháma, of the suffocating Shimál, and of the desolate plains of the blood-thirsty Adaiel, were for the moment forgotten. The bold gray mountains filled up the landscape, and, rising tier above tier, through coral limestone and basaltic trap, to the majestic Jebel Goodah, towering five thousand feet above the ocean, were enveloped in dirty red clouds, which imparted a wintry tone to the entire landscape. Verdant clumps of date and palm-trees embosomed the only well of fresh water, around which numerous Bedouin females were drawing their daily supply of the precious fluid.

The next day the members of the embassy landed, with their horses,

baggage, presents, and merchandise. In a spacious crimson pavilion, erected as a hall of audience, Major Harris received a visit of ceremony from the sultan and his principal chiefs. "A more unprincipled object," says he, "can scarcely be conceived than was presented in the imbecile, attenuated, and ghastly form of this most meager potentate, who, as he tottered into the marquee, supported by a long witch-like wand, tendered his hideous bony claws to each of the party in succession, with all the repulsive coldness that characterizes a Dankáli shake of the hand. His decrepit frame was enveloped in a coarse cotton mantle, which, with a blue checked wrapper about his loins, and an ample turban perched on the very apex of his shaven crown, was admirably in harmony with the dirt that pervaded the attire of his privy council and attendants.

"The ashes of ancient feuds were still smoking on the arrival of the British; and although I endeavored to impress the minds of all parties with the idea that the amount disbursed at the time of our departure for Shoa, would be diminished in the exact ratio of the delay that we experienced—and although, to judge from the surface, affairs looked prosperous enough toward the speedy completion of carriage, yet there was ever an adverse under-current setting; and the apathy of the savage outweighed even his avarice. Thus for a weary fortnight we were doomed to endure the merciless heat of the Tajura sun, whose tardy departure was followed by a close, muggy atmosphere, only occasionally alleviated by the bursting of a thunder-storm over the peak of Jebel Goodah. Perpetually deceived by the falsest promises, it was yet impossible to discover where to lay the blame. Bribes were lavished, increased hire acceded to, and camels repeatedly brought into the town; but day after day found us again dupes to Danákil knavery, still scated like shipwrecked mariners upon the shore, gazing in helpless melancholy at endless bales which strewed the strand, as if washed up by the waves of the fickle ocean."

Finally, after a series of most provoking delays, the necessary number of camels was procured, the sultan's brother appointed to accompany the mission to Ankober, and the march was commenced on the 30th of May. On reaching the village of Ambabo, however, a few miles from Tajura, another delay of three or four days took place, and nothing but the presence of the war-schooner *Constance*, which was ordered to follow the march of the embassy along the coast, as far as the head of the Gulf, prevented the chiefs from committing further extortions. These delays obliged them to traverse the desert of Tehama at the hottest season of the year. On the night of the 3d of June they started again, traveling westward over the loose rocks of the sea-shore, until they reached the extremity of the gulf, when their path led up the steep sides of the barren hills to the table-land of Warelissan. Dawn disclosed the artillery mules in such wretched plight from their fatiguing night's labor, that it was found necessary to unlumber the gun, and place it with its carriage on the back of an Eesah camel of Herculean

strength, and although little pleased during the loading, the animal arose without difficulty, and moved freely along with its novel burden.

They spent the day on the scorching table-land, one thousand seven hundred feet above the sea, and having purchased with some cloth the good will of the wild Bedouin tribes, who had mustered to attack them, set out the next night, at moonrise, down the yawning pass of Rah Kesah, which leads to the salt lake of Assál. It was a bright and cloudless night, and the scenery, as viewed by the uncertain moonlight, cast at intervals in the windings of the road upon the glittering spear-blades of the warriors, was wild and terrific. The frowning basaltic cliffs, not three hundred yards from summit to summit, flung an impenetrable gloom over the greater portion of the frightful chasm, until, as the moon rose higher in the clear vault of heaven, she shone full upon huge shadowy masses, and gradually revealed the now dry bed, which in the rainy season must oftentimes become a brief but impetuous torrent. Skirting the base of a barren range, covered with heaps of lava blocks, and its foot ornamented with many artificial piles, marking deeds of blood, the lofty conical peak of Jebel Secáro rose presently to sight, and not long afterward the far-famed Lake Assál, surrounded by dancing mirage, was seen sparkling at its base.

"In this unventilated and diabolical hollow," says the narrative, "dreadful indeed were the sufferings in store both for man and beast. Not a drop of fresh water existed within many miles; and, although every human precaution had been taken to secure a supply, by means of skins carried upon camels, the very great extent of most impracticable country to be traversed, which had unavoidably led to the detention of nearly all, added to the difficulty of restraining a multitude maddened by the tortures of burning thirst, rendered the provision quite insufficient; and during the whole of this appalling day, with the mercury in the thermometer standing at one hundred and twenty-six degrees under the shade of cloaks and umbrellas, in a suffocating Pandemonium, depressed five hundred and seventy feet below the ocean, where no zephyr fanned the fevered skin, and where the glare, arising from the sea of white salt, was most painful to the eyes; where the furnace-like vapor exhaled, almost choking respiration, created an indomitable thirst, and not the smallest shelter existed, save such as was afforded, in cruel mockery, by the stunted boughs of the solitary leafless acacia, or, worse still, by black blocks of heated lava, it was only practicable, during twelve tedious hours, to supply to each of the party two quarts of the most mephitic brickdust-colored fluid, which the direst necessity could alone have forced down the parched throat, and which, after all, far from alleviating thirst, served materially to augment its horrors."

The sufferings of the party were so terrible, that they were obliged to leave the baggage to the care of the guides and camel-drivers, and push on to the ravine of Goongoonteh, beyond the desert, where there was a spring of water. All the Europeans, therefore, set out at midnight,

but at the very moment of starting, the camel carrying the water-skins fell, burst the skins, and lost the last remaining supply. "The horrors of that dismal night," says Major Harris, "set the efforts of description at defiance. An unlimited supply of water in prospect, at the distance of only sixteen miles, had for the moment buoyed up the drooping spirit which tenanted each way-worn frame; and when an exhausted mule was unable to totter further, his rider contrived manfully to breast the steep hill on foot. But owing to the long fasting and privation endured by all, the limbs of the weaker soon refused the task, and after the first two miles, they dropped fast in the rear.

"Fanned by the fiery blast of the midnight sirocco, the cry for water, uttered feebly and with difficulty, by numbers of parched throats, now became incessant; and the supply of that precious element brought for the whole party falling short of one gallon and a half, it was not long to be answered. A sip of diluted vinegar for a moment assuaging the burning thirst which raged in the vitals, again raised their drooping souls; but its effects were transient, and after struggling a few steps, overwhelmed, they sunk again, with husky voice declaring their days to be numbered, and their resolution to rise no more." One of the guides pushed forward, and after a time returned with a single skin of muddy water, which he had forcibly taken from a Bedouin. This supply saved the lives of many of the party, who had fallen fainting on the sands, and by sunrise they all reached the little rill of Goongoonteh.

Here terminated the dreary passage of the dire Teháma—an iron-bound waste, which, at this inauspicious season of the year, opposes difficulties almost overwhelming in the path of the traveler. Setting aside the total absence of water and forage throughout a burning tract of fifty miles—its manifold intricate mountain passes, barely wide enough to admit the transit of a loaded camel, the bitter animosity of the wild blood-thirsty tribes by which they are infested, and the uniform badness of the road, if road it may be termed, everywhere beset with the jagged blocks of lava, and intersected by perilous acclivities and descents—it is no exaggeration to state, that the stifling sirocco which sweeps across the unwholesome salt flat during the hotter months of the year, could not fail, within eight and forty hours, to destroy the hardest European adventurer.

The ravine in which they were encamped was the scene of a terrible tragedy on the following night. Favored by the obscurity of the place, some marauding Bedouins succeeded in stealing past the sentries; a wild cry aroused the camp, and as the frightened men ran to the spot whence it proceeded, Sergeant Walpole and Corporal Wilson were discovered, in the last agonies of death. One had been struck with a creese in the carotid artery immediately below the ear, and the other stabbed through the heart; while speechless beside their mangled bodies was stretched a Portuguese follower, with a frightful gash across the abdomen. No attempt to plunder appeared as an excuse for the outrage,

g the water-skins
y. "The horrors
orts of description
ect, at the distance
the drooping spirit
xhausted mule was
to breast the steep
on endured by all,
after the first two

, the cry for water,
rched throats, now
ement brought for
it was not long to
ssuaging the burn-
eir drooping souls;
a few steps, over-
ng their days to be
One of the guides
ngle skin of muddy
This supply saved
g on the sands, and
atch.

e Teháma—an iron-
e year, opposes diffi-
eler. Setting aside
urning tract of fifty
wide enough to ad-
y of the wild blood-
form badness of the
h the jagged blocks
escents—it is no ex-
veeps across the un-
year, could not fail,
est European adven-

e scene of a terrible
ecurity of the place,
ast the sentries; a
en ran to the spot
al Wilson were dis-
struck with a creese
the other stabbed
mangled bodies was
gash across the ab-
use for the outrage,

and the only object doubtless was the acquisition of that barbarous estimation and distinction which is to be arrived at through deeds of assassination and blood. For every victim, sleeping or waking, that falls under the murderous knife of one of these fiends, he is entitled to display a white ostrich-plume in his woolly hair, to wear on the arm an additional bracelet of copper, and to adorn the hilt of his reeking creese with yet another stud of silver or pewter. Ere the day dawned the mangled bodies of the dead, now stiff and stark, were consigned by their sorrowing comrades to rude but compact receptacles—untimely tombs constructed by the native escort, who had voluntarily addressed themselves to the task.

Nine miles of gradual ascent next day, brought the caravan safely to the encamping ground at the head of the stream—a swamp surrounded by waving palms and verdant rushes, on a high table-land, affording abundance of green forage to the famished cattle. The next night they made sixteen miles, and on the forenoon of the 12th, reached the village of Suggadera, in the country of the Danakil Debeni—the first habitations they had seen since leaving the sea-coast, ninety miles distant. The banks of the shallow stream at this place were fringed with dwarf-palms, and drooping tamarisks. Flocks of goats, diligently browsing on the fat pods which fall at this season from the acacia, were tended by Bedouin crones in greasy leathern petticoats, who plaited mats of the split date-leaf; while groups of men, women, and children, lining the eminences at every turn, watched the progress of the stranger party.

Journeying forward over waste and dreary plains, crossed here and there by almost exhausted water-courses, they reached on the 15th, the inclosed valley of Gobaad, one thousand and fifty-seven feet above the sea. Hearing that Makobunto, Chief of the Debeni Arabs, was in the neighborhood, Major Harris sent a messenger to him demanding an interview, which took place on the following day. "Attended by a numerous and disreputable retinue, dragging as a gift an obstinate old he-goat, the potent savage sauntered carelessly into our camp during the early hours of the forenoon. Not one whit better clad than the ragged and greasy ruffians in his train, he was yet distinguished by weapons of a superior order—the shaft of his spear, which resembled a weaver's beam, being mounted below the broad glittering blade with rings of brass and copper, while the hilt and scabbard of a truly formidable creese were embellished in like ostentatious fashion. The wearer's haughty air, and look of wild determination, were well in unison with the reputation he had acquired as a warrior chief. Long raven locks floated like eagles' feathers over a bony and stalwart frame. A pair of large sinewy arms, terminated in fingers tipped with nails akin to birds' claws, and the general form and figure of the puissant Makobunto brought forcibly to mind the Ogre in the nursery tale.

"This had been a day of feasting and carousal; for both Izhák, and

the son of the Rookhba chief had likewise received sheep, and the slaughter of each had been followed by a general tussel for the possession of the caul. For the purpose of larding the head this is a prize infinitely preferred even to the tail, which appendage in the Adel sheep is so copiously furnished, that the animal is said to be capable of subsisting an entire year upon the absorption of its own fat, without tasting water. It was truly delightful to witness the process of hair-dressing at the hands of the Danákil barber. The fat having been melted down in a wooden bowl, the operator, removing his quid, and placing it in a secure position behind the left ear, proceeded to suck up copious mouthfuls of the liquid, which were then sputtered over the frizzled wig of a comrade, who, with mantle drawn before his eyes to exclude stray portions of tallow, remained squatted on his haunches, the very picture of patience. The bowl exhausted, the operator carefully collects the suet that has so creamed around his chaps as to render him inarticulate; and having duly smeared the same over the filthy garment of him to whom it in equity belongs, proceeds, with a skewer, to put the last finishing touch to his work, which, as the lard congeals, gradually assumes the desired aspect of a fine full-blown cauliflower.*



A WANDERING AFRICAN TRIBE.

The next march led over the high table-land of Hood Ali, a stony level thickly studded with dry grass, and extending in one monotonous plateau as far as the eye could reach. The fetid carrion-flower here pre-

* This original style of hair-dressing is practiced also among the Ababdehs, the Bisharees, and, in fact, all the native tribes of the Nubian Desert and of Sennaar. Though absurd and disgusting in appearance, it is doubtless a useful protection to the head, as these races wear no turban or any other covering.

and sheep, and the
 rassel for the pos-
 the head this is a
 ndage in the Adel
 t to be capable of
 s own fat, without
 he process of hair-
 e fat having been
 ving his quid, and
 eceeded to suck up
 pattered over the
 before his eyes to
 l on his haunches,
 the operator care-
 s chaps as to render
 me over the filthy
 eds, with a skewer,
 , as the lard con-
 ne full-blown cauli-



of Hood Ali, a stony
 g in one monotonous
 rriion-flower hero pre-
 among the Ababdehs, the
 Desert and of Sennaar.
 is a useful protection to the

sented its globular purple blossoms among the crevices, and a singular medicinal plant, termed Lab-lubba, was detected by the keen eye of a savage. The usual encamping ground at Arabdera was found to be pre-occupied by a nomad tribe of Bedouin goat-herds, who monopolized the scanty water. For several days afterward, the character of the journey did not materially vary. The table-land gradually ascended, and the peaks of distant mountains appeared on the horizon. The embassy frequently met with companies of the wandering tribes, moving from one watering-place to another, with their goats and camels. Attempts were made to steal the horses, and the travelers were annoyed by the impudent curiosity of the natives; but they kept a strict watch, and were not threatened with open hostility.

On the 23d they reached the Wady Killulloo, which is considered exactly half-way from the sea-coast to the frontier of Shoa. The worst portion of the road was now behind them, but they were destined to waste many days in that vile spot, in annoying debates and discussions, which at one time caused them to fear that their only chance of proceeding would be to abandon all their baggage. Izhak, the brother of the Sultan of Tajura, the chief of the Hy Somaui tribe, and the chief of the Woemas, all disputed which should have the management of the expedition. The opportunity was also taken of arbitrating old feuds and private quarrels: a vast concourse of armed natives, members of the various tribes, sat day and night in a wide circle, loudly discussing the various questions brought before them. "Throughout this period of irksome detention," says Major Harris, "the thermometer stood daily at 112°, and the temperature of the small tent, already sufficiently oppressive, was considerably raised by the unceasing obtrusions of the wild, dirty, unmannerly rabble who filled the ravine. Imperiously demanding, not suing, for snuff, beads, and tobacco, with paper whereon to write charms and spells for defense against evil spirits, swarms forced themselves in from the first dawn of day to the mounting of the guard at night. Treating the pale-faced proprietors with the most marked insult and contumely, they spat upon the beds, excluded both air and light, and tainted the already close atmosphere with every abominable smell."

At length, on the 28th, it was announced that every point at issue had been satisfactorily arranged, and the journey was to be resumed on the morrow. But other difficulties arose, and meanwhile the ruffians endeavored to plunder the camp of the embassy by night, and vented their spite in throwing stones at the sentries. On the 30th, after a week's delay, they got off, and soon afterward met a messenger who had been sent forward from Tajura, with a letter to King Sáhela Selássie, requesting assistance on the road. He brought a note from Dr. Krapf to Major Harris, but merely assurances of welcome from the king, who was absent from his capital on a military expedition. The rainy season had now fairly set in, and it was believed that the pools along the road would furnish a sufficient supply for the caravan. Their course lay over

the extensive plain of Merihán, along the base of the grass-clad Bundoora Hills. Water, however, was not so plenty as they had anticipated, and they suffered great distress on the plain of Sultelli, from which they were providentially relieved by a heavy fall of rain at night.

"Singular and interesting indeed," remarks Major Harris, "is the wild scenery in the vicinity of the treacherous oasis of Sultéli. A field of extinct volcanic cones, encircled each by a black belt of vitrified lava, environs it on three sides; and of these Mount Abida, three thousand feet in height, would seem to be the parent, its yawning cup, enveloped in clouds, stretching some two and a half miles in diameter. Beyond, the still loftier crater of Aiúloo, the ancient landmark of the now decayed empire of Ethiopia, is visible in dim perspective; and in the extreme distance, the great blue Abyssinian range, toward which our toil-worn steps were directed, arose in towering grandeur to the skies."

On the 9th of July, they left these waste volcanic plains, and passing over a narrow ridge of land, descended into the valley of Halik-diggi Zughir, styled by the Adael the great Háwash—its breadth being about two and a half miles, and the bed a perfect level, covered with fine grass, on which grazed a troop of wild asses. Mules, horses, and camels, in considerable numbers, were abandoned before the termination of this tedious and sultry march—fatigue, want of water, and lack of forage, having reduced all to such positive skeletons, that they walked with difficulty. Ascending three successive terraces, each of fifty feet elevation, the road finally wound into the confined and waterless valley of Háo, famous for the number of parties that have at various times been surprised and cut up by the neighboring Galla.

From the summit of the height they obtained an exhilarating prospect over the dark lone valley of the long-looked-for Háwash. The course of the shining river was marked by a dense belt of trees and verdure, which stretched toward the base of the great mountain range, whereof the cloud-capped cone that frowns over the capital of Shoa formed the most conspicuous feature. Although still far distant, the ultimate destination of the embassy seemed almost to have been gained; and they had little idea of the length of time that would elapse before their feet should press the soil of Ankóber.

The Háwash, here upward of two thousand two hundred feet above the ocean, forms in this direction the nominal boundary of the dominions of the King of Shoa. It was about sixty yards wide, but swollen from the recent rains, and the current had a velocity of three miles an hour. With the dawning day, preparations were commenced for crossing the river on ten frail rafts which had already been launched.—transverse layers of drift-wood rudely lashed together, being rendered sufficiently buoyant, by the addition of numerous inflated hides and waterskins, to support two camel loads. This was the handiwork of the Danákil; and their sharp creeses soon clearing a passage through the

jungle, every portion of the baggage was in the course of a few hours deposited at the water's edge.

The passage of the river was safely accomplished, and the mission proceeded to Wady Azboti, where they were visited by a spy from the capital. From their camp the lofty peak of Mamrat, the "Mother of Grace," was plainly visible, and they saw the distant glimmer of Ankóber, on the mountain-side. The next day they commenced ascending the hills. "Three thousand feet above the ocean, with an invigorating breeze and a cloudy sky, the climate of this principal pass into Southern Abyssinia was that of a fine summer's day in England, rather than of the middle of July between the tropics. But from the summit of an adjacent basaltic knoll, which we ascended toward the close of day, there burst upon our gaze a magnificent prospect of the Abyssinian Alps. Hill rose above hill, clothed in the most luxurians and vigorous vegetation; mountain towered over mountain; and the hail-clad peaks of the most remote range stretched far into the cold blue sky. Villages, dark groves of evergreens, and rich fields of every hue, checkered the broad valley; and the setting sun shot a stream of golden light over the mingled beauties of wild woodland scenery, and the labors of the Christian husbandman."

They were now fairly within the dominions of Sáhela Selássie, and were surprised that no escort arrived to welcome them. A letter arrived from Dr. Krapf, however, stating that this was owing to the jealousy of the Moslem governor of Farri, the frontier town, who had sent the escort back under the false pretense that the Franks had not been heard of. The next day Dr. Krapf himself arrived, and was able to afford them great assistance, by his intimate acquaintance with the language. The king also sent a message inquiring after their health, and they were abundantly supplied with beef, sheep, bread, beer, and hydromel. The expected escort at length made its appearance, and the embassy was conducted forward with something of the pomp and state which its leader seemed to think was required by its character.

He gives the following account of the final ascent to the elevated mountain region in which Ankóber is situated: "Loaded for the thirty-fifth and last time with the baggage of the British embassy, the caravan, escorted by the detachment of Ayto Kátama, with flutes playing and muskets echoing, and the heads of the warriors decorated with white plumes, in earnest of their bold exploits during the late expedition, advanced, on the afternoon of the 16th of July, to Fárri, the frontier town of the kingdom of Efát. It was a cool and lovely morning, and a fresh invigorating breeze played over the mountain-side, on which, though less than ten degrees removed from the equator, flourished the vegetation of northern climes. The rough and stony road wound on by a steep ascent over hill and dale—now skirting the extreme verge of a precipitous cliff—now dipping into the basin of some verdant hollow, whence, after traversing the pebbly course of a murmuring brook, it

suddenly emerged into a succession of shady lanes, bounded by flowering hedge-rows. The wild rose, the fern, the tantana, and the honeysuckle, smiled around a succession of highly cultivated terraces, into which the entire range was broken by banks supporting the soil; and on every eminence stood a cluster of conically-thatched houses, environed by green hedges, and partially embowered amid dark trees. As the troops passed on, the peasant abandoned his occupation in the field to gaze at the novel procession; while merry groups of hooded women, decked in scarlet and crimson, attracted by the renewal of martial strains, left their avocations in the hut to welcome the king's guests with a shrill *zughareet*, which rang from every hamlet.

"Lastly, the view opened upon the wooded site of Ankóber, occupying a central position in a horse-shoe crescent of mountains, still high above, which inclose a magnificent amphitheater of ten miles in diameter. This is clothed throughout with a splendidly varied and vigorous vegetation, and choked by minor abutments, converging toward its gorge on the confines of the Adel plains. Here the journey was for the present to terminate, and, thanks to Abyssinian jealousy and suspicion, many days were yet to elapse ere the remaining height should be climbed to the capital of Shoa, now distant only two hours' walk."

The mission had enemies at court, and was detained day after day, waiting for permission to visit the king at Ankóber. Remonstrances sent to him were answered by polite promises, which were not fulfilled, and the monarch appeared quite indifferent to behold the splendid presents they had brought him. The most probable explanation of his conduct was, that he desired to maintain a due respect in the eyes of his subjects, and perhaps also to impress his foreign visitors with a befitting sense of his power and importance. While they were passing the weary days in the little market-town of Alio Amba, robberies became frequent, and a thief-catcher was sent for by some of the inhabitants. Major Harris gives the following curious account of the operations of the detective police at Shoa: "A ring having been formed in the market-place by the crowded spectators, the diviner introduced his accomplice, a stolid-looking lad, who seated himself upon a bullock's hide with an air of deep resignation. An intoxicating drug was, under many incantations, extracted from a mysterious leathern scrip, and thrown into a horn filled with new milk; and this potion, aided by several hurried inhalations of a certain narcotic, had the instantaneous effect of rendering the recipient stupidly frantic. Springing upon his feet, he dashed, foaming at the mouth, among the rabble, and without any respect to age or sex, dealt vigorously about him, until at length he was secured by a cord about the loins, when he dragged his master round and round from street to street, snuffing through the nose like a bear, in the dark recesses of every house, and leaving unscrutinized no hole or corner.

"After scraping for a considerable time with his nails under the foundation of a hut, wherein he suspected the delinquent to lurk, the impen-

tered, sprang upon the back of the proprietor, and became totally insensible. The man was forthwith arraigned before a tribunal of justice, at which Ayto Kátama Work presided; and although no evidence could be adduced, and he swore repeatedly to his innocence by the life of the king, he was sentenced by the just judges to pay forty pieces of salt. This fine was exactly double the amount alleged to have been stolen."

After a fortnight's uncertainty, news came that the king had taken up his residence in the neighboring palace of Machal-wans, and that he would receive the embassy on the following Monday. Major Harris applied for permission to fire a salute of twenty-one guns; but the most extravagant reports were in circulation relative to the powers of the ordnance imported, the mere report of which was believed sufficient to set fire to the earth, to shiver rocks, and dismantle mountain fastnesses. Men were said to have arrived with "copper legs," whose duty it was to serve these tremendous and terrible engines; and thus, in alarm for the safety of his palace, capital, and treasures, the suspicious monarch still peremptorily insisted upon withholding the desired license.

Still another remonstrance was necessary before the king would consent to be saluted, or to receive them. The morrow was at last appointed, and the officers, mounted on horseback, in full-dress uniform, rode up the hill to the palace, while the gun which they had brought with so much difficulty, bellowed its salutation to the opposite hills. "Just as the last peal of ordnance was rattling in broken echoes along the mountain chain," says Major Harris, "we stepped over the high threshold of the reception hall. Circular in form, and destitute of the wonted Abyssinian pillar in the center, the massive and lofty clay walls of the chamber glittered with a profusion of silver ornaments, emblazoned shields, matchlocks, and double-barreled guns. Persian carpets and rugs of all sizes, colors, and patterns, covered the floor, and crowds of Alakas, governors, chiefs, and principal officers of the court arrayed in their holiday attire, stood around in a posture of respect, uncovered to the girdle. Two wide alcoves receded on either side, in one of which blazed a cheerful wood fire, engrossed by indolent cats, while in the other, on a flowered satin ottoman, surrounded by withered eunuchs and juvenile pages of honor, and supported by gay velvet cushions, reclined in Ethiopic state, his Most Christian Majesty Sáhela Selássie.

"The king was attired in a silken Arab vest of green brocade, partially concealed under the ample folds of a white cotton robe of Abyssinian manufacture, adorned with sundry broad crimson stripes and borders. Forty summers, whereof eight-and-twenty had been passed under the uneasy cares of the crown, had slightly furrowed his dark brow, and somewhat grizzled a full bushy head of hair, arranged in elaborate curls, after the fashion of George the First; and although considerably disfigured by the loss of the left eye, the expression of his manly features, open, pleasing, and commanding, did not, in their *tout ensemble*, belie

the character for impartial justice which the despot has obtained far and wide—even the Danákil comparing him to “a fine balance of gold.”

The presents for the king, including Cashmere shawls, music boxes, cloth, velvet, and three hundred stand of arms, filled the court with wonder and delight, which was raised to its highest pitch by a second peal of twenty-one guns from the cannon, and the tearing into shreds of a sheet suspended on the opposite side of the valley, by a discharge of canister-shot. “Compliments from the throne, and personal congratulations from the principal courtiers and officers of state, closed the



WARRIORS OF SHOA.

evening of this unwonted display; and the introduction, by the hands of the favorite page, of a huge pepper pie, the produce of the royal kitchen, with a command that ‘the king’s children might feast,’ was accompanied by the unheard-of honor of a visit from the dwarf father confessor, who might without difficulty have concealed his most diminutive person beneath the ample pastry. Enveloped in robes and turbans, and armed with silver cross and crosier, the deformed little priest, whose entire long life has been passed in doing good to his fellow-creatures, seating his hideous and Punch-like form in a chair placed for its reception, in squeaking accents delivered himself thus:

“Forty years have rolled away since Asfa Woosen, on whose memory be peace, grandsire to our beloved monarch, saw in a dream that the red men were bringing into his kingdom curious and beautiful commodities from countries beyond the great sea. The astrologers, on being commanded to give an interpretation thereof, predicted with one accord that foreigners from the land of Egypt would come into Abyssinia during his majesty’s most illustrious reign, and that yet more and

wealthier would follow in that of his son, and of his son's son, who should sit next upon the throne. Praise be unto God that the dream and its interpretation have now been fulfilled! Our eyes, though they be old, have never beheld wonders until this day, and during the reign over Shoa of seven successive kings, no such miracles as these have been wrought in Ethiopia.

"No suitable lodging being obtainable at Machalwans," continues Major Harris, "I deemed it advisable to adopt the king's proposal of proceeding at once into winter-quarters at the capital. Preparatory to setting out thither we had an audience of the king. 'My children,' quoth his majesty, 'all my gun-people shall accompany you; may you enter in safety! Whatsoever your hearts think and wish, that send word unto me. Saving myself, you have no relative in this distant land. Ye have traveled far on my affairs. I will give you what I can, according to that which my country produces. I can not give you what I do not possess. Be not afraid of me. Listen not to the evil insinuations of my people, for they are bad. Look only unto Sáhela Selássie. May his father die, he will accomplish whatsoever ye desire!'"

"Instantly on emerging from the forest, the metropolis of Shoa, spreading far and wide over a verdant mountain, shaped like Africa's appropriate emblem, the fabled sphinx, presented a most singular if not imposing appearance. Clusters of thatched houses of all sizes and shapes, resembling barns and hay-stacks, with small green inclosures and splinter palings, rising one above the other in very irregular tiers, adapt themselves to all the inequalities of the rugged surface; some being perched high on the abrupt verge of a cliff, and others so involved in the bosom of a deep fissure as scarcely to reveal the red earthen pot which crowns the apex. Connected with each other by narrow lanes and hedgerows, these rude habitations, the residence of from twelve to fifteen thousand inhabitants, cover the entire mountain-side to the extreme pinnacle—a lofty spire-like cone, detaching itself by a narrow isthmus to form the sphinx's head. Hereon stands the palace of the Negroos, a most ungainly-looking edifice with staring gable ends, well fortified by spiral lines of wooden palissades. They extend from the base to the summit, and are interspersed with barred stockades, between which are profusely scattered the abodes of household-slaves, with breweries, kitchens, cellars, store-houses, magazines, and granaries."

The embassy being at length settled in the capital, and favored with the friendship of the grateful king, Major Harris and his associates soon became familiarized to their novel situation, and during a stay of nearly two years, made themselves intimately acquainted with the people and country of Shoa. There is no space here to describe his excursions with Sáhela Selássie; his hunting trips in the forests of the lowlands, or the many curious and striking ceremonies which he witnessed. A few leading illustrations must suffice. With regard to their religion, he says: "Ethiopia derived her faith from the fountain of Alexandria; but how

IOA.

s obtained far and
ance of gold."
awls, music boxes,
ed the court with
pitch by a second
earing into shreds
cy, by a discharge
and personal con-
of state, closed the



action, by the hands
uce of the royal kit-
ht feast,' was accom-
varf father confessor,
st diminutive person
turbans, and armed
priest, whose entire
ow-creatures, seating
for its reception, in

son, on whose mem-
saw in a dream that
s and beautiful com-
The astrologers, on
predicted with one
uld come into Abye-
t that yet more and

is her Christianity disfigured by folly and superstition! The intolerance of the bigoted clergy, who rule with the iron hand of religious ascendancy, soon proclaimed the British worse than Pagans, for the non-ob-servance of absurd fasts, and blasphemous doctrines. Nevertheless, we were permitted to attend Divine service in the less inimical of the five churches of the capital, and offerings were made according to the custom of the country. The cathedral of St. Michael, distinguished above all its compeers by a sort of Chinese lantern on the apex, being invariably attended by the monarch, came first in order; and after wading through the miry kennels that form the avenues of access, our slippers were put off in accordance with Jewish prejudice, and giving them in charge of a servant to prevent their being stolen, we stepped over the threshold. The scowling eye of the bigoted and ignorant priest sparkled with a gleam of unrepressed satisfaction at the sight of a rich altar-cloth, glowing with silk and gold, which was now unfolded to his gaze; and a smile of delight played around the corners of his mouth, as the hard dollars rung in his avaricious palm.

"The high-priest having proclaimed the munificence of the strangers, pronounced his solemn benediction. Then arose a burst of praise the most agonizing and unearthly that ever resounded from dome dedicated to Christian worship. No deep mellow chant from the chorister—no soul-inspiring anthem, lifted the heart toward heaven. The Abyssinian cathedral rang alone to the execruting jar of most unmitigated discord; and amid howling and screaming, each sightless orb was rolled in the socket, and every mutilated limb convulsed with disgusting vehemence. A certain revenue is attached to the performance of the duty; and for one poor measure of black barley bread, the hired lungs were taxed to extremity; but not the slightest attempt could be detected at music or modulation; and the dissonant chink of the timbrel was ably seconded by the cracked voice of the mercenary vocalist.

"The Abyssinian Christian will neither eat with the Jew, nor with the Galla, nor with the Mohammedan, lest he should thereby participate in the delusions of his creed. The church and the church-yard are equally closed against all who commit this deadly sin; and the Ethiopian is bound by the same restrictions which prohibited the Jews from partaking of the flesh of certain animals. The Jewish Sabbath is strictly observed throughout the kingdom. The ox and the ass are at rest. Agricultural pursuits are suspended. Household avocations must be laid aside, and the spirit of idleness reigns throughout the day.

"Caucasian features predominate among the Amhára, notwithstanding that the complexion passes through every shade, from an olive brown to the jet black of the negro. An approximation to the thick lip and flattened nose is not unfrequently to be seen; but the length and silkiness of the hair invariably marks the wide difference that exists between the two races. The men are tall, robust, and well-formed; and the women, although symmetrically made, are scarcely less masculine. They

are rarely beautiful; and their attempts are indeed ingenious to render hideous the broad, unmeaning expanse of countenance bestowed upon them by nature.

"From the king to the peasant the costume of the men consists of a large, loose web of coarse cotton-cloth, enveloping the entire person in graceful folds, but well-nigh incapacitating the wearer from exertion. Frequently disarranged, and falling ever and anon upon the ground, the troublesome garment must be constantly tucked up and folded anew about the shoulders, from which it is removed in deference to every passing superior. A cotton waist-cloth of many yards in length is swathed about the loins, and a pair of very wide, loose trowsers, termed *senáphil*, hang barely to the knee.

"The bulk of the nation is agricultural; but on pain of forfeiting eight pieces of salt, value twenty pence sterling, every Christian subject of Shoa is compelled, whenever summoned, to follow his immediate governor to the field. A small bribe in cloth or honey will sometimes obtain leave of absence, but the peasant is usually ready and anxious for the foray; presenting as it does the chance of capturing a slave, or a flock of sheep, of obtaining honor in the eyes of the despot, and of gratifying his inherent thirst for heathen blood.

"Meals are taken twice during the day—at noon and after sunset. The doors are first scrupulously barred to exclude the evil eye, and a fire is invariably lighted before the Amhára will venture to appease his hunger—a superstition existing that, without this precaution, devils would enter in the dark, and there would be no blessing on the meat. Men and women sit down together, and most affectionately pick out from the common dish the choicest bits, which, at arm's length, they thrust into each other's mouth, wiping their fingers on the pancakes which serve as platters, and which are afterward devoured by the domestics. The appearance of the large, owlish black face, bending over the low wicker table, to receive into the gaping jaws the proffered morsel of raw beef, which, from its dimensions, requires considerable strength of finger to be forced into the aperture, is sufficiently ludicrous, and brings to mind a nest of sparrows in the garden-hedge expanding their throat-like throats to the whistle of the school-boy. Mastication is accompanied by a loud smacking of the lips—an indispensable sign of good-breeding, which is said to be neglected by none but mendicants, 'who eat as if they were ashamed of it;' and sneezing, which is frequent during the operation, is accompanied by an invocation to the Holy Trinity, when every bystander is expected to exclaim, *Mároo!* 'God bless you!'

"A commercial convention betwixt Great Britain and Shoa was a subject that had been frequently adverted to; and his majesty had shaken his head when first assured that five hundred pair of hands efficiently employed at the loom would bring into his country more permanent wealth than ten thousand warriors bearing spear and shield.

But he had gradually begun to comprehend how commerce, equitably conducted, might prove a truer source of wealth than forays into the territories of the heathen. This conviction resulted in the expression of his desire that certain articles agreed upon might be drawn up on parchment, and presented for signature, which had accordingly been done; and the day fixed for the return of the embassy to Ankóber was appointed for the public ratification of the document by the annexure thereto of the royal hand and seal.

"Nobles and captains thronged the court-yard of the palace of Angollála, and the king reclined on the throne in the attic chamber. A highly illuminated sheet, surmounted on the one side by the Holy Trinity—the device invariably employed as the arms of Shoa—and on the other by the royal achievement of England, was formally presented, and the sixteen articles of the convention in Amháric and English, read, commented upon, and fully approved."

As the mission to Shoa has not been renewed of late years, it may be presumed that no particular advantage was derived from this treaty. Major Harris, in his work, gives no account of his return to the sea-coast.

HOA.

commerce, equitably
an forays into the
in the expression
be drawn up on
accordingly been
sy to Ankóber was
t by the annexure

the palace of An-
attic chamber. A
e by the Holy Tri-
Shoa—and on the
ormally presented,
and English, read,

late years, it may
d from this treaty.
return to the sea-

PARKYNS'S LIFE IN ABYSSINIA.

MR. MANSFIELD PARKYNS, an English gentleman with a taste for traveling, left home about the year 1841, and after rambling over the Continent, and visiting Constantinople and Asia Minor, joined Mr. Monekton Milnes (the poet and member of Parliament), at Smyrna, with whom he ascended the Nile during the winter of 1842-43. On returning to Cairo he determined to set out for Abyssinia, prompted not less by a desire to explore that interesting country than by a native relish for savage life and adventure. In both these objects he succeeded to his heart's content, and after years spent in Abyssinia, Soudan, and Egypt, returned to England in 1850. Three years afterward he published the results of his experiences—a quaint, picturesque, half-savage narrative, which, in its descriptions of Abyssinian life and customs, is more complete and satisfactory than any thing which has appeared since the famous work of Bruce. In this respect, it is greatly superior to the narratives of Mr. Salt and of Bishop Gobat, and may be taken as the most important contribution to our knowledge of the country, which the present century has produced.

Leaving Cairo on the 5th of March, 1843, Mr. Parkyns proceeded to Suez, whence he sailed, on the 25th, in a miserable Arab boat, bound for Djidda. "She was filled to the deck," says he, "cabin and all, with empty rice-bags belonging to that prince of merchants, Ibrahim Pasha; the deck only remained for the passengers, and well-filled it was with them and their luggage. We mustered, I should think, nearly a hundred persons of all races—Turks, Greeks, Albanians, Beçouins, Egyptians, and negroes—men, women, and children, all crowded together, formed a motley group—picturesque, I should perhaps have said, if it had been a little further off." In this craft he spent twenty-three days, the wind being contrary during the greater portion of the time. During his stay in Djidda he formed a plan for visiting Mecca, but was dissuaded by the English consul, who considered the risk of the journey much too great to be encountered. He therefore took passage a second

time on an Arab boat, bound for Sowakin, on the Nubian coast, and Massawa, the principal sea-port of Abyssinia, where, after a very tedious voyage, he landed about the end of May.

Concerning Massawa and its climate, he makes the following remarks: "In a conversation about the comparative heat of different places, an officer of the Indian navy remarked, that he believed Pondicherry to be the hottest place in India, but still that it was nothing to Aden, while again Aden was a trifle to Massawa. He compared the climate of the first to a hot-bath; that of the second to a furnace; while the third, he said, could be equaled in temperature by nothing but —, a place which he had never visited, and which it is to be hoped neither he nor any of us will. Toward the latter end of the month of May I have known the thermometer rise to about 120° Fahrenheit in the shade, and in July and August it ranges much higher. Such a climate is of course most unhealthy, especially so during the summer months, when a number of dangerous diseases prevail, such as dysentery and the usual fevers of the tropical countries. The island is a mere rock of coral, without a vestige of vegetation to enliven its fair face. There are cisterns for collecting the rain-water (no spring existing), but most of these have been allowed to fall into disuse, and the inhabitants of the island are obliged to trust to Arkiko, a village on the main-land, distant some three or four miles, for their supply. This water, moreover, is rather brackish. The extreme heat of the place would not appear extraordinary to any one acquainted with its position. Massawa is open on the one side to the sea, while the other is shut in by an amphitheatre of distant hills, sufficiently near, however, to prevent its receiving a breath of air from that direction, but, on the contrary, to collect, as it were, the rays of the sun into the narrow slip of land they inclose."

At this place he was received by a Jew merchant named Angelo, who furnished him with a house, where he remained ten days, while making the necessary arrangements for a journey into the interior. "One part of these arrangements," he says, "and truly a very essential one, was to divest myself of every needless incumbrance, and pack up my stores in a safe place. Accordingly, my best articles of European dress were offered to my friend Angelo, as a recompense for his kindness. I had already given away a large portion at Cairo, and now possessed only three Turkish shirts, three pair of drawers, one suit of Turkish clothes for best occasions, a pair of sandals, and a red cap. From the day I left Suez (March 25th, 1843), till about the same time in the year 1849, I never wore any article of European dress, nor indeed ever slept on a bed of any sort—not even a mattress; the utmost extent of luxury which I enjoyed, even when all but dying of a pestilential fever that kept me five months on my beam-ends at Khartoum, was a coverlid under a rug. The red cap I wore on leaving Massawa was soon *borrowed* of me, and the sandals after a month were given up; and so for more than three years (that is, till I reached Khartoum) I wore no cov-

ering to my head, except a little butter, when I could get it; nor to my feet, except the horny sole which a few months' rough usage placed under them. During the whole of this time I never had a headache, though exposed to the sun at all hours of the day, and was never foot-sore, though I walked constantly in the roughest imaginable places."

Setting out on foot with a guide and two servants, he proceeded to the neighboring village of Moncullou, where he was hospitably entertained by the lady of the French Consul at Massawa. It was now the most sultry season of the year, and the heat was so great that the party were obliged to start before daylight, and halt during the hours of mid-day. The next night they reached the village of Ailat, where Parkyns remained for two or three weeks, amusing himself with shooting antelopes and wild boars, and bathing in the natural warm-springs near the place. "The inhabitants of Ailat are Bedouins of the Bellaw tribe, which occupies all the tract of country lying about Arkeeko, and thence to the neighborhood of Ailat. Those of the latter district are by caste mostly soldiers, if they may be so designated. They are easily distinguished from their more peaceful brethren, the herdsmen, by their wearing their hair close-shaved, while the herdsmen arrange their bushy wigs in tufts or tresses on the head. Their manners are most purely pastoral. In the morning they eat a little bread and milk, and the same simple meal repeated in the evening, and seasoned with contentment and a good appetite, completes their daily nourishment."

Two other Englishmen, Messrs. Plowden and Bell, had preceded Mr. Parkyns, and one day, during his sojourn at Ailat, a letter from the former was sent to him from Kiaquor, a village about three days' journey distant, where he lay in a state of great weakness from the effects of a severe fever, which both he and his companion, Mr. Bell, had contracted during their stay at Massawa. They had started for the interior; but Plowden, being unable to continue the journey, remained at Kiaquor, while Bell went on to Adona to prepare a place for his reception. The fever, however, continued to attack him at intervals, and had reduced him to such a state of weakness that he had remained in this place for several weeks, unable to proceed, till accidentally hearing of the arrival of Parkyns, he wrote to him begging him to join him with all possible dispatch.

Parkyns at once determined to comply with this request. "Having little preparation to make," says he, "we were afoot the next morning long before the sun was up, and when he arose we were some way advanced on our road, with our backs turned to him. I say we had little preparation to make. Our party consisted of four persons—myself, a countryman as guide, a negro servant of Bell's, called Abdallah, from Sennaâr, and an Abyssinian lad who had lately entered my service. The whole of our baggage at starting was a small bag of flour, sufficient for three days' provision, half a pint of honey in a drinking horn, a change of raiment, and my ammunition and arms. Each of us carried his share.

The plain which we had to cross before arriving at the hills literally teemed with guinea-fowl, which at that early hour appeared unwilling to quit their roosting-places on the trees; and when, as we approached them, they did condescend to budge, they collected on the ground in coveys of some hundreds each. The road, as we advanced, became more and more rough and difficult, till at last we found ourselves ascending and descending almost perpendicular hills, covered with large, round, loose pebbles, and well garnished with the usual proportion of thorny trees, neither of which, as may be imagined, contributed to the comfort of a barefooted pedestrian in one of the hottest climates in the world.

"My boy, wishing to have especial care of the honey, had taken it from the guide, and was carrying it in his leathern case by a strap round his neck; but now, tired and hot, he threw himself down and spilled it on the ground; forgetting that a wide-mouthed drinking-horn will not carry a fluid like clear honey on a hot day, unless it is kept in a vertical position. Without stopping to speak, we all rushed forward knocking our heads together from eagerness, and sucked up the little honey that the greedy sand had left on its surface." Their supply was now reduced to a little flour, "but," adds Parkyns, with the most cheerful resignation, "a man who knows how to appreciate bread and water may with that simple diet go more comfortably through a hard days' march in a hot climate than if attended by the best cook in England with all his *batterie de cuisine*; and for this plain reason, that though the culinary art may procure him some enjoyment at the half-way halt, yet he will find that such temporary pleasure must be severely paid for in the afternoon's walk; meats and all other strong food being of too heating a nature. But, if hungry, don't eat your bread greedily, and then wash it down with buckets of water to prevent choking; sop your bread in the water, and then eat it; you will thus at once appease your hunger and quench your thirst, without being in danger of strangulation, or of having to carry a few extra pounds weight of water rattling about in your stomach for the remainder of the day; above all things, make it an invariable rule *always to drink as little water as possible*, remembering that the more you drink the more you will thirst."

After a long day's march, they reached at night an encampment of the wandering tribe of the Shohos. "We were hospitably received by these people, who lent us skins for beds, and provided us with fire-wood, as we preferred the society of the cows outside to that of their masters' parasites within the huts. Shortly after, the cows being milked, we were supplied with a large bowl of milk for our supper, and, having made our homely repast, were soon all sound asleep. Next morning, having carefully wrapped up the skins on which we had slept, we started before either the sun or our good hosts had risen." On arriving at Kiaquor, Parkyns found Mr. Plowden much better, though still in a deplorable state of weakness. Thinking that a change of air might be benefi-

cial to him, they determined to proceed together to Adoua, as soon as possible. But at the end of the first day's march, Plowden became much worse, and the hut offered to them was so close and disagreeable that they went on to a village called Maiya, about six miles further, in the hope of finding better accommodation. "But it was a vain hope!" says Parkyns. "At first we found none at all; and it was not till after a vast deal of persuasion and great promises that we induced the good people of the village to consent to our occupying a dwelling for the night; and when they did so, that which they offered was so bad, so very far inferior even to the last, that, rather than be stifled in a hut, we preferred lying in the open air, covered with hides as a protection from the rain, which kept pouring for several hours. Plowden's continued illness compelled us to remain here two days and nights, during which time we amused ourselves as well as we could, contriving tents and huts among the rocks near the inhospitable village."

The invalid was now carried in a litter made of boughs, but on reaching a village named Kouddofelassy, he became so much worse that they were obliged to halt there for five days, during which time they could procure nothing to eat except some honey and a few starved fowls. The rainy season had now set in, and when they resumed their journey, they were frequently interrupted by the heavy showers which fell every day. After fording the river Mareb, which flows down from the Abyssinian highlands to lose itself in the sands of the desert bordering the Red Sea, they traveled more rapidly, and at noon of the second day, through a heavy shower, caught sight of Adoua, the capital of the kingdom of Tigré.

"When we arrived in sight of Adoua," says Parkyns, "I galloped on ahead of the party, anxious to obtain shelter as soon as possible; but being mounted on a weak and tired mule, and the road being of a stiff and greasy clay, and in many places very steep, I gained but little by my haste; for the mule slid down all the hills, and stumbled or tumbled over all the inequalities of the plain. My attention being thus occupied, and the rain driving in my face, I had not leisure to enjoy a distant view of the city we were approaching; nor could I, till within a short distance of it, see enough to enable me to determine whether Adoua was built in the Grecian or Moorish taste. I own I rather expected to see columns or obelisks, if not an acropolis on some of the neighboring hills. Judge then of my astonishment when, on arriving at this great city, the capital of one of the most powerful kingdoms of Ethiopia, I found nothing but a large straggling village of huts, some flat-roofed, but mostly thatched with straw, and the walls of all of them built of rough stones, laid together with mud, in the rudest possible manner. Being wet, moreover, with the rain, the place presented the most miserably dirty appearance. Before entering the town we had to cross a brook, and to scramble up a steep bank, in ascending which more than one of our party measured his length in the mud, to the extreme delight of some young gentlemen col-

lected on the top, who laughed and yelled at each successive mishap. This rather annoyed me, especially as, when I took my turn to rise from the recumbent posture, with my nice white trousers considerably darkened by the dirt collected in this and several previous falls, I was welcomed by a double allowance of shouting. It was explained to me that I should only get more if I took any notice of it; and I afterward discovered that it was the fashionable amusement during the rainy season for the young men about town to collect in the vicinity of any slippery place, and, standing there, amuse themselves at the expense of the passers-by. After winding down two or three streets, filled with green



ABYSSINIAN WARRIORS.

mud nearly a foot deep, and barely broad enough to allow a man to pass mounted, we arrived at the house then occupied by Mr. Bell, whom we were glad to find considerably better in health than we had ventured to hope. Right glad also was I to find myself housed, with a prospect of our getting something to eat."

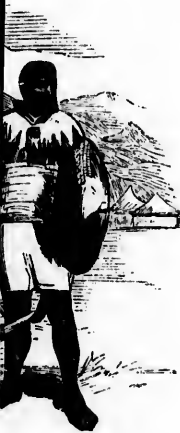
The day afterward, Parkyns's baggage, which he had left behind at Massawa, reached Adoua, and as the governor of the place demanded a heavy duty upon it, he resolved at once to visit Oubi, the Prince of Tigre, who was then in his camp at Howazayn, and ask his interference. Accordingly he left Adoua the next day, and after a journey of several days through the rain reached Oubi's camp, where he was lodged in a grass hut, seven feet long and five feet high. Knowing that it was cus-

tomary for the king to send food to travelers as soon as he heard of their arrival, Parkyns expected to be treated in a similar manner, and took no provisions with him. He was disappointed in his expectations, however, and found great difficulty in procuring enough to satisfy his appetite. It was not until the fourth evening after his arrival that he received a supply of food from Oubi. It consisted of forty thin cakes, thirty being of coarser quality for the servants, and ten of white "teff" for their own consumption. These were accompanied by two pots of a sort of sauce composed of common oil, dried peas, and red pepper, but, it being fast time, there was neither meat nor butter. To wash all down, there was an enormous horn of honey beer.

"The appearance of an Abyssinian permanent camp," says Parkyns, "is singular, but by no means displeasing. The diversity of tents—some bell-shaped, some square, like an English marquee, some white, and others of the black woolen stuff made principally in the southern provinces of Tigré; huts of all sizes and colors, and their inmates scattered about in groups, with their horses, mules, etc., form altogether a picturesque and very lively scene. In the center is the dwelling of Oubi, which consists of three or four large thatched wigwams and a tent, inclosed by a double fence of thorns, at the entrances through which guards are stationed, the space between them being divided into courts, in which the soldiers or other persons craving an audience of the king await his pleasure." This audience, on the part of our traveler, was not granted until the sixth day after his arrival. While strolling through the camp, he was summoned by a soldier, and, having hastily gathered together the presents he had brought for Oubi, betook himself to the royal tent. He gives the following account of his reception:

"We had to wait a considerable time in the outer court and doorway before his majesty was pleased to admit us. A crowd of soldiers collected round us, and amused themselves with many facetious remarks on our appearance, such as 'Cat's eyes,' 'Monkey's hair,' 'What nice red morocco their skin would make for a sword-sheath!' etc. These expressions were afterward made known to me; for in those days I was in a state of ignorance as regarded the language; and having myself a tolerably good opinion of my appearance, I judged that their remarks must be highly complimentary. I remember, some years after this, asking a person with whom I had become intimate, and who had never seen any white man but myself, what impression my first appearance had made on him. He answered me very simply that I resembled a rather good-looking Abyssinian who had lost his skin. But I must own that our appearance at the time of our first visit to Howazayn was calculated to excite much amusement. We had only recently adopted the Abyssinian costume, and as yet were not altogether well-practiced in the mode of putting on the cloth. Beside which, our straight hair, not yet long enough to be tressed, was plastered back with butter, and the faces of

A.
 successive mishap.
 turn to rise from
 considerably dark-
 as falls, I was wel-
 plained to me that
 and I afterward dis-
 g the rainy season
 ty of any slippery
 e expense of the
 s, filled with green



allow a man to pass
 Mr. Bell, whom we
 we had ventured to
 , with a prospect of

he had left behind at
 e place demanded a
 Oubi, the Prince of
 ask his interference.
 a journey of several
 he was lodged in a
 ving that it was cus-

those of our party who were incased in a thin skin, which I am happy to say never was my fate, were as red as a fresh capsicum.

"At last we entered the great hall of the *magnificent palace* of Oubi. It was a round hut, of about thirty feet in diameter, with a large wood fire burning on the floor, which had not even a carpet of grass strewed to hide the dirty face of the original earth. Having been previously instructed, we each of us on entering made a polite but vaguely directed bow. On such occasions the natives usually put their heads to the ground, but, as we were foreigners, such a mark of humility was dispensed with. I have said that our bow was vaguely directed, because in passing from the glare of a tropical sun at noon into a large apartment lighted only by a small door, over which was suspended a curtain, and which communicated with a tent without, it may be imagined that we could not so much as distinguish a single object within. Oubi, in a very patronizing tone, asked us how we were. An humble bow was the customary answer. He then desired us to be seated, and we accordingly sat ourselves down on the ground, there being no seat in the hut except the one appropriated for his highness's throne. My sight was just beginning to accustom itself to the darkness when we received this permission, but my place being directly under the lee of the horrible wood fire, and sitting as I did within a yard of it, I was nearly suffocated, and in a moment my eyes began to stream from the effect of the smoke, which nearly blinded me. I bore it with the utmost fortitude till I could endure it no longer, and then started up with an exclamation something like 'Oof!' and my eyes red and pouring with tears, at which Oubi laughed amazingly. Great men, I suppose, require more heat than others in these countries, as I can not otherwise account for Oubi's taste in having a large fire in the middle of August, especially in a tropical climate.

"Oubi was seated, reclining on a stretcher, which was covered with a common Smyrna rug, and furnished with a couple of chintz cushions, from beneath one of which appeared the hilt of a Turkish saber. We found him a rather good-looking, slight-made man, of about forty-five years of age, with luscious hair, which was fast turning gray. His physiognomy did not at all prepossess me in his favor. It struck me as indicative of much cunning, pride, and falsity; and I judged him to be a man of some talent, but with more of the fox than the lion in his nature. Our presents were brought in covered with cloths, and carried by our servants. They consisted of a Turkey rug, two European light cavalry swords, four pieces of muslin for turbans, and two or three yards of red cloth for a cloak. He examined each article as it was presented to him, making on almost every one some complimentary remark. After having inspected them all he said, 'God return it to you,' and ordered his steward to give us a cow. Toward evening our promised cow arrived from Oubi—such a cow! as thin as a cat—an absolute bag of bones, which could never have realized any thing approaching to two

dollars in the market ; such as she was, however, she was immediately slaughtered, and before night not an eatable morsel was left.

After this interview and the adjustment of the difficulties concerning his baggage, Parkyns returned to Adoua. "Shortly after this Plowden returned from Axum, and he and Bell set out on a tour to visit Mr. Coffin, at Antichaou, while I prepared for a journey into Addy Abo, a province on the northern frontier of Tigré, then so little known as not to be placed on any map. My principal object in going there was the chase, and if possible to learn something of the neighboring Barea or Shangalla—a race totally unknown except by the reputation they have gained in many throat-cutting visits paid to the Abyssinians. Except for such objects, the nations have not been on visiting terms for many generations. I was told much of the dangers I was to meet with from the climate and the people, and that the only two Europeans who had ever been there had died. My curiosity, however, was raised, and I felt that I could trust to my own prudence not to expose myself to any unnecessary danger. I have, moreover, always found that, of the perils described to a traveler before he undertakes a journey, not more than half need be believed."

Toward the end of September, 1843, he started on this journey, accompanied only by a few native servants. "The road skirts the foot of the hills for a considerable distance, till at last a small plain obelisk, on the right hand, and further on, to the left, a large stone tablet inscribed in Greek characters, proclaim to the traveler his near approach to the city of Axum. From the tablet a sharp turn to the right brings him in view of half the town, which, being situated in an amphitheater of hills, and possessing a tolerably well-built square church, probably of Portuguese construction, forms altogether a rather agreeable *coup d'œil*. The church is prettily situated among large trees, and surrounded by rustic but neatly-built huts. From the tablet, however, to the church, there is a distance of several hundred yards, along which lie scattered, every here and there, unfinished or broken columns, pedestals, and other remnants of the civilization of former ages. The remaining part of the town, with the beautiful obelisk and splendid sycamore-tree, at last come in view, having been hidden by the projecting foot of one of the hills. The obelisk and tree are both of great height, but the latter is remarkable for the extraordinary circumference of its trunk and the great spread of its branches, which cast their dark shade over such a space of ground as would be sufficient for the camp of the largest caravan. The principal obelisk is carved on the south side, as if to represent a door, windows, cornices, etc. ; while under the protecting arms of the venerable tree stand five or six smaller ones, without ornament, most of which have considerably deviated from the perpendicular. Altogether they form a very interesting family party."

He was obliged to remain at Axum a few days, having met with some difficulty in procuring provisions for the journey. On starting

again, he passed the ancient church, which is considered the most sacred in Abyssinia. The custom of the country obliges all persons to dismount and walk, while passing. For some distance after leaving the town, he continued in the high-road to Gondar. "This appellation," says he, "may give an idea of macadamizing, with footpaths along-side, mile-stones, fences, etc.; but here the high-road is only a track worn by use, and a little larger than the sheep-paths, from the fact of more feet passing over it. The utmost labor bestowed on any road in this country is when some traveler, vexed with a thorn that may happen to scratch his face, draws his sword and cuts off the spray. Even this is rarely done; and I have been astonished at seeing many high-ways, and even some of those most used, rendered almost impassable by the number of thorns which are allowed to remain spread across them. An Abyssinian's maxim is, 'I may not pass by this way for a year again; why should I give myself trouble for other people's convenience?'"

Immediately after describing this rough experience, the traveler, with wonderful cheerfulness, bursts into the following rhapsody: "How little are the gifts of nature appreciated by those who, living in the midst of luxury, are accustomed only to wish for a thing in order to obtain it! Ye who have already satiated yourselves with the bounties of Providence, and from constant enjoyment of every thing can no longer find pleasure in any thing, take my advice—leave for a time your lives of luxury, shoulder your rifle, and take a few months' experience of hardship in a hot climate. You will suffer much at first, but in the end will learn what real enjoyment is. You will sleep soundly when you throw yourself down on the bare ground, while in your bed of down at home you might have been tossing about in a fever all night. You will find more real pleasure in a draught of water, even if it be a little dirty, or flavored with tar from the leather bag in which it has been carried, than you ever did in the choicest wine to be got in England. You will devour a half-burned piece of gazelle, and find it more palatable than the cuisine of the greatest gourmand in Paris. And as for fruit, it is true we have none to speak of in Abyssinia, but a good raw onion is not a bad thing by way of luncheon. Shade, a bit of green grass, even coarse though it be, a rippling stream, a cloud—all these are treasures in Africa, though not cared for or heeded in a land where you have trees in every hedge-row, a velvet turf in every garden and in many fields, a river almost every three or four miles, and, as for clouds, perhaps rather too many of them.

"On my arrival at a village I have always found it the better plan to do as native travelers would—wait under a tree till some one asks me in. This is generally soon done, though a little patience is sometimes needed. People often gather round you to look at you, and occasionally make rather personal remarks, though generally they are very civil. Only answer their questions good-naturedly, and take pleasure in making

yourself agreeable, which you will find will become a habit, and you will be welcome everywhere.

"Part of our next day's journey," he continues, "was disagreeably rough. The road in many places reminded me of the ascent or descent of the pyramids of Gizeh, but was even more difficult, being literally a staircase, formed by enormous blocks of stone, with often a depth of four feet or more between each step. Had I been shod, instead of being barefoot, it would have been scarcely possible for me in many places to have reached the bottom without a fall. It was not till then that I thoroughly understood why the Abyssinians in general never wear shoes, and why those few who have borrowed from their neighbors on the Red Sea the custom of wearing sandals, should only use them in town, and immediately take them off when going on a journey."

After three days' travel Parkyns reached the town of Addâro, where he was hospitably received by the chiefs, but was greatly annoyed by the constant crowd of visitors who flocked into his hut, many of whom had never before seen a European. They also had a superstition that he possessed the secret of making money by magical arts, and carefully watched him wherever he went, in order to detect the process. "I happened to have a good many new dollars," says he, "and whenever I circulated any of them the receiver would sometimes exclaim: 'Wa! this is only just made; look, how it shines!' I often retire to the neighboring hills, when about to take an observation, or for some other reason wishing to be undisturbed, and seek out some snug little nook or corner among the rocks. Scarcely, however, have I time to make my preliminary arrangements, when looking up I find two or three heads curiously peering into my retreat, fully persuaded that they are about to behold the entire process of obtaining dollars from the earth, ready stamped with the august head of her imperial majesty. If a servant of mine returns from market with an ass laden with corn or other provisions, the people at once say it is dollars, which, having been made by me during the week, I had left hidden in the rocks, and that the servant had been to fetch them."

From Addâro he proceeded to Rohabaita, on the northern frontier of Abyssinia, where he remained nine months, familiarizing himself with the language and habits of the people. He became, to all intents and purposes, a genuine Abyssinian, adopting the dress and mode of life of the country, which he retained during the remainder of his residence there. The regular narrative of his travels terminates at this point, but the interest of the remaining portion of his book, which is devoted to an account of the country and people, illustrated with many curious adventures and experiences, is not diminished by this want of continuity. "After waiting two years without receiving any supplies or communications from Europe," he remarks, "I began to think that I should be compelled to remain at any rate for a long period in Abyssinia. So, to be prepared for the worst, I applied to Dejatch Lemma for a govern-

ment in those parts, offering not only that a regular tribute should be paid him, but also that I would engage to keep in order the hostile Barea, without his putting himself to any inconvenience on their score. He accepted my terms, offering to receive a certain number of guns in lieu of tribute; but the matter was not concluded for some months, as he had to ask his father's consent, and in the mean while, my supplies arriving, I left the country. Notwithstanding that the affair was, both by his wish and my own, kept as secret as possible, it became known to some of the people of the country, and many of those who had fled to the distant provinces came, bringing me presents, and anxiously inquiring when they should be able to return to their former homes.

"I had made my plans for governing, as I thought, to perfection. I considered that if once regularly appointed I should feel myself bound to remain till at least I had done some little good to my poor people, and arranged matters for them, so as to leave them in comparative security. Had I received the sum I expected (£300), after having entered upon my government I should have invested a portion of it in plows, oxen, and seeds. These I should have lent out to poor peasants, counting £2 for each outfit. One or two good harvests would have enabled them to refund the money, not only for these articles, but also for any provisions of corn, etc., with which I might have supplied them during the first year. Thus, at the expiration of two years, up to which time I should have required no taxes, they would have been in comfortable circumstances, and able to look forward to a chance of ameliorating their condition. In this way, without much difficulty, and (if properly arranged) with little risk of loss to myself, I should in a short time have mustered a thick and thriving population.

"During my whole stay at Rohabaita I was looked upon by the people as a chief, or man of importance among them (be it known we were in a state of semi-rebellion), and consulted on all the most important occasions. I, for my part, felt myself as one of them, and entered with the greatest sympathy and zeal into all their proceedings. At a feast no one enjoyed the dance and song more than I did. I had the most guns discharged at a funeral. No hunting party or foraging expedition but I was in it. I took my turn in scoutings and outlyings; and I am afraid I must add, that even on one or two occasions, though of course I had no hand in the act, I was privy to the getting rid of a few disagreeable soldiers who came to annoy our peaceful village, and to rob the poor peasantry of what little their predecessors had left them. The truth is, I did not, nor do even now, consider these other than justifiable homicides. Be it always remembered, the Amhara are not the lawful rulers of the country; but having conquered it, partly by force, but principally by treachery, they hold it under an iron rod, and pillage the inhabitants to their utmost.

"The high lands of Abyssinia enjoy probably as salubrious a climate

as any country on the face of the globe. The heat is by no means oppressive, a fine light air counteracting the power of the sun. At certain seasons of the year the low valleys, as of the Mareb and Teccazzé, especially the former, are much to be feared, from the malaria which prevails, and which brings on, in persons exposed to its influence, most terrible inflammatory fevers, of which four cases out of five are fatal; and even in a case of escape from death, the effects on the constitution are such that it will be years before the sufferer recovers its shock, if indeed he should ever do so entirely. More than one of the few Europeans who have visited Abyssinia within the present century have fallen victims to it. Many have died also from dysentery—a complaint which often comes on in the rainy season as an epidemic. These two are the most commonly fatal complaints of Abyssinia.

“The season most to be dreaded is immediately after the rains (about September), and the two or three following months. I once traveled through a whole ‘krumt,’ or rainy season, across one of the most febrile districts in this part of Africa, viz., the provinces of Shiré, Waldabba, and Walkait, in Abyssinia, and the plains of the Atbara and Soufi, on my way to the capital of Nubia; but then I had the experience of three years, a great part of which time had been passed in the backwoods about the Mareb. When I could get wood, I invariably lighted two large fires, and slept between them. This plan, though not very agreeable till you are used to it, is a capital preventive of disease; for during the day the sun’s heat raises the moisture in steam, which, when the evening becomes cool, descends in the form of dew or fog, and in this form is one of the greatest helps to a fever. The heat you have around you answers the purpose of a local sun, and you are in no more danger than during the daytime. But when I say I lay between two fires, it must be understood that they were so close together that I was obliged to cover myself with a piece of hide or a coarse native woolen cloth, to prevent the sparks or embers, which might fly out, setting fire to my cotton clothes. Another plan, which is always adopted by the natives, is not, I think, a bad one: Roll your head completely up in your cloth, which will then act as a respirator.

“As a general rule, abstinence does no harm in these climates, but, on the contrary, it is always a good thing, and often necessary. I never felt lighter in my life, or more free from the many ills that vex humanity, than during this my long period of semi-starvation. Wounds of all kinds healed on me like magic, and I never knew what it was to feel lazy or fatigued. On one or two occasions I remembered being much astonished at the little I suffered from otherwise ugly wounds about the feet. Once, in running down the stony and almost precipitous path which leads to the Mareb, I struck my bare foot against an edge of rock, which was as sharp as a razor, and a bit of flesh, with the whole of the nail of my left foot little toe, was cut off, leaving only the roots of the nail. This latter I suppose to have been the case, as it has grown

all right again. I could not stop longer than to polish off the bit which was hanging by a skin, for we were in chase of a party of Barea, who had cut the throats of three of Waddy Hil's nephews the night before—(by the way I'll tell that story afterward, to show what cowardly louts some of the Abyssinians are)—but was obliged to go on running for about twenty miles that afternoon, the greater part of the way up to our ankles in burning sand. Whether this cured it I know not, but I scarcely suffered at all from it next day, and forgot it the day after. Another day I was running after an antelope which I had wounded, and in my eagerness jumped over a bush, and on to the trunk of a fallen tree. Now it so happened that a bough had once stood exactly where my foot now lighted, but, having been broken off, had left a jagged stump, one splinter of which, of about the thickness of a tenpenny nail, entering the ball of my foot, passed so far through that the point appeared like a black spot immediately under the skin, half an inch above the junction of the third and fourth toes, toward the instep, and then broke short off. I got my game, butchered it, and carried it home (some two miles), with the splinter in my foot, which I then drew out with a nail-wrench. A quantity of blood issued from the wound, but, with the exception of a little stiffness for a day or two, which however nowise prevented my walking, I suffered no pain at all. Now, had this occurred to me in Europe, and under a good European diet, I should have been at least a fortnight laid up with a bad foot.

“As for thorns in the feet, it may be easily imagined that, in a country where there is scarcely a tree unfurnished with these appendages, and some of them of the length of three or four inches, the whole ground must be strewn with them, and, consequently, that the feet of a person going barefoot must frequently act, to all intents and purposes, the part of pincushions; yet I can truly say that, after some time, such is the force of habit and the thickness of skin that one gets by use, I thought no more of picking half-a-dozen thorns out of my feet than an English sportsman would of kicking away the clod of clay he may have accumulated on his shooting-boots in crossing a soft-plowed field.”

In June, 1844, Parkyns returned to Adoua, where he lived during the greater portion of his stay in Abyssinia. From his interesting pictures of the life and customs of the country, we have only space for a few extracts. “The slaughtering of animals in Abyssinia,” he remarks, “is attended with a regular ceremony, as in Mohammedan countries. The animal is thrown down with its head to the east, and the knife passed across its throat while the words, ‘In the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost,’ are pronounced by the butcher. Almost before the death struggle is over persons are ready to flay the carcase, and pieces of raw meat are cut off and served up before this operation is completed; in fact, as each part presents itself it is cut off, and eaten while yet warm and quivering. In this state it is considered, and justly so, to be very superior in taste to what it is when cold. Raw meat, if

kept a little time, gets tough; whereas if eaten fresh and warm it is far tenderer than the most tender joint that has been hung a week in England. The taste is, perhaps from imagination, rather disagreeable at first, but far otherwise when one gets accustomed to it; and I can readily believe that raw meat would be preferred to cooked meat by a man who from childhood had been accustomed to it.

"From the foregoing description, one is apt to run away with the impression that these people are by no means delicate in their choice of food, while, in truth, no nation is more scrupulously so after its own fashion. Besides refusing all animals which have teeth in their upper jaw—as the hare; and all such as have not cloven feet—as the camel, whose foot is only cloven above; and many others, from religious prejudice, of which I shall say more hereafter; they have also various points of delicacy which differ in the several parts of the country. An animal killed by a lion or leopard is by most persons considered eatable, those beasts being reckoned Christian; while, on the contrary, no one could touch the meat of an animal which had fallen a prey to the hyæna, that disgusting scavenger being considered as of the Mussulman religion. The Moslems are very lax in these points, some of them eating the flesh of the wild boar, or the unslaughtered (and, consequently, forbidden) leavings of their brother hyæna.

"When the master of an Abyssinian house takes his meals, all his servants stand round the doorway and look on; which custom, though it has at first a disagreeable effect to a stranger, is in reality a mark of respect to their superior, showing that they are in attendance on him, and not merely eating his bread, and idling their time away. The master's feeding-time, in fact, is a sort of muster for the servants. The dinner-tables in great houses are usually of wood, roughly made, but frequently also of wicker-work neatly put together. When a party is expected, fresh grass is spread on the floor, and the tables are ranged of various sorts and sizes—the highest nearest the master's end of the room—some wooden, some wicker, some broad, others narrow, it being only in a few fashionable establishments that two or three of corresponding size can be found. All of course are very low, being made of the height most convenient for a person seated on the ground; for chairs are unknown in the country. The table being spread, the bread is brought in by servants in large baskets carried on their heads.

"The Abyssinians are of middle stature, averaging, I should think, about five feet seven inches, rather more than less. I have seldom seen natives above six feet, and only one or two reached six feet two inches. In color some of them are perfectly black; but the majority are brown, or a very light copper or nut color. This variety of complexion, observable in both sexes, is, I should think, attributable to the mixture of races of which the nation is composed. The women of the higher classes have remarkably pretty feet and shapes, owing to the absence of the horrible confining fashions: they, however, soon fall off, chiefly, I

imagine, from climate, though partly perhaps from want of the artificial supports which are usual in European countries. But this to the traveler matters little, as in passing through the country he seldom sees any thing but the beautiful forms of young girls, who go half-naked; while married women, always wearing long loose shirts, and quarries over them, effectually conceal their figures, whether they be good or bad. In feature, as in form, the young Abyssinian women are, perhaps, among the most beautiful of any on the earth.



AN ABYSSINIAN LADY OF FASHION.

“For dress, the male Abyssinians wear a pair of tight cotton inexpressibles, a large belt, and a ‘quarry,’ or mantle of the same material. As I have before remarked, the dress of the soldiers and peasantry is nearly alike; that of the former being only of a rather more stylish cut. The trowsers are of a soft-textured but rather coarse cotton stuff, made in the country, and are of two sorts; one called ‘cálliss,’ the other ‘coumta.’ The former reaches half-way down the calf of the leg, the latter to about three or four inches above the knee. Both, if the wearer be a dandy, are made skin-tight. I might enter into a long account of the peculiar fashions to which these trowsers are subject, parts being doubled, parts single. One year it may be the fashion to have the seam at the side of the ‘cálliss,’ below the knee, of about two inches long

only, before it branches off on the thigh ; while another year it will be lengthened to six or eight inches. The last was the measure at which I left it. This, however, was considered so very ultra fashionable, that, except Dejatch Shétou, myself, and one or two others, few dared to attempt it.

"The women of Abyssinia are dressed quite as decently as any women in the world, without having a particle of the trouble of the ladies of more civilized nations. There is a distinguishing costume for young girls, and those who, from being married or otherwise, are no longer considered as such. The dress of the former is indeed rather slight, though far more picturesque than that of the latter. Down in our part of the country (about Shiré) the girls merely wear a piece of cotton stuff wrapped round the waist and hanging down almost to the knee, and another (or the end of the former if it be long enough) thrown over the left shoulder, so as to leave the right arm and breast exposed. In other parts of Tigré a black goat-skin, ornamented with cowries, is often substituted for this latter. An ordinary woman wears a large loose shirt down to the feet, with sleeves made tight toward the wrist. This, with a 'quarry' similar to those of the men, but worn rather differently, and a parasol when out of doors, is a complete suit.

"In general, neither sex wears any covering on the head, preferring to tress and butter that with which nature has provided them. The hair of the Abyssinians is admirably adapted for this purpose, being neither short and crisp like a negro's, nor yet of the soft elasticity of a European's, but between the two ; sufficiently long to tress well, and even often to hang luxuriantly over the shoulders, but at the same time sufficiently woolly to prevent its being liable to come out of plait as soon as it is done, which ours always does. I had the greatest bother in the world with mine. In the first place, it required twice as much pulling as any body else's, otherwise it would not have remained a moment in its place ; and then it had to be tied at the ends and stuck with a 'fixature' of boiled cotton-seeds ; and, after all, it never lasted in plait more than a week.

"The Abyssinians, when startled or alarmed, are in the habit of exclaiming, 'In the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost !'—as a Roman Catholic would cross himself if similarly situated. Great care must be taken to avoid using these words in the presence of a person supposed to be possessed by an evil spirit, when she is in an animated or dancing fit ; for even to whisper them to one's self would assuredly cause a terrible convulsion and entire relapse of the sufferer. A friend of mine cautioned me against this while we were going together to visit a sick person. He told me that once, hearing that there was an extraordinary case in a village where he was a perfect stranger, he went to the place, and found a lady engaged in dancing amid a crowd of her friends. No sooner did he approach than she sprang toward him, and ordered him to dance with her ; at the same time filling her mouth with

milk from a can near her, she spirted it into his face. Naturally startled by this unexpected reception, and being a man of decidedly nervous temperament, my poor friend, not approving of this proximity of the devil, ejaculated the fatal words. Scarcely, however, had they passed his lips, when the woman, uttering a terrific scream, threw herself on the ground and tore off all her clothes and ornaments, while her husband, who also, it appears, was more or less affected by the Tigritya, drew his shotel, and made a ferocious attack on the unwitting offender.

"In Abyssinia the trade of blacksmith is hereditary, and considered as more or less disgraceful, from the fact that blacksmiths are, with very rare exceptions, believed to be all sorcerers, and are opprobriously called 'Bouda.' They are supposed to have the power of turning themselves into hyenas, and sometimes into other animals. I remember a story of some little girls, who, having been out in the forest to gather sticks, came running back breathless with fright; and on being asked what was the cause, they answered that a blacksmith of the neighborhood had met them, and, entering into conversation with him, they at length began to joke him about whether, as had been asserted, he could really turn himself into a hyena. The man, they declared, made no reply, but taking some ashes which he had with him, tied up in the corner of his cloth, sprinkled them over his shoulders, and, to their horror and alarm, they began almost immediately to perceive that the metamorphosis was actually taking place, and that the blacksmith's skin was assuming the hair and color of the hyena, while his limbs and head took the shape of that animal. When the change was complete he grinned and laughed at them, and then retired into the neighboring thickets. They had remained, as it were, rooted to the place from sheer fright; but the moment the hideous creature withdrew they made the best of their way home.

In June, 1845, Parkyns received the funds for which he had so long waited, and in the following month took a final leave of Adoua. Traveling slowly northward, he passed through the dangerous and almost unknown region along the Atbara River, and succeeded in reaching the Blue Nile, below Sennaar. On arriving at Khartoum he was attacked with a fever which confined him to his bed for five months. He appears to have passed two or three years in Soudan and Nubia, but of his experiences in those countries he has as yet given no account. His story of Abyssinian life closes with the following words, which few travelers have ever been able to say: "During nine years of travel I met with companions of every color, station, and religion; but never picked up with one who gave me a moment's cause to quarrel with him, or from whom I parted otherwise than with regret."

IA.

Naturally startled and decidedly nervous at the proximity of the river, had they passed it, she threw herself on the ground while her husband, the Tigritiya, drew the offender.

Every day, and considered the months are, with very opprobriously called turning themselves to remember a story of the best to gather sticks, and being asked what of the neighborhood of him, they at length retorted, he could really make no reply, but in the corner of his eye his horror and alarm, a metamorphosis was in him assuming the lead took the shape of a grin and he laughed and laughed at the jokes. They had no fright; but the mode best of their way

which he had so long of Adona. Travelling dangerous and almost ended in reaching the summit he was attacked every month. He appeared in Nubia, but of no account. His orders, which few travellers of travel I met on; but never picked up a barrel with him, or from

W O O D ' S

JOURNEY TO THE OXUS.

AFTER the voyage of Sir Alexander Burnes up the Indus to Lahore, in 1830, the Indian Government undertook a survey of that stream and the adjacent countries. The right to navigate the river for the purposes of commerce was obtained by treaty with the countries of Scinde, Lahore, and the smaller principalities bordering upon it, in 1832, and three years afterward a survey of the sea-board of Scinde was made. Toward the close of the year 1836, Captain Burnes was appointed by the Governor General of India, chief of a commercial mission, which was to proceed to Afghanistan by way of the Indus, with Lieutenant John Wood, of the Indian Navy, and Lieutenant Leech, of the Bombay Engineers, as assistants.

The mission left Bombay on the 26th of November, 1836. On approaching the coast of Scinde, Captain Burnes directed Lieutenant Wood to make a careful survey of the Indus, from its mouth to the fortress of Attock, below its egress from the Himalayas, where it receives the waters of the river of Cabul. This survey was not completed until the 18th of August, 1837, when he reached Peshawur, on the Afghan frontier, where Captain Burnes and the remainder of the mission had already arrived. They all set out soon afterward for Cabul, and after safely threading the defiles of the famous Khyber Pass, reached that city on the 20th of September, and were favorably received by the Ameer, Dost Mohammed Khan. One of the objects which Captain Burnes had greatly at heart, was to obtain materials for the construction of an entirely new map of Afghanistan, in which actual survey should supersede hearsay information. He obtained permission to visit the valley of Koh Daman, in which are the celebrated gardens of Istalaf, lying north of Cabul, at the foot of the great range of the Hindoo Koosh, or Indian Caucasus.

While Lieutenant Wood was engaged in the survey of this valley, he was summoned back to Cabul, to accompany Dr. Lord on a mission to Turkestan. Toward the end of October, Murad Ali Bey, of Koondooz, had arrived at Cabul with presents for Dost Mohammed, seeking medi-

cal assistance for his brother, Mohammed Bey, who was a martyr to ophthalmia. Captain Burnes resolved not to lose so favorable an opportunity of securing the good will of these Uzbek chieftains, and accordingly appointed Dr. Lord and Lieutenant Wood to accompany Murad Ali back to Koondooz. On the 3d of November, all the necessary arrangements being completed, they set out, intending to cross the Hindoo Koosh by the Pass of Parwan. After a journey of six days, they approached the highest part of the pass, but the snows were so deep, that it was impossible to advance; the guides soon lost the road, the Indian servants were on the point of perishing, from the severe cold, and nothing remained but to return to Cabul, where they arrived on the 13th.

"Our experience of the eastern passes," says Lieutenant Wood, "taught us the importance of not tarrying long in Cabul. We allowed ourselves, therefore, only one day for repose and for reducing our baggage to light marching order; and having got rid of the useless Hindustani servants, now as anxious to remain behind as they were formerly solicitous to go with us, at an early hour on the 15th of November, we set out by the Bamian route for Koondooz." On the morning of the 19th, they crossed the ridge of Hadjikak, which divides the waters of the Affghan river of Helmund from those which flow into the Oxus. This pass being considerably lower than that of Parwan, they met with but little difficulty from the snow; the descent through the wild mountain tribes to the plains of Turkestan was safely accomplished, and they entered Koondooz on the 4th of December.

Lieutenant Wood gives the following account of Koondooz, its chief, and its people: "Koondooz, though the capital of Murad Bey, is one of the most wretched towns in his dominions. Five or six hundred mud hovels contain its fixed population, while dotted among these, and scattered at random over the suburbs, are straw-built sheds intermixed with the Uzbek tent or kirgah. Gardens and corn-fields alternate in its suburbs and extend even into the town. Nothing, in short, can be imagined less resembling a metropolis. Overlooking the east end of the town is the fortress. This is merely a mound, of an oblong figure and considerable extent, strengthened by a mud wall, and a dry ditch. The wall is in a dilapidated state on all sides but the south, on which is the principal entrance by the bazaar gate. On the north-east end of the fortress is the citadel, the winter residence of Murad Bey. It is an irregular structure of kiln-dried brick, surrounded by a moat. It has many loop-holes for match-locks; there are also guns within it, but none are mounted on the walls.

"Murad Bey, the head of this Uzbek state, is one of those prominent political characters that unsettled times, and a disorganized state of society produce. Such were Mohammed Ali in Egypt and the late Runjeet Singh in Hindustan. But with all his high qualifications Murad Bey is but at the head of an organized banditti, a nation of plunderers, whom, however, none of the neighboring powers can exterminate. Able

as he is to bring together, in a surprisingly short space of time, a body of fifteen thousand horsemen, inured to predatory warfare, and to those stealthy attacks for which Turkoman and Uzbek are equally celebrated, he feels himself perfectly secure from the assault of any of the chieftains by whom he is surrounded, nor, indeed, were they to league together could they successfully oppose him.

"The Uzbecks of Koondooz have genuine Tartar features, though the physiognomy of their chiefs is becoming softened by intermarriage with the Tajik, a Caucasian race whom I believe to be the indigenous inhabitants of Persia, and perhaps of Transoxiana also, and who are now found widely scattered on both sides of the Paropamasian chain. A Tajik is not permitted to marry the daughter of an Uzbek; but this unjust distinction is the only social difference that now exists between them. The Uzbecks are Sunnee Mohammedans, and consider an intolerant persecution of the other sect as the best evidence of the sincerity of their own faith and of their attachment to the Prophet. They are much fettered by their priests, or *Ishán Kajahs*, to whom they yield implicit obedience in all things, temporal and spiritual.

"The Koondooz breed of horse is very inferior to that of the Turkoman, or even to that which their countrymen rear about *Shehr Sabz* and the environs of *Bokhara*. The animal, to suit *Murad Bey* and his subjects, must be small and hardy, adapted to the hilly country as well as to the plain. Speed is a secondary consideration; endurance every thing. Their fore and hind quarters are remarkably large. One year from the day on which a colt is foaled, it is mounted and ridden by a light weight for a considerable distance at full speed, after which for two years it is not again saddled, and at three years old it is regularly broken in. Shoes are used only upon the fore feet, and in shape are a perfect circle. Like the rest of their race, the Uzbecks are extremely fond of horses and racing. Many idioms in their colloquial language have reference to them. For instance, if you inquire how far any particular place is distant, you are answered '*ek doweedah*' (a gallop); or if you ask what time any operation will require, the answer is the same—'while you may gallop so many miles.'

There was every probability that *Dr. Lord* would be compelled to remain the whole winter, in attendance on his royal patient, and *Lieutenant Wood* determined to employ his time as profitably as possible during this delay. He says: "The great object of my thought by day and dreams by night had for some time past been the discovery of the source of the river *Oxus*, and, thanks to my fellow traveler's tact and *Mirza Buddi's* good-will, *Murad Bey* on the 10th of December conceded his permission to me to trace the *Jihun*, an appellation by which this river is better known among the Uzbecks.

"Monday the 11th of December was fortunately a market day in *Koondooz*; so that the articles required for our expedition were at once obtained; and lest *Murad Bey* might recall the permission he had

given, we started that same evening for Badakhshan and the Oxus. We adopted the costume of the country, as a measure calculated to smooth our intercourse with a strange people, and we had little baggage to excite cupidity or suspicion. Coarse clothes to barter for food with the inhabitants of the mountains, was our stock in trade; and my chronometers and other instruments the only articles of value which I took with me. Dr. Lord accompanied us for the first few miles, and parted from us with cordial wishes for the success of our expedition.

"The most important of my fellow travelers was Gholam Hussein, Munshi, cook, and 'servant of all work,' in whom were more sterling good qualities than I at one time believed it possible to find in the breast of a Hindustani. More intimate acquaintance with eastern countries has considerably modified my unfavorable opinion of their inhabitants, and taught me to dissent from those wholesale terms of abuse which Europeans too often lavish on the native population. It will generally be found that our opinions of the people rise as our acquaintance with them increases. Another of our small party was Abdul Ghuni Yesawal, a Tajik by descent, and at heart a genuine Uzbek. He had been educated for a *mollah* (priest), but had long ago renounced the cloister for the field, and was now, as the affix 'yesawal' implies, an officer of Murad Bey's household. He was a jocund, good-hearted soul, though, perhaps, a little too susceptible of the tender passion. After a day's march, when a glowing fire, and the enlivening cup of tea had mellowed his rugged nature, I have listened to him expatiating on what he termed the three best friends of man, and what, next to life, should be most cared for. These were the Koran, a horse, and a sword. The first he would uncase from its numerous clumsy leather coverings, kiss the volume, and holding it out to the Munshi, swear by *Khoda* there was no book like it. A good horse, he would sagely remark, was a *great blessing*, it was invaluable; for what did it not do?—it procured a man his livelihood, and obtained for him his wives. That, in fact, without the horse, it would be impossible to *steal*, and then the Kattaghan's occupation and glory would be no more. His sword was a very poor one, but that mattered nothing."

For two days they traveled eastward over the open plains of the Oxus, to the town of Talikhan, where they were detained a day on account of the rain. Beyond this place rose a mountain ridge, the frontier of Badakhshan. From the top of the pass there was a superb prospect of the snowy peaks of the Hindoo Koosh, and the lateral spurs of the great chain, gradually lessening down into the plains of Tartary. Crossing another pass next day, six thousand five hundred feet above the sea, Lieutenant Wood descended into the valley of the Kokcha River, up the banks of which he proceeded to the town of Jerm, which he reached on the 18th. The country appeared to be depopulated. He did not meet a single traveler on the road; and except partridges, which were very plentiful, and the tracks of wild hogs, there were no indications of

animal life. Of the city of Fyzabad, once so celebrated throughout the east, scarcely a vestige is left, except the withered trees which once ornamented its gardens.

"On arriving at Jerm," says Lieutenant Wood, "our first applications for food and shelter were unsuccessful, but, after repeated disappointments, we at length prevailed upon an honest Tajik to receive us as his guests, and had soon wherewithal to appease our keen appetites, sharpened by cold and a twenty-four hours' fast. The town of Jerm, although the largest place in Badakhshan, is little more than an extensive cluster of scattered hamlets, containing at the very utmost one thousand five hundred people. The fort is substantially built, and is the most important of any we saw in Murad Bey's dominions." On delivering his letters to Mirza Suleiman, the Governor of Jerm, and informing him of his desire to trace the Oxus to its source, as well as to visit the mines of ruby and lapis lazuli in the neighborhood, Lieutenant Wood was informed that it was too early for the first of these journeys. He received, however, a guide to the mines of lapis lazuli, which lie in the depths of the Hindoo Koosh, near the head-waters of the Kokcha. They had not been worked for several years, on account of the poor returns.

"From the 26th of December to the 30th of January," says Lieutenant Wood, "we were detained in Jerm by the inclemency of the season. The snow took the good people of Badakhshan completely by surprise. Not expecting so hard nor so early a winter, they had made no adequate provision for their live stock; and no sooner did the snow cover the ground than there was a cry for fodder and fire-wood. We took up our abode with Hussain, our former host, who, though at first suspicious of his guests, became ere long our warm friend and almost constant companion. It is customary in these countries for relations to live in the same hamlet, often to the number of six or eight families. An outer wall surrounds this little knot of friends, within which each family has its separate dwelling-house, stable, and cattle-shed; and a number of such hamlets form a kishlak, or village."

"The hill-men always go armed, but the inhabitants of the open valleys very rarely do so. Nevertheless there is not a house in Badakhshan without its quota of rusty old matchlocks. In dress the people differ little from the Uzbecks. They wear the same peaked skull-cap, and when a turban is superadded, its color is generally white. At the season of our visit every man wore thick colored worsted stockings, and warm woollen cloaks, or chupkuns. On the cold days three of these cloaks were not an uncommon allowance. The shoes in use resembled half-boots, made from goats'-skin, and mostly of home manufacture. Instead of the heavy kammerband, or shawl, round the waist, the Badakhshi ties a handkerchief, and no native of the country ever thinks of setting out on a journey without a staff in his hand.

"In former times Badakhshan was noted for the social qualities of its

inhabitants, and we could still discern indications of this generous spirit, but few have now the means of being hospitable; and poverty under a task-master has produced a selfishness that exists not among Tajiks who are free. Among those communities which were styled Yaghi, or rebellions, we always experienced a more hearty welcome than from their kinsmen in the lower valleys, who, though richer, were galled and irritated by their Uzbek oppressors. Where independence is wanting, it is seldom that man retains his generous feelings.

"On new-year's day, 1838, we visited Ahmed Shah, the *pir*, or head mollah of Jerm, who had emigrated from Hindustan when the British mission of 1809 was at Peshawur. He had traveled much, and made a long abode in China, which country he entered by the road of Wakhan, and left by that of Kokand. The difficulties of the first of these routes he described as great, arising chiefly from the height of Pamir, the severity of its climate, and the almost total absence of inhabitants. Of that by Kokand he spoke more favorably. The *pir* was a large, stout, cheerful, old man, who looked much younger than he reported himself to be. He was in China when the lamented Moorcroft's messenger arrived in Yarkand to request permission for his master to visit that city; on which occasion, a mandarin of Ahmed Shah's acquaintance told him that the Chinese had determined not to admit Mr. Moorcroft, for, added the noblemen, we are persuaded were a *fringi* (European), to enter the country some dreadful evil would befall us.

"All our visitors spoke in high terms of Yarkand, and appeared delighted with its climate, and its inhabitants. They expatiated on the peculiarities of the Chinese, and the contrast which they exhibit when compared with other nations. Many accounts of their customs, and habits, which I received when at Jerm, were afterward confirmed by a traveling Jew, who had tried, but failed, to accomplish a journey through their territories. This man was a Russian by birth, and had been for many years a traveler in the countries bordering the Caspian and the lake of Aral. Hearing that records of the missing tribes were to be obtained in Cashmere, or Thibet, he was journeying thither when my Munshi, Gholam Hussein fell in with him at Balkh. This man's original plan was, to penetrate by the route of Kokand, Kashghar, and Yarkand; but, though skilled in the various languages of Central Asia, and conforming to the dress and habits of its people, the cunning of his nation was no match for the honest zeal with which the public functionaries of Kashghar executed the orders of their emperor. Suspicion attached to his character; and after proceeding as far as that town, he was forced to retrace his steps. A large guard, he said, was stationed in a tower above the city gate, from which all caravans could be seen, while yet distant. Before they are permitted to enter the city, each individual is strictly examined; their personal appearance is noted down in writing, and if any are suspected, an artist is at hand to take their likenesses. Interpreters for every current dialect are also present. To each of the persons subjected

to this vexatious investigation, the Chinese make a present of a few copper coins."

On the 30th of January, Lieutenant Wood learned that the Upper Oxus was frozen, an occurrence which would enable him to visit the ruby mines, and he accordingly set out at once. On approaching the mines, however, the ice became soft and insecure, and as there was no other practicable road except the bed of the river, he was obliged to give up the attempt, and endeavor to ascend the Oxus to its source. The weather promised to be favorable, although the cold was still severe. "Proceeding up the valley of the Oxus," continues the narrative, "with the mountains of Shekh Durah on our left hand, and those of Chitral on our right, both rising to a vast height, and bearing, far below their summits, the snows of ages, we arrived early in the afternoon at the hamlet of Ishtrakh. We reached the village in the middle of a heavy snow-fall; and its houses built among fractured pieces of the neighboring mountains, must have been passed unnoticed, but for a Yak, or Kash-gow, as the animal is here called, standing before a door with its bridle in the hand of a Kirghiz boy. There was something so novel in its appearance, that I could not resist the impulse of mounting so strange a steed; but in doing so I met with stout resistance from the little fellow who had it in charge. In the midst of our dispute the boy's mother made her appearance, and very kindly permitted me to try the animal's paces. It stood about three feet and a half high, was very hairy and powerful. Its belly reached within six inches of the ground, which was swept by its bushy tail. The long hair streamed down from its dewlap and fore legs, giving it, but for the horns, the appearance of a huge Newfoundland dog. It bore a light saddle with horn stirrups; and a cord let through the cartilage of the nose, served for a bridle. The good Kirghiz matron was not a less interesting object than her steed. She was diminutive in stature, but active and strong, and wore some half dozen petticoats under a showy blue striped gown, the whole sitting close to her person, and held there, not by ribbons, but by a stout leather belt about the waist. Her rosy cheeks and Chinese countenance, were seen from under a high white starched tiara, while broad bands of the same color protected the ears, mouth, and chin. Worsted gloves covered the hands, and the feet were equally well taken care of. She chid her son for not permitting me to mount the Kash-gow; and I quite won the good woman's heart by praising the lad's spirit, and hanging a string of beads about his neck. Strutting up to her steed with the air of an Amazon, she took the bridle out of her son's hand, and vaulted astride into the saddle. The sight appeared to be new not only to us, but to the inhabitants of Wakhan; for the villagers had thronged round to see her depart. They inquired if she would not take the boy up behind her? 'O no,' was her answer, 'he can walk.' As the mother and son left us, a droll looking calf leisurely trode after its dam; and when the party disappeared amid the falling snow-flakes, the rugged half-clad Wakhans exclaimed, as if taken

by surprise, 'None but a Kirghiz boy could thrive under such rough treatment.'

"The Yak, is to the inhabitants of Thibet and Pamir, what the reindeer is to the Laplander in northern Europe. Where a man can walk a Kash-gow may be ridden. Like the elephant he possesses a wonderful knowledge of what will bear his weight. If travelers are at fault, one of these animals is driven before them, and it is said that he avoids the hidden depths and chasms with admirable sagacity. His footing is sure. Should a fall of snow close a mountain-pass to a man and horse, a score of Yaks driven ahead answer the purpose of pioneers, and make, as my informant expresses it, 'a king's highway.' In this case, however, the snow must have recently fallen; for when once its surface is frozen and its depth considerable, no animal can force its way through it. Other cattle require the provident care of man to subsist them through the winter. The most hardy sheep would fare but badly without its human protection, but the Kash-gow is left entirely to itself. He frequents the mountain slopes and their level summits. Wherever the mercury does not rise above zero, is a climate for the Yak. If the snow on the elevated flats lies too deep for him to crop the herbage, he rolls himself down the slopes and eats his way up again. When arrived at the top, he performs a second summerset, and completes his meal as he displaces another groove of snow in his second ascent. The heat of summer sends the animal to what is termed the old ice, that is to the regions of eternal snow; the calf being retained below as a pledge for the mother's returning, in which she never fails.

"The first Yaks we saw were grazing among the snow on the very summit of the rugged pass of Ish Kashm, and at the village of this name, I procured one for Dr. Lord, and dispatched it to Koondooz in charge of two trusty men. But so cold a climate do these singular animals require, that though winter still reigned in the Koondooz plain, the heat was too great, and the Yak died within a march or two of the town. In fact it began to droop as soon as it had passed Jerm. Some years back, an Affghan nobleman succeeded in bringing two or three of these animals to Cabul, but even the temperature of that city, though situated six thousand feet above sea-level, is not sufficiently cold to suit their constitution. They declined as the snow left the ground, and died early in the spring."*

After following the course of the river for three or four days, sheltering themselves by night in the huts of the Kirghiz, Lieutenant Wood and his attendants reached a place called Issar, where the Oxus divides

* M. de Montigny, late French Consul at Shanghai, who first introduced the *Dioscorea batatas*, or Chinese yam, into Europe, succeeded in bringing four living Yaks to France in the year 1853. A few weeks before M. de Montigny's departure from Shanghai, I saw these Yaks in his stables at that place. They had already passed two years in that semi-tropical climate, and it is therefore probable that they may be successfully naturalized in France.—B. T.

into two branches. He was for a time undecided which to choose, as the volume of water was nearly equal, but the Kirghiz assured him that the source of the river was a lake upon the *Bam-i-dooniah*, or "Roof of the World," in Pamir, and that the most northerly of the branches flowed from this lake. Upon further examination, he discovered that the current of this branch was much more rapid than that of the other, and that its temperature was colder. The point of junction was ten thousand feet above the sea. A supply of provisions for eight days was procured at this place, and the party, enveloping themselves in cloaks and skins, to protect them from the extreme cold, set out, up the narrow valley of Sir-i-kol. Proceeding slowly forward through the snow, which was very deep, and suffering from the intense cold, they encamped on the third night at a height of thirteen thousand five hundred feet above the sea. Some of the men were so exhausted that they were left behind here, to hunt and keep guard over a *cache* of provisions, while Lieutenant Wood pushed forward with four attendants.

On the second day after this division of the party, the intrepid and persevering traveler achieved his object. "We had no occasion to remark the absence of the snow this day," he says, "for every step we advanced, it lay deeper and deeper; and near as we had now approached to the source of the Oxus, we should not have succeeded in reaching it had not the river been frozen. We were fully two hours in forcing our way through a field of snow not five hundred yards in extent. Each individual of the party by turns took the lead, and forced his horse to struggle onward until exhaustion brought it down in the snow, where it was allowed to lie and recruit while the next was urged forward. It was so great a relief when we again got upon the river, that in the elasticity of my spirits I pushed my pony to a trot. This a Wakanni perceiving, seized hold of the bridle, and cautioned me against the *wind of the mountain*. We had, indeed, felt the effects of a highly rarified atmosphere ever since leaving Wakhan; but the ascent being gradual, they were less than what would be experienced in climbing an abrupt mountain of much less altitude.

"As we neared the head-waters of the Oxus the ice became weak and brittle. The sudden disappearance of a yabu gave us the first warning of this. Though the water was deep where the accident occurred, there fortunately was little current, and, as the animal was secured by his halter to a companion, he was extricated, but his furniture and lading were lost. The kind-hearted Khirakush to whom the animal belonged wrapped him in felts, took off his own warm posteen, and bound it round the shivering brute. Had it been his son instead of his yabu he could not have passed a more anxious night as to the effects of this ducking. The next morning, however, the yabu was alive and well, and the good mule-driver was most eloquent in his thanks to Providence for its preservation.

"Shortly after this accident we came in sight of rough-looking build-

ing, decked out with horns of the wild sheep, and all but buried among the snow. It was a Khirgiz burial-ground. On coming abreast of it, the leading horseman, who chanced to be of that tribe, pulled up and dismounted. His companion followed his example, and wading through the deep drift they reached a tombstone, the top of which was uncovered. Before this they knelt, all cumbered as they were, and with their huge forked matchlocks strapped to their backs, and offered up prayers to the ever-present Jehovah. The whole of the party involuntarily reined in their horses till the two men had concluded their devotions.

"After quitting the surface of the river we traveled about an hour along its right bank, and then ascended a low hill, which apparently bounded the valley to the eastward; on surmounting this, at five o'clock in the afternoon of the 19th of February, 1838, we stood, to use a native expression, upon the *Bam-i-Duniah*, or 'Roof of the World,' while before us lay stretched a noble but frozen sheet of water, from whose western end issued the infant river of the Oxus. This fine lake lies in the form of a crescent, about fourteen miles long from east to west, by an average breadth of one mile. On three sides it is bordered by swelling hills, about five hundred feet high, while along its southern bank they rise into mountains three thousand five hundred feet above the lake, or nineteen thousand above the sea, and covered with perpetual snow, from which never-failing source the lake is supplied. From observations at the western end I found the latitude to be $37^{\circ} 27'$ north, and longitude $73^{\circ} 40'$ east; its elevation, measured by the temperature of boiling water, is fifteen thousand six hundred feet, as my thermometer marked 184° of Fahrenheit. The temperature of the water below the ice was 32° —the freezing point.

"This, then, is the position of the sources of this celebrated river, which, after a course of upward of a thousand miles in a direction generally north-west, falls into the southern end of the sea of Aral. As I had the good fortune to be the first European who in later times had succeeded in reaching the sources of this river, and as, shortly before setting out on my journey, we had received the news of her gracious majesty's accession to the throne, I was much tempted to apply the name of Victoria to this, if I may so term it, newly re-discovered lake; but on considering that by thus introducing a new name, however honored, into our maps, great confusion in geography might arise, I deemed it better to retain the name of Sir-i-kol, the appellation given to it by our guides. The description of this spot given by that good old traveler Marco Polo, nearly six centuries ago, is correct in all its leading points.

"The aspect of the landscape was wintry in the extreme. Wherever the eye fell, one dazzling sheet of snow carpeted the ground, while the sky overhead was everywhere of a dark and angry hue. Clouds would have been a relief to the eye, but they were wanting. Not a breath moved along the surface of the lake; not a beast, not even a bird, was

visible. The sound of a human voice would have been music to the ear, but no one at this inhospitable season thinks of invading these gelid domains. Silence reigned around—silence so profound that it oppressed the heart, and, as I contemplated the hoary summits of the everlasting mountains, where human foot had never trode, and where lay piled the snows of ages, my own dear country and all the social blessings it contains passed across my mind with a vividness of recollection that I had never felt before.

"In walking over the lake I could not but reflect how many countries owe their importance and their wealth to rivers the sources of which can be traced to the lonely mountains which are piled up on its southern margin. This elevated chain is common to India, China, and Turkistan; and from it, as from a central point, their several streams diverge, each augmenting as it rolls onward, until the ocean and the lake of Aral receive the swollen tribute, again to be given up, and in a circuit as endless as it is wonderful to be swept back by the winds of heaven, and showered down in snowy flakes upon the self-same mountains from which it flowed. How strange and how interesting a group would be formed if an individual from each nation whose rivers have their first source in Pamir were to meet upon its summit; what varieties would there be in person, language, and manners; what contrasts between the rough, untamed, and fierce mountaineer and the more civilized and effeminate dweller on the plain; how much of virtue and of vice, under a thousand different aspects, would be met with among them all; and how strongly would the conviction press upon the mind that the amelioration of the whole could result only from the diffusion of early education and a purer religion!

"Pamir is not only a radiating point in the hydrographical system of Central-Asia, but it is the focus from which originate its principal mountain-chains. The Wakhanis name this plain *Bam-i-Duniah*, or 'Roof of the World,' and it would indeed appear to be the highest table-land in Asia, and probably in any part of our globe. From Pamir the ground sinks in every direction except to the south-east, where similar plateaux extend along the northern face of the Himalayas into Thibet. An individual who had seen the region between Wakhan and Cashmere informed me that the Kuner River had its principal source in a lake resembling that in which the Oxus has its rise, and that the whole of this country, comprehending the districts of Gilgit, Gungit, and Chitral, is a series of mountain defiles that act as water-courses to drain Pamir.

"As early in the morning of Tuesday, the 20th of February, as the cold permitted, we walked out about six hundred yards upon the lake, and having cleared the snow from a portion of its surface, commenced breaking the ice to ascertain its depth. This was a matter of greater difficulty than it at first sight appeared, for the water was frozen to the depth of two feet and a half, and, owing to the great rarity of the atmosphere,

U.S.
 d all but buried
 On coming abreast
 at tribe, pulled up
 mple, and wading
 e top of which was
 hey were, and with
 eeks, and offered up
 he party involuntar-
 led their devotions.
 eled about an hour
 l, which apparently
 t this, at five o'clock
 ood, to use a native
 e *World*; while be-
 water, from whose
 This fine lake lies in
 om east to west, by
 s bordered by swell-
 g its southern bank
 ired feet above the
 vered with perpetual
 supplied. From ob-
 to be 37° 27' north,
 by the temperature
 feet, as my thermo-
 e of the water below

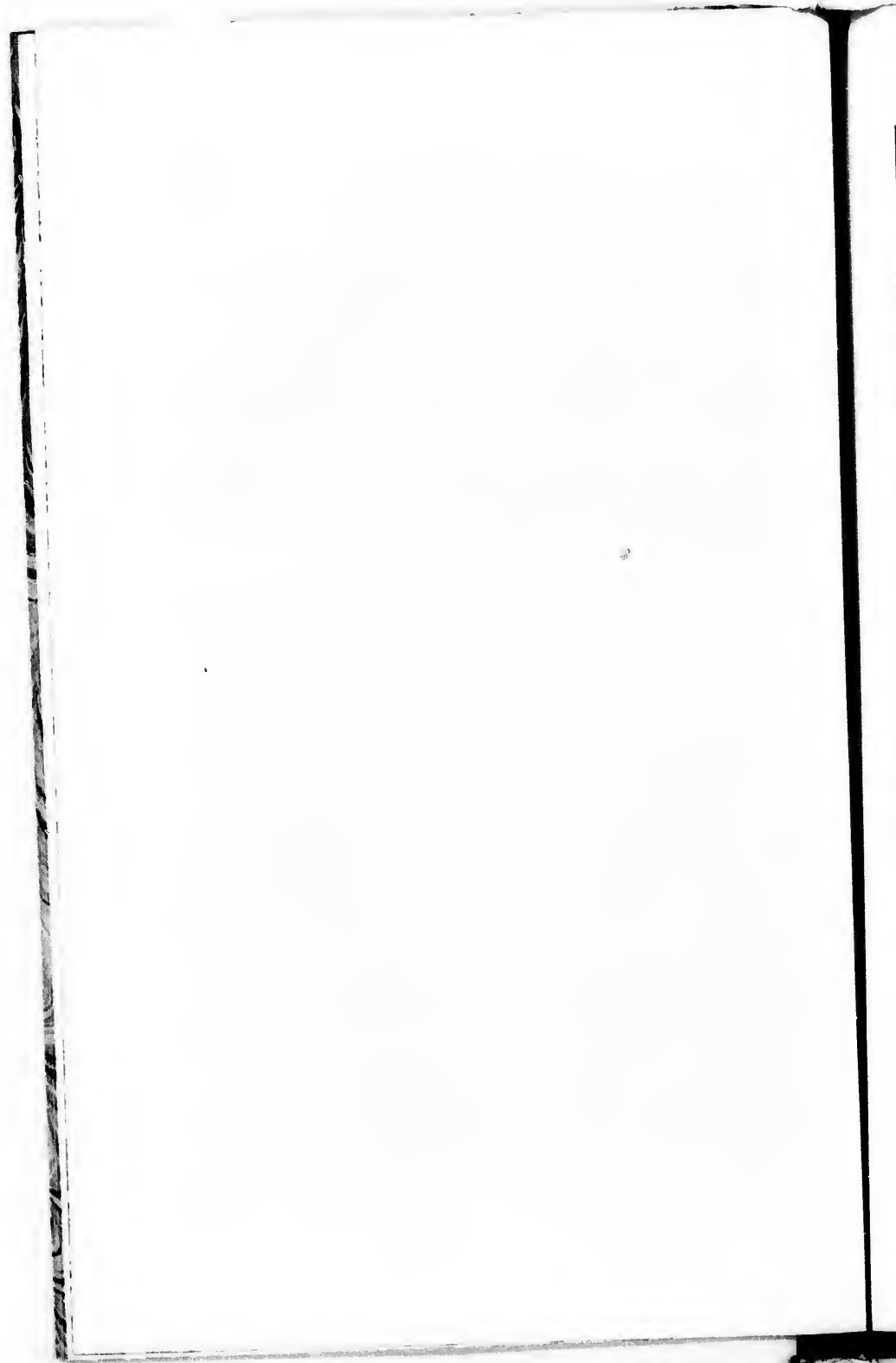
this celebrated river,
 es in a direction gen-
 e sea of Aral. As I
 o in later times had
 and as, shortly before
 news of her gracious
 empted to apply the
 y re-discovered lake;
 name, however hon-
 ight arise, I deemed
 ation given to it by
 y that good old trav-
 ect in all its leading

extreme. Wherever
 the ground, while the
 y hue. Clouds would
 anting. Not a breath
 , not even a bird, was

a few strokes of the pick-ax produced an exhaustion that stretched us upon the snow to recruit our breath. The sounding-lead struck bottom at nine feet. The water emitted a slightly fetid smell, and was of a reddish tinge. The bottom was oozy and tangled with grassy weeds. I tried to measure the breadth of the lake by sound, but was baffled by the rarity of the air. A musket, loaded with blank cartridge, sounded as if the charge had been poured into the barrel, and neither wads nor ramrod used. When ball was introduced the report was louder, but possessed none of the sharpness that marks a similar charge in denser atmospheres. The ball, however, could be distinctly heard whizzing through the air. The human voice was sensibly affected, and conversation, especially if in a loud tone, could not be kept up without exhaustion: the slightest muscular exertion was attended with a similar result. Half a dozen strokes with an ax brought the workman to the ground; and though a few minutes' respite sufficed to restore the breath, any thing like continued exertion was impossible. A run of fifty yards at full speed made the runner gasp for breath. Indeed, this exercise produced a pain in the lungs and a general prostration of strength which was not got rid of for many hours. Some of the party complained of dizziness and headaches; but, except the effect thus described, I neither felt myself, nor perceived in others, any of those painful results of great elevation which travelers have suffered in ascending Mont Blanc. This might have been anticipated, for where the transition from a dense to a highly-rarefied atmosphere is so sudden, as in the case of ascending that mountain, the circulation can not be expected to accommodate itself at once to the difference of pressure, and violence must accrue to some of the more sensitive organs of the body. The ascent to Pamir was, on the contrary, so gradual, that some extrinsic circumstances were necessary to remind us of the altitude we had attained. The effect of great elevation upon the general system had, indeed, been proved to me some time before in a manner for which I was not prepared. One evening in Badakhshan, while sitting in a brown study over the fire, I chanced to touch my pulse, and the galloping rate at which it was throbbing roused my attention. I at once took it for granted that I was in a raging fever, and, after perusing some hints on the preservation of health which Dr. Lord, at parting, had kindly drawn out for me, I forthwith prescribed for myself most liberally. Next morning my pulse was as brisk as ever, but still my feelings denoted health. I now thought of examining the wrists of all our party, and, to my surprise, found that the pulses of my companions beat yet faster than my own. The cause of this increased circulation immediately occurred to me; and when we afterward commenced marching toward Wakhan I felt the pulses of the party whenever I registered the boiling point of water. The motion of the blood is in fact a sort of living barometer by which a man acquainted with his own habit of body can, in great altitudes, roughly calculate his height above the sea."

"After getting a clear and beautiful meridian altitude of the sun on the 20th, we saddled, and casting a last look at Lake Sir-i-kol, entered the defile leading to Wakhan. On arriving at the station where we had left the hunters, we were agreeably surprised to find they had been successful in the chase, and had slaughtered a *Kutch-kar*, or wild sheep. It was a noble animal, standing as high as a two-year-old colt, with a venerable beard, and two splendid curling horns, which, with the head, were so heavy as to require a considerable exertion to lift them. Though in poor condition, the carcase, divested of offal, was a load for a baggage-pony. Its flesh was tough and ill-tasted; but we were told that in autumn, when the animal is in prime condition, no venison is better flavored."

Returning by way of Jerm, Lieutenant Wood reached Koondooz on the 11th of March, having been absent just three months. Murad Bey, whose health was much shattered, died soon afterward, and Dr. Lord and himself accordingly returned to Cabul, where they arrived on the 1st of May.



FREMONT'S

EXPLORATIONS OF THE ROCKY MOUNTAINS AND CALIFORNIA.

JOURNEY TO THE ROCKY MOUNTAINS.

In the year 1842, Captain John C. Fremont, of the United States Topographical Engineers, was ordered to explore the country between the frontiers of Missouri and the South Pass in the Rocky Mountains, and on the line of the Kansas and Great Platte rivers, which was then but imperfectly known, except by the traders and trappers. He left Washington on the 2d of May, and arrived at St. Louis, by way of New York, on the 22d. Here he collected twenty-one men, principally Creole and Canadian *voyageurs*, who had become familiar with prairie life in the service of the fur companies in the Indian country. Mr. Charles Preuss, a native of Germany, assisted in the topographical part of the survey, and Christopher Carson (more familiarly known, for his exploits in the mountains, as Kit Carson) was their guide. They traveled by steamboat to Chouteau's landing, about four hundred miles by water from St. Louis, and near the mouth of the Kansas river, whence they proceeded twelve miles to Mr. Chouteau's trading-house, where they completed the final arrangements for the expedition.

They set forward on the 10th of June, and on the 14th, late in the afternoon, reached the ford of the Kansas. The river was so much swollen by late rains that they crossed it with difficulty. Journeying westward near the Kansas, and afterward along the banks of the Platte, they caught the first glimpse of the Rocky Mountains on the morning of July 9th. The day was bright, but there was a slight mist, and the mountains, seen at a distance of sixty miles, appeared like clouds along the horizon. On the evening of the 10th they reached St. Vrain's fort, situated on the south fork of the Platte, immediately under the mountains, and about seventeen miles east of Long's Peak. The elevation of the Platte at this point is five thousand four hundred feet above the level of the sea. The neighboring mountains were covered with snow, which extended several hundred feet below the summits on the northern slopes.

They resumed their journey on the morning of the 12th. Their next point of destination was the fort at the mouth of Laramie's Creek, situated about one hundred and twenty-five miles to the north. On the 14th they encamped on a fork of Horse Creek, near a point where it passes between two ranges of precipitous hills, supposed by Fremont to be the locality called Goshen's Hole. These hills are wrought by the winds and rains into a variety of singular forms. One on the western side resembles a massive fortified place, with remarkable precision of detail. The rock is marl and earthy limestone, white, without the least appearance of vegetation, and much resembles masonry at a little distance. Along the whole line of the parapets appear domes and slender minarets, forty or fifty feet high, giving it every appearance of an old fortified town. On the waters of White River, where this formation exists in great extent, it presents appearances which excite the admiration of the solitary voyageur, and form a frequent theme of their conversation when speaking of the wonders of the country. Sometimes it offers the perfectly illusive appearance of a large city, with numerous streets and magnificent buildings, among which the Canadians never fail to see their *cabaret*—and sometimes it takes the form of a solitary house, with many large chambers, into which they drive their horses at night, and sleep in these natural defenses perfectly secure from any attack of prowling savages.

On the 15th they reached the post of the American Fur Company, above the junction of the Laramie with the Platte, called Fort John, or Fort Laramie. It was a large post, having more the air of military construction than the fort at the mouth of the river. It is on the left bank, on a rising ground, some twenty-five feet above the water; and its lofty walls, whitewashed and picketed, with large bastions at the angles, gave it quite an imposing appearance. During their stay at the fort the men were engaged in repairs, and in preparing for the chances of a rough road and mountain travel. Fremont engaged an interpreter, and all preparations being made, they struck their tents on the morning of the 21st, and were ready to depart, when a deputation of Indian chiefs waited on them for the purpose of inducing them to stay. The Indians represented that their young men, who had gone to the mountains, were eager to avenge the blood of their relations, which had been shed by the whites; that they would believe Fremont's party were carrying goods and ammunition to their enemies, and would fire upon them. They urged many reasonable objections, but being aware that their object was merely to prevent him from going further into the country, Colonel Fremont replied at length to their speeches, then broke up the conference and set out immediately.

After crossing the Platte on the 28th, they encountered a band of Sioux, who gave them a discouraging picture of the country. The great drought and the plague of grasshoppers had swept it so that scarcely a blade of grass was to be seen, and there was not a buffalo to be found in the whole region. Their people had been nearly starved to death, and

had marked the road by lodges which they had thrown away in order to move more rapidly, and by the carcasses of horses which they had eaten, or which had perished from starvation. When the interpreter, Bissonette, had conveyed this intelligence, he urged Colonel Fremont to abandon the further prosecution of his exploration, and turn back at once. He was himself about to return, having gone as far as he had engaged to attend the expedition. Colonel Fremont replied by calling up his men, and communicating to them the information he had received. He then expressed his determination to proceed to the end of the enterprise on which he had been sent; but left it optional with them to continue with him or to return. They had still ten days' provisions; and should no game be found when this stock was expended, they had their horses and mules as a last resource. But not a man flinched from the undertaking. "We'll eat the mules," said Basil Lajeunesse; and thereupon they shook hands with their interpreter and his Indians, and parted. With them Colonel Fremont sent back one of the men, whom the effects of an old wound in the leg rendered incapable of continuing the journey on foot. They then deposited the carts and all the baggage not absolutely necessary to their future operations, and next morning continued their route along the Platte, finding an abundance of grass and other vegetation, as well as of game, notwithstanding the representations of the Indians. On the last day of July they left the Platte, and began to ascend the Sweet Water River. On the 3d of August, as they passed over a slight rise near the river, they caught the first view of the Wind River Mountains, which, at the distance of about seventy miles, appeared to be a low and dark ridge. "The view," says Colonel Fremont, "dissipated in a moment the pictures which had been created in our minds, by many travelers who have compared these mountains with the Alps in Switzerland, and speak of the glittering peaks which rise in icy majesty amidst the eternal glaciers nine or ten thousand feet into the region of eternal snows."

Following the course of the Sweet Water they gradually ascended the mountains, and on the 7th, encamped on its banks near the South Pass. Early in the morning they set out for the dividing ridge. "About six miles from our encampment," continues Colonel Fremont, "brought us to the summit. The ascent had been so gradual that, with all the intimate knowledge possessed by Carson, who had made the country his home for seventeen years, we were obliged to watch very closely to find the place at which we had reached the culminating point. This was between two low hills, rising on either hand fifty or sixty feet. When I looked back at them, from the foot of the immediate slope on the western plain, their summits appeared to be about one hundred and twenty feet above. From the impression on my mind at this time, and subsequently on our return, I should compare the elevation which we surmounted immediately at the pass, to the ascent of the Capitol hill from the avenue, at Washington. It is difficult for me to fix positively the

breadth of this pass. From the broken ground where it commences, at the foot of the Wind River chain, the view to the south-east is over a champaign country, broken, at the distance of nineteen miles, by the Table Rock; which, with the other isolated hills in its vicinity, seem to stand on a comparative plain. This I judged to be its termination, the ridge recovering its rugged character with the Table Rock. It will be seen that it in no manner resembles the places to which the term is commonly applied—nothing of the gorge-like character and winding ascents of the Alleghany passes in America; nothing of the Great St. Bernard and Simplon passes in Europe. Approaching it from the mouth of the Sweet Water, a sandy plain, one hundred and twenty miles long, conducts, by a gradual and regular ascent, to the summit, about seven thousand feet above the sea; and the traveler, without being reminded of any change by toilsome ascents, suddenly finds himself on the waters which flow to the Pacific Ocean. By the route we had traveled, the distance from Fort Laramie is three hundred and twenty miles, or nine hundred and fifty from the mouth of the Kansas."

Continuing their march, they reached in eight miles from the pass, the Little Sandy, a tributary of the Colorado, or Green River of the Gulf of California, and as they advanced, crossed other tributaries of that river, flowing down from the Wind River Mountains, whose loftiest range they were now approaching. After winding their way up a long ravine on the 10th, they came unexpectedly in view of a beautiful lake, which lay across the direction they had been pursuing. "Here," says Fremont, "a view of the utmost magnificence and grandeur burst upon our eyes. With nothing between us and their feet to lessen the effect of the whole height, a grand bed of snow-capped mountains rose before us, pile upon pile, glowing in the bright light of an August day. Immediately below them lay the lake, between two ridges, covered with dark pines, which swept down from the main chain to the spot where we stood. 'Never before,' said Mr. Preuss, 'in this country or in Europe, have I seen such grand, magnificent rocks.' I was so much pleased with the beauty of the place, that I determined to make the main camp here, where our animals would find good pasturage, and explore the mountains with a small party of men."

Early on the morning of the 12th they left the camp, fifteen in number, well armed, and mounted on their best mules. A pack-animal carried their provisions, and every man had a blanket strapped over his saddle, to serve for his bed, while the instruments were carried by turns on their backs. After crossing the first low range, and passing through dense forests with a rich undergrowth of plants, they at length struck the summit of the ridge. "We had reached a very elevated point," continues Fremont, "and in the valley below, and among the hills, were a number of lakes of different levels; some two or three hundred feet above others, with which they communicated by foaming torrents. Even to our great height the roar of the cataracts came up, and we could see

them leaping down in lines of snowy foam. From this scene of busy waters, we turned abruptly into the stillness of a forest, where we rode among the open bolls of the pines, over a lawn of verdant grass, having strikingly the air of cultivated grounds. This led us, after a time, among masses of rock which had no vegetable earth but in hollows and crevices, though still the pine forest continued. Toward evening we reached a defile, or rather a hole in the mountains, entirely shut in by dark pine-covered rocks."

They wandered about among the crags and ravines until dark, and then hastened down to the camp. In the morning they ascended a mountain-stream, through a defile where the passage was sometimes difficult, until they reached a small lawn where, in a little lake, the stream had its source. "Here," says Fremont, "I determined to leave our animals, and make the rest of our way on foot. The peak appeared so near that there was no doubt of our returning before night; and a few men were left in charge of the mules, with our provisions and blankets. We took with us nothing but our arms and instruments, and, as the day had become warm, the greater part left our coats. Having made an early dinner, we started again. We were soon involved in the most rugged precipices, nearing the central chain very slowly, and rising but little. The first ridge hid a succession of others; and when, with great fatigue and difficulty, we had climbed up five hundred feet, it was but to make an equal descent on the other side; all these intervening places were filled with small deep lakes, which met the eye in every direction, descending from one level to another, sometimes under bridges formed by huge fragments of granite, beneath which was heard the roar of the water. These constantly obstructed our path, forcing us to make long *détours*; frequently obliged to retrace our steps, and frequently falling among the rocks. Maxwell was precipitated toward the face of a precipice, and saved himself from going over by throwing himself flat on the ground. We clambered on, always expecting, with every ridge that we crossed, to reach the foot of the peaks, and always disappointed, until about four o'clock, when, pretty well worn out, we reached the shore of a little lake, in which was a rocky island.

"By the time we had reached the further side of the lake, we found ourselves all exceedingly fatigued, and, much to the satisfaction of the whole party, we encamped. The spot we had chosen was a broad flat rock, in some measure protected from the winds by the surrounding crags, and the trunks of fallen pines afforded us bright fires. Near by was a foaming torrent, which tumbled into the little lake about one hundred and fifty feet below us, and which, by way of distinction, we have called Island Lake. We had reached the upper limit of the piney region; as, above this point, no tree was to be seen, and patches of snow lay everywhere around us, on the cold sides of the rock. From barometrical observations made during our three days' sojourn at this place, its elevation above the Gulf of Mexico is ten thousand feet."

Soon after they encamped, Colonel Fremont was taken ill, and continued so till late in the night, with violent headache and vomiting. This was probably owing to fatigue, the want of food, and, in some measure, to the rarity of the atmosphere. The night was cold, and their granite beds were not favorable to sleep, therefore, as they were not delayed by any preparation for breakfast in the morning, they set out immediately.

"On every side, as we advanced," continues Fremont, "was heard the roar of waters, and of a torrent, which we followed up a short distance, until it expanded into a lake about one mile in length. On the northern side of the lake was a bank of ice, or rather of snow, covered with a crust of ice. Carson had been our guide into the mountains, and, agreeably to his advice, we left this little valley, and took to the ridges again, which we found extremely broken, and where we were again involved among precipices. Here were ice-fields, among which we were all dispersed, seeking each the best path to ascend the peak. Mr. Preuss attempted to walk along the upper edge of one of these fields, which sloped away at an angle of about twenty degrees; but his feet slipped from under him, and he went plunging down the plain. A few hundred feet below, at the bottom, were some fragments of sharp rock, on which he landed; and, though he turned a couple of somersets, fortunately received no injury beyond a few bruises."

Two of the men had been taken ill, and Fremont himself was again unwell; as he grew worse he sent Basil Lajeunesse, with four men, back to the place where the mules had been left. Finding it unpleasantly cold on the rock, they at length set out to return to the camp, where they all came straggling in one after the other. Toward evening Colonel Fremont recovered and they were relieved by the appearance of Basil and four men with mules and a supply of blankets and provisions.

In the morning Fremont set out, with Mr. Preuss and four men, to ascend the peak toward which all their efforts had been directed. This time they determined to proceed quietly and cautiously, being resolved to accomplish their object if it was within the compass of human means. They went forward by a long defile, which was of easy ascent, but rugged and sometimes slippery with ice, and soon had the satisfaction of riding along the huge wall which formed the central summits of the mountain. It rose at their sides, a nearly perpendicular mass of granite, terminating at two or three thousand feet above their heads in a serrated line of broken, jagged cones. At length they reached a level at the base of the main peak, called Snow Peak by Fremont, and finding good grass they turned the mules loose to graze. The party now began leisurely to climb the ascent. Colonel Fremont availed himself of a comb of the mountain, which stood against the wall like a buttress, and which the wind and sun, joined to the smoothness of the rock, had kept almost free from snow. Up this he made his way very rapidly, until he reached a point where the buttress was overhanging, and there

was no other way of surmounting the difficulty than by passing around one side of it, which was the face of a vertical precipice of several hundred feet.

"Putting hands and feet in the crevices between the blocks," he continues, "I succeeded in getting over it, and, when I reached the top, found my companions in a small valley below. Descending to them, we continued climbing, and in a short time reached the crest. I sprang upon the summit, and another step would have precipitated me into an immense snow-field five hundred feet below. To the edge of this field was a sheer icy precipice; and then, with a gradual fall, the field sloped off for about a mile, until it struck the foot of another lower ridge. I stood on a narrow crest, about three feet in width, with an inclination of about 20° north, 51° east. As soon as I had gratified the first feelings of curiosity, I descended, and each man ascended in his turn; for I would only allow one at a time to mount the unstable and precarious slab, which it seemed a breath would hurl into the abyss below. We mounted the barometer in the snow of the summit, and, fixing a ramrod in a crevice, unfurled the national flag to wave in the breeze where never flag waved before. During our morning's ascent, we had met no sign of animal life, except a small sparrow-like bird. A stillness the most profound and a terrible solitude forced themselves constantly on the mind as the great features of the place. Here, on the summit, where the stillness was absolute, unbroken by any sound, and solitude complete, we thought ourselves beyond the region of animated life; but while we were sitting on the rock, a solitary bee (*bromus, the humble-bee*) came winging his flight from the eastern valley, and lit on the knee of one of the men.

"It was a strange place, the icy rock and the highest peak of the Rocky Mountains, for a lover of warm sunshine and flowers; and we pleased ourselves with the idea that he was the first of his species to cross the mountain barrier—a solitary pioneer to foretell the advance of civilization. I believe that a moment's thought would have made us let him continue his way unharmed; but we carried out the law of this country, where all animated nature seems at war; and, seizing him immediately, put him in at least a fit place—in the leaves of a large book, among the flowers we had collected on our way. The barometer stood at 18°293, the attached thermometer at 44°; giving for the elevation of this summit 13,570 feet above the Gulf of Mexico, which may be called the highest flight of the bee. It is certainly the highest known flight of that insect. From the description given by Mackenzie of the mountains where he crossed them, with that of a French officer still further to the north, and Colonel Long's measurements to the south, joined to the opinion of the oldest traders of the country, it is presumed that this is the highest peak of the Rocky Mountains. The day was sunny and bright, but a slight shining mist hung over the lower plains, which interfered with our view of the surrounding country. On one side we

overlooked innumerable lakes and streams, the spring of the Colorado of the Gulf of California; and on the other was the Wind River valley, where were the heads of the Yellowstone branch of the Missouri; far to the north, we could just discover the snowy heads of the *Trois Tetons*, where were the sources of the Missouri and Columbia Rivers; and at the southern extremity of the ridge, the peaks were plainly visible, among which were some of the springs of the Nebraska or Platte River. Around us, the whole scene had one main, striking feature, which was that of terrible convulsion. Parallel to its length, the ridge was split into chasms and fissures; between which rose the thin lofty walls, terminated with slender minarets and columns."

They reached the camp on the evening of the next day, and on the 17th the party turned their faces homeward. At Rock Independence, where they arrived at their old encampment on the 22d, Colonel Fremont embarked for the purpose of making a survey of the Platte River on their return, but after dragging their boat a mile or two over the sands, he gave up the undertaking until reaching the mouth of the Sweet Water River, where they embarked on the 25th. Proceeding rapidly down the river, they soon approached a ridge where the stream passes between perpendicular rocks of great height, which frequently approach each other so closely overhead as to form a kind of tunnel over the stream, while it foams along below, half choked up by fallen fragments. To this pass the Spanish term "cañon" has been applied. As they neared the ridge, the river made a sudden turn and swept square down against one of the walls of the cañon, with great velocity, and so steep that it had the appearance of an inclined plane. When they launched into this the men jumped overboard to check the velocity of the boat, but were soon in water up to their necks, and the boat ran on. They succeeded, however, in bringing her to a small point of rocks on the right, at the mouth of the cañon. From the summit of the rocks the passage appeared to be a continued cataract, foaming over many obstructions, and broken by a number of small falls. They all again embarked, and at first attempted to check the way of the boat; but they narrowly escaped being swamped, and were obliged to let her go in the full force of the current, and trust to the skill of the boatmen. In some places the stream was contracted to from three to five feet by huge rocks which had fallen in, and was precipitated over them in a fall, or rushed through the contracted opening with tremendous violence. The boat, being of India-rubber, was unhurt by every shock. In this way they passed three cataracts in succession, where about a hundred feet of smooth water intervened, and finally issued from the tunnel with a shout of joy. They stopped at eight o'clock to breakfast on the banks below the cañon, for all were wet, fatigued, and hungry.

They re-embarked at nine, and in about twenty minutes reached the next cañon. Landing to reconnoiter, they found portage was out of the question; the jagged rocks pointed out the course of the cañon on a

winding line of seven or eight miles. It was simply a narrow, dark chasm in the rock; the perpendicular faces were much higher than in the previous pass, being from two to three hundred feet at the upper end, and five hundred feet further down. Every thing being now secured as firmly as possible, they pushed into the stream and came to the first difficult pass. A strong rope had been fastened to the stern of the boat; three men clambered along the rocks, and with this rope let her slowly through the pass. In one of the narrows, formed by the high rocks which lay scattered about the channel, the boat stuck fast for an instant, and the water flow over them, sweeping away only a pair of saddle-bags, but they quickly forced her through and came into smoother water. The next passage was much worse, and they found themselves in a rather bad position. To go back was impossible; before them the cataract was a sheet of foam; and shut up in the chasm by the rocks, which seemed almost to meet overhead, the roar of the water was deafening. They pushed off again; but soon the current became too strong for the men on shore, and two of them let go the rope. Lajeunesse hung on and was jerked head-foremost into the river from a rock about twelve feet high; the boat shot forward, Basil following in the rapid current, his head only seen occasionally in the white foam. They succeeded at length in turning the boat into an eddy, and Basil Lajeunesse arrived immediately after, declaring that he had been swimming half a mile. They then took him and the two others on board, and again began the rapid descent. They cleared rock after rock, and shot past fall after fall, until they became familiar with the danger, and, yielding to the excitement of the occasion, they broke forth into a Canadian boat-song. They were in the midst of the chorus when the boat struck a hidden rock at the foot of a fall, which whirled her over in an instant. They saved themselves on the rocks upon either side, although with considerable difficulty, as three of the men could not swim. For a hundred yards below the stream was covered with books and boxes, bales and blankets; all their books—almost every record of the journey—their journals and registers of astronomical and barometrical observations, had been lost in a moment.

Colonel Fremont immediately set about endeavoring to save something from the wreck. They descended the stream on each side, and Lajeunesse in the boat alone proceeded down the cañon. The search was continued for a mile and a half, when the bed of the river became choked up with fragments of the rock and the boat could proceed no further. Fortunately they recovered all their registers, except one of Fremont's journals, containing notes and incidents of travel, and various descriptions and observations, many of which were supplied by the other journals. As the day was now declining they set forward over the rocks and joined the rest of the party at Goat Island, a short distance below this rocky pass.

They reached Fort Laramie on the last day of August, and after a

two days' rest continued their homeward journey down the Platte, which was glorious with the autumnal splendor of innumerable flowers in full bloom. On the morning of October 10th they arrived at the mouth of the Kansas, just four months since they had left Chouteau's trading-post, ten miles above, and on the 17th the expedition arrived safely in St. Louis.

JOURNEY TO OREGON AND CALIFORNIA.

In order to connect the explorations of 1842 with the surveys of Commander Wilkes on the coast of the Pacific, so as to give a connected survey of the interior of our continent, Colonel Fremont was dispatched to the West in the spring of 1843, to organize another exploring party. After passing two weeks at the little town of Kansas, he completed the preparations necessary for the expedition contemplated by his instructions. The party, consisting principally of Creole and Canadian French, and Americans, amounted in all to thirty-nine men; among whom were several who had been on the first expedition. They set out on the 29th of May; the route now determined on was up the valley of the Kansas River and to the head waters of the Arkansas.

They ascended the Republican Fork of the Kansas, and on crossing an elevated range of rolling hills, on the 30th of June, found themselves overlooking a broad valley, where, about ten miles distant and a thousand feet below them, the south Fork of the Platte flowed along, swollen by the waters of the melting snows. "Traveling along up the valley of the river, here four thousand feet above the sea, in the afternoon of July 1st," says Colonel Fremont, "we caught a far and uncertain view of a faint blue mass in the west, as the sun sank behind it; and from our camp in the morning, at the mouth of Bijou, Long's Peak and the neighboring mountains stood out into the sky, grand and luminously white, covered to their bases with glittering snow."

On the 4th of July they reached St. Vrain's fort, and afterward pursued their route down the Boiling-spring River to its mouth on the Arkansas, where they arrived on the 14th. Here they had expected a re-enforcement of mules and supplies from Taos, but the natives having pillaged the inhabitants of that place, these supplies were cut off. Here Colonel Fremont had the satisfaction of meeting with their old buffalo-hunter, Kit Carson, whose services he again secured. As a supply of mules was absolutely necessary, he sent Carson to the post of Mr. Bent, on the Arkansas, about seventy-five miles below Boiling-spring River, with directions to proceed across the country with what animals he could find, and meet the party at St. Vrain's fort. Returning thither on the 23d, they found Fitzpatrick, the guide, and his party, in excellent health and spirits, and the reliable Kit Carson, who had brought ten mules with their pack-saddles. Mr. Fitzpatrick, who was injured to

mountain life and knew well the value of provisions in this country, had secured an abundant supply in the camp.

"Having determined to try the passage by a pass through a spur of the mountains made by the Cache-à-la-Poudre River, which rises in the high bed of mountains around Long's peak," continues Fremont, "I thought it advisable to avoid any encumbrances which would occasion detention, and accordingly again separated the party into two divisions—one of which, under the command of Mr. Fitzpatrick, was directed to cross the plains to the mouth of Laramie River, and continuing thence its route along the usual emigrant road, meet me at Fort Hall, a post belonging to the Hudson Bay Company, and situated on Snake River, as it is commonly called in the Oregon Territory, although better known to us as Lewis's fork of the Columbia. Our Delaware Indians having determined to return to their homes, it became necessary to provide this party with a good hunter; and I accordingly engaged in that capacity Alexander Godey, a young man who had been in this country six or seven years, all of which time had been actively employed in hunting for the support of the posts, or in solitary expeditions among the Indians."

On the 13th of August Colonel Fremont crossed the dividing ridge which separates the Atlantic from the Pacific waters, by a road some miles south of the one followed on his return in 1842. They crossed near the Table Mountain, at the southern extremity of the South Pass, which is near twenty miles in width, and was already traversed by several different roads. The elevation of their route on this pass was seven thousand four hundred and ninety feet. Entering here the valley of the Green River—the great Colorado of the West—and inclining southward along the streams which form the Sandy River, the road led for several days over dry and level plains, and on the 15th they encamped in the Mexican territory, on the Green River, sixty-nine miles from the South Pass, and one thousand and thirty miles from the mouth of the Kansas. This was the emigrant trail to Oregon, which they followed along the Green River, and thence toward the Salt Lake. After crossing the dividing ridge of the Rocky Mountains, the plants were few in variety, the grass became poor and insufficient, and in this portion of the journey they lost several of their animals.

To avoid delay, Colonel Fremont sent Carson in advance to Fort Hall on the 19th, to make arrangements for a supply of provisions. On the 21st they entered the fertile and picturesque valley of Bear River, the principal tributary to the Great Salt Lake. The stream is here two hundred feet wide, fringed with willows and occasional groups of hawthorns. "We were now entering a region," observes Colonel Fremont, "which, for us, possessed a strange and extraordinary interest. We were upon the waters of the famous lake which forms a salient point among the remarkable geographical features of the country, and around which the vague and superstitious accounts of the trappers had thrown a de-

lightful obscurity. In our occasional conversations with the few old hunters who had visited the region, it had been a subject of frequent speculation; and the wonders which they related were not the less agreeable because they were highly exaggerated and impossible."

Next morning they crossed Smith's Fork, a clear, broad stream, flowing in through a wide mountain pass. Below, the valley of the Bear River was broad and beautiful, but contracted as they advanced, and at length swept through an open cañon where high vertical rocks rose up from the water's edge. Night came on as they were crossing the ridge around this cañon, and they had great difficulty in groping their way down the steep mountain side, which it was necessary to descend for water and grass. In the morning they found they had encamped near a large party of emigrants, and others were moving along the road below. In an hour's travel they met a small party of Shoshonees, who informed them that a large village had lately come into the valley, from a hunting excursion among the mountains on the west. Colonel Fremont immediately set off to visit their encampment. He had approached within about a mile when, he observes, "suddenly a single horseman emerged from it at full speed, followed by another and another in rapid succession; and then party after party poured into the plain, until, when the foremost rider reached us, all the whole intervening plain was occupied by a mass of horsemen, which came charging down upon us with guns and naked swords, lances, and bows and arrows—Indians entirely naked, and warriors fully dressed for war, with the long red streamers of their war-bonnets reaching nearly to the ground, all mingled together in the bravery of savage warfare. They had been thrown into a sudden tumult by the appearance of our flag, which, among these people, is regarded as an emblem of hostility—it being usually borne by the Sioux and the neighboring mountain Indians, when they come here to war; and we had, accordingly, been mistaken for a body of their enemies. A few words from the chief quieted the excitement; and the whole band, increasing every moment in number, escorted us to their encampment."

They purchased eight horses and a quantity of berries and roots from the Indians, and encamped near them for the night. On the 25th, they reached the famous *Bear Springs*. They are situated in a basin of mineral waters inclosed by the mountains, which sweep around a circular bend of the Bear River. A stream of clear water enters the upper part of the basin from an open valley in the mountains, and discharges into the river. They encamped a mile below, in the vicinity of the springs. In the bed of the river, for a space of several hundred yards, they were very abundant, the effervescing gas rising up and agitating the water in countless bubbling columns. In the vicinity were numerous springs of an entirely different and equally marked mineral character. One of these, at some distance below the camp, throws up a variable jet of water to the height of about three feet.

"Remaining in camp until nearly eleven o'clock, on the 25th," con-

tinues Fremont, "we traveled a short distance down the river, and halted at noon on the bank, at a point where the road quits the valley of Bear River, and, crossing a ridge which divides the Great Basin from the Pacific waters, reaches Fort Hall, by way of the Portneuf River, in a distance of probably fifty miles, or two and a half days' journey for wagons. An examination of the great lake which is the outlet of this river, and the principal feature of geographical interest in the basin, was one of the main objects contemplated in the general plan of our survey, and I accordingly determined at this place to leave the road, and, after having completed a reconnoissance of the lake, regain it subsequently at Fort Hall."

Pursuing his route, he made preparations on the 1st of September for reaching the lake. He remarks: "Among the useful things which formed a part of our equipage, was an India-rubber boat, eighteen feet long, made somewhat in the form of a bark canoe of the northern lakes. The sides were formed by two air-tight cylinders, eighteen inches in diameter, connected with others forming the bow and stern. To lessen the danger from accidents to the boat, these were divided into four different compartments, and the interior space was sufficiently large to contain five or six persons, and a considerable weight of baggage. The Roseaux being too deep to be forded, our boat was filled with air, and in about one hour all the equipage of the camp, carriage and gun included, ferried across. Thinking that perhaps in the course of the day we might reach the outlet of the lake, I got into the boat with Basil La-jeunesse, and paddled down Bear River."

The channel of the river became so obstructed that they were obliged to leave the boat next day and proceed by land, and on the 3d sent back men and horses for the boat and baggage. Their provisions were beginning to fail, when Carson came up on the 4th with a light supply from Fort Hall. After many difficulties, they saw, on the 5th, an isolated mountain, twelve miles distant, toward which they directed their course, in the hope of obtaining from it a view of the lake, but the deepening marshes obliged them to return to the river, and gain higher ground. On the 6th they again made the attempt. "This time," he continues, "we reached the butte without any difficulty, and, ascending to the summit, immediately at our feet beheld the object of our anxious search—the waters of the inland sea, stretching in still and solitary grandeur far beyond the limit of our vision. It was one of the great points of the exploration; and as we looked eagerly over the lake in the first emotions of excited pleasure, I am doubtful if the followers of Balboa felt more enthusiasm when, from the heights of the Andes, they saw for the first time the great Western Ocean. It was certainly a magnificent object, and a noble terminus to this part of our expedition; and to travelers so long shut up among mountain ranges, a sudden view over the expanse of silent waters had in it something sublime. Several large islands raised their high rocky heads out of the waves; but whether or not they were

timbered, was still left to our imagination, as the distance was too great to determine if the dark hues upon them were woodland or naked rock."

They returned to a grove which was the nearest point to the lake where a suitable camp could be found, and next day built an inclosure for the animals and a small fort for the men who were to remain.

"The provisions which Carson brought with him being now exhausted, and our stock reduced to a small quantity of roots, I determined to retain with me only a sufficient number of men for the execution of our design; and accordingly seven were sent back to Fort Hall, under the guidance of François Lajeunesse, who, having been for many years a trapper in the country, was considered an experienced mountaineer. Though they were provided with good horses, and the road was a remarkably plain one of only four days' journey for a horseman, they became bewildered (as we afterward learned), and, losing their way, wandered about the country in parties of one or two, reaching the fort about a week afterward.

"We formed now but a small family. With Mr. Preuss and myself, Carson, Bernier, and Basil Lajeunesse, had been selected for the boat-expedition—the first attempted on this interior sea; and Badeau, with Derosier, and Jacob (the colored man), were to be left in charge of the camp.

"In view of our present enterprise, a part of the equipment of the boat had been made to consist in three air-tight bags, about three feet long, and capable each of containing five gallons. These had been filled with water the night before, and were now placed in the boat, with our blankets and instruments. We left the camp at sunrise on the 8th, and had a pleasant voyage down the river, in which there was generally eight or ten feet of water, deepening as we neared the mouth in the latter part of the day. In the course of the morning we discovered that two of the cylinders leaked so much as to require one man constantly at the bellows, to keep them sufficiently full of air to support the boat. On the 9th the channel became so shallow that our navigation was at an end, being merely a sheet of soft mud, with a few inches of water, and sometimes none at all. We took off our clothes, and, getting overboard, commenced dragging the boat, making, by this operation, a very curious trail, and a very disagreeable smell in stirring up the mud, as we sank above the knee at every step. The water here was still fresh, with only an insipid and disagreeable taste, probably derived from the bed of fetid mud. After proceeding in this way about a mile, we came to a small black ridge on the bottom, beyond which the water became suddenly salt, beginning gradually to deepen, and the bottom was sandy and firm. It was a remarkable division, separating the fresh waters of the river from the briny water of the lake, which was entirely *saturated* with common salt. Pushing our little vessel across the narrow boundary, we sprang on board, and at length were afloat on the waters of the unknown sea."

They steered first for one of the islands, from which to begin their operations. As they advanced into deep water they encountered a strong north wind and a rough sea, and when they were half way across, two of the divisions between the cylinders gave way, so that the bellows were in constant use to keep in a sufficient quantity of air. For a long time they made slow progress, but finally gained the smoother water under the lee of the island, and about noon reached the shore. Carrying with them the instruments, in the afternoon they ascended to the highest point of the island—a bare, rocky peak, eight hundred feet above the lake. From the summit they had an extended view of the lake, inclosed in a basin of rugged mountains, which in some places rose directly from the water in bold and precipitous bluffs. "Following with our glasses the irregular shores," continues Fremont, "we searched for some indications of a communication with other bodies of water, or the entrance of other rivers; but the distance was so great that we could make out nothing with certainty. As we looked over the vast expanse of water spread out beneath us, and strained our eyes along the silent shores over which hung so much doubt and uncertainty, and which were so full of interest to us, I could hardly repress the almost irresistible desire to continue our explorations; but the lengthening snow on the mountains was a plain indication of the advancing season, and our frail linen boat appeared so insecure that I was unwilling to trust our lives to the uncertainties of the lake. I therefore unwillingly resolved to terminate our survey here, and remain satisfied for the present with what we had been able to add to the unknown geography of the region. Out of the drift-wood, we made ourselves pleasant little lodges, open to the water; and, after having kindled large fires to excite the wonder of any straggling savage on the lake shores, lay down, for the first time in a long journey, in perfect security; no one thinking about his arms."

Leaving the lake next day they proceeded toward Fort Hall, and on the 18th emerged on the plains of the Columbia, in sight of the famous "Three Buttes," a well-known landmark in the country. At sunset they encamped with their friends who had preceded them to Fort Hall, and in the morning Colonel Fremont rode up to the fort and purchased several very indifferent horses, and five oxen in fine order, which were received at the camp with great satisfaction. Here the early approach of winter and the difficulty of supporting a large party, determined Fremont to send back a number of the men who had become satisfied that they were not fitted for the laborious service and frequent privation to which they were necessarily exposed.

The party with Colonel Fremont now proceeded down the Snake River, holding occasional intercourse with the Indians by the way, and on the morning of December 9th, arrived at Fort Boise, a simple dwelling-house on the bank of the river below the mouth of *Rivière Boisée*. Here they were hospitably received by Mr. Payette, an officer of the Hudson Bay Company, in charge of the fort, all of whose gar-

risson consisted in a Canadian *engagé*. On the 13th they left the valley of the great southern branch of the Columbia River, to which the absence of timber and the scarcity of water gave the appearance of a desert, and crossing over to the valley of Burnt River, entered a mountain region, where the soil is good and the face of the country covered with nutritious grasses and dense forests. Continuing their journey northward, they reached the Powder River, whose course they followed a few days, then leaving the emigrant route, they crossed the mountains by an Indian trail to the head-waters of the Umatilah. They were sometimes obliged to cut their way through the forests, which here consist of several varieties of spruce, larch, and balsam-pine, of a regular conical figure. The trees were from sixty to two hundred feet in height, the usual circumference being ten to fifteen feet, and in the pines sometimes twenty-one feet.

On the 23d the trail led along one of the spurs of the mountain on which they had been traveling, descending gradually toward the plain, and they at length emerged from the forest in full view of the plain below, and saw the snowy mass of Mount Hood standing high out above the surrounding country at the distance of one hundred and eighty miles. Here they reached the Wallahwallah River, just after it has issued from narrow ravines, walled with precipices. Next day they crossed a principal fork, below which the scattered waters of the river were gathered into one channel; and passing on the way several unfinished houses and some cleared patches where corn and potatoes were cultivated, they reached, a few miles further, the missionary establishment of Dr. Whitman, which consisted at this time of one adobe house.

"The road on the 25th," says Colonel Fremont, "led over a sandy, undulating plain, through which a scantily-timbered river takes its course. We halted about three miles above the mouth, on account of grass; and the next morning arrived at the Nez Percé fort, one of the trading establishments of the Hudson Bay Company, a few hundred yards above the junction of the Wallahwallah with the Columbia River. Here we had the first view of this river, and found it about twelve hundred yards wide, and presenting the appearance of a fine navigable stream." Continuing down the valley of the Columbia, he reached the Methodist missionary station at the Dalles, on the 4th of November.

"Our land journey," says he, "found here its western termination. The delay involved in getting our camp to the right bank of the Columbia, and in opening a road through the continuous forest to Vancouver, rendered a journey along the river impracticable; and on this side the usual road across the mountain required strong and fresh animals, there being an interval of three days in which they could obtain no food. I therefore wrote immediately to Mr. Fitzpatrick, directing him to abandon the carts at the Wallahwallah missionary station, and as soon as the necessary pack-saddles could be made, which his party required, meet

me at the Dalles, from which point I proposed to commence our homeward journey."

He then descended the river to Fort Vancouver, where he found the bark *Columbia*, lying at anchor near the landing. She was about to start on a voyage to England, and was now ready for sea; being detained only in waiting the arrival of the express batteaux, which descend the Columbia and its north fork with the overland mail from Canada and Hudson's Bay, which had been delayed beyond the usual time. He immediately waited upon Dr. McLaughlin, the executive officer of the Hudson Bay Company, who supplied him with stores and provisions for his party in their contemplated winter journey to the States; and, also with a boat, and canoes, and men, for their transportation to the Dalles of the Columbia. Near sunset on the 10th the boats left the fort, and in the afternoon of the 18th the party arrived again at the Dalles.

The camp was now occupied in making preparations for the homeward journey, for which he contemplated a new route to the south and south-west, and the exploration of the Great Basin between the Rocky Mountains and the Sierra Nevada. Colonel Fremont wished to ascertain the character or existence of three principal objects reported to be on this route, which he assumed as leading points on the projected line of return. "The first of these points was the Tlamath Lake, on the table-land between the head of Fall River, which comes to the Columbia, and the Sacramento, which goes to the Bay of San Francisco; and from which lake a river of the same name makes its way westwardly direct to the ocean. From this lake our course was intended to be about south-east, to a reported lake called Mary's at some days' journey in the Great Basin; and thence, still on south-east, to the reputed Buenaventura River, which has had a place in so many maps, and countenanced the belief of the existence of a great river flowing from the Rocky Mountains to the Bay of San Francisco. From the Buenaventura the next point was intended to be in that section of the Rocky Mountains which includes the heads of the Arkansas River, and of the opposite waters of the California Gulf; and thence down the Arkansas to Bent's fort, and home. This was our projected line of return—great part of it absolutely new to geographical, botanical, and geological science—and the subject of reports in relation to lakes, rivers, deserts, and savages, hardly above the condition of mere wild animals, which inflamed desire to know what this *terra incognita* really contained.

"It was a serious enterprise, at the commencement of winter, to undertake the traverse of such a region, and with a party consisting only of twenty-five persons, and they of many nations—American, French, German, Canadian, Indian, and colored—and most of them young, several being under twenty-one years of age. All knew that a strange country was to be explored and dangers and hardships to be encountered; but no one blanched at the prospect. On the contrary, courage and confidence animated the whole party. Cheerfulness, readiness, sub-

ordination, prompt obedience, characterized all; nor did any extremity of peril and privation, to which we were afterward exposed, ever belie, or derogate from the fine spirit of this brave and generous commencement.

"For the support of the party, I had provided at Vancouver a supply of provisions for not less than three months, consisting principally of flour, peas, and tallow—the latter being used in cooking; and in addition to this, I had purchased some California cattle, which were to be driven on the hoof. We had one hundred and four mules and horses, for the sustenance of which our reliance was upon the grass which we should find, and the soft porous wood which was to be substituted when there was none."

The preparations being fully completed, they set out on the 25th of November, and after proceeding along the tributaries of Fall River, the last branch of which they crossed on the 8th of December, they reached a spring of cold water on the 10th, situated on the edge of a grassy meadow, which their guides informed them was an arm of the Tlamath Lake. A few miles further they entered an extensive meadow, or lake of grass, surrounded by timbered mountains. This was the Tlamath Lake. It was a picturesque and beautiful spot, and rendered more attractive to the travelers by the abundant and excellent grass, which the animals, after traversing pine forests, so much needed; but the broad sheet of water which constitutes a lake was not to be seen. Overlooking it on the west were several snowy knobs belonging to the Cascade range. Next day they visited an Indian village, on the stream at the outlet of the marsh. Numbers of singular-looking dogs, resembling wolves, were sitting on the tops of the huts. The language spoken by these Indians is different from that of the Shoshonee and Columbia River tribes. They told Colonel Fremont that they were at war with the people who lived southward and eastward, but he could obtain no certain information from them.

"From Tlamath Lake," says Colonel Fremont, "the further continuation of our voyage assumed a character of discovery and exploration, which, from the Indians here, we could obtain no information to direct, and where the imaginary maps of the country, instead of assisting, exposed us to suffering and defeat. In our journey across the desert, Mary's Lake, and the famous Buenaventura River, were two points on which I relied to recruit the animals and repose the party. Forming, agreeably to the best maps in my possession, a connected water-line from the Rocky Mountains to the Pacific Ocean, I felt no other anxiety than to pass safely across the intervening desert to the banks of the Buenaventura, where, in the softer climate of a more southern latitude, our horses might find grass to sustain them, and ourselves be sheltered from the rigors of winter, and from the inhospitable desert."

Continuing their explorations they reached a considerable stream on the 13th, which seemed to be the principal affluent to the lake, and the

head-water of the Tlamath River. Next day they struck upon another stream, which issued from the mountain in an easterly direction, and turned to the southward below. The natives gave them to understand that it continued a long distance in that direction, uniting with many other streams, and gradually becoming a great river. They now became satisfied that this was the principal stream of the Sacramento. On the 16th they traveled through snow about three feet deep which being crusted, cut the feet of the animals very badly. They were now approaching the summit of a mountain up which they had been ascending through thick forests since the morning of the previous day.

"Toward noon," continues Fremont, "the forest looked clear ahead, appearing suddenly to terminate; and beyond a certain point we could see no trees. Riding rapidly ahead to this spot, we found ourselves on the verge of a vertical and rocky wall of the mountain. At our feet—more than a thousand feet below—we looked into a green prairie country, in which a beautiful lake, some twenty miles in length, was spread along the foot of the mountains, its shores bordered with green grass. Just then the sun broke out among the clouds, and illuminated the country below, while around us the storm raged fiercely. Not a particle of ice was to be seen on the lake, or snow on its borders, and all was like summer or spring. The glow of the sun in the valley below brightened up our hearts with sudden pleasure; and we made the woods ring with joyful shouts to those behind; and gradually, as each came up, he stopped to enjoy the unexpected scene. Shivering on snow three feet deep, and stiffening in a cold north wind, we exclaimed at once that the names of Summer Lake and Winter Ridge should be applied to these two proximate places of such sudden and violent contrast. Broadly marked by the boundary of the mountain wall, and immediately below us, were the first waters of that Great Interior Basin which has the Wahsatch and Bear River Mountains for its eastern, and the Sierra Nevada for its western rim; and the edge of which we had entered upward of three months before, at the Great Salt Lake.

"When we had sufficiently admired the scene below, we began to think about descending, which here was impossible, and we turned toward the north, traveling always along the rocky wall. We continued on for four or five miles, making ineffectual attempts at several places, and at length succeeded in getting down at one which was extremely difficult of descent. Night closed in before the foremost reached the bottom, and they kindled fires to light on the others. One of the mules rolled over and over two or three hundred feet into a ravine, but recovered himself with no other injury than to his pack."

On the 18th they followed an Indian trail along the strip of land between the lake and the high rocky wall from which they had looked down two days before, and on the 20th came to a much larger lake, bordered on its eastern side by a high black ridge which walled it in with a precipitous face. This lake presented a handsome sheet, twenty

miles in length, to which Colonel Fremont gave the name of Lake Abert, in honor of the chief of the corps to which he belonged. When they came near, the white efflorescences which lined the shore like a bank of snow, and the disagreeable odor which filled the air, told them too plainly that the water belonged to one of those fetid salt lakes which are common in this region. Pursuing their route, they attained an elevated position on the 23d, from which they saw another small lake about ten miles to the southward, toward which a broad trail led along the ridge; and as this appeared the most practicable route, Fremont determined to continue the journey in that direction.

Still moving southward in search of an outlet toward the Pacific, they came, on the 10th of January, 1844, to the end of a basin they had been traversing, where they found a hollow extending into the mountain inclosing it. Colonel Fremont and Mr. Preuss, who were in advance, continued their way up the hollow, to see what lay beyond the mountain. "The hollow," says Fremont, "was several miles long, forming a good pass; the snow deepening to about a foot as we neared the summit. Beyond, a defile between the mountains descended rapidly about two thousand feet; and, filling up all the lower space, was a sheet of green water, some twenty miles broad. It broke upon our eyes like the ocean. The neighboring peaks rose high above us, and we ascended one of them to obtain a better view. The waves were curling in the breeze, and their dark-green color showed it to be a body of deep water. For a long time we sat enjoying the view, for we had become fatigued with mountains, and the free expanse of moving waves was very grateful. It was set like a gem in the mountains, which, from our position, seemed to inclose it almost entirely. At the western end it communicated with the line of basins we had left a few days since; and on the opposite side it swept a ridge of snowy mountains, the foot of the great Sierra."

As they advanced along the shores of the lake, the most conspicuous object was a remarkable rock rising from the surface of the water, which attracted their attention for many miles. It rose six hundred feet above the surface, in the form of a pyramid. This striking feature suggesting a name for the lake, Colonel Fremont called it Pyramid Lake. The Indians whom they met told them of a large river at the southern extremity, which they reached on the 15th, but instead of an outlet, they found the *inlet* of a large fresh-water stream. They were at once satisfied they had discovered a large interior lake, which had no outlet. On the 16th they continued their journey along this stream, and in a week found themselves in the heart of the mountains. The snow deepened as they advanced; their moccasins, which were wet in the heat of the day, froze perfectly stiff as the sun declined, and they had great difficulty to keep their feet from freezing. The mountain passes became difficult, and they endured great hardships from fatigue and cold, but they still pushed on, expecting at every stream to find some outlet from the great laby-

rinth of mountains which inclosed them. Holding a council with some Indians on the 29th, they found that they were still on waters flowing into the Great Basin, in the edge of which they had been since the 17th of December.

"We explained to the Indians," continues Fremont, "that we were endeavoring to find a pass across the mountains into the country of the whites, whom we were going to see; and told them that we wished them to bring us a guide, to whom we would give presents of scarlet cloth, and other articles, which were shown to them. They looked at the reward we offered, and conferred with each other, but pointed to the snow on the mountain, and drew their hands across their necks, and raised them above their heads, to show the depth; and signified that it was impossible for us to get through. They made signs that we must go to the southward, over a pass through a lower range, which they pointed out: there, they said, at the end of one day's travel, we would find people who lived near a pass in the great mountain; and to that point they engaged to furnish us a guide."

They set forward next day, and on the evening of the 31st held an interesting council with the Indians who had assembled at their camp-fires. The Indians told Fremont that, before the snows fell, it was six sleeps to the place where the whites lived, but that now it was impossible to cross the mountains on account of the deep snow. Fremont said that the men and the horses were strong, and would break a road through the snow; and then showed what he would give for a guide. The Indians told him that if they could break through the snow, at the end of three days they would come down upon grass, where the ground was entirely free. Afterward a young man was brought in who had seen the whites, and who was at length prevailed upon to be their guide.

In the morning Colonel Fremont acquainted the men with his decision, and assured them that from the heights of the mountain before them they would doubtless see the valley of the Sacramento, and with one effort be again in the midst of plenty. They received this decision with cheerful obedience, and immediately prepared to carry it into effect. On the 2d of February they continued their journey. The snow deepened rapidly, and it soon became necessary to break a road. On the 3d they ascended a hollow directly toward the main chain, but the depth of the snow at length obliged them to travel along the steep hill-sides, and next day they had to abandon it altogether. They cut a footing as they advanced along the mountain side, and trampled a road through for the animals; but occasionally one plunged outside the trail and slid along the field to the bottom, a hundred yards below.

"The camp," continues Fremont, "had been occupied all the day in endeavoring to ascend the hill, but only the best horses had succeeded; the animals, generally, not having sufficient strength to bring themselves up without the packs; and all the line of road between this and the springs was strewed with camp-stores and equipage, and horses flounder-

ing in snow. I therefore immediately encamped on the ground with my own mess, which was in advance, and directed Mr. Fitzpatrick to encamp at the springs, and send all the animals back to the place where they had been pastured the night before.

"To-night we had no shelter, but we made a large fire around the trunk of one of the huge pines; and covering the snow with small boughs, on which we spread our blankets, soon made ourselves comfortable. The night was very bright and clear, though the thermometer was only at ten degrees. Accompanied by Mr. Fitzpatrick, I set out on the 6th, with a reconnoitering party on snow-shoes. We marched all in single file, trampling the snow as heavily as we could. Crossing the open basin, in a march of about ten miles we reached the top of one of the peaks, to the left of the pass indicated by our guide. Far below us, dimmed by the distance, was a large snowless valley, bounded on the western side, at the distance of about a hundred miles, by a low range of mountains, which Carson recognized with delight as the mountains bordering the coast. 'There,' said he, 'is the little mountain—it is fifteen years since I saw it; but I am just as sure as if I had seen it yesterday.' Between us, then, and this low coast range, was the valley of the Sacramento; and no one who had not accompanied us through the incidents of our life for the last few months could realize the delight with which at last we looked down upon it. At the distance of apparently thirty miles beyond us were distinguished spots of prairie; and a dark line which could be traced with the glass, was imagined to be the course of the river; but we were evidently at a great height above the valley, and between us and the plains extended miles of snowy fields and broken ridges of pine-covered mountains."

They returned late in the day, and next morning Fremont advanced with one party, drawing sleighs loaded with baggage, leaving Fitzpatrick with another party to form an intermediate station. On the 11th he received a message from Fitzpatrick, stating that it was impossible to get the mules and horses along—they had broken through the snow, and were plunging about or lying half buried in it. He gave orders for the animals to be sent back to their old pastures, and all the party to turn out with mauls and shovels to beat a road through the snow. Fremont and his party worked at their end of the road, and on the 13th had the satisfaction of seeing the people working down the face of the opposite hill, three miles distant. By the 16th, they succeeded in getting the animals to the first grassy hill, and the same morning Colonel Fremont started on a reconnoitering expedition beyond the mountain. He found some grassy spots where the snow was melting away, and encamped in the evening on a little creek where at last the water found its way toward the Pacific. Following the creek next day, it acquired a regular breadth of about twenty feet; he was now satisfied they had struck the stream on which Mr. Sutter lived, and turning about, reached the camp at dark. The labor of making a road and bringing up the baggage continued, and

finally, on the 20th of February, they encamped, with all the animals and baggage, on the summit of the pass in the dividing ridge, one thousand miles from the Dalles of the Columbia. The elevation of the encampment was nine thousand three hundred and thirty-eight feet above the level of the sea.

They now considered the difficulties of the mountain to be overcome, having only the descent before them and the valley under their eyes; but this descent was not easy. Deep fields of snow still lay between, and there was a large intervening space of rough mountains, through which they had yet to wind their way. The 23d was their most difficult day. They were obliged to take to the mountain sides, which were steep and slippery with snow and ice, and where the tough evergreens impeded their way. Some, whose moccasins were slippery, were frequently obliged to crawl across the snow-beds. Continuing down the river, which pursued a westerly course through a narrow valley, they occasionally met with excellent grass at their encampments, but sometimes the animals suffered greatly from the scarcity of pasture. The valleys were covered with magnificent forests; some of the pines were ten feet in diameter.

On the 2d of March Mr. Preuss, who was in advance when they encamped, was lost. For several days his absence caused great uneasiness to the party, when, on the evening of the 5th, he made his appearance. Knowing that Fremont would keep near the river, he had walked on without much concern on the first day, going right and left to obtain good views of the country, but the next day it became more serious. He knew not whether the party was in advance or not, but still he kept on, and on the second night again encamped alone. His principal means of subsistence were a few roots, which he obtained with great labor. In the pools he caught some of the smallest kind of frogs, which he swallowed, not so much for the gratification of hunger as in the hope of obtaining some strength. At length he found a fire left by the party, and the tracks of the horses, and following as fast as he could, rejoined his companions in the evening.

On the 6th they descended into broad groves on the river, and, as they passed along, the valley was gay with flowers, some of the banks being absolutely golden with the Californian poppy. Here the grass was smooth and green, and the groves very open; the large oaks throwing a broad shade among sunny spots. Soon afterward they passed a neat adobe house with glass windows, but found only Indians. They now pressed eagerly forward; the hills lowered as they advanced, and on entering a broad valley they came unexpectedly into a large Indian village, where the people wore cotton shirts and various other articles of dress. While they were trying to communicate with the natives, a well-dressed Indian came up and made his salutations in well-spoken Spanish.

"In answer to our inquiries," continues Fremont, "he informed us

that we were upon the *Rio de los Americanos* (the river of the Americans), and that it joined the Sacramento River about ten miles below. Never did a name sound more sweetly! We felt ourselves among our countrymen; for the name of *American*, in these distant parts, is applied to the citizens of the United States. To our eager inquiries he answered, 'I am a *vaguero* (cowherd) in the service of Captain Sutter, and the people of this *rancheria* work for him.' Our evident satisfaction made him communicative; and he went on to say that Captain Sutter was a very rich man, and always glad to see his country people. We asked for his house. He answered that it was just over the hill before us; and offered, if we would wait a moment, to take his horse and conduct us to it. We readily accepted this civil offer. In a short distance we came in sight of the fort; and passing on the way the house of a settler on the opposite side (a Mr. Sinclair), we forded the river, and in a few miles were met, a short distance from the fort, by Captain Sutter himself. He gave us a most frank and cordial reception—conducted us immediately to his residence—and under his hospitable roof we had a night of rest, enjoyment, and refreshment, which none but ourselves could appreciate. But the party left in the mountains, with Mr. Fitzpatrick, were to be attended to; and the next morning, supplied with fresh horses and provisions, I hurried off to meet them. On the second day we met, a few miles below the forks of the *Rio de los Americanos*; and a more forlorn and pitiable sight than they presented, can not well be imagined. They were all on foot—each man, weak and emaciated, leading a horse or mule as weak and emaciated as themselves. They had experienced great difficulty in descending the mountains, made slippery by rains and melting snows, and many horses fell over precipices, and were killed; and with some were lost the *packs* they carried. Among these was a mule with the plants which we had collected since leaving Fort Hall, along a line of two thousand miles' travel.

"The next day, March 8th, we encamped at the junction of the two rivers, the Sacramento and *Americanos*; and thus found the whole party in the beautiful valley of the Sacramento. It was a convenient place for the camp; and, among other things, was within reach of the wood necessary to make the pack-saddles, which we should need on our long journey home, from which we were further distant now than we were four months before, when from the Dalles of the Columbia we so cheerfully took up the homeward line of march."

On the 24th they took leave of Captain Sutter, who accompanied them a few miles on their way, and set out on their journey homeward. They encamped at the *Rio de los Cosumnes*, and next evening halted at the ford of the *Rio de los Mukelemnes*, whence the route led through a pleasant country toward the San Joaquin. They touched this river on the 3d of April, ascended its bank for a few days, then crossed a prairie country to the tributaries of the Tule Lake, one of which they ascended toward the pass of the Sierra. "On the 13th," says Fremont,

"a Christian Indian rode into the camp, well dressed, with long spurs and a *sombrero*, and speaking Spanish fluently. It was an unexpected apparition, and a strange and pleasant sight in this desolate gorge of a mountain—an Indian face, Spanish costume, jingling spurs, and horse equipped after the Spanish manner." The Indian undertook to guide them through the pass, where two others joined him. They here left the waters of the bay of San Francisco, and on the 15th the desert was in full view on their left, apparently illimitable. "Our cavalcade," continues Fremont, "made a strange and grotesque appearance; and it was impossible to avoid reflecting upon our position and composition in this remote solitude. Within two degrees of the Pacific Ocean—already far south of the latitude of Monterey—and still forced on south by a desert on one hand, and a mountain range on the other—guided by a civilized Indian, attended by two wild ones from the Sierra—a Chinook from the Columbia, and our mixture of Americans, French, Germans—all armed—four or five languages heard at once—above a hundred horses and mules, half wild—American, Spanish, and Indian dresses and equipments intermingled—such was our composition. Our march was a sort of procession. Scouts ahead and on the flanks; a front and rear division; the pack-animals, baggage, and horned-cattle in the center; and the whole stretching a quarter of a mile along our dreary path. In this form we journeyed, looking more as if we belonged to Asia than to the United States of America."

On the 17th they left their guide and turned directly eastward along the trail, which was hardly visible. Still continuing in this direction, along a different route, they struck upon the Spanish Trail on the 19th, the great object of their search. The road itself, and its course, which was due north, were happy discoveries to the party, as they wished to bear several degrees northward before crossing the Rocky Mountains. Relieved from the rocks and the brush, they now advanced more rapidly and pleasantly along the beaten road. In the afternoon of the 24th they were surprised by the sudden appearance in the camp of two Mexicans—a man and a boy, named Andreas Fuentes and Pablo Hernandez. They belonged to a party of six persons who had left Pueblo de los Angeles with about thirty horses. The remaining four were the wife of Fuentes, the father and mother of Pablo, and Santiago Giacomo, who had charge of the cavalcade. While waiting at Archileto for a Spanish caravan, they had been attacked by a large party of Indians, whose object was to get possession of the horses. Pablo and Fuentes, in obedience to Giacomo, drove the animals over and through the assailants and made off at full speed across the plain. After riding sixty miles they had left the horses at Agua de Tomaso, a watering-place on the trail, and were hurrying on to meet the caravan, when they discovered Fremont's camp.

On the 25th, Fremont's party arrived at Agua de Tomaso, the spring where the horses had been left, but they had been driven off by the In-

dians. Carson and Godey volunteered, with the Mexican, to pursue them; and, well-mounted, the three set off on the trail. In the evening Fuentes returned, his horse having failed, but Carson and Godey had continued the pursuit. Next evening a war-whoop was heard, and soon Carson and Godey appeared, driving before them a band of horses, recognized by Fuentes to be part of those they had lost. Two bloody scalps were dangling from Godey's gun. They had entered the mountains toward night-fall and followed the trail by moonlight to a narrow defile, in which they closed upon the Indians in the morning, regardless of the number which the four lodges would imply. "The Indians received them with a flight of arrows shot from their long-bows, one of which passed through Godey's shirt-collar, barely missing the neck; our men fired their rifles upon a steady aim, and rushed in. Two Indians were stretched upon the ground, fatally pierced with bullets; the rest fled, except a little lad that was captured. The scalps of the fallen were instantly stripped off; but in the process, one of them, who had two balls through his body, sprang to his feet, the blood streaming from his skinned head, and uttering a hideous howl. The frightful spectacle appalled the stout hearts of the men, but they quickly dispatched the gory savage." They released the boy, gathered up the surviving horses, returned upon their trail, and rejoined their friends at their camp, in the afternoon of the same day. They rode about a hundred miles in the pursuit and return, all in thirty hours.

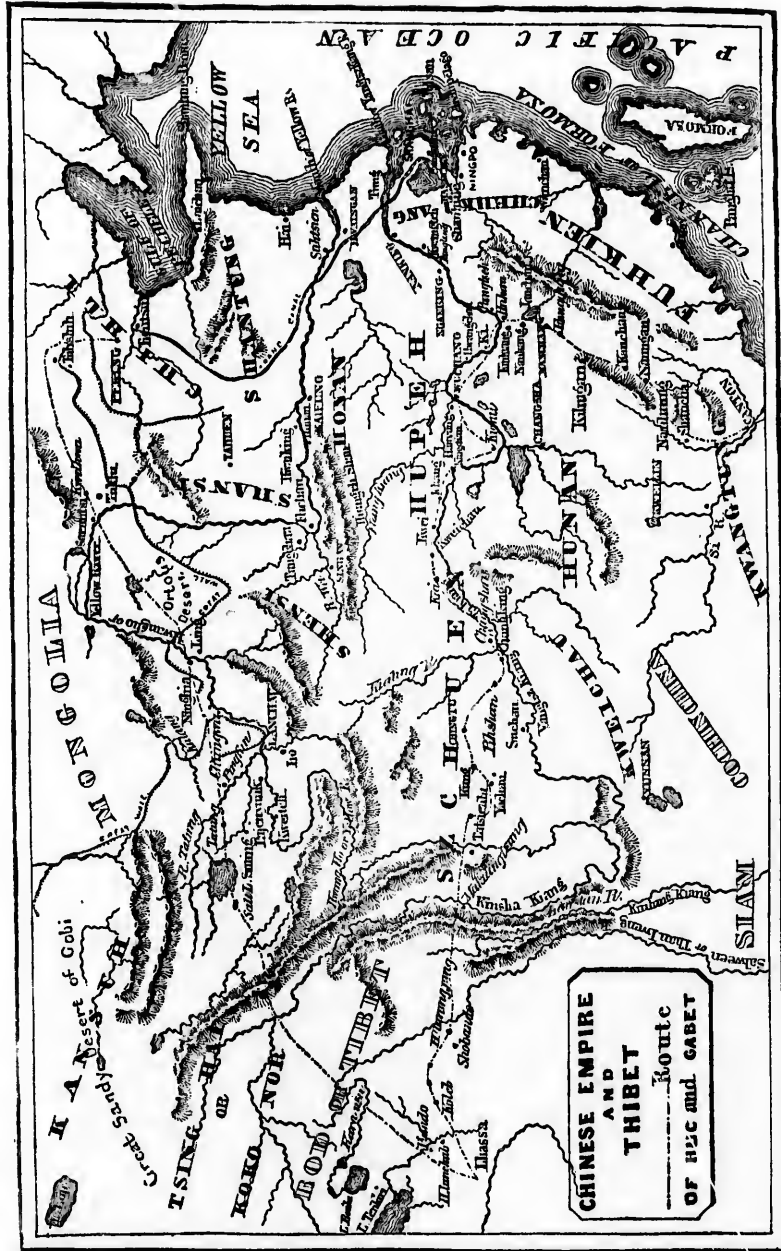
Continuing their journey northward over a gloomy and sterile waste, they came on the evening of the 29th to a sandy basin, in which a grassy spot, with its springs and willows, forms a camping-place in the desert, called the Archilete. "The dead silence of the place," says Colonel Fremont, "was ominous; and, galloping rapidly up, we found only the corpses of the two men; every thing else was gone. They were naked, mutilated, and pierced with arrows. Hernandez had evidently fought, and with desperation. He lay in advance of the willow half-faced tent, which sheltered his family, as if he had come out to meet danger, and to repulse it from that asylum. One of his hands, and both his legs, had been cut off. Giacomo, who was a large and strong-looking man, was lying in one of the willow shelters, pierced with arrows.

"Of the women no trace could be found, and it was evident they had been carried off captive. A little lap-dog, which had belonged to Pablo's mother, remained with the dead bodies, and was frantic with joy at seeing Pablo; he, poor child, was frantic with grief, and filled the air with lamentations for his father and mother. *Mi Padre! Mi Madre!*—was his incessant cry. When we beheld this pitiable sight, and pictured to ourselves the fate of the two women, carried off by savages so brutal and so loathsome, all compunction for the scalped-alive Indian ceased; and we rejoiced that Carson and Godey had been able to give so useful a lesson to these American Arabs, who lie in wait to murder and plunder the innocent traveler."

On the 3d of May they encamped at Las Vegas, and next day came to the Rio de los Angeles. Along the route they had frequent visits from the Indians, who were sometimes very troublesome. From the camp at which they remained over the 9th, the horses were sent with a strong guard in charge of Tabeau to a neighboring pasture for the day. In the afternoon Carson reported that Tabeau, who early in the day had left his post and rode back to the camp they had left, in search of a lame mule, had not returned. Search was immediately made, and at length the mule was found, mortally wounded by an arrow, and in another place, something like a puddle of blood, which the darkness prevented them from verifying. "In the morning," says Colonel Fremont, "I set out myself with Mr. Fitzpatrick and several men, in search of Tabeau. We went to the spot where the appearance of puddled blood had been seen; and this, we saw at once, had been the place where he fell and died. Blood upon the leaves, and beaten-down bushes, showed that he had got his wound about twenty paces from where he fell, and that he had struggled for his life. He had probably been shot through the lungs with an arrow. From the place where he lay and bled, it could be seen that he had been dragged to the river bank, and thrown into it. No vestige of what had belonged to him could be found, except a fragment of his horse equipment. Horse, gun, clothes—all became the prey of these Arabs of the New World."

On the 17th they left the Spanish trail, which had been their road for four hundred and forty miles, and again found themselves under the necessity of exploring a track through the wilderness. The trail bore off south-eastwardly, across the Wah-Satch range, to Santa Fé, while their course led north-eastwardly along the foot of that range, toward the Utah Lake. They reached the lake on the 25th, having made a circuit of three thousand five hundred miles since leaving the northern extremity of the same sheet of water in September, 1843.

Turning their faces once more eastward, they left the Utah Lake on the 27th, and bearing southward from their old route, crossed the summit of the Rocky Mountains on the 13th of June, at an affluent of the Platte, called Pullam's Fork. Thence they ascended the Platte to examine the mountains at the three remarkable coves called the Parks, in which the head waters of the Platte, the Arkansas, and the Grand River Fork of the Colorado take their rise. From this pass, which Colonel Fremont found to be the best he had seen on the dividing ridge of the Rocky Mountains, he descended the waters of the Arkansas, and arrived at Bent's fort on the 1st of July. Twenty miles below Bent's fort he left the river, and crossing over to the Smoky Hill Fork, he proceeded down the waters of the Kansas, and on the last day of July encamped again at the little town of Kansas, on the banks of the Missouri River.



SCHONBERG & CO. ACROROGRAPHY, NEW YORK



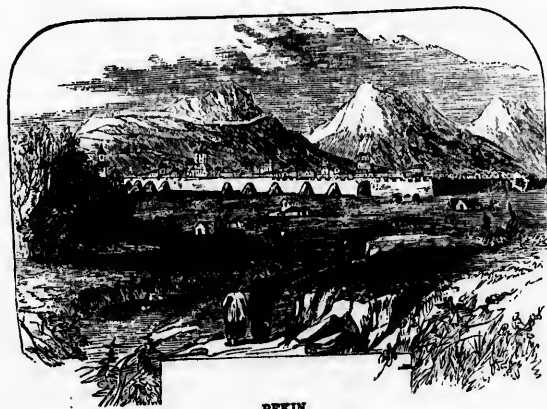
SCHONBERG & CO. ACROGRAPHY, NEW YORK.

CHINESE EMPIRE
AND
THIBET
Route
of HUC and GABET

HUC'S

TRAVELS IN TARTARY, THIBET, AND CHINA.

JOURNEY THROUGH TARTARY AND THIBET.



PEKIN.

THE French Catholic Mission at Peking, which had been very flourishing during the last century, was broken up and scattered by the Emperor Kia-king, who ascended the throne in 1799, and a long time elapsed before the priests connected with it dared to return to the Chinese capital. When they ventured back again, they found the mission entirely deserted: many of the native Christians, to withdraw themselves from the pursuit of the Chinese authorities, had passed the Great Wall, and had gone to seek peace and liberty in the deserts of Tartary; they were living here and there on some patches of land, which the Mongols permitted them to cultivate. By dint of perseverance, the missionaries

at length succeeded in re-assembling these scattered remnants; they established themselves in the midst of them, and directed from thence the ancient mission of Pekin, the immediate care of which was intrusted to some Chinese Lazarists.

Among the French priests who were sent out to re-establish the mission, were Messrs. Gabet and Huc, the latter of whom reached Pekin in the year 1840, and devoted himself to acquiring the Chinese and Mantchoo languages. In visiting the Christians of Mongolia, Huc and Gabet had more than once occasion to make excursions into the *Land of Grass*, and to sit beneath a Mongol tent; and having thus become acquainted with this nomadic people, they became interested in them, and earnestly desired to undertake the task of Christianizing them. From that time they devoted all their leisure to the study of the Tartar languages, and in the course of the year 1842 the Holy See crowned their wishes by erecting Mongolia into an apostolic vicariate.

In the beginning of the year 1844, Huc and Gabet, who were then living at *He Chuy*, the "Valley of the Black Waters," received a message from the Apostolic Vicar of Mongolia, commanding them to undertake an extensive journey into the interior, for the purpose of studying the character and manners of the Tartars, and of ascertaining, if possible, the extent and limits of the vicariate. They had long been contemplating such a journey, and had prepared themselves for it by all the means in their power. They at once dispatched a young Lama, who had recently been converted, to procure camels and rejoin them at *Pie-ti-Kcou*, the "Contiguous Gorges." Here they waited for many days, employing themselves in translating books of prayer and doctrine into the Mongol language, and were finally on the point of engaging a Chinese cart to the town of Tolon-nor, a distance of one hundred and fifty miles, when the Lama arrived with their camels. After completing their preparations, service was performed in the chapel, and they proceeded the first day to an inn kept by one of the Chinese converts. Beyond this all was unknown; Mongolia, untraveled for centuries by a European, lay before them; but they were full of courage and enthusiasm, and did not shrink from the dangers and uncertainties of their undertaking.

"The day had scarcely dawned," says Huc, "when we were again on foot; but, before setting off, we had to effect a metamorphosis in our costume. The missionaries who reside in China all wear the dress of the Chinese merchants, and have nothing in their costume to mark their religious character. This custom, it appears to us, has been in some measure an obstacle to the success of their missions. For among the Tartars, a '*black man*,' that is, a secular person, who undertakes to speak of religion, excites only contempt. Religion they consider as an affair belonging exclusively to the Lamas. We resolved, therefore, to adopt the costume worn on ordinary occasions by the Lamas of Thibet; namely, a long yellow robe fastened by a red girdle, and five gilt buttons, with a violet velvet collar, and a yellow cap surmounted by a red

rosette. We also thought it expedient from this time to give up the use of wine and tobacco, and when the host brought us a smoking urn full of the hot wine so much in favor among the Chinese, we signified to him that we were about to change our modes of life as well as our dress. 'You know,' we added, laughing, 'that good Lamas abstain from smoking and drinking.' But our Chinese friends regarded us with compassion, and evidently thought we were about to perish of privation.

"After leaving this inn we may be considered to have fairly commenced our pilgrimage, and the only companion of our wayfaring for the future was to be the camel driver, Samdadchiemba. This young man was neither a Chinese, a Tartar, nor a Thibetan, but a little of all three, a Dehiahour. At the first glance it was easy to perceive his

Mongol origin; he had a deeply-bronzed complexion—a great mouth, cut in a straight line—and a large nose insolently turned up, that gave to his whole physiognomy a disdainful aspect. When he looked at you with his little eyes twinkling between lids entirely without eye-lashes, and with the skin of his forehead wrinkled up, the feeling he inspired was something between confidence and fear. His life had been spent in rather a vagabond manner, in rambling, sometimes about the Chinese towns, and sometimes in the deserts of



SAMDADCHIEMBA.

Tartary—for he had run away, at the age of eleven, from a Lama college, to escape the excessive corrections of his master. This mode of life had of course not tended much to polish the natural asperity of his character, and his intellect was entirely uncultivated; but his muscular strength was immense, and he was not a little proud of it. After having been instructed and baptized by M. Gabet, he had wished to attach himself to the service of the missionaries, and the journey we were about to undertake was precisely in harmony with his rambling and adventurous humor."

Their first undertaking was to cross the rugged mountain of *Sain-oula*, which is infested with bands of robbers. This, however, they accomplished in safety, and encamped on the other side, on the borders of the great imperial forest. Huc remarks: "The robbers of these countries are in general remarkable for the politeness with which they flavor their address. They do not put a pistol to your head, and cry roughly, 'Your money or your life!' but they say, in the most courteous tone, 'My eldest brother, I am weary of walking on foot. Be so good as to lend me your horse!' or, 'I am without money—will you not lend me your purse?' or, 'It is very cold to-day—be kind enough to lend me your coat.' If the eldest brother be charitable enough to comply, he

receives thanks; if not, the request is enforced by two or three blows of the cudgel, or, if that is not sufficient, recourse is had to the saber.

"The sun was about to set, and we were still on the immense plateau which forms the summit of the mountain, and whence you obtain an extensive view over the plains of Tartary, and the tents of the Mongols ranged in the form of an amphitheater on the declivities of the hills. The imperial forest extends from north to south for three hundred miles, and nearly eighty from east to west, and it has been used as a hunting-ground by many successive emperors of China; but, for about twenty-seven years past, these huntings have been discontinued, and not only stags and wild boars, but also bears, panthers, wolves, and tigers abound in it. Woe to the woodcutter or the hunter who should venture alone into its recesses. Those who have done so, have disappeared without leaving a vestige behind them."

After three or four days' journey, they crossed the Mongol kingdom of Gechekten, and entered that of Thakar, where they met a camp of Chinese soldiers, whose duty it was to keep the roads safe. They feared these soldiers, however, more than the native robbers, and pitched their tent between two high rocks, where it would be difficult for thieves to approach them. While thus engaged, they saw, on the opposite side of the mountain, several horsemen, "two of whom," says Huc, "hastened toward us, and, dismounting, prostrated themselves at the entrance of our tent. They were Mongol-Tartars. 'Men of prayer,' said they, with much apparent emotion, 'we come to beg you to draw a horoscope. Two horses have been stolen from us to-day, and we have vainly sought to discover the thieves. Oh men whose power and knowledge are without bounds, teach us how we may find them!' 'My brethren,' we replied, 'we are not lamas of Buddha; we do not believe in horoscopes; to pretend to such knowledge is false and deceitful.' The poor Tartars redoubled their solicitations; but when they saw that our resolution could not be shaken, they remounted their horses, and returned to the mountains.

"Samdadchiemba, during this conversation, had remained crouched in a corner by the fire, holding in both hands a bowl of tea, which he never once took from his lips. At length, as they were taking their departure, he knitted his brows, rose from his seat abruptly, and went to the door of the tent. The Tartars were already at a considerable distance; but he uttered a loud shout, and made gestures with his hands to induce them to come back. Thinking, probably, that we had changed our minds, and would consent to draw the horoscope, they returned; but, as soon as they came within hail, Samdadchiemba addressed them:

"'My Mongol brothers,' he said, 'in future be more prudent; take better care of your animals, and they will not be stolen. Remember these words, for they are worth more than all the horoscopes in the world.' And having finished his speech, he marched gravely back to

his tent, and sat down again to his tea. At first we were vexed with him; but, as the Tartars did not appear angry, we ended by laughing.

"On the following day, the numerous Tartars and Chinese travelers whom we met on the way were a sign to us that we were approaching the large town of Tolon-Noor; and already we could see before us, glittering in the sun, the gilded roofs of the two magnificent lama convents to the north of the town.

"Two motives," Huc continues, "had induced us to visit Tolon-Noor. We wished, in the first place, to complete our stock of traveling utensils; and we also considered it desirable to place ourselves in relation with the lamas of the country, and obtain information concerning some important points in Tartary; and in pursuit of these objects, we had to traverse almost every quarter of the town. Tolon-Noor is not a walled town, but a vast agglomeration of ugly and ill-arranged houses, and in the middle of its narrow and tortuous streets you see open mud holes and sewers; and while the foot passengers walk in single file along the slippery pavement, mules, camels, and carts, make their way through the deep black foul-smelling mud. Often enough the wheeled carriages upset; and then it is impossible to describe the confusion that takes place in these miserable streets. Goods are either stolen by the thieves who watch for such opportunities, or lost in the mud, and the animals are not unfrequently suffocated. But notwithstanding the few attractions of Tolon-Noor, the sterility of its environs, the extreme cold of its winter, and the suffocating heat of its summers, its population is immense, and its commerce prodigious. Russian goods find their way here by the way of *Kiakta*; the Tartars are constantly bringing vast herds of oxen, camels, and horses, and taking back tobacco, linen, and brick tea. This perpetual coming and going of strangers; the hawkers running about with their wares; the traders endeavoring to entice customers into their shops; the lamas, in their showy dresses of scarlet and yellow, endeavoring to attract admiration by the skill with which they manage their fiery horses in the most difficult passes—all these things give the streets a very animated appearance. After having maturely considered the information we had obtained, we determined to direct our course toward the west, and quitted Tolon-Noor on the 1st of October.

"We had not been more than an hour on our way on the following day, when we heard behind us a confused noise as of a number of men and horses, and turning our heads perceived a numerous caravan advancing toward us at a rapid pace. We were soon overtaken by three horsemen, and one of them whom we recognized by his costume for a Tartar mandarin, roared out to us in a deafening voice—'Lord lamas, where is your country?'

"'We are from the sky of the west.'

"'Across what countries have you passed your beneficent shadows?'

"'We come from the town of Tolon-Noor.'

"'Has peace accompanied your route?'

“So far we have journeyed happily—and you—are you at peace? What is your country?”

“We are Khalkas, from the kingdom of Mourguevan.”

“Has the rain been abundant? Are your flocks in prosperity?”

“All is at peace in our pastures. Whither is your caravan proceeding?”

“We are going to bow our foreheads before the Five Towers.”

“During this short conversation the rest of the troop had come up. We were near a brook, the banks of which were bordered with bushes, and the chief of the caravan gave orders to halt, and immediately the camels arriving in a file described a circle, into the midst of which was drawn a vehicle on four wheels.

“*Sok!* *Sok!*” cried the camel-drivers, and the camels obedient to the order lay down all at once as if struck by the same blow. Then, while a multitude of tents rose suddenly, as if by enchantment, along the banks of the brook, two mandarins, decorated with the blue ball, approached the carriage, opened the door, and immediately we saw descending from it a Tartar woman, clothed in a long robe of green silk. It was the queen of the country of the Khalkas, who was going on a pilgrimage to the famous lama convent of the Five Towers, in the Chinese province of Chan-Si. Immediately on perceiving us, she saluted us by raising her two hands, and said, ‘My lord lamas, we are going to encamp here—is the place fortunate?’ ‘Royal pilgrim of Mourguevan,’ we replied, ‘you can here light the fire of your hearth in peace. For us, we are about to continue our route, for the sun was already high when we folded our tent.’”

After traveling all day in a heavy rain, they encamped that evening on the plain, and were soon afterward visited by the Tartars, who furnished them with some dry fuel. “While we ate our frugal meal,” says Huc, “I observed that one of the Tartars was the object of particular attention to the other; and on inquiry we found that the superior had had two years before the honor of serving in the war against the ‘rebels of the South,’ that is, the English, having marched with the banners of Tchakar. He had, however, never been called upon to fight; for the *Holy Master* (the emperor of China) had in his immense mercy granted peace to the rebels soon after, and the Tartar troops had been sent back to their flocks and herds. He had been told, however, by the Chinese, what kind of people, or monsters rather, these English were—they lived in the water like fish, and when you least expected it they would rise to the surface, and cast at you fiery gourds. Then as soon as you bend your bow to send an arrow at them, they plunge into the water like frogs.

“The Tartar mode of presenting one’s self is frank, simple, and free from the innumerable forms of Chinese courtesy. On entering the tent, you wish peace to every body in general, saying *Amor* or *Mendou*, and then go at once and seat yourself at the right hand of the head of the

family, who is crouching down opposite the door. A little tobacco is then mutually presented, and a few polite common-places exchanged. 'Are your pastures fat and abundant?'—'Are your flocks in good order?'—'Have your mares been fruitful?' etc., pronounced with extreme gravity, and then the lady of the tent stretches out her hand toward the strangers, without speaking, and forthwith they produce the little wooden bowl, which is an indispensable *vade mecum* in Tartary, and she returns it to them filled with tea and milk. In tolerably opulent families, a tray is usually placed before visitors, with a modest collation of butter, oatmeal, and slices of cheese, all in separate boxes of varnished wood; and those who mean to be magnificent in their hospitality, plunge into the warm ashes near the fire a small earthenware bottle full of Mongol wine, a sort of spirit rudely distilled from milk, which one must have been born a Tartar to relish.

"Tchakar—a Mongol word signifying border-country—lies to the north of the great wall of China, and east of Toumet. It is about four hundred and fifty miles in length, and three hundred in breadth, and its inhabitants are all soldiers of the emperor of China, and receive annually a certain sum regulated according to their titles. It is divided into eight banners, distinguished by their color, blue, red, white, and yellow, and bluish, reddish, whitish, and yellowish. Each banner has a separate territory, and possesses a kind of tribunal which takes cognizance of its affairs, and a chief called *Ou-Gourdha*; and from among these eight *ou-gourdhas*, a governor-general is chosen. Tchakar is, in fact, nothing but a vast camp; and in order that the army shall be at all times in readiness to march, the Tartars are prohibited under severe penalties from cultivating the ground. They are required to live on their pay and the produce of their flocks."

While on their journey through this country, they encamped one night near a collection of Tartar tents, and when preparing to start next morning, found that their horses had disappeared. All their searching proved vain, and nothing was left but to go to the Mongol tents, and declare that the horses had been lost near them. "According to Tartar law," says Huc, "when the animals of caravans go astray, whoever is in the neighborhood is bound to go in search of them, and even to give others in their place, if they can not be found. This would appear a very strange law in Europe. You come and encamp in the neighborhood of a Mongol without his consent, without his knowledge; yet for your cattle, your baggage, your men, he is responsible: if any thing disappears, the law supposes him to be the thief, or at least the accomplice. As soon as we had made our declaration to our Mongol neighbors, the chief said, 'My lord lamas, do not allow grief to enter your hearts! your animals can not be lost. Here are neither roads nor thieves, nor associates of thieves. We will search for your horses, and if they are not found, you shall choose at pleasure among all our herds. We wish you to leave us in peace as you have come.'

"While he was speaking, eight Tartars mounted their horses, and, taking the long pole and cord which they use, they commenced their search. At first they dispersed in all directions, performing various evolutions, and often returning on their steps. At length they all united in a squadron, and set off at a gallop in the direction by which we had come. 'They are on their track,' said the Mongol chief, who, as well as ourselves, had been watching them. 'My lord lamas, come and seat yourselves in my tent, and we will drink a cup of tea while we await the return of your horses.'

"In about two hours' time a child came in and informed us that the horsemen were returning; and, going out, we saw a cloud of dust advancing, and were soon able to distinguish the eight mounted Tartars, and our two lost animals drawn along by the halter, all coming on at full gallop. As soon as the Tartars came up, they said with the air of satisfaction that succeeds a great uneasiness, that in their country nothing was ever lost. We thanked the generous Mongols for the signal service they had rendered us; and after taking leave of them we finished our packing up, and set off for the Blue Town, the route to which we had quitted to come and furnish ourselves with provisions.

"We had gone nearly three days' march when we came to an imposing and majestic antiquity. It was a great forsaken city, with battlement ramparts, watch-towers, four great gates directed to the four cardinal points, all in perfect preservation, but all sunk three parts into the earth, and covered with thick turf. Since the abandonment of the place, the soil around it has risen to that extent. We entered the city with solemn emotion; there were no ruins to be seen, but only the form of a large and fine town, half buried and enveloped in grass as in a funeral shroud. The inequalities of the ground seem still to point out the direction of streets and the principal buildings; but the only human being we saw was a young Mongol shepherd, who, seated on a mound, was silently smoking his pipe, while his goats grazed on the deserted ramparts around him. Similar remains of cities are not unfrequently to be met with in the deserts of Mongolia, but their history is buried in oblivion. Probably, however, they do not date beyond the thirteenth century; for it is known that at this epoch the Mongols had made themselves masters of the Chinese empire, and according to the Chinese historians, numerous and flourishing towns existed at that time in Northern Tartary. The Tartars could give no information concerning this interesting ruin, but merely say that they call it the old town."

One day they met a Tartar carrying with him the corpse of a relative, whereupon Huc remarks: "In the deserts of Tartary, Mongols are frequently met with carrying on their shoulders the bones of their kindred, and journeying in caravans to the Five Towers, there to purchase, almost at its weight in gold, a few feet of earth whereon to erect a mausoleum. Some of them undertake a journey of a whole year's duration, and of excessive hardship, to reach this holy spot. The Tartar

sovereigns are sometimes interred in a manner which appears the very height of extravagance and barbarism; the royal corpse is placed in an edifice of brick, adorned with stone images of men, lions, tigers, elephants, and divers subjects from the Buddhist mythology. With the illustrious defunct they inter, in a large vault in the center of the building, considerable sums in gold and silver, precious stones and costly habits.

"These monstrous internments frequently cost also the lives of a number of slaves: children of both sexes distinguished for their beauty are taken, and compelled to swallow mercury till they are suffocated; by this means, it is asserted, the color and freshness of the victims is preserved so well that they appear alive. They are then ranged standing round the corpse of their master to serve him as in life. They hold in their hands the pipe, fan, the little vial of snuff, and the other numerous baubles of Tartar royalty. To guard these buried treasures there is placed in the vault a kind of bow, constructed to discharge a number of arrows one after the other. This bow, or rather these bows, are bound together, and the arrows fixed. This species of infernal machine is so placed that the act of opening the door of the vault discharges the first arrow, the discharge of the first releases the second, and so on to the last. The bow-makers keep these murderous machines all ready prepared, and the Chinese sometimes purchase them to guard their houses in their absence.

"After some days' march we quitted the country of the Eight Banners and entered Western Toumet. The Mongol Tartars of Western Toumet are not nomadic: they cultivate the earth, and apply themselves to the arts of civilized life. We had been more than a month in the desert; our taste had been insensibly modified, and our temperament accommodated by its silence and solitude, and, on re-entering cultivated lands, the agitation, perplexity, and turmoil of civilization oppressed and suffocated us; the air seemed to fail us, and we felt every moment as if about to die of asphyxia. The sensation, however, was of no long duration. After a time we found it more convenient and more agreeable after a day's march to take up our lodging at an inn, well warmed, and well stocked with provisions, than have a tent to pitch, fuel to collect, and our scanty supper to cook, before we could take a little rest. Every thing throughout Toumet bears the stamp of great abundance; nowhere did we see, as in China, houses half in ruins, nor human beings with emaciated bodies half covered with rags; all the country-people seemed neatly and comfortably clothed, and in nothing was their superior condition more evident than in the number of magnificent trees surrounding the villages, and bordering the roads."

Three days after entering Toumet they reached the city of *Koui-Noa-Then*, or the *Blue Town*, and after wandering through the streets for some time, put up at a tavern with the following sign: "Hotel of the Three Perfections; Lodging for Travelers on Horse or Camel; All sorts of business negotiated with Unfailing Success." M. Huc says of

their horses, and, commenced their performing various though they all united in by which we had chief, who, as well as lamas, come and up of tea while we

informed us that the a cloud of dust admitted mounted Tartars, all coming on at said with the air of their country notwithstanding for the signal of them we finished the route to which we

visions. We came to an im- broken city, with bat- directed to the four sunk three parts into abandonment of the We entered the city en, but only the form ped in grass as in a seem still to point out but the only human, seated on a mound, raged on the deserted e not unfrequently to r history is buried in beyond the thirteenth ngols had made them- g to the Chinese his- hat time in Northern concerning this inter- town."

the corpse of a rela- Tartary, Mongols are the bones of their kin- ders, there to purchase, whereon to erect a f a whole year's dura- ly spot. The Tartar

this place: "The commercial importance enjoyed by the Blue Town arises from the lama convents, whose celebrity attracts hither Mongols from the most distant parts; hence the commerce is almost exclusively Tartar. The Mongols bring great herds of oxen, horses, camels, and sheep; they also sell here skins, mushrooms, and salt, the only produce of the deserts of Tartary; and they take in return brick tea, clothes, saddles for their horses, sticks of incense to burn before their idols, oatmeal, millet, and some domestic utensils. Koukon-Khoton is also famous for its camel trade. The place of sale is a vast square, into which run all the principal streets of the town. Elevations shelving on both sides, from one end of the square to the other, give this market the appearance of a field deeply furrowed. The camels are placed in a line, so that their fore feet rest on these elevations, and this position displays, and, in a manner, increases the stature of the animals, already so gigantic. It would be difficult to describe the confusion and uproar that prevails in this market. To the cries of the buyers and sellers who are quarreling or talking, as people talk when a revolt is at its height, are joined the long groans of the poor camels, whose noses are incessantly tweaked to try their address in kneeling or rising.

"When we were about to set off, we summoned the master of the hotel, according to custom, to settle our account; and we calculated that, for three men and six animals for four days, we should have to pay at least two ounces of silver. But we had the agreeable surprise of hearing him say, 'My lord lamas, let us not make any reckoning. Put 300 sapecks (30 cents) into the chest, and let that suffice. My house,' added he, 'is recently established, and I wish to obtain for it a good reputation. Since you are from a distant country, I wish you to tell your illustrious compatriots that my hotel is worthy of their confidence.' 'We will certainly speak of your disinterestedness,' we replied; 'and our countrymen, when they have occasion to visit the Blue Town, will not fail to stop at the Hotel of the Three Perfections.'"

On leaving the Blue Town, the travelers determined to direct their course to the west, through the country of the Ortous, in the hope of being able, finally, to join some caravan for Lhasa, the capital of Thibet, the holy city of the Buddhist faith. After several days of fatiguing travel, they reached the town of Chagan-Kouren, on the banks of the *Hoang-Ho*, or Yellow River, which it was necessary for them to cross. The next morning, however, they found that a sudden rise of the water had taken place. "The Yellow River," says Huc, "had become like a vast sea, to which no limit could be perceived, but merely here and there verdant islets, houses, and small villages that seemed to float upon the water. We consulted several people as to what we should do; but opinions were not unanimous. It was necessary to take some resolution. Turning back was out of the question. We had said that, please God, we would get to Lhasa, let the obstacles be what they might. To turn the river, by going in a northerly direction, would greatly lengthen

our journey, and compel us also to pass the great desert of Gobi. To remain at Chagan-Kouren till the waters had retired, and till the ground had become hard and dry enough for the feet of our camels, would be the safest course; but this might detain us, perhaps a month, and our purse was too slenderly furnished to admit of our remaining all that time at an inn with five animals. The only alternative then was to place ourselves under the care of Providence, and go on in spite of mud or whatever else there might be; and this at last we determined to do. Samdadehiemba, who had been in an extremely bad humor, expressed himself well satisfied with our intention of going on. 'When one undertakes a journey like ours,' he observed, 'one mustn't be afraid of the five elements. Those who are afraid of dying on the road should never set out—that's the rule.'

With a great deal of difficulty and danger they finally succeeded in transporting themselves and their camels across the Yellow River, and, after some days spent among the marshes bordering it, across a second inundated arm, called the Paga-Gol. "We had now left behind us the Yellow River and the inundated country," continues the narrative, "and had entered on the Land of Grass, if that name could be given to a country so barren as that of the Ortous. Whichever way you turn, you find nothing but rocky ravines, hills of mud, and plains encumbered with fine movable sand, which the wind sweeps about in all directions. The only pasturage consists in a few thorny shrubs and thin heaths of a fetid odor. Here and there you find a little thin brittle grass, which sticks so closely to the ground, that the animals can not browse it, without scraping up the sand at the same time, and the whole was so dry, that we soon began almost to regret the marshes that had grieved us so much on the banks of the Yellow River. There was not a brook or a spring where the traveler could quench his thirst, only from time to time we met with a pool or tank filled with muddy and fetid water.

"The lamas with whom we had been acquainted in the Blue Town, had warned us of what we should have to endure in this country from scarcity of water, and by their advice we had bought two pails, which proved very serviceable. Whenever we had the good fortune to meet with ponds or wells dug by the Tartars, we filled our buckets, without minding the bad quality of the water, and always took care to use it as sparingly as possible, as if it were some rare and precious liquor. Careful as we were, however, we often had to go whole days without a drop to moisten our lips; and yet our personal privations were nothing compared with the suffering of seeing our animals almost without water, when the scanty herbage that they got was nearly calcined by niter. They grew visibly thinner every day; the aspect of our horse became quite pitiable; he went along, drooping his head quite to the ground, and seeming ready to faint at every step; and the camels seemed to balance themselves painfully on their long legs, while their lean humps hung down like empty bags."

One afternoon, while traveling through this desolate country, they were overtaken by a violent storm, and after seeking for a long time for shelter, at last, to their great surprise, discovered a series of chambers excavated in the rocky walls of a ravine. Here they found a protection from the weather and a supply of fuel, and were so rejoiced that they sat up nearly all night for the purpose of enjoying the unexpected warmth. "Our animals," says Huc, "were no less happy than ourselves, for we found them stables cut out of the mountain, and, what was more, an excellent supply of forage—a grotto full of oaten straw and millet-stalks. Had it not been for the tempest, in which we imagined we were to perish, our poor beasts would never have had such a feast. We sat for a long time, rejoicing in our preservation, and, at last, lay down on a well-warmed kang, that made us forget the terrible cold that we had endured during the tempest.

"On the fifteenth day of the new moon," he continues, "we met numerous caravans, following, like ourselves, the direction from east to west. The way was covered with men, women, and children, mounted on camels or oxen, all going, as they said, to the lama convent of *Rache-Churin*. When they asked whether our journey had the same goal, and heard our answer in the negative, their surprise was extreme; and this, and the number of pilgrims we saw, piqued our curiosity. At the turning of the defile, we met an old lama, who, having a heavy burden on his back, seemed to get along with extreme difficulty. 'Brother,' said we, 'you are advanced in age; your black hairs are not so numerous as your white; you must be much fatigued. Place your burden on one of our camels, and you will journey more at your ease.'

"The old man prostrated himself in token of his gratitude, and we made one of our camels kneel down, while *Samdadchiemba* added the lama's baggage to ours. As soon as the pilgrim was relieved of the load that had weighed upon him, his step became lighter, and a pleased expression spread over his features. 'Brother,' said we, 'we know very little about the affairs of your country; but we are astonished to meet so many pilgrims in the desert.' 'We are all going to *Rache-Churin*,' he replied, in a tone of profound devotion. 'Some great solemnity, doubtless, calls you thither?' 'Yes; to-morrow is to be a great day. A Lama *Bokte* will display his power. He will kill himself, but will not die.'

"We understood in a moment the kind of solemnity which had put the Tartars in motion. A lama was to open his belly, take out his entrails and place them before him, and then return, immediately, to his former state. This spectacle, atrocious and disgusting as it is, is very common in the lama convents of Tartary. The *Bokte* who is to display his power, as the Mongols say, prepares himself for the act by long days of fasting and prayer; and during the whole time he must maintain the most absolute silence, and refrain from all communication with men.

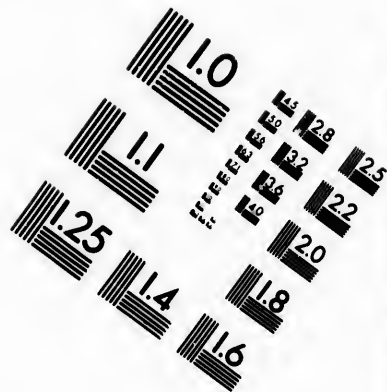
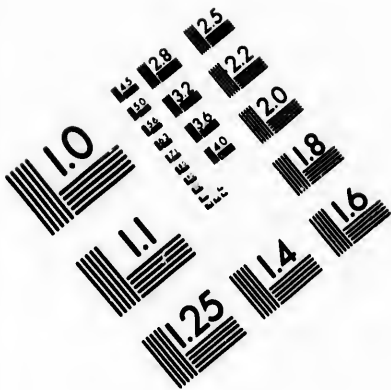
colate country, they
g for a long time for
series of chambers
y found a protection
y rejoiced that they
ing the unexpected
happy than ourselves,
and, what was more,
en straw and millet-
ve imagined we were
uch a feast. We sat
at last, lay down on
ble cold that we had

tinues, " we met na-
irection from east to
nd children, mounted
ma convent of *Rache*-
ad the same goal, and
as extreme; and this,
riosity. At the turn-
g a heavy burden on
ulty. ' Brother,' said
re not so numerous as
our burden on one of
e.'

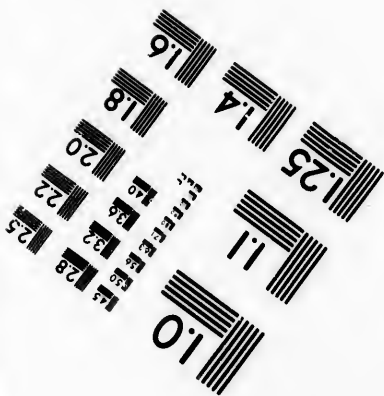
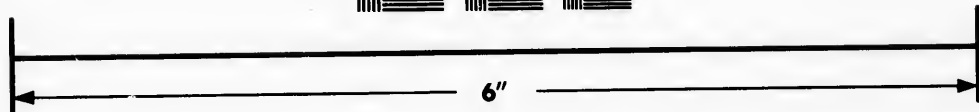
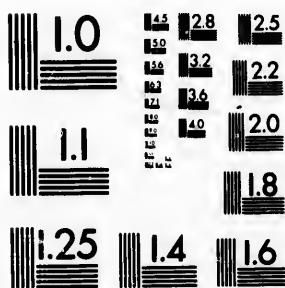
his gratitude, and we
ladchiemba added the
a was relieved of the
lighter, and a pleased
id we, ' we know very
are astonished to meet
ing to *Rache-Churin*,
some great solemnity,
is to be a great day.
l kill himself, but will

solemnity which had put
belly, take out his en-
rn, immediately, to his
gusting as it is, is very
Bokto who is to display
lf for the act by long
ole time he must main-
all communication with





**IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

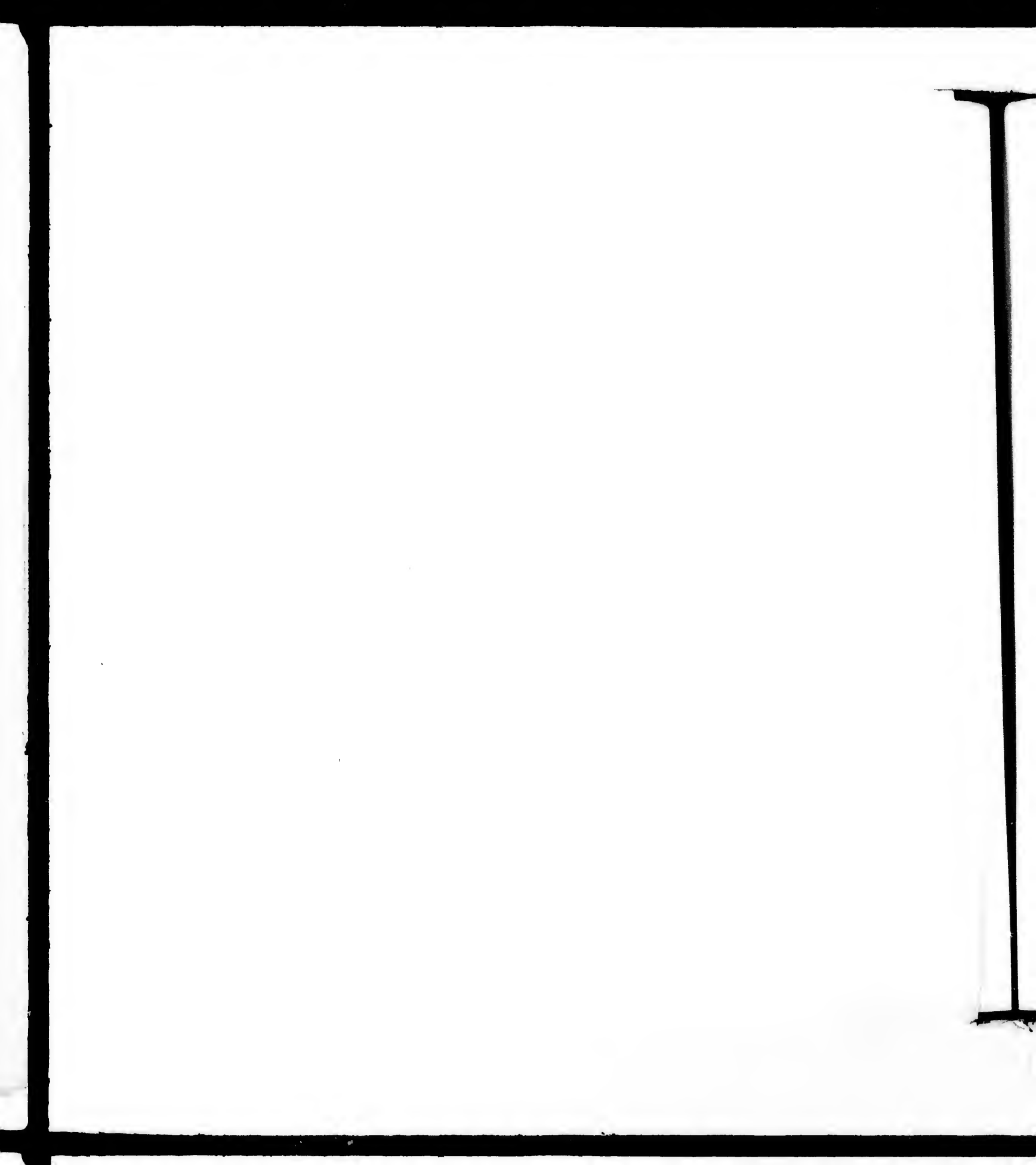
**CIHM/ICMH
Microfiche
Series.**

**CIHM/ICMH
Collection de
microfiches.**



Canadian Institute for Historical Microreproductions / Institut canadien de microreproductions historiques

© 1983



"When the appointed hour has arrived, the whole multitude of pilgrims repair to the great court of the lama convent, where an altar is erected. At length the *Bokte* makes his appearance; he advances gravely amid the acclamations of the crowd, seats himself upon the altar, and taking a cutlass from his girdle, places it between his knees, while the crowd of lamas, ranged in a circle at his feet, commence the terrible invocations that prelude this frightful ceremony. By degrees, as they proceed in their recitation, the *Bokte* is seen to tremble in every limb, and gradually fall into strong convulsions. Then the song of the lamas becomes wilder and more animated, and the recitation is exchanged for cries and howlings. Suddenly the *Bokte* flings away the scarf which he has worn, snatches off his girdle, and with the sacred cutlass rips himself entirely open. As the blood gushes out the multitude prostrate themselves before the horrible spectacle, and the sufferer is immediately interrogated concerning future events, and things concealed from human knowledge. His answers to all these questions are regarded as oracles.

"As soon as the devout curiosity of the pilgrims is satisfied, the lamas resume their recitations and prayers; and the *Bokte*, taking up in his right hand a quantity of his blood, carries it to his mouth, blows three times upon it, and casts it into the air with a loud cry. He then passes his hand rapidly over his stomach, and it becomes as whole as it was before, without the slightest trace being left of the diabolical operation, with the exception of an extreme lassitude. The *Bokte* then rolls his scarf again round his body, says a short prayer in a low voice, and all is over; every one disperses except a few of the most devout, who remain to contemplate and adore the bloody altar."

Huc and Gabet, on learning that this ceremony was to take place at the convent of Rache-Churin, resolved to go thither, witness it, and at the proper moment come forth, declare its diabolical nature, and command the *Bokte* to refrain from the exercise of his infernal power. Fortunately for themselves, they left the road to procure supplies at a Chinese encampment, lost their way, and did not reach the convent until after the magical operation had been performed. "We made but a short stay at Rache-Churin," says Huc, "for as it had not been the will of God that we should reach it at the time favorable to our purpose, of announcing the true faith to the people of Ortous, we were eager to press forward to Thibet, the source of the immense superstition of which we saw here but a few insignificant streams. Shortly after leaving it we fell in with a track very well marked, and frequented by a great number of travelers, but commerce, and not devotion, was the spring that had set them in movement. They were going to the Dobsoon-Noor, or Salt Lake, celebrated over all the west of Mongolia, which furnishes salt, not only to the neighboring Tartars, but to several provinces of the Chinese empire."

Some days after passing the Dobsoon-Noor, they came upon a Mongol encampment in a long, narrow valley. They were very kindly re-

ceived by the natives, from whom they purchased a sheep. The Mongol butcher who slaughtered it surprised them by detaching the flesh from the bones in one single piece, leaving the clear skeleton hanging. In mentioning this circumstance, Huc remarks: "All the Mongols know the number, name, and place of all the bones of an animal's frame, and never fracture one in cutting up a sheep or an ox. With the point of their large knives, they go straight to the joint, which they sever with a speed and address truly astonishing. These frequent dissections, and the habit of living in the midst of their flocks and herds, render the Tartars extremely skillful in the cure of the maladies of animals. The remedies they employ are the simples they collect in the fields, and which they administer with a cow's horn, in the form of a decoction. If the animal will not open its mouth, they make him swallow the liquid through his nostrils."

The intention of Huc and Gabet had been to continue their course westward through the Tartar country of Alechan, but on meeting with some Tartar princes on their way to Peking, the latter informed them that this country had been rendered almost uninhabitable by a severe drought, and was ravaged by troops of brigands. One other route remained open to them. This was to recross the Yellow River, which here makes a long bend northward, pass again the Great Wall, and reach the Tartar city of *Kou-Kou-noor*, through the Chinese province of Kan-Sou. "Formerly," says Huc, "such a project would have made us shudder. It would have been to us clear as the day that strangling for ourselves, and the persecution of all the Chinese missions, would have been the inevitable consequences of so foolhardy an attempt. But the season of fear was now passed for us. Our abode in several great towns—the necessity we had been under of transacting our own business—had rendered us more familiar with the habits and usages of the Chinese. The language was no longer an embarrassment. We could speak the Tartar language, and were acquainted with the popular Chinese phrases, a knowledge difficult to acquire while resident in the missions, because the Christians, out of flattery to the missionaries, study to employ only the brief nomenclature that the latter have learned from books. In addition to these moral and intellectual advantages, our long journey had been of great service to us physically. The rain, wind, and sun, had in the course of two months so tanned and hardened our European complexions, that our aspect had become very tolerably savage; and the fear of being recognized by the Chinese no longer affected us."

A few days after this they reached the Yellow River, at the town of *Che-Tsin-Dze*, and re-entered China proper, leaving behind them Mongolia and its nomadic life. Huc, at this point, makes the following remarks upon the country through which they had passed: "The general aspect of Mongolia is wild and gloomy; never is the eye relieved by the charm and variety of a landscape. The monotony of the steppes

is broken only by ravines, great fissures, and stony sterile hills. Toward the north, in the country of the Khalkas, nature appears more animated; the summits of the mountains are crowned by forests, and the rich pasturage of the plain is watered by numerous rivers; but during the long season of winter the earth is buried under a thick covering of snow. From the side of the Great Wall, Chinese industry glides like a serpent into the desert. Towns begin to rise on all sides; the 'Land of Grass' is being gradually covered by crops, and the Mongol shepherds are by degrees driven back to the north by the encroachments of agriculture.

"The sandy plains occupy perhaps the greater part of Mongolia; and in these not a tree is to be seen; short brittle grass makes its way with difficulty through the barren soil, and creeping thorns, and some scanty tufts of heath, form the only vegetation, the sole pasturage, of Gobi. Water is extremely scarce, being only found in deep wells dug for the use of travelers who are obliged to cross this miserable region."

The travelers proceeded forward, through the cities of Ning-hai, Ho-hia-po, and other unheard-of Chinese towns, in the flourishing province of Kan-Sou. Their disguise was so complete that their real character was not once suspected, except at the "Hotel of Social Relations," in the town of Choang-Long, the landlord of which was a sharp and satirical Chinese. "To give us a proof of his penetration," says Hue, "he asked at once whether we were not English (*Ing-Kie-Li*), the marine devils who were making war at Canton. 'We are not English,' we replied, 'nor are we devils of any sort—land or sea.' 'Don't you know,' said a man who was lounging about, addressing the landlord, 'that all those marine devils have blue eyes and red hair?' 'Besides,' said we, 'if we were marine monsters, how could we live on shore, and go on horseback?' 'Yes, that's true, that's true,' said he; 'the Ing-Kie-Li never dare to quit the sea; as soon as ever they come on shore they tremble and die like fish.'"

A little further, they came to the town of Ho-Kiaou-Y, and finding that the backs of their animals had been severely galled, determined to halt for some days. They established themselves in the "Tavern of the Temperate Climates," and gave Samdadchiemba permission to visit his parents, who lived but a short distance off, and whom he had not seen for eighteen years. "During this eight days' rest," says Hue, "our cattle had recovered sufficiently to attempt the painful road we should have to traverse. But the rugged path by which we had to climb the mountain of Ping-Keon presented difficulties which our camels found almost insurmountable; and we were continually obliged, as we went on, to utter loud cries to warn muleteers who might be advancing toward us on this narrow and dangerous road, where two animals could not pass abreast, that they might have time to turn aside their mules, lest they should be terrified by the sight of our camels, and rush down the precipice. When we had passed the mountain, we came to a village

whose Chinese appellation signifies the Old Duck; and what struck us most in this place was, that the art of knitting, which we had imagined unknown in China, was here carried on very busily; and, moreover, not by women, but by men. Their work appeared to be very clumsy; the stockings they made were like sacks; and their gloves had no separation for the fingers. It looked very odd, too, to see mustachioed fellows sitting before their doors spinning, knitting, and gossiping, like so many old women."

In January, 1845, four months after their departure from the "Valley of the Black Waters," the travelers reached the trading town of Tang-Keou-Eul, on the frontier of Thibet, and congratulated themselves on being beyond the reach of the Chinese authorities. "So far," says the narrative, "we had followed pretty well the Itinerary that we had traced for ourselves; but by what means were we to penetrate to Lha-Ssa, the capital of Thibet? We learned that *almost every year* caravans left Tang-Keou-Eul for this destination, and in the end reached it; but a terrible account was given to us of the road. A journey of four months had to be made across countries entirely uninhabited, and where travelers were often frozen to death or buried under the snow. During the summer, it was said many were drowned; for it was necessary to cross great rivers without bridge or boat; and beside this, these deserts were ravaged by hordes of robbers, who plundered those who fell into their hands even of their clothes, and left them naked and starving in the wilderness."

A few days after their arrival, however, a small caravan of Khalkhas Tartars passed through the town, on their way to Lha-Ssa, from the borders of Russia. They desired Huc and Gabet to join their party, which the latter were about to do, when they learned that the Tartars expected to make the journey with great rapidity: their animals would not be able to keep up with such a march, and they had not funds to buy others. They therefore reluctantly gave up this opportunity, and resolved to wait for the return of the Thibetan embassy from Pekin, which was not expected for six or eight months. In order to occupy themselves profitably in the mean time, they procured a teacher from the famous Lamasery of Kounboum, which was only forty miles distant, and commenced the study of the Thibetan language. The teacher, who was called Sandara the Bearded, was a shrewd, intelligent young man, under whose instructions they made rapid progress in Thibetan. He pretended, moreover, to be deeply interested in the Christian doctrines which they taught him, but, as they afterward discovered, was something of a hypocrite, and they gave up the idea of his conversion.

After some time had been spent in this way, Sandara invited them to visit the Lamasery, and take up their abode there. They acceded to this proposal with joy. Sandadachiemba had already been sent off to the valley of Kou-kou-noor, to pasture the camels; so they mounted their horses, and, after a long day's ride, reached the famous Buddhist monas-

tery of Kounboun, where they were at first entertained in Sandara's house. "During the night," remarks Huc, "we tried in vain to sleep—sleep would not come. This country of Amdo, a country unknown in Europe—this great Lamaserai of Kounboun, so renowned among the Buddhists—these conventual manners—the lama's cell in which we were lying—all seemed to float through our brains like the vague, impalpable forms of a dream. We passed the night in forming plans, and as soon as day dawned we were on foot. All was still profoundly silent while we made our morning prayer, not without a sensation of joy and pride that we had been permitted thus to invoke the true God in this famous Lamaserai, consecrated to an impious and lying worship. It seemed to us as if we were about to conquer the vast realms of Buddhism to the faith of Jesus Christ.

"Sandara soon made his appearance, and served us with milk, tea, dried grapes, and cakes fried in butter, and while we were occupied with breakfast he opened a little closet, and took from it a wooden trencher, neatly varnished, and ornamented with flowers and gilded on a red ground. After having dusted it with his red scarf, he spread over it a sheet of rose-colored paper, placed on it four fine pears symmetrically arranged, and covered them with an oval silk handkerchief, called a *Khata*. It was with this present, he said, we were to go and borrow a house.

"This *Khata*, or 'scarf of happiness,' plays so important a part in Thibetan manners, that it is well perhaps to say a few words about it. It is usually a piece of bluish-white silk fringed at the two ends; but as it is an article indispensable to rich and poor, it of course varies greatly in richness and value. No one ever travels without a stock of *khatas*; if you go to pay a visit of ceremony, or to ask a service, or to return thanks for one, you always begin by displaying a *khata* to the person whom you wish to honor. If two friends have not seen each other for a long time, and have met by accident, their first care is to offer each other a *khata*; when you write a letter you inclose a *khata* in it: in short, the importance attached, by the Thibetans, the Si-Fan, and all the nations who inhabit the country to the west of the Blue Sea, to this ceremony of the *khata*, is scarcely credible. They form a most considerable article of commerce for the Chinese at Tang-Keou-Eul; and the Thibetan embassies, when they pass through the town, carry away a prodigious quantity of them. As soon as we had done breakfast, we went out to borrow a lodging, preceded by Sandara the Bearded, bearing solemnly in his two hands the famous dish of four pears. This proceeding appeared to us so odd that we felt ashamed of it, and thought all eyes must be fixed upon us. But the lamas whom we met went silently on their way, without turning their heads or paying the slightest attention to us. The little *Chabis*, merry and mischievous as school-boys always are, were the only persons who appeared to know or care what we were doing.

"At length we entered a small house, the master of which was in the yard, busied in spreading out horse-dung to dry in the sun; but seeing us, he wrapped himself in his scarf and went into his cell. We followed him with Sandara, who offered the khata and the plate of pears, and accompanied them with an harangue in the Oriental Thibetan language, of which we did not understand a word. During this time we kept ourselves modestly retired, like unfortunate men who were not even capable of asking a favor for ourselves. The lama made us sit down on a carpet, offered us milk tea, and said to us in the Mongol language, 'that he was happy that strangers from the far west should have deigned to cast their eyes on his poor habitation.' Had we been speaking French we might have responded by some equivalent compliment; but in Mongol, we could only say that we were indeed from far off; but, that one found in some measure a country wherever one met with such hospitality as his. After drinking a cup of tea, and talking a minute or two of France, Rome, the pope, and the cardinals, we rose to visit the dwelling assigned to our use. For poor wanderers like us it was superb. There was a vast chamber with a great kang, a separate kitchen with stoves, a kettle, and some utensils; and even a stable for our horse and mule. We took possession of our house the same day; and the neighboring lamas helped us to move our baggage, carrying the things for us on their shoulders, as if it were a real pleasure to them to give their assistance. They swept our rooms, lighted the fire under the kang, and set the stable ready for the reception of our animals; and when all was done, the master of the house, according to a rule of hospitality among them, prepared a feast for us. It is thought that, on a moving day, one can not have time to attend to cookery.

"The situation of the Lamaserai of Kounboum is enchanting. Imagine a mountain intersected by a broad, deep ravine, whence spring up large trees, filled with a numerous population of ravens, magpies, and yellow-backed crows. On either side the ravine, and up the sides of the mountain, rise, in amphitheatrical form, the white dwellings of the lamas, each with its little terrace and wall of inclosure, adorned only by cleanliness, while here and there tower far above them the Buddhist temples, with their gilt roofs glittering with a thousand colors, and surrounded by elegant peristyles. The houses of the superiors are distinguished by pennants, floating above small hexagonal turrets, and on all sides the eye is struck by mystical sentences, in the Thibetan character, in red and black, on the doors, on the walls, on the stones, on pieces of linen fixed, like flags, on masts reared above the houses. Almost at every step you meet with conical niches, in which incense and odoriferous wood are burning; and through the streets of the Lamaserai circulates the population of lamas, in their red and yellow dresses, grave in their deportment, and, although under no obligation to silence, speaking little, and that little in a low voice.

"It is to a legend concerning Tsong-Kaba, a great Buddhist reform-

er, that the Lamaserai of Kounboun owes its name. It signifies "Ten Thousand Images;" and it is said that when the mother of the reformer, in devoting him to a religious life, according to custom cut off his hair and threw it away, a tree sprang up from it, which bore on every one of its leaves a Thibetan character. This tree is still to be seen at the foot of the mountain on which the principal Buddhist temple stands, in a large square inclosure formed by four brick walls. Within this stands the wonderful tree, which appears of great antiquity; and though now not more than eight feet high, three men could hardly embrace its trunk. The wood is of a reddish color, and exquisite odor, very much resembling cinnamon. We were told that during the summer, toward the eighth moon, it produces superb large red flowers; but what most excited our astonishment was that every leaf was really, as we had been before told it was, distinctly marked with a Thibetan character, sometimes lighter, sometimes darker than the leaf, but quite plain. After the most minute investigation, we could discover no traces of fraud on the part of the lamas; and though, doubtless, people will smile at our ignorance, that will matter little if they do not suspect the veracity of our account.*

They remained for three months at Kounboun, but they were living in opposition to a positive law of the Lamaserai, which ordained that those who wished to make a long stay should put on the sacred vestments of a lama. This was brought to their notice, and as they could not conscientiously comply with the law, they offered to withdraw. Thereupon the government of the convent invited them to take up their abode at the little Lamaserai of Tchogortan, half an hour's ride from Kounboun, where they would be at liberty to wear what dress they pleased. "The aspect of Tchogortan is very picturesque, especially in summer. The habitations of the lamas, at the foot of a high mountain, rising almost perpendicularly above them, are shaded by trees, centuries old, whose thick branches serve for a retreat to numerous kites and crows. A few yards below the houses there flows an abundant stream, intersected by numerous dams, constructed by the lamas to turn their prayer mills. At the bottom of the valley, and on the neighboring hills, appeared the black tents of the Si-Fan, and some flocks of goats. The mountain-wall itself serves as a habitation to a few contemplative anchor-

* Colonel Sleeman, in his work on India, speaks of mysterious trees in the forests in certain parts of that country, every leaf of which is marked with the names of the god *Rama*, and his wife, *Sita*, in Sanscrit characters. He examined several of these trees, which the natives call the *Silver-tree*, and invariably found the leaves marked with the sacred names, as if written with a blunt pencil. The Hindoos consider the writing as miraculous, and the Colonel was nearly ready to agree with them, when he one day chanced to see one of the trees growing on the edge of a cliff, in a position where it could not be reached without great difficulty and danger. Curiosity prompted him to run the risk of examining it, and he found its leaves entirely free from the mysterious characters. This led him to believe that in the other instances they had been secretly inscribed upon the leaves by the Hindoo devotees, probably as a devotional act.—B. T.

ites, who have built their eyries, like eagles' nests, on the highest and most inaccessible spots; some have hollowed them out of the face of the rock, others have stuck a little wooden cell, like a swallow's nest, to its side, and some pieces of wood fastened to the rock serve for a ladder, by which they ascend to their singular habitations.

"In the beginning of July there fell very heavy rains, and when these were over, the country clothed itself, as if by magic, with flowers and verdure. For our camels, too, this was a moment of Palingenesia. Their hair had all fallen off in bunches like old rags, and, for a few days, they were quite naked, and perfectly hideous. But now the hair began to appear again, and in another fortnight they were clothed in their new attire, and really handsome. The old hair furnished us with a new and useful occupation. An old lama, who was a skillful rope-maker, had suggested to us that we might make with it a store of cords for our baggage; and after some lessons from him we set to work. In a short time we could manage it very well, and every morning, when we went to visit our cattle at their pasture, we used to take a bundle of camels' hair, and work as we went along.

"At length, toward the end of the month of September, we heard news that the Thibetan embassy had arrived at Tang-Keou-Enl, and was to stop there but a few days. It was necessary, therefore, that without loss of time we should set about our preparations for this long-looked-for journey to the capital of Thibet. Among other stores we bought a good quantity of garlic, which we were recommended to take as a remedy to the pernicious and even poisonous exhalations proceeding from a certain mountain that we should have to pass. We also got another camel; for, though ours were in magnificent order, three were not sufficient for such an enterprise as this; and we hired a young lama, whom we had known at Kounboum, in the quality of assistant camel-driver. After exchanging a great number of khatas with our friends and acquaintances, we set out on our march toward the Blue Sea, where we were to wait the passing of the Thibetan embassy.

"The Blue Lake or sea, called by the Mongols the Kou-kou-Noor, is an immense reservoir of water more than four hundred miles in circumference. The name of sea is applicable to it, not only on account of its extent, but because its waters are bitter and salt like those of the ocean, and it is subject to the periodical ebb and flow of tide. The marine odor which it exhales is perceptible far off in the desert. Toward the western part there is a little rocky island inhabited by twenty contemplative lamas, who have built there a Buddhist temple, and some habitations where they pass their days in the most profound retirement, far from the anxieties of the world. It is impossible to pay them a visit, for there is not a boat on the whole expanse of waters—at least we never saw one, and the Mongols assured us that no one among their tribes occupied himself with navigation. During the severest cold of winter, however, when the waters are covered by a solid crust of ice,

the shepherds of the neighborhood go on pilgrimages to the island, and carry to the contemplative lamas their modest offerings of tea, and butter, and Tsamba, receiving in exchange blessings on their flocks and pastures.

"We had sojourned by the Kou-kou-Noor nearly a month, and had been compelled, five or six times, to decamp and follow the Tartar tribes, who, at the least alarm of robbers, changed their place—though they never went far—when, toward the end of October, the Thibetan embassy arrived. We joined this immense troop, which was now further increased by the addition of several Mongol caravans, wishing like ourselves to profit by this excellent opportunity of making the journey to Lha-Ssa. We stopped on the road the following day, that we might see this vast multitude of travelers defile before us; and we made the following estimate of their numbers: There were fifteen thousand long-haired oxen, twelve hundred horses, about the same number of camels, and two thousand men—Thibetans and Tartars—some going on foot, and directing the disorderly march of the cattle; others mounted on horses, camels, and oxen, and fully armed. The ambassador traveled in a litter borne by two mules, and escorted by three hundred Chinese soldiers furnished by the province of Kan-Sou, and two hundred brave Tartars, charged by the princes of the Kou-kou-Noor to protect the holy embassy of the Talé Lama as far as the frontiers of Thibet.

"On the 15th of November we quitted the magnificent plains of the Kou-kou-Noor, and entered the country of the Tsaidam Mongols, after crossing the river of the same name. Here the landscape underwent a great change, and became wild and gloomy, and the dry and stony soil bore nothing but brambles impregnated with saltpeter. The people, too, have a morose manner, as if they had been affected by the physical character of their country: they speak very little, and that in so low and guttural a tone that other Mongols have difficulty in comprehending them. In this arid soil salt and borax abound; there is nothing more to be done than to dig a hole two or three feet deep, and the salt collects in it, and crystallizes and purifies of itself. The borax is also collected in little reservoirs, which are soon entirely filled.

"We rested two days in this country in order to collect all the strength possible for the ascent of the dreaded Bourhan-Bota—our long-haired oxen and camels enjoying themselves on the niter and salt, and we feasting on Tsamba and some goats which we got from the herdsmen in exchange for brick tea; and then setting out about three o'clock in the morning, we arrived at nine at the foot of the mountain. The caravan stopped for a moment, and we gazed with anxiety upward at the steep and rough paths, on which we perceived with anxiety a light vapor resting, which was said to be the noxious gas before mentioned. We adopted the precautionary measure, recommended by tradition, of chewing some cloves of garlic, and then commenced the ascent. In a short time the horses appeared to be incapable of bearing their riders; every

one slackened his pace, all faces turned pale, the heart beat faintly, the limbs refused their office; many lay down, then got up again, made a few steps, then lay down again, and in this deplorable manner toiled up the side of the famous Bourhan-Bota. A part of our troop stopped in a deep hollow of the mountain, where it was said the pestilential vapor was less thick; the rest exerted their utmost energies to reach the top, where, at last, the lungs could play freely, relieved from the murderous carbonic acid gas that had so long oppressed them. To descend on the other side was mere play, for there the air was pure and easily respirable. The people told us that when there was a strong wind, the pernicious effect was little felt; but that it was very dangerous in calm weather, for then, being heavier than the atmospheric air, it remains near the surface of the ground, instead of being in some measure dispersed."

This mountain, however, was but an apprenticeship to Mount Chuga, which was much higher and more rugged. The cold they endured in crossing it was almost insupportable: M. Gabet became very sick, and continued so for many days. In a lake which they passed, they saw a number of dead wild oxen, who had been frozen in, while in the act of swimming across. "By the time we were approaching the most elevated point of Central Asia," says Huc, "a terrible wind had set in from the north, which lasted fifteen days, and increased the rigor of the cold to a degree that threatened us with great misfortunes. The sky was still clear, but the cold was so terrible that even at mid-day the influence of the sun was scarcely perceptible. Even during the day, and of course still more during the night, we were under the continual apprehension of being frozen to death. I may mention one circumstance that will give an idea of the extremity of the cold. Every morning before setting off, the caravan used to take a meal, and then not again till they encamped; but as the Tsamba was a kind of food so little agreeable, that it was difficult to take enough of it at once to support us during the day, we used to soak in tea two or three balls of it to keep in reserve for the day's journey. We wrapped up this boiling paste in very warm linen, and placed it on our breasts; and over this we had our clothing, namely a garment of sheep-skin, then a waistcoat of lamb's-skin, then a short garment of fox's-skin, and over all a great woolen coat. Now during this fortnight we constantly found the balls of Tsamba frozen, and when we drew them from our bosoms, they were so hard that we almost broke our teeth in attempting to eat them. The cattle suffered terribly, especially the mules and horses, which are not so strong as the oxen. We had to dress them in felt carpets, and tie camels'-skin round their heads; and in any other circumstances their appearance would certainly have excited our hilarity, but now we were in no humor for laughing, for, notwithstanding all precautions, the cattle of the caravan were decimated by death.

"As we advanced toward Lha-Ssa, we perceived that we were get-

ting into a more and more inhabited country; the numerous pilgrims, the caravans, the frequent inscriptions on stones by the road-side, contributed much to lighten the weariness of the road. The Tibetans we met were now no longer exclusively nomadic, cultivated fields appeared, and houses took the place of black tents. On the fifteenth day of our departure, we arrived at Pampou (erroneously set down in maps as Pancou), which, on account of its proximity to Lha-Ssa, is regarded by pilgrims as the vestibule of the holy city. It is a beautiful plain, watered by a large river, the waters of which, distributed into many canals, spread fertility through the country. There is no village in it, properly so called, but extensive farms are seen in all directions, the houses with terraced tops, and surmounted by little turrets, whence float streamers of various colors, covered with Thibetan inscriptions. After three months' traveling through those terrible deserts, where no living thing was to be met with, but robbers and wild beasts, the plains of Pampou appeared to us the most beautiful country in the world. This long and painful journey had brought us so near the savage state, that we were in ecstasy with every thing that belonged to civilization. The houses, the agricultural implements, even a simple furrow, attracted our attention. But what struck us most was the prodigious elevation of temperature which we noticed in the cultivated country. Although we were still in the month of January, the river and the canals were merely bordered by a light covering of ice, and we met no one clothed in furs.

"We were now only separated from Lha-Ssa by a mountain; but it was one extremely steep and difficult of ascent. The Tibetans and Mongols, however, climb it with great devotion; as they believe that those who have the happiness to arrive at its summit, receive a complete remission of their sins; and, certainly, if the mountain have not the power to remit sins, it has that of imposing a pretty severe penance. We had set off an hour after midnight, and we did not arrive until ten o'clock in the morning; having been compelled, on account of the steep and rocky character of the paths, which makes it nearly impossible for a horse to keep his footing, to walk almost the whole way. The sun was just about to set, when, issuing from a defile at the foot of the mountain, we saw lying before us the renowned Lha-Ssa, the metropolis of the Buddhist world, encircled by a multitude of grand old trees, which form with their foliage a girdle of verdure around it; its white houses, with their terraces and turrets; its numerous temples, with their gilded roofs; and high above all, the majestic palace of the Talé Lama. At the entrance of the town, some Mongols with whom we had made acquaintance on the roads, had come to meet us, and invite us to alight at a lodging which they had prepared for us. It was the 13th of January, 1846; just eighteen months after we had quitted the valley of the Black Waters."

heart beat faintly, the
ot up again, made a
ble manner toiled up
ur troop stopped in a
the pestilential vapor
gies to reach the top,
from the murderous

To descend on the
sure and easily respir-
strong wind, the per-
y dangerous in calm
pheric air, it remains
in some measure dis-

ship to Mount Chuga,
cold they endured in
became very sick, and
they passed, they saw a
in, while in the act of
ing the most elevated
d had set in from the
the rigor of the cold to
es. The sky was still
l-day the influence of
e day, and of course
continual apprehension
circumstance that will
morning before setting
not again till they en-
o little agreeable, that
support us during the
f it to keep in reserve
ng paste in very warm
s we had our clothing,
of lamb's-skin, then a
t woolen coat. Now
alls of Tsamba frozen,
were so hard that we
The cattle suffered
e not so strong as the
tie camels'-skin round
eir appearance would
ere in no humor for
e cattle of the caravan

ed that we were get-

RESIDENCE AT LHA-SSA.

"The day following that of our arrival at Lha-Ssa, we took a guide and traversed the different quarters of the town, in quest of a lodging. The houses of Lha-Ssa are generally large, several stories high, and terminated by a terrace, slightly inclined, to facilitate the running off of the water; they are whitewashed all over, with the exception of some borders, and the door and window-frames, which are painted red or yellow. The reformed Buddhists are particularly fond of these two colors; they are in some sort sacred in their eyes, and are called lamaesque colors. The houses of Lha-Ssa are painted every year, and have, consequently, an admirable appearance of freshness; but the inside is far from being in harmony with the out. The rooms are smoky, dirty, and foul-smelling, and generally encumbered with all sorts of utensils, in most disgusting disorder. Thibetan houses are so many whited sepulchers, true images of all false religions, which veil corruption and falsehood by a certain number of dogmatic truths, and some principles of morality.

"After a long search we found a small lodging in a large house containing already fifty lodgers. Our humble abode was in the upper story, ascended by twenty-six stairs, unfurnished with any kind of balustrade, and so steep and narrow, that to avoid the risk of breaking our necks, every time we mounted them, it was necessary to make use of both hands and feet. Our apartment was composed of one large square room and a small corridor; the former lighted by a narrow window, garnished with three thick wooden bars, and a round skylight. The latter hole served a variety of purposes; it admitted the light, the wind, the rain, and the snow; and also afforded egress to the smoke from our hearth. In order to protect themselves in some measure from the winter's cold, the Thibetans place in the middle of their chambers a basin of baked clay, in which argol may be burned. As this kind of fuel gives more smoke than heat, the advantage of a hole in the roof is obvious; and this inestimable aperture in our chamber enabled us to make a little fire without being quite stifled. It is true this good had its attendant evil in admitting, at times, the rain and snow upon our backs, but when we have led a nomadic life for some time we cease to be disturbed by trifles.

"As soon as we had organized our household, we began to make acquaintance with Lha-Ssa and its inhabitants. Lha-Ssa is not more than two leagues in circumference, and is not shut within ramparts like the Chinese towns. In the suburbs the number of gardens planted with large trees afford a magnificent girdle of verdure to the town. The principal streets are very wide, straight, and tolerably clear, the suburbs most disgustingly filthy. In the latter there is a quarter where the houses are entirely built of ox and rams' horns; these bizarre edifices have not an unpleasant aspect, and are of great solidity. The ox horns being smooth and white, and those of the sheep black and rough, form a

multitude or singular combinations; the interstices are filled up with mortar; these houses are never whitened—the Thibetans have the good taste to leave them in their savage and fantastic beauty, without attempting to improve them.

“The palace of the Talé Lama well deserves the celebrity it enjoys. Toward the northern part of the town, at a small distance from it, there rises a rocky mountain of no great elevation, and conical in form, bearing the name of Buddha-La, that is, the Divine Mountain, and on this grand site the adorers of the Talé Buddha have reared a palace to their living and incarnate divinity. This palace consists of a cluster of temples, varying in size and beauty; the center temple has an elevation of four stories; the dome is entirely covered with plates of gold, and is surrounded by a peristyle, of which the columns are likewise gilded. Here the Talé Lama has fixed his residence, and from the height of his sanctuary can contemplate, on days of high solemnities, his countless worshippers, thronging the plain and prostrating themselves at the base of the Sacred Mountain. The secondary palaces grouped around, accommodate a crowd of lamas whose continued occupation is to serve and wait on the living Buddha. Two fine avenues, bordered with magnificent trees, lead from Lha-Ssa to this temple, and there may be seen a multitude of pilgrims unrolling between their fingers the long Buddhist rosaries, and the lamas of the court splendidly dressed, and mounted on horses richly caparisoned. There is continual motion in the vicinity of the Buddha-La, but the multitude is generally silent and serious.

“The Thibetan women adopt a custom, or rather submit to a regulation certainly unique in the world. Before going out of their houses, they rub their faces with a sort of black sticky varnish, a good deal like conserve of grapes. As the object is to render themselves hideous, they daub their faces with this disgusting cosmetic, till they scarcely resemble human creatures. The following was, we are told, the origin of this monstrous practice:

“About two hundred years ago, the Nomekhan, or Lama King of Anterior Thibet, was a man of the austere character. At that period, the Thibetan women were not more in the habit of trying to make themselves look ugly than the women of other countries; on the contrary, they were extravagantly addicted to dress and luxury. By degrees, the contagion spread even to the holy family of the lamas; and the Buddhist convents relaxed their discipline, in a manner that threatened a complete dissolution. In order to arrest the progress of this alarming libertinism, the nomekhan published an edict, forbidding women to appear in public unless disfigured in the fashion above mentioned; the severest punishments and the heaviest displeasure of Buddha were threatened to the refractory. It must have required no ordinary courage to publish such an edict; but that the women obeyed it was still more extraordinary. Tradition makes no mention of the slightest revolt on their part. The fair Thibetans vie with each other in making themselves

frightful, and she who is most offensively besmeared passes for the most pious; the custom appears to be considered as a dogma to be accepted. In the country the law is most rigorously observed; but at Lha-Ssa, women are to be met with who venture to appear with their faces as nature made them; but those who permit themselves this license are considered as women of bad reputation, and they never fail to hide themselves when they catch sight of an agent of the police."

The travelers soon became objects of attention from the populace, and there were many conjectures afloat concerning their character and origin. To avoid all difficulty, they resolved to conform to a regulation which requires all foreigners desirous of dwelling at Lha-Ssa, to present themselves to the authorities. They repaired to the chief of police, to whom they declared they were from the west, from a great kingdom called France, and that they had come to Thibet to preach the Christian religion. The official received this information with apparent satisfaction, and the travelers retired, congratulating themselves on their good fortune. Some days after this, however, they were visited by spies, and presently were summoned before the regent. Their reception was not unfavorable, but they were greatly alarmed on being also conducted before the Chinese ambassador, who, they knew, would endeavor to prevent them from remaining in the city.

After a long examination, during which they stated very frankly their true character, the seal of the Grand Lama was affixed to every article of their baggage, and they were kept as prisoners for the night in the regent's house. They were, nevertheless, treated with great kindness, and received assurances of friendly interest from several of the Thibetan officials. The next day their trunks were opened, in the presence of the regent and the Chinese ambassador. Huc thus describes the result: "We took off the seal of the Talé Lama, and the two trunks that every body had been long devouring with their eyes, were at last laid open. We took out the contents, one after another, and displayed them on a large table. First appeared some volumes in French and Latin; then some Tartar and Chinese books, church linen and ornaments, sacred vases, rosaries, crosses, medals, and a magnificent collection of lithographs. Every body was lost in admiration at the sight of this little European museum. They stared, jogged each other with the elbow, and clucked with their tongues in sign of approbation. No one had ever seen any thing so wonderful or so beautiful. Every shining white object was silver, every thing that shone yellow was gold. Every countenance expanded, and it seemed to be quite forgotten what dangerous people we were. The Thibetans put out their tongues and scratched their ears; the Chinese made us the most sentimental reverences. The bag of medals made all eyes turn in their sockets. They hoped, probably, that we should make a public distribution of these brilliant pieces of gold on leaving the hall of judgment."

The most suspicious objects were their maps, but Huc succeeded, by

appealing to the knowledge of the Chinese ambassador, and thereby flattering his vanity, in obtaining his testimony that they were engraved, and not made by the travelers themselves. This testimony was conclusive; "the good-natured regent," says Hue, "looked quite radiant and triumphant when, after all, there appeared nothing among our effects to compromise us. 'You see,' said he to the ambassador, 'these men are ministers of the Lord of Heaven, and honest men; what would you have of them? Let them go in peace!' These flattering words were received in the hall with a murmur of approbation; and we responded from the bottom of our hearts, '*Deo gratias!*' Our baggage was again shouldered by the people pressed into the service, and we returned to our home with much greater briskness than when we had quitted it. The news of our acquittal quickly spread through the town; the people flocked from all sides to salute us, and the French name was in every mouth."

On the day of their liberation, the regent furnished them with a splendid house, and gave them entire permission to commence the work of proselytism. They erected a chapel in their dwelling, and held daily conversations with many intelligent natives, who came to question them about the religion of the West. Two or three of these appeared to be sincere and devout in their inquiries, and the missionaries began to indulge in splendid dreams of establishing Christianity in the very sanctuary of Buddhism.

"The tranquillity we enjoyed," continues Hue, "the distinguished protection accorded by the government, the sympathy of the people—all gave us the hope that, with the aid of God we might lay, in the very capital of Buddhism, the foundation of a mission whose influence would soon extend to the nomadic tribes of Mongolia. As soon as we imagined our position secure in Lha-Ssa, we began to think of re-establishing communications with Europe. The way of the desert was impracticable; and even supposing it infested neither by robbers nor wild beasts, the length of the passage made us shudder. The route by India seemed the only one possible. From Lha-Ssa to the first English station it was not more than a month's march; and by establishing a correspondent beyond the Himalayas, and another at Calcutta, communication with France became, if not prompt or easy, at least practicable. As this plan could not be executed without the concurrence of the government, we communicated it to the regent, who entered into our views; and it was agreed that when the fine season commenced, M. Gabet should undertake the journey to Calcutta with a Thibetan escort as far as Boutan. Such were our plans for the establishment of a mission at Lha-Ssa; but, at this very moment, the enemy of all good was at work to drive us from a country which he seems to have chosen for the seat of his empire."

This enemy was the Chinese minister, who even became jealous of the popularity of the two foreigners. He endeavored to persuade the regent to expel them, alleging that their design was to overthrow the

power of the Talé Lama; but the regent remained friendly, and refused to believe these assertions. "The quarrel grew more bitter every day, and matters came to such a pass, that prudence compelled us to resolve on yielding to circumstances, and no longer maintaining a resistance which might compromise the regent our protector, and even become, perhaps, the cause of serious dissensions between China and Thibet. We decided, then, that it would be better to bow the head, and accept our persecution with resignation. Our conduct would at least prove to the Thibetans that we had come among them with pacific intentions, and had no intention of establishing ourselves in the country by violence. Having adopted this resolution, we went to the palace of the regent, who, hearing that we had decided upon quitting Lha-Ssa, looked sorry and embarrassed. He told us that it was his warmest wish to assure us a free and tranquil abode in Thibet, but that alone, and deprived of the support of his sovereign, he was too feeble to repress the tyranny of the Chinese, who, profiting by the infancy of the Talé Lama, arrogated to themselves rights before unheard-of in the country."

On communicating their decision to the Chinese ambassador, he at once assumed complete authority over them. It had been their intention to proceed direct from Lha-Ssa to Calcutta, a journey of forty days only; but this he at once prevented, announcing his design of forwarding them through the whole breadth of the Chinese empire to Canton, and giving them but eight days to make the necessary preparations. Samdadehiemba, as a Chinese subject, was not allowed to accompany them, but the minister promised to allow him to return to his parents. Two mandarins and a guard of fifteen Chinese soldiers were appointed to attend the missionaries on their journey. Their farewell interviews with the regent and the other Thibetan officials, were of the most friendly character, and they left the holy city with deep mortification and regret. "Outside of the town," says Huc, "a number of the inhabitants with whom we had been on terms of friendship, and many of whom appeared sincerely disposed to embrace our holy religion, had assembled to salute us once more. Among them was a young physician, still wearing on his breast the cross that we had given him. We alighted from our horses to give them some parting words of consolation, to exhort them to abandon courageously the superstitious worship of Buddha, and adore the God of the Christians, confiding always in his infinite goodness and mercy. When we had remounted our horses, we cast a long last look on the city of Lha-Ssa, still visible in the distance; and said in the depths of our hearts, 'God's will be done!' It was the 15th of March, 1846."

JOURNEY FROM LHA-SSA TO CANTON.

On their return journey, the missionaries determined to change entirely their course of conduct. As two mandarins were to attend them,

friendly, and refused more bitter every day, compelled us to resolve maintaining a resistance, and even become, in China and Thibet. bow the head, and conduct would at least them with pacific in- in the country. We went to the palace of upon quitting Lha-Ssa, it was his warmest wish but that alone, and de- too feeble to repress the fancy of the Talé Lama, f in the country."

Chinese ambassador, he at it had been their inten- a journey of forty days g his design of forward- Chinese empire to Canton, e necessary preparations. t allowed to accompany to return to his parents. soldiers were appointed Their farewell interviews cials, were of the most with deep mortification "a number of the inhab- friendship, and many of our holy religion, had as- m was a young physician, e had given him. We parting words of consol- the superstitious worship ns, confiding always in his remounted our horses, we ill visible in the distance; will be done!" It was the

TO CANTON.

determined to change en- arins were to attend them,

their fear of these personages abated, knowing that they were strong against the weak, but weak against the strong. Their position gave them some advantages, and the only security for their lives seemed to be, to make themselves respected. On reaching the town of Ta-t sien-lou, on the frontier of the Chinese empire, they demanded palanquins and bearers. The governor at first refused, but after a violent debate yielded the point. They then determined to revolt against the decrees of the "Tribunal of Rites," on the subject of costume. "We cast aside," says Hue, "our Thibet dress—the frightful wolfskin cap, the checked hose, and the long fur tunic, that exhaled so strong an odor of beef and mut- ton, and we got a skillful tailor to make us some beautiful sky-blue robes in the newest fashion of Peking. We provided ourselves with mag- nificent black satin boots, adorned with soles of dazzling whiteness. So far the aforesaid tribunal of rites had no objection; but when we pro- ceeded to gird up our loins with red sashes, and cover our heads with embroidered yellow caps, we caused a universal shudder among all be- holders, and the emotion ran through the town like an electric current, till it reached the civil and military authorities. They cried aloud that the red sash and the yellow cap were the attributes of imperial majesty—allowable only to the family of the emperor, and forbidden to the people under pain of perpetual banishment. On this point the tribunal of rites would be inflexible, and we must reform our costume accord- ingly. We, on our side, alleged, that being strangers traveling as such, and by authority, we were bound to conform to the ritual of the empire—but had the right of following the fashion of our own country, which allowed every one to choose the form and color of his garments, according to his own fancy. They insisted—they became angry—they flew into a furious passion; we remained calm and immovable, but vow- ing that we would never part with our red sashes and yellow caps. Our obstinacy was not to be overcome, and the mandarins submitted—as they ought to do."

After passing a terrific mountain-chain, the summits of which were covered with snow, they descended into the populous and fertile plains of the province of Sse-Tchouen. It was now the month of June, and they were delighted with the sight of rich fields and ripening harvests. In this thorough and patient cultivation they recognized China. Hue also noticed a peculiar musky odor in passing through the villages, *à propos* of which subject he observes: "Travelers in remote countries have often remarked, that most nations have an odor which is peculiar to them. It is easy to distinguish the negro, the Malay, the Tartar, the Thibetan, the Hindoo, the Arab, and the Chinese. The country itself even, the soil on which they dwell, diffuses an analogous exhalation, which is especially observable in the morning, in passing either through town or country; but a new-comer is much more sensible of it than an old resident, as the sense of smell becomes gradually so accustomed to it as no longer to perceive it. The Chinese say they perceive also a

peculiar odor in an European, but one less powerful than that of the other nations with whom they come in contact. It is remarkable, however, that in traversing the various provinces of China, we were never recognized by any one except by the dogs, which barked continually at us, and appeared to know that we were foreigners. We had, indeed, completely the appearance of true Chinese, and only an extremely delicate scent could discover that we did not really belong to the 'central nation.'"

After a march of twelve days, during which they traveled a distance of three hundred miles from the frontier, they reached the large town of Tching-tou-fou, the capital of the province of Sse-Tchouen. Here an examination was held, and they were at first in some doubt as to their future fate. They were taken before the chief provincial commissioner and the inspector of crimes, both of whom asked them many questions, which they answered with so much dignity, propriety, and good-humor, that at last the balance turned in their favor. The next day they were taken before the viceroy of the province, who, after another examination, the particulars of which were taken down, to be forwarded to Peking, decided to send them to Canton, there to be delivered over to the French ambassador. This trial, and the subsequent preparations for their further journey, detained them seventeen days, during which time they had ample leisure to inspect the place. Huc gives the following description of it:

"Tching-tou-fou, the capital of the province of Sse-Tchouen, is one of the finest towns in the empire. It is situated in the middle of an admirably fertile plain, watered by beautiful streams, and bounded toward the horizon by hills of graceful and varied forms. The principal streets are of a good width, paved entirely with large flagstones, and so clean that you can scarcely, as you pass through them, believe yourself to be in a Chinese town. The shops with their long and brilliant signs, the exquisite order with which the merchandise displayed in them is arranged, the great number and beauty of the tribunals, pagodas, and of what we must call literary institutions, all contribute to make of Tching-tou-fou a town in some measure exceptional; or at least this is the impression we retained concerning it, when subsequently we had visited the most renowned cities of the other provinces."

The viceroy, in framing the regulations to be observed during their journey, ordered that the same honors should be paid to them on the road as to functionaries of the very highest rank. Those who failed to show them the proper respect were sometimes harshly treated by the mandarins who had them in charge, and the character they had assumed obliged them to maintain an indifference to this tyranny which they did not feel. After two or three days they reached the great *Yang-tse-Kiang* (Son of the Sea), or Blue River, and the mandarins proposed to travel by water. The fatigues of the land-journey made this a desired change, but their pleasure was less than they had imagined. At mid-

night they halted at the town of Kien-tehou, and lodged at the "Hotel of Accomplished Wishes." In this place, they had a violent dispute with the mandarins, who wished to prevent them from visiting the communal palace, where they insisted upon taking up their residence. All sorts of threats, objections, and entreaties were made, but the missionaries were inflexible in their resolution, and finally achieved their design. Every victory of this kind added to the respect with which they were treated. Their journey for some weeks was a repetition of these scenes, but their knowledge of Chinese character always enabled them to come off victorious. Their route followed the course of the Yang-tse-Kiang, sometimes in boats on the river, and occasionally leading over mountain-chains, in order to cut off some of its many windings. In the town of Leang-Chan they carried their effrontery so far, as to take the place of judges, and try three Chinese Christians, who had been brought before the proper tribunal. This was not only allowed by the authorities, to the great astonishment of the missionaries, but the decision of the latter, liberating the accused converts, was accepted, and carried into effect!

At the town of Yao-Tchang, they had rather a picturesque experience. They took lodgings at the "Hotel of the Beatitudes," which was the reverse of what its name indicated. They then sent one of the mandarins to seek a better place, and in a short time he returned, saying that they should occupy the theater, which was spacious and airy. "A porter appeared, who took up our baggage," says Huc, "and in the twinkling of an eye, we had left the Hotel of Beatitudes to become tenants of the theater of Yao-tchang. This theater formed part of a great Bonze convent, and was situated in an immense court-yard opposite to the principal pagoda. Its construction was rather remarkable, in comparison with the numerous edifices of this kind to be met with in China. Twelve great granite columns supported a vast square platform surmounted by a pavilion richly ornamented, and supported on pillars of varnished wood.

"A broad stone staircase, situated at the back of the building, led to the platform, first into an apartment intended for the actors, and thence to the stage by two side doors, which served for entrances and exits. Upon the stage were placed some chairs and a table, and there we supped by the light of the moon and stars, as well as of a number of lanterns, which the directors of the theater had had kindled in our honor. It was really a charming spectacle, and one altogether unlooked for. If we had not taken the precaution to have the great gate of the Bonze convent shut, we should soon have had the whole population of Yao-tchang in the space that was intended to serve for a pit. It is certain that the inhabitants of this place had never seen on their stage any thing they would think as curious as ourselves. We heard a tumultuous mob outside, demanding with loud cries to be allowed a sight of the two men from the western seas at supper. They seemed to think we must have

ful than that of the
it is remarkable, how-
China, we were never
barked continually at
ers. We had, indeed,
nly an extremely del-
belong to the 'central

ey traveled a distance
eached the large town
se-Tchouen. Here an
some doubt as to their
rovincial commissioner
them many questions,
riety, and good-humor,
he next day they were
after another examina-
n, to be forwarded to
to be delivered over to
equent preparations for
days, during which time
Huc gives the following

of Sse-Tchouen, is one
in the middle of an ad-
reams, and bounded to
d forms. The principal
large flagstones, and so
h them, believe yourself
long and brilliant signs,
e displayed in them is
e tribunals, pagodas, and
contribute to make of
tional; or at least this is
en subsequently we had
ovinces."

be observed during their
be paid to them on the
ak. Those who failed to
s harshly treated by the
aracter they had assumed
s tyranny which they did
hed the great *Yang-tse-*
e mandarins proposed to
urney made this a desired
had imagined. At mid-

some quite peculiar and extraordinary method of eating. Some succeeded in getting upon the roof of the Bonzo convent, and some had climbed over the inclosure and up into some high trees, whence they could command a view of us, and where we saw them jumping about among the leaves like large monkeys. These curious and intrepid persons must have been much disappointed to see us eating our rice with chop-sticks, quite in the established Chinese fashion.

"The evening was delightfully fine, and the air delicious on this platform, where we begged our servant to place our beds, as we desired to pass the night there. All was made ready, and we wished to go to bed; but our watchful observers manifested no inclination to quit their posts, and at last we had to put out the lanterns, in order to drive them home. As they departed, we heard some of them say, 'Why these men are just like us!' 'Not quite,' said another; 'the little devil has very large eyes, and the tall one a very pointed nose. I noticed that difference.'"

Continuing their voyage down the Yang-tse-Kiang, they reached the town of Pa-toung, in the province of Hou-peh, the capital of which is the great city of Won-chang-fou. Huc remarks: "We passed without accident a place dangerous from its numerous reefs; some of the last met with on this fine river, which beyond this place goes on increasing from day to day, and spreading richness and fertility around it. There is certainly no one in the world to be compared with it for the multitude of men whom it feeds, and the prodigious number of vessels that it bears on its waters. Nothing can be more grand and majestic than the development of this river during its course of one thousand nine hundred and eighty miles. At Tehoung-king, nine hundred miles from the sea, it is already a mile and a half broad; at its mouth it is no less than twenty-one."

Some days after this, however, they encountered a violent gale. The waves rose so high that the junk became almost unmanageable: they were twice driven upon sand-bars, and narrowly escaped shipwreck. At last, after a day of great terror and danger, they reached the town of Kin-tehou, and found that two boats which had preceded them had been wrecked, and three men drowned. At this place they left the river, and took again to their palanquins. The heat was so great, as it was now the middle of summer, that they traveled mostly by night, accompanied by horsemen bearing torches. Their strength, however, had been so exhausted by the long duration of their fatigues, that on reaching a town called Kuen-kang-hien, they both became seriously ill, and were compelled to suspend their journey. "Every one of the company," says Huc, "delivered his opinion of our condition in the most technical terms, and it was settled by the obliging members of this impromptu consultation that our 'noble and illustrious malady proceeded from a disturbance in the equilibrium of the vital spirits.' The igneous principle, they thought, too long fed by the excessive heat, had ended by exceeding beyond all measure the proper bounds assigned to it, and that,

consequently, a fire, so to speak, had been kindled in the sublime organization of our body."

For the purpose of subduing this igneous principle, they prescribed green peas, cucumbers, and melons; but before the prescription could be tested, a celebrated physician arrived, who made a long and careful examination of the illustrious patients. "By some means or other," said he, shaking his head, "the cold air has penetrated into the interior, and has put itself in opposition, in many of the organs, with the igneous principle; thence arises the struggle, which must necessarily manifest itself by vomitings and convulsions; we must therefore combat the evil with warm substances." In order to re-establish the said equilibrium there needed only to be introduced into the body a certain quantity of cold, and to lower the extravagant temperature of this igneous principle; therefore it was necessary to favor the return of moisture into all the members. After hanging between life and death for two or three days, the constitutions of the missionaries prevailed, and they gradually recovered their health and strength.

After traveling for some time longer down the Yang-tse-Kiang, they reached the large town of Ou (or Wou)-Chang-fou, the capital of Hou-peh, and the chief center of the internal trade of China. They were at first very disagreeably lodged in a little pagoda, and the mandarins seemed disposed to treat them with contempt and arrogance. It was necessary for them to make a strong diplomatic movement: they forced themselves into the presence of the governor of the province, and boldly claimed better treatment. Their boldness had its usual effect: they were installed in a magnificent Buddhist convent, called the "Garden of the Western Gate." Here the mandarins and escort who had accompanied them from Sse-tchouen were dismissed, and they were furnished with others, for the journey to Canton. The principal mandarin was called *Lieou*, or "Willow;" but as he had very large goggle eyes, which were weak and easily provoked to tears, the missionaries generally called him "The Weeping Willow."

"After four days' rest in the Garden of the Western Gate," says Hue, "we began to think of resuming our seemingly interminable journey. We felt our strength and courage nearly exhausted, and we had still nearly nine hundred miles to travel, and that during the hottest season of the year, and constantly in a southerly direction. But trusting in the protection of Providence, we did not doubt of arriving some day safe and sound at Macao."

They traveled for some time eastward through the province of Hou-peh, and finally reached the imperial road from Canton to Peking. Here there were two routes to Nan-Chang, the capital of Kiang-Si, a very rugged path over mountains, and a voyage across the great Pou-Yang Lake, which is dangerous at certain seasons. The lake is forty-five miles long, by from fifteen to eighteen in breadth. After some consultation they chose the latter route. "Our navigation on the Lake Pou-yang,"

says Huc, "was performed without accident; but it was much slower than we had anticipated, for instead of one day's journey we had two. We had not gone more than half way when the wind changed, and began to blow right a-head, so that we were compelled to make some long tacks. During these two days we seldom saw land, and we could hardly persuade ourselves that we were really in the center of the Chinese empire. The immense extent of water—the long waves raised by the wind—the large vessels that were moving about in all directions, made it look more like a sea than a lake. The innumerable junks that are constantly plowing the surface of the Pou-yang make really a very pretty sight.

"From the Lake Pou-yang to Nan-tchang-fou, the capital of the province of Kiang-si, the country that we traveled through for two days, was a mere desert, in which were seen here and there a few wretched huts built of reeds and some patches of ground half cultivated by poor peasants. The extreme heat of the weather, and our own need of repose, decided us to continue our journey by water. From Nan-tchang-fou we could follow the course of a large river as far as the Mountain Mei-ling, which is just half way, and can be crossed in a single day; after this, the River Kiang would take us all the rest of the way to Canton. We knew that this route was infinitely preferable to the land-journey, particularly if we were furnished with government junks, and well-provisioned. Our efforts were crowned with perfect success; we were provided with a well-armed vessel of war for escort, and two superb junks, one for the mandarins and their suite, and one for ourselves.

"After a delightful voyage of fifteen days we arrived at the foot of the Mountain Mei-ling, when we bade adieu to our mandarin junks, and returned to our palanquin. We arrived toward noon at the summit of the mountain, where there is a sort of triumphal arch, in the form of an immense portal; on one side of which ends the province of Kiang-si, and on the other begins that of Canton. We could not cross this frontier without emotion, for we had now at last set foot in the province which is in direct communication with Europe. It seemed as if we were only a short way from Canton, and Canton represented to us Europe—France, that country so dear to our recollections. We descended the mountain slowly and cautiously, on account of the masses of rock with which the way was thickly strewn, and we arrived in the evening at Nan-hioung.

"On the sixth day after our departure from Nan-hioung, the Tigris had ceased to roll its blue waters through mountains; and we entered on a richly cultivated plain, where from time to time we inhaled a powerful and invigorating breeze, that seemed to expand our chests. It was a breeze from the sea, and Canton was not far off! Standing motionless on the deck of the junk, straining our eyes in that direction, we felt all the tremor that precedes the strong emotions of a return

it was much sower
 journey we had two.
 and changed, and be-
 ed to make some long
 , and we could hardly
 er of the Chinese em-
 es raised by the wind
 all directions, made it
 e junks that are con-
 e really a very pretty

ou, the capital of the
 ed through for two
 ere and there a few
 ground half cultivated
 er, and our own need
 y water. From Nan-
 ge river as far as the
 be crossed in a single
 all the rest of the way
 tely preferable to the
 th government junks,
 with perfect success;
 war for escort, and two
 suite, and one for our-

arrived at the foot of
 ar mandarin junks, and
 noon at the summit of
 arch, in the form of an
 province of Kiang-si,
 ald not cross this front-
 t foot in the province
 t seemed as if we were
 esented to us Europe-
 as. We descended the
 e masses of rock with
 ved in the evening at

Nan-hioug, the Tigris
 ntains; and we entered
 to time we inhaled a
 to expand our chests.
 not far off! Standing
 eyes in that direction,
 g emotions of a return

after long absence. The last rays of the sun were just fading on the horizon, when we perceived something like an immense forest, stripped of its leaves and branches, and retaining only the trunks of the great trees. The current, the breeze, and the tide, were now sweeping us on rapidly to the roads of Canton; and soon, among the innumerable masts of Chinese junks, we distinguished some more elevated than the rest, and the peculiar structure of whose yards made us give a sudden start, and filled our eyes with tears. Among the native vessels of China arose the grand and imposing forms of a steam-ship and several East India-men; and amid the flags of all colors that were waving in the air, we perceived those of the United States, of Portugal, and of England. That of France was not among them; but when one has been long at the other side of the world, on an inhospitable soil, in China, in short, it seems that all the people of the west form one great family. The mere sight of a European flag makes the heart beat, for it awakens all the recollections of our country.

"In traversing the port of Canton on our mandarin junk, our eyes sought with eager curiosity for all that was not Chinese. We passed alongside of an English brig, and we could not gaze enough at the sailors in their glazed hats, who, ranged in a line along the deck, were watching us passing; assuredly without suspecting that they had under their eyes two Frenchmen just returned from the high table-land of Asia. Probably they were amusing themselves at our Chinese costume, while we were going into ecstasies at their astonishing physiognomies. Those rubicund visages, those blue eyes, those long noses and fair hair, those curious narrow clothes, pasted, as it seemed, upon their limbs—how droll it all was! A pretty trim little vessel, painted green and covered with a white awning, now passed us; and in it were seated three European gentlemen, smoking cigars, enjoying apparently a pleasure-trip. How grotesque in the eyes of an Asiatic would their costume have appeared! They wore black hats and white trowsers, waistcoats, and jackets. A Thibet man would have burst out laughing to see those faces, naked of beard or mustache, but having instead a bunch of red curly hair on each cheek. We understood now how absurd Europeans must look in countries which have no knowledge of their customs and fashions. At length, then, we had reached Canton! This was in the month of October, 1846, six months after our departure from Lha-Ssa.

"In one of the very first newspapers that chance threw into our hands, we read an article that we thought rather curious. It was as follows: 'We have lately received the intelligence of the lamentable death of the two fathers of the Mongol Tartar Mission.' After a slight glance at the Tartar countries, the author of the article continues: 'A French Lazarist of the name of Hue, took up his abode about three years ago among some Chinese families established in the valley of Black Waters, about six hundred miles from the Great Wall. Another Lazarist, whose name is not known to us, joined him with the purpose

of forming a mission for the conversion of the Mongol Buddhists. They studied the Tartar language with the lamas of the neighboring monasteries; and it appears that, having been regarded as foreign lamas, they were treated in a friendly manner, especially by the Buddhists, who are very ignorant, and who took the Latin of their breviaries for Sanscrit, which they do not understand, but for which they have much veneration. When the missionaries believed themselves sufficiently instructed in the language they proceeded into the interior, with the intention of commencing the work of conversion. After that period very little was heard of them, until in May last information was received that they had been fastened to the tails of wild horses and dragged to death. The immediate cause of this event is not yet known. It may well be imagined that this article astonished us a little; and we thought we had some reason to doubt its perfect accuracy.

"Two days afterward we had clasped in our arms our old friends and dear brethren at Macao. For a long time we felt in the midst of them like men awakened from a deep sleep. We were astonished to see no longer around us the Thibetan, Tartar, and Chinese physiognomies, and to hear sounding in our ears only that beautiful native tongue whose harmonious accents made every fiber of our souls thrill with joy, and our eyes gush full of delicious tears. France was still far from us, and yet we seemed to have found it again.

"A month after our arrival at Macao, M. Gabet, forgetting his infirmities and sufferings, and listening only to his devotion to the sacred cause in which he was engaged, embarked for Europe, in the hope of exciting the zeal and charity of the Catholics in favor of the interesting populations of Tartary and Thibet, for whose salvation he would gladly have laid down his life. We hoped at the time soon to meet again this companion of all our wanderings, the friend whose existence was in some measure identified with our own. But such was not the will of God. One day we received the afflicting news that this indefatigable and courageous missionary had yielded his last breath on the coast of Brazil. When amid the snows of high Asia, we had been so solicitous to recall the vital warmth into the nearly frozen limbs of our friend, we little thought that God had appointed him to find a grave on the burning shores of South America.

"After a tolerably long residence at Macao, we ourselves set off once more on the road to Pekin, thus traversing China for the third time, and as we have already stated in our former work, the shattered state of our health subsequently obliged us to return to France, after having visited on our way India, Egypt, Palestine, and Syria. We embarked first for China in the year 1838, and we were not permitted to see our native country again till 1852."

gol Buddhists. They neighboring monas- s foreign lamas, they e Buddhists, who are eviaries for Sanscrit, y have much venera- sufficiently instructed with the intention of period very little was ceived that they had ed to death. The im- may well be imagined hought we had some

arms our old friends e felt in the midst of vere astonished to see Chinese physiognomies, beautiful native tongue ur souls thrill with joy, e was still far from us,

abet, forgetting his in- devotion to the sacred Europe, in the hope of avor of the interesting ration he would gladly soon to meet again this e existence was in some s not the will of God. indefatigable and cour- on the coast of Brazil. n so solicitous to recall of our friend, we little grave on the burning

, we ourselves set off ng China for the third er work, the shattered return to France, after ne, and Syria. We em- e were not permitted to

F O R T U N E'S

JOURNEYS TO THE TEA COUNTRIES OF CHINA.

JOURNEY TO THE GREEN TEA DISTRICTS.

Mr. ROBERT FORTUNE, an English botanist and horticulturist, was led to visit China with the object of procuring new varieties of ornamental plants and trees. His success was even beyond his expectations; he procured and forwarded to England many very beautiful and valuable specimens, and after his return published, in 1847, a narrative of his experiences, under the title of "Three Years' Wanderings in the Northern Provinces of China." Shortly after the publication of this volume, he was appointed by the court of directors of the East India Company to proceed again to China, for the purpose of obtaining the finest varieties of the tea-plant, as well as native manufactures and implements, for the government tea plantations in the Himalayas. Leaving England in June, 1848, he reached Hong-Kong, by the overland route, in August.

Mr. Fortune continued his voyage northward to Shanghai, which is nearer the tea-districts. It was a matter of great importance to procure the best seeds and shrubs from those parts of the country where the best teas are produced. He therefore designed to visit the celebrated hill of Sung-lo, in the Hwuy-chow district, where the very finest green teas are grown. But this place is two hundred miles inland, and except the Jesuit missionaries, no European had ever entered the sacred precincts of Hwuy-chow. Mr. Fortune says: "I had two Hwuy-chow men in my service at this time. I sent for them, and inquired whether it was possible to penetrate so far into the country. They replied that we could easily do so, and that they were quite willing to accompany me, only stipulating that I should discard my English costume and adopt the dress of the country. I knew that this was indispensable if I wished to accomplish the object in view, and readily acceded to the terms. My servants now procured me a Chinese dress, and had the tail which I had worn in former years nicely dressed by the barber. Every thing was soon in readiness except the boat which had to be engaged for the first stage of our journey."

Having engaged a boat, had his head shaved and his tail fastened on, and adopted the complete Chinese costume, Mr. Fortune left Shanghai for the large city of Hang-chow-foo, and arrived there after a three days' voyage on the grand canal. "On the evening of the 22d of October," says he, "I approached the suburbs of Hang-chow-foo, one of the largest and most flourishing cities in the richest district of the Chinese empire. The Chinese authorities have always been most jealous of foreigners approaching or entering this town. As I drew nearer the city, every thing which came under my observation marked it as a place of great importance. The grand canal was deep and wide, and bore on its waters many hundreds of boats of different sizes, all engaged in an active bustling trade. Many of these were sailing in the same direction as ourselves, while others were leaving the city, and hurrying onward in the direction of Soo-chow, Hoo-chow, Kea-king, and other towns. Canals were seen branching off from the grand canal in all directions, and forming the high roads of the country."

The boatmen dissuaded Mr. Fortune from entering the city, but as it was necessary for him to reach the Hang-chow, or Green River, about eight miles distant, he engaged a sedan chair and some bearers to convey him around the walls. The latter, however, to his great surprise, took him directly through the heart of the city—a walk of some distance. Fortunately he was not detected, and was equally successful, after reaching the Green River, in engaging a boat to take him up the river to Hwuy-chow. This was a Chinese craft, full of cargo and with twenty passengers on board, mostly merchants and servants, and all quiet and inoffensive people. There were berths in which the passengers slept, and the price of passage also included meals, which consisted principally of tea, sweet potatoes, and boiled rice.

"The slow progress which we necessarily made suited my purposes exactly, and enabled me to explore the botanical riches of the country with convenience and ease. I used to rise at break of day, and spend the morning inspecting the hills and valleys near the sides of the river, and then return to the boat in time for breakfast. Breakfast over, I generally went on shore again, accompanied by my men, who carried the seeds, plants, or flowers we might discover during our rambles. The first thing we did on these occasions was to ascend the nearest hill and take a survey of the windings of the river, with the number of rapids, in order that we might form some idea of the progress our boat would make during our absence."

During these rambles, Fortune discovered a new variety of palm-tree, the only species to be found in the northern or central provinces of China. It grew upon the hill-sides, in great perfection. It is particularly valuable to the northern Chinese, who use its large, brown hair-like bracts for many purposes. Ropes and cables for their junks are made out of this substance, and seem to last, even under water, for a very long time. Agricultural laborers and coolies are fond of

wearing hats and cloaks made out of the same substance, which in wet weather keeps out a great deal of rain; and there are many other purposes to which this useful tree is applied.

"I am in hopes," says Fortune, "that one day we shall see this beautiful palm-tree ornamenting the hill-sides in the south of England, and in other mild European countries. With this view I sent a few plants home to Sir William Hooker, of the Royal Gardens at Kew, with a request that he would forward one of them to the garden of his Royal Highness Prince Albert, at Osborne House, Isle of Wight."*

"But the most beautiful tree found in this district is a species of weeping cypress, which I had never met with in any other part of China, and which was quite new to me. It was during one of my daily rambles that I saw the first specimen. About half a mile distant from where I was I observed a noble-looking fir-tree, about sixty feet in height, having a



THE HEMP PALM.

stem as straight as the Norfolk Island pine, and weeping branches like the willow of St. Helena. Its branches grew at first at right angles to the main stem, then described a graceful curve upward, and bent again at their points. From these main branches others long and slender hung down perpendicularly, and gave the whole tree a weeping and graceful form. It reminded me of some of those large and gorgeous chandeliers sometimes seen in theaters and public halls in Europe.

"On the evening of the 31st of October," he continues, "we reached Wae-ping. It is a city of considerable size, walled and fortified, and probably contains one hundred and fifty thousand inhabitants. This place is just on the borders of the district of Hwuy-chow. Soon after leaving Wae-ping one of my guides informed me that we were now on the border of another province, and that here I had better not go much out of the boat. I found that this advice was good and worth attending

* In the *Botanical Magazine* for March, 1850, Sir William Hooker thus writes of it: "A palm, *Chamarops excelsa*, (♀) sent to the Royal Gardens by Mr. Fortune, has braved, unharmed, and unprotected by any sort of covering, the severe winter now passed" (1849-50).

to. The river here is considered the highway or passage from the one district to the other, and this pass is well guarded by soldiers. Each province has its own guard-town. On the Che-kiang side we passed a long, straggling town on the river's banks, chiefly inhabited by troops, who were the guards of the pass, and under the orders of the Hang-chow mandarins. As soon as the boundary-line was crossed we came to another place of like size and appearance, also filled with soldiers, who were under the orders of the authorities of Hwuy-chow-foo, in the province of Kiang-nan. These two parties formed a sort of border guard, and bore each other, I believe, little good-will. They reminded me of our own border clans in ancient feudal times. Boats passing up and down the river were generally boarded, and had their papers examined by one of the officers."

After a voyage of several days, the boat arrived at the town of Tun-che, distant about twenty miles from the city of Hwuy-chow-foo. The great article of trade here is green tea. For the principal part of the journey, the river had been shut in by high hills, but at this place they retired, leaving an extensive and beautiful valley, which was almost entirely covered with tea plantations. The soil was very fertile, and the tea-shrubs showed a most luxuriant growth. Fortune remained but an hour or two at Tun-che; he hired a chair, took the road for Sung-lo, and before dark saw the far-famed Sung-lo-shan, the hill where green tea is said to have been first discovered. Of this hill he says: "Sung-lo-shan appears to be between two and three thousand feet above the level of the plains. It is very barren, and, whatever may have formerly been the case, it certainly produces but little tea now; indeed, from all I could learn, the tea that grows upon it is quite neglected, as far as cultivation is concerned, and is only gathered to supply the wants of the priests of Fo, who have many temples among these rugged wilds. Nevertheless, it is a place of great interest to every Chinaman, and has afforded a subject to many of their writers.

"When we reached the Sung-lo country I took up my quarters in a house which belonged to the father of my servant Wang. It was nearly dark before we arrived at the house, which was situated among the hills within two miles of the foot of Sung-lo. Had I fixed upon the spot myself I could not have found one better suited to the purposes I had in view. Old Mr. Wang was a farmer who at one time had been well off in the world, but, like many others, had been unfortunate, and was now very much reduced in circumstances. He received us in the kindest manner, and seemed to have great affection for his son. His wife also came to welcome us, at the same time apologizing for the poor reception they gave us, as they were so poor. I tried not to be outdone in politeness, and we were soon on the best possible terms.

"Sung-lo Mountain, which in ordinary weather I could have seen from the windows, was now enveloped in a cloak of mist, and every tree and bush was bent down with heavy drops of rain. At last, on the

message from the one
by soldiers. Each
side we passed a
inhabited by troops,
of the Hang-chow
ed we came to and
with soldiers, who
ow-foo, in the prov-
t of border guard,
ey reminded me of
boats passing up and
eir papers examined

at the town of Tun-
wny-chow-foo. The
principal part of the
out at this place they
, which was almost
very fertile, and the
une remained but an
he road for Sung-lo,
the hill where green
ill he says: "Sung-
usand feet above the
er may have formerly
ow; indeed, from all
e neglected, as far as
pply the wants of the
these rugged wilds.
y Chinaman, and has

ok up my quarters in
ervant Wang. It was
h was situated among
Had I fixed upon the
ited to the purposes I
at one time had been
een unfortunate, and
e received us in the
ction for his son. His
ologizing for the poor
I tried not to be out-
ossible terms.

er I could have seen
of mist, and every tree
rain. At last, on the

fourth day, the clouds cleared away, the sun shone out again with his usual brilliancy, and the whole face of nature wore a cheerful and smiling aspect. I was now out every day, from morning until evening, busily employed in collecting seeds, in examining the vegetation of the hills, and in obtaining information regarding the cultivation and manufacture of green tea. By this means I obtained a good collection of those tea-seeds and young plants from which the finest green teas of commerce are prepared, and much information of a useful kind.

"I spent a week in the neighborhood of Sung-lo, and then began to think of returning eastward with the collections I had made. All our arrangements being complete, the seeds put up, and the plants packed, I hired a chair, and on the afternoon of the 20th of November, bade adieu to Wang's family, and to the country of the far-famed Sung-lo-shan. In three days we arrived at the city of Yen-chow-fou, a journey which occupied twelve days in going up; and in three days more, that is on the sixth day after leaving Tun-che, we arrived at the town of Neechow.

"Nothing worthy of note occurred until I reached the town of Ning-po. It was as welcome a sight as I had seen for many a day, when the old town, with its pagoda, temples, and ramparts, came in view. It was well known to me in former years, and I felt myself 'quite at home,' after a long and somewhat perilous, although in many respects a pleasant journey."

JOURNEY TO THE BOHEA MOUNTAINS.

After carefully packing his tea-plants in Shanghai, Mr. Fortune took them to Hong-Kong and there shipped them to India, where they afterward arrived in good condition. He then proceeded to Fou-chow-foo—one of the five ports opened to commercial intercourse with foreigners—intending to travel to Ning-po, if possible, by way of the celebrated Bohea Mountains. Having engaged a boat, he sailed up the River Min as far as the town of Sing-kow, a distance of seventy or eighty miles, but on arriving there found that his funds were insufficient for the journey; whereupon he dispatched his servants, with instructions to procure fine specimens of the tea-plant, and returned to Foo-chow. He then sailed to Ning-po in a Portuguese vessel, and awaited the return of his servants at the temple of Tien-tung, near that place, devoting himself in the mean time, to his favorite botanical researches.

In speaking of the fine bamboo woods near Tien-tung, Fortune gives the following description of that most useful of trees: "The bamboo is one of the most valuable trees in China, and is used for almost every conceivable purpose. It is employed in making soldiers' hats and shields, umbrellas, soles of shoes, scaffolding-poles, measures, baskets, ropes, paper, pencil-holders, brooms, sedan-chairs, pipes, flower-stakes, and

trellis-work in gardens; pillows are made of the shavings; a kind of rus'ia cloak for wet weather is made from the leaves, and is called a *So-e*, or "garment of leaves." On the water it is used in making sails and covers for boats, for fishing-rods and fish-baskets, fishing-stakes and buoys; catamarans are rude boats, or rather floats, formed of a few logs of bamboo lashed firmly together. In agriculture the bamboo is used in making aqueducts for conveying water to the land; it forms part of the celebrated water-wheel, as well as of the plow, the harrow, and other implements of husbandry. Excellent water-pipes are made of it for conveying springs from the hills, to supply houses and temples in the valleys with pure water. Its roots are often cut into the most grotesque figures, and its stems finely carved into ornaments for the curions, or into incense-burners for the temples. The Ning-po furniture, the most beautiful in China, is often inlaid with figures of people, houses, temples, and pagodas in bamboo, which form most correct and striking pictures of China and the Chinese. The young shoots are boiled and eaten, and sweetmeats are also made of them. A substance found in the joints, called tabasheer, is used in medicine. In the manufacture of tea it helps to form the rolling-tables, drying-baskets, and sieves; and last, though not least, the celebrated chop-sticks—the most important articles in domestic use—are made of it.

"However incredulous the reader may be, I must still carry him a step further, and tell him that I have not enumerated one half of the uses to which the bamboo is applied in China. Indeed it would be nearly as difficult to say what it is *not* used for as what it is. It is in universal demand, in the houses and in the fields, on water and on land, in peace and in war. Through life the Chinaman is almost dependent upon it for his support, nor does it leave him until it carries him to his last resting-place on the hill-side, and even then, in company with the cypress, juniper, and pine, it waves over and marks his tomb.

"I was not quite satisfied," continues Fortune, "with the result of my journey up the river Min. Although one of my men had brought me a fine collection of tea-plants and seeds from the celebrated black-tea country, and although the expedition was planned so that he could scarcely have procured them elsewhere, had he wished to deceive me, I confess I felt that it would be much more satisfactory if I could visit the district myself. I did not like the idea of returning to Europe without being perfectly certain that I had introduced the tea-plant from the best black-tea districts of China into the government plantations in the north-western provinces of India. There may also have been a lingering desire to cross the Bohea Mountains, and to visit the far-famed Woo-eshan. At all events I made up my mind to make another attempt, and determined to start from Ning-po, where the people are not so greatly prejudiced against foreigners as they are further to the south, about Foo-chow and Canton."

ings; a kind of rush is called a *So-e*, or
 ing sails and covers
 stakes and buoys;
 of a few logs of bam-
 boo is used in mak-
 forms part of the
 harrow, and other
 made of it for con-
 d temples in the val-
 the most grotesque
 for the curious, or
 furniture, the most
 ple, houses, temples,
 and striking pictures
 e boiled and eaten,
 e found in the joints,
 facture of tea it helps
 res; and last, though
 important articles in

must still carry him a
 rated one half of the
 Indeed it would be
 as what it is. It is in
 ds, on water and on
 inaman is almost de-
 ve him until it carries
 l even then, in com-
 over and marks his

, "with the result of
 my men had brought
 ce celebrated black-tea
 ed so that he could
 ished to deceive me,
 ctory if I could visit
 rning to Europe with-
 the tea-plant from the
 ent plantations in the
 have been a lingering
 the far-famed Woo-e
 another attempt, and
 ple are not so greatly
 r to the south, about

He left Ning-po on the 15th of May, 1849, so completely disguised as a Chinaman that he scarcely knew himself, and set sail for the town of Nan-che, on the southern branch of the Green River. His servant was the possessor of a mandarin flag, of triangular shape, which procured great respect whenever it was displayed, and on more than one occasion was of much service. In two days he reached the Green River, which he ascended rapidly, favored by a fair wind. "There were several passengers on board our boat, besides ourselves," he remarks. "They were all country people from the westward, knew little of foreigners, and seemed to have no idea that I was one. My servant, I believe, told them that I came from some far distant province beyond the Great Wall, and with this information, indefinite as it was, they seemed to be perfectly satisfied. Besides, I was now well acquainted with their habits and manners, I could eat with the chop-sticks as well as any of them, and my dress was, I believe, scrupulously correct, even to the glossy black tail, which had been grafted on my own hair, and which hung gracefully down nearly to my knees."

After a pleasant sail of several days up the beautiful valley of the Green River, Fortune arrived at Nan-che, which he thus describes: "Nan-che, or, as it is sometimes called in the maps, Lanchee, is about thirty-five miles westward from Yen-chow-foo. It is one of the prettiest Chinese towns which I have seen, and reminded me of an English place more than a Chinese one. The houses are generally two-storied, and have a clean and neat appearance. It is built along the banks of the river, and has a picturesque hill behind it: an old tower or pagoda in ruins heightens the general effect of the scene. The town is about two and a half or three miles round, and probably contains about two hundred thousand inhabitants. The river in front of it is covered with boats, which are constantly plying between it and Yen-chow, Hang-Chow, and many other towns both to the east and west."

After leaving Nan-che, the traveler continued his voyage to Chang-shan, near the head-waters of the Green River. From this place it was necessary to take a sedan-chair across the country to the town of Yuk-shan, on the head-waters of a river which flows westward into the great Pou-yang lake. On crossing the boundary between the provinces of Che-Kiang and Kiang-Si, Fortune was narrowly watched by some Chinese merchants, who, being accustomed to seeing foreigners, suspected his true character. His dexterity in using the chop-sticks at dinner, and his familiarity with Chinese customs, however, misled them, and he proceeded without hinderance. On reaching Yuk-shan, he engaged a boat, and sailed down the river Kin-kiang to the large town of Hokow, the great emporium of the black-tea trade. Here it was necessary to leave the river, and hire a sedan-chair with coolies, to carry him across the Bohea Mountains.

Leaving Hokow on the second day after his arrival, he set out in a

sedan-chair, and by noon reached Yuen-shan, at the foot of the mount-



CHINESE TEA-CARRIER.

ains. Coolies, carrying tea-chests, were now met in great numbers. Many of them carried only one chest. These were the finer teas; the chest was never allowed to touch the ground during the journey, and hence these teas generally arrive at their destination in much better order than the coarser kinds. The single chests are carried in the following manner: Two bamboos, each about seven feet long, had their ends lashed firmly to the chest, one on each side. The other ends were brought together, so as to form a triangle. By this means a man could carry the chest upon his shoulders, with his head between the bamboos in the center of the triangle. A small piece

of wood was lashed under the chest, to give it an easy seat upon the shoulders. When the coolie wanted to rest, he placed the end of the bamboos upon the ground, and raised them to the perpendicular. The whole weight now rested upon the ground, and could be kept in this position without any exertion.

"For some time past I had been, as it were, among a sea of mountains," he writes, "but now the far-famed Bohea ranges lay before me in all their grandeur, with their tops piercing through the lower clouds, and showing themselves far above them. They seemed to be broken up into thousands of fragments, some of which had most remarkable and striking outlines. It is difficult to form an estimate of their height, but, comparing them with other mountains known to me, the highest here may be six or eight thousand feet above the level of the sea. There are some spots on the sides of the lower hills under cultivation, but all above these is rugged and wild.

"We arrived at last at the celebrated gates or huge doors which divide the provinces of Fokien and Kiang-see. The pillars of these gates have been formed by nature, and are nothing less than the "everlasting hills" themselves. The arched door-ways of the place bore a great resemblance to the gates of a Chinese city. As we passed through the archway I observed a guard of soldiers lounging about, but they did not take any notice of us, or attempt to examine our baggage. We were soon through the pass, and in another province. The province of Kiang-see had been shut out and left behind us, and our view now

the foot of the mount-
 , carrying tea-chests,
 not in great num-
 of them carried only
 These were the finer
 est was never allowed
 e ground during the
 d hence these teas
 rive at their destina-
 better order than the
 ds. The single chests
 in the following man-
 bamboos, each about
 long, had their ends
 ly to the chest, one
 de. The other ends
 ght together, so as to
 gle. By this means a
 carry the chest upon
 rs, with his head be-
 bamboos in the center
 angle. A small piece
 an easy seat upon the
 placed the end of the
 e perpendicular. The
 could be kept in this

among a sea of mount-
 anges lay before me in
 ough the lower clouds,
 eemed to be broken up
 most remarkable and
 te of their height, but,
 o me, the highest here
 of the sea. There are
 ultivation, but all above

s or huge doors which
 The pillars of these
 ng less than the "ever-
 ys of the place bore a
 As we passed through
 ng about, but they
 me our baggage. We
 ince. The province of
 us, and our view now

opened on Fokien. Never in my life had I seen such a view as this, so grand, so sublime. High ranges of mountains were towering on my right and on my left, while before me, as far as the eye could reach, the whole country seemed broken up into mountains and hills of all heights, with peaks of every form."

The next day he traversed another pass, of lesser elevation, and spent the evening at a tea-house among the hills. "I was now," he says, "on the outskirts of the great black-tea country of Fokien. I observed large quantities of tea-plants under cultivation. They were generally to be found on the lower sides of the hills, and also in the gardens of the villagers. About ten o'clock in the forenoon we arrived at Tsong-gan-hien, a large town in the midst of the black-tea country, where nearly all the teas of this district are packed and prepared for exportation. As soon as I was fairly out of the suburbs of the town, I had my first glimpse of the far-famed Woo-e-shan. It stands in the midst of the plain, and is a collection of little hills, none of which appear to be more than a thousand feet high. They have a singular appearance. Their faces are nearly all perpendicular rock. It appears as if they had been thrown up by some great convulsion of nature to a certain height, and as if some other force had then drawn the tops of the whole mass slightly backward, breaking it up into a thousand hills. By some agency of this kind it might have assumed the strange forms which were now before me.

"Woo-e-shan is considered by the Chinese to be one of the most wonderful, as well as one of the most sacred, spots in the empire. One of their manuscripts, quoted by Mr. Ball, thus describes it: 'Of all the mountains of Fokien those of Woo-e are the finest, and its water the best. They are awfully high and rugged, surrounded by water, and seem as if excavated by spirits; nothing more wonderful can be seen. From the dynasty of Csin and Han, down to the present time, a succession of hermits and priests, of the sects of Tao-cze and Fo, have here risen up like the clouds of the air and the grass of the field, too numerous to enumerate. Its chief renown, however, is derived from its productions, and of these tea is the most celebrated.'

We have no space to copy Mr. Fortune's picturesque account of his visits to the thousand temples, monasteries, and hermitages of Woo-e-shan. He was very hospitably received and entertained by the Buddhist priests, and inspected all the curiosities of this remarkable region. He then continues: "We now proceeded across the hills in the direction of the small town of Tsin-tsun, another great mart for black tea. Our road was a very rough one. It was merely a foot-path, and sometimes merely narrow steps cut out of the rock. When we had gone about two miles we came to a solitary temple on the banks of a small river, which here winds among the hills. This stream is called by the Chinese the river or stream of nine windings, from the circuitous turns which it makes among the hills of Woo-e-shan. It divides the range

into two districts—the north and south: the north range is said to produce the best teas. Here the finest souchongs and pekoes are produced, but I believe these rarely find their way to Europe, or only in very small quantities.”

At the temple, which was inhabited by an old Buddhist priest and his wife, he took up his residence, and at once entered upon the object of his journey. “Having given the old man some money to purchase a dinner for myself and my men,” says he, “I made a hasty meal and went out to explore the hills. I visited many of the tea-farms, and was successful in procuring about four hundred young plants. These were taken to Shanghai in good order, and many of them are now growing vigorously in the government tea plantation in the Himalayas.

“I remained two days under the roof of the hospitable Taoist, and saw a great part of the Woo-e hills and their productions. On the evening of the second day, having entered into a fresh agreement with my chair-bearers and coolies, I intimated to the old priest that I intended to proceed on my journey early next morning. He kindly pressed me to stay a little longer, but, when he saw I was in earnest, he went out to his tea plantations and brought me some young plants which he begged me to accept. I felt highly pleased with his gratitude for the small present I had given him, and gladly accepted the plants, which increased my store very considerably; these with the other plants were carefully packed with their roots in damp moss, and the whole package was then covered with oil-paper. The latter precaution was taken to screen them from the sun, and also from the prying eyes of the Chinese, who, although they did not seem to show any great jealousy on the point, yet might have annoyed us with impertinent questions. Early in the morning, our arrangements being completed, we bade adieu to our kind host and hostess, and set off across the hills in the direction of Tsin-tsun.”

At the latter place he was upon the head-waters of the River Min, by descending which he might have arrived in four days at Fou-chow-fou; but he decided to return to Ning-po by another route, lying to the eastward of that by which he had come, and passing through the town of Pouching-hien, in the midst of a district which produces tea somewhat inferior to that of Woo-e-shan. A further journey of nearly a hundred miles in a sedan-chair brought him to Ching-hoo, on a branch of the Green River, where he again embarked. His return journey, down the river to Hang-chow-fou, and thence by the grand canal to Shanghai, was mostly over the same ground which he had traversed on his way to the green-tea hills of Sung-lo. “I arrived at Shanghai in due time,” says he, in conclusion, “having been absent on this long journey nearly three months. Although I had been eating with chopsticks all this time, I had not forgotten the use of knives and forks, and I need scarcely say I heartily enjoyed my first English dinner. The tea-plants procured in Woo-e-shan reached Shanghai in good order, and most of them are now flourishing on the slopes of the Himalayas.”

is said to pro-
are produced,
r only in very

hist priest and
on the object
to purchase a
meal and went
, and was suc-
ese were taken
growing vigor-

e Taoist, and
ctions. On the
agreement with
that I intended
dly pressed me
st, he went out
plants which he
atitude for the
e plants, which
her plants were
whole package
on was taken to
of the Chinese,
jealousy on the
tions. Early in
adieu to our kind
on of Tsin-tsun."
f the River Min,
ys at Fou-chow-
ute, lying to the
rough the town
oduces tea some-
ney of nearly a
oo, on a branch
s return journey,
e grand canal to
had traversed on
at Shanghai in
ent on this long
eating with chop-
es and forks, and
ish dinner. The
good order, and
imalayas."

RECENT EXPLORATIONS IN AUSTRALIA.*

EYRE'S JOURNEY.

In the spring of 1840, public attention in the town of Adelaide (Southern Australia,) being much engrossed with the subject of an overland communication between Southern and Western Australia, Mr. Edward John Eyre, who had already been engaged in exploring the southern and western interior, volunteered to take the command of any party that might be sent, and bear one third of the expenses. An expedition was accordingly fitted out, and on the 18th of June left Adelaide for the head of Spencer's Gulf. The party consisted of Mr. Eyre; Mr. Scott, his assistant; Baxter, his overseer; Corporal Coles; two men driving each a three-horse dray; and two aboriginal boys to drive the sheep, etc. They had thirteen horses and forty sheep, and stores sufficient for three months, besides an additional supply sent by sea to meet them at the head of Spencer's Gulf.

They encamped near Mount Arden, at the head of the gulf, on the 3d of July, and on the 6th Mr. Eyre set out on horseback, with one of the boys, to reconnoiter Lake Torrens, the great inland Australian sea, which he had previously discovered, and to examine the country north of the dépôt, as to the practicability of a route in that direction. He found the basin of the lake to be from fifteen to twenty miles wide, but its shallow waters left an uncovered belt of three or four miles in width, which was strongly incrustated with a briny deposit, and was so soft as to prevent all access to its waters. He spent several days northward of the dépôt, and followed the Flinders' Range, until the hills became lower and more detached, with intervals of stony valleys, while barren sandy plains still formed the lower level. Water became very scarce, but at length, finding a place which promised a temporary supply, he returned to the camp, after an absence of sixteen days, and conducted it over the region he had explored. The rugged and desolate country, and the want of water, rendered their progress slow and pain-

* For the routes of Mitchell and Leichhardt, see the map of Eastern Australia prefixed to the narrative of Sturt's Expedition, page 580.

ful; and on exploring the dreary region beyond the limits of Flinders' Range, Mr. Eyre found it to be completely surrounded by Lake Torrens, which, commencing near the head of Spencer's Gulf, takes a circuitous course of fully four hundred miles, with an apparent breadth of from twenty to thirty, and, following the sweep of Flinders' Range, encircles it in the form of a horse-shoe. From a high summit, which he named Mount Serle, Mr. Eyre perceived that he was hemmed in on every side by an impassable barrier, and had no alternative but to conduct his party back to Mount Arden.

On reaching the dépôt, the stores were dug up and repacked for traveling, Mr. Eyre having resolved to continue his explorations westward toward the Great Bight of Australia, still in the hope of finding in that direction an opening toward the interior. On the 13th of September they set forward, and having crossed with some difficulty the narrow channel connecting the head of Spencer's Gulf with Lake Torrens, the main body was sent forward under the charge of the overseer, while Messrs. Eyre and Scott, accompanied by a man and boy, with a dray and several horses, went down for supplies to Port Lincoln, on the west side of Spencer's Bay, intending to rejoin the party at Streaky Bay. Not finding the requisite stores at Port Lincoln, Mr. Scott repaired to Adelaide in a small cutter on the 9th of October, and returned on the 22d with an abundant supply. The cutter was retained to co-operate with the expedition, and sent round to communicate at once with the party at Streaky Bay, while Messrs. Scott and Eyre proceeded overland, and rejoined their companions early in November. On the 6th the whole party moved westward near the coast, and encamped at Fowler's Bay on the 19th. On the way they had frequent intercourse with the natives, who were very polite and friendly toward them, and by guiding them to places where water could be procured, enabled them to move with confidence and celerity. On conducting them to any of the watering-places, the natives gave it up entirely to them; and, although thirsty themselves, would not take a drink without asking permission.

Leaving his party in camp at Point Fowler, Mr. Eyre made several attempts to round the head of the Great Bight; but, after a month spent in fruitless endeavors to penetrate the desolate, parched-up region, in which he lost three horses, and encountered great privations, he dispatched the cutter to Adelaide for assistance, and reduced the party by sending two of the men with her.

Meanwhile he continued his explorations, and finally succeeded in reaching the head of the Bight on the 7th of January, 1841. On the same day he was guided by the natives to some small holes containing excellent water. The natives all assured him that there was no water of any description in the interior, and that the next water along the coast was ten days distant. The whole party was actively engaged until the arrival of the cutter, and had succeeded in examining the coast

imits of Flinders' ed by Lake Tor- Gulf, takes a cir- parent breadth of nders' Range, en- summit, which he s hemmed in on ative but to con-

and repacked for explorations west- he hope of finding the 13th of Sep- some difficulty the ulf with Lake Tor- ge of the overseer, n and boy, with a ort Lincoln, on the e party at Streaky ohn, Mr. Scott re- ocher, and returned r was retained to amunicate at once nd Eyre proceeded ovember. On the t, and encamped at equent intercourse toward them, and ured, enabled them ng them to any of ly to them; and, without asking per-

Eyre made several but, after a month e, parched-up region, t privations, he dis- duced the party by

finally succeeded in ary, 1841. On the all holes containing here was no water ext water along the s actively engaged examining the coast

beyond the head of the Great Bight, which, however, presented a dreary prospect for further explorations.

The cutter arrived on the 26th of January, bringing an ample supply of provisions and presents from friends in Adelaide, and having on board a native of King George's Sound, named Wylie, who had been with Mr. Eyre on former expeditions. The cutter was at his disposal within the limits of South Australia; but, being under charter, he could not take her to Cape Arid, or beyond the boundaries of the province. He therefore determined to reduce the party still further, and attempt to force a passage almost alone. He accordingly retained Wylie and the two native boys, and also the overseer, who resolved to continue with him, and prevailed on Mr. Scott and one of the men to return with the cutter, which sailed back on the 31st of January. Having completed all preparations by the 24th of February, he was about setting out on his fearful undertaking, when a shot was heard in Fowler's Bay, and presently Mr. Scott and the commander of the cutter made their appearance. They had been sent back by the governor to bring Mr. Eyre to Adelaide; but as he had matured his plans, and resolved to accomplish the object he had in view, or perish in the attempt, he bade farewell to his friends, and set forward on the 25th.

The continuation of the journey, after passing the Great Bight, was through unheard-of difficulties and privations. The horses at length began to give out under excessive heat and the want of water. One after another was abandoned, as the stock of water which they carried with them began to fail. Every expedient was resorted to; they collected dew, dug up the roots of trees, until finally the overseer began to despond. On the 30th of March a well was dug in a place which indicated moisture, and, to the unbounded joy of all, pure water was obtained. The party remained here a few days to recruit, during which time a large quantity of supplies, which they had been compelled to leave fifty miles behind, was brought up, after making one unsuccessful attempt. They remained twenty-eight days among the sand-hills at this station, during which time their last sheep was killed, and one of the remaining horses slaughtered for food.

On the 27th of April they entered upon the last desperate stage of the journey, in which they had probably one hundred and fifty miles to the next supply of water. On the 27th Mr. Eyre took the first watch of the night, and at half past ten was heading the scattered horses at some distance from the camp, when a sudden flash and the report of a gun startled him, and, on running up, he found the overseer weltering in his blood. The two younger boys had deserted, and carried off a large quantity of provisions, two double-barreled guns, and other small articles. Next day, with only Wylie for a companion, whom he suspected to have been cognizant of the plot to plunder the camp, he collected the horses, and set forward. In the afternoon the two natives were seen advancing, but they kept their distance, and seemed only

anxious to induce Wylie to come with them. After a forced march of several days they came, on the 3d of May, to an abundant supply of water, and, fearing the natives no longer, Mr. Eyre halted for three days to recruit. He then continued his cheerless route over the inhospitable region, in which, however, the game was more abundant as he advanced toward the west, and the unwholesome flesh of jaded horses was agreeably relieved by that of kangaroos and opossums.

On the 2d of June he was cheered by the sight of two boats, and was soon afterward welcomed on board the whaler *Mississippi* by Captain Rossiter. He remained on board until the 14th, and then, much recruited, and supplied with provisions and clothing, resumed his journey. On the last of June he caught the first glimpse of the hills behind King George's Sound, and on the 7th of July crossed King's River, and entered the town of Albany, himself and Wylie being the sole wanderers to close the eventful and disastrous journey, which was entered upon under the most hopeful auspices. On the 13th of July he embarked for Adelaide, where he arrived on the 28th, after an absence of one year and twenty-six days.

MITCHELL'S JOURNEY TO TROPICAL AUSTRALIA.

As the colonists of Australia gradually pushed their settlements into the interior, and began to pasture their sheep on the Macquairie and the Darling, they became interested in the exploration of the northern interior of the country, in the hope of finding an overland route to the nearest part of the Indian Ocean, by which the dangerous navigation of the Torres Straits might be avoided. A trade in horses to supply the Indian cavalry made this a desirable object, and not less important to them was the opening of a more direct communication with England; for it was not to be doubted, that on the discovery of a good overland route between Sydney and the head of the Gulf of Carpentaria, a line of steam communication would be introduced from that point to meet the English line at Singapore.

In this view of the subject, Lieutenant-Colonel Sir T. L. Mitchell, the Surveyor General, in 1843 submitted a plan of exploration to Sir George Gipps, the Governor. The subject was referred to Lord Stanley, the Secretary for the Colonies, whose reply was favorable to the expedition; but the governor of the colony still declined to allow the journey to be undertaken. The Legislative Council, however, renewed the petition for this undertaking, to which the governor at length assented in 1845, and the sum of £2,000 was unanimously voted for the outfit of the party.

Preparations were accordingly made, and the expedition set out from

ALIA.

er a forced march
abundant supply of
halted for three
oute over the un-
more abundant as
me flesh of jaded
nd opossums.

of two boats, and
Mississippi by Cap-
h, and then, much
resumed his jour-
e of the hills behind
ssed King's River,
lie being the sole
ourney, which was
the 13th of July he
h, after an absence

AUSTRALIA.

l their settlements
on the Macquairie
exploration of the
inding an overland
which the dangerous
A trade in horses
bject, and not less
irect communication
n the discovery of
ead of the Gulf of
e introduced from

Sir T. L. Mitchell,
exploration to Sir
ferred to Lord Stan-
s favorable to the
e declined to allow the
however, renewed
rrior at length as-
ously voted for the

dition set out from

THE PASTURES OF THE NARRAN.

777

Buree toward the interior on the 15th of December, 1845. The exploring party consisted of Sir T. L. Mitchell, chief of the expedition; Edmund B. Kennedy, second in command; W. Stephenson, surgeon and collector of objects of natural history; and twenty-six men, who were mostly prisoners of the crown in different stages of probation. The means of conveyance were strong bullock-drays and portable boats.

After an unsuccessful attempt to discover a direct northern route, where they were foiled for want of water, the party turned to the eastward, and followed Sturt's route to the Darling, which they forded on the 4th of March, near the mouth of the Macquarie. They had great difficulty with some of their heavy vehicles in the soft and muddy bed of the river, and were obliged to pave it with logs and branches, covered with earth, before the rest could be got across.

On the 5th they proceeded northward. As they advanced the country opened into slight undulations, well clothed with grass, and good for traveling over, the soil being full of the same hard rock found on the rising grounds nearest to the Darling, in the lowest parts of that river previously explored by Colonel Mitchell. Their guides at length brought them to some water-holes, among verdant grass on a plain, where they encamped fifteen miles from the Darling. On the 7th, the country still improved, and after traveling about seven miles the guides pointed forward to a line of trees as the Narran River. On arriving there they found pure water in great abundance, into which the natives who were with the expedition plunged and rolled about like porpoises. This, however, was but a swampy plain, emanating from the river, which lay among the trees beyond. Here they were obliged to wait several days for the arrival of the drays, during which time they built a bridge over the swampy outlet of the Narran. Meanwhile Colonel Mitchell took the native guides and rode forward to examine the country. He says: "We proceeded along the margin of the Narran, which led us nearly due north, until we forded it, at the desire of our guides, on a good gravelly bottom, the water reaching to our saddle-flaps. We then continued along its banks for about thirty miles, until near sunset, when we tethered our horses, and lay down for the night. The Narran was full of water everywhere, and with this abundance of water there was also plenty of most excellent grass. The *Panicum levinode* of Dr. Lindley seemed to predominate, a grass whereof the seed is made by the natives into a kind of paste or bread. Dry heaps of this grass, that had been pulled expressly for the purpose of gathering the seed, lay along our path for many miles. I counted nine miles along the river, in which we rode through this grass only, reaching to our saddle-girths, and the same grass seemed to grow back from the river, at least as far as the eye could reach through a very open forest. I had never seen such rich natural pasturage in any other part of New South Wales."

All the drays came in on the 11th, and it now became necessary to wait and refresh the jaded bullocks. On the 13th, the party once more

moved onward, having before them the prospect of water and grass in abundance, to an indefinite distance. In continuing the journey they set out early each morning and traveled only a few miles, in order that the exhausted animals might have time to feed and refresh. The inhabitants of this region were few, and they were invisible, like the animals of the forests, but they frequently saw impressions of the bare feet of men, women, and children, as well as the prints of emus, kangaroos, and other animals obliged to go to the water. "Here still," observes Mitchell, "was our own race among other animals all new and strange to Europeans. The prints of the foot of man alone were familiar to us. But here he was living in common with other animals, simply on the bounty of nature; artless, and apparently as much afraid of us, and as shy, as other animals of the forest. It seemed strange, that in a climate the most resembling that of Milton's paradise, the circumstances of man's existence should be the most degrading."

By the last of March they began to lose the Narran in the numerous water-courses spread over the country, and it became necessary to find the Balonne, a large river, whose waters were here distributed into different channels. On the 31st they met with some natives who undertook to guide them to the ford "Congo," where white men had crossed the Balonne. As they proceeded, they saw some native women running off at a great distance, two of whom carried unseemly loads under their large cloaks. The eldest of the guides ran and overtook them, to assure them that the white men would do no harm, when it was found that the burdens they carried were mummied bodies. Proceeding westward they came to the Balonne on the evening of April 1st, which they forded next morning, and continued across a watered country until the 3d, when they encamped on the Culgoa, another outlet of the Balonne. Next day they proceeded along the Culgoa to its outlet from the Upper Balonne, whence they continued to ascend the latter river toward the north, with the intention of following it to the watershed between the northern and southern streams.

On the 1st of May they left the main river and ascended a tributary flowing in from the north-west. There was a marked difference between this stream, as well as the country along its banks, and the large river by which they had traveled so far. Its waters, meandering through various narrow channels, lay between finely rounded grassy slopes, with a few trees about the water's edge, marking their course at a distance. On the 2d a large grassy flat brought them to a lake of crystal water, fringed with white lotus flowers. An immense number of ducks floated on its surface. "During the night," observes Colonel Mitchell, "natives were heard near our camp, and we perceived the smoke of their fires, in the bushes behind, in the morning. Yuranigh, the guide, went up to them, accompanied by one of the party bearing a green branch, and he prevailed on three of their tribe to come to our tents. One stood among the carts and tents, apparently quite absorbed in observation.

water and grass in the journey they miles, in order that refresh. The invisible, like the sessions of the bare ts of emus, kanga- "Here still," ob- iminals all new and alone were familiar ner animals, simply much afraid of us, l strange, that in a , the circumstances

rran in the numer- ceame necessary to ere distributed into some natives who ere white men had some native women unseemly loads un- and overtook them, harm, when it was l bodies. Proceed- ening of April 1st, ross a watered coun- a, another outlet of Culgoa to its outlet to ascend the latter ing it to the water-

ascended a tributary arked difference be- banks, and the large meandering through d grassy slopes, with course at a distance. lake of crystal water, mber of ducks floated el Mitchell, "natives moke of their fires, in e guide, went up to green branch, and he r tents. One stood rbed in observation.

Intense curiosity in these men had evidently overcome all their fears of such strangers. They were entirely naked, and without any kind of ornament or weapon, offensive or defensive. With steady fixed looks, eyes wide open, and serious, intelligent countenances, what passed in their minds was not disguised, as is usual with savages." From these people he learned that the river was named Cogoon. In the evening he ascended a hill at a short distance from their place of encampment, "from which," he remarks, "the most interesting sight to me was that of blue peaks at a great distance to the north-west, the object of all my dreams of discovery for years. No white man had before seen these. There we might hope to find the *divisa aquarum*, still undiscovered; the pass to Carpentaria, still unexplored: I called this hill Mount First View, and descended, delighted with what I had seen from its rocky crest.

"On the 8th of May I ascended an elevated north-eastern extremity of Mount Abundance, and from it beheld the finest country I had ever seen in a primeval state. A champaign region, spotted with wood, stretched as far as human vision, or even the telescope, could reach. It was intersected by river lines from the north, distinguishable by columns of smoke. A noble mountain mass arose in the midst of that fine country, extending in a range from south-west to north-east." He named this country Fitzroy Downs.



BOTTLE-TREE OF AUSTRALIA.

"Trees of a very droll form chiefly drew my attention here. The

trunk bulged out in the middle like a barrel, to nearly twice the diameter at the ground, or of that at the first springing of the branches above. These were small in proportion to their great girth, and the whole tree looked very odd. These trees were all so alike in general form that I was convinced this was their character, and not a *usus naturæ*." On Mount Bindango, which he ascended on the 11th, these remarkable trees grew in several spots; some of them much resembling bottles, but tapering near the root.

On descending from the latter hill, he found eight natives who had come up to the party in his absence. They were colored with iron-ocher, and had a few feathers of the white cockatoo, in the black hair of their foreheads and beards. A party who had visited them, some days before, were thoughtful and reserved; these were merry as larks, and their white teeth, constantly visible, shone whiter than even the cockatoo's feathers on their brows and chins. Sun never shone upon a merrier group of mortals than these children of nature appeared to be. One among them was a fine powerful fellow, whose voice sounded so strongly, that it seemed as if his very whisper might be heard half a mile off.

On the 14th they were invited by some natives to a ceremonious interview with one who was seated in advance. They found, however, that he was in great terror and had nothing to say, but as he was disposed to handle every thing he could lay hold of, they left him as civilly as they could, but he hung on their rear for some time, with his whole tribe. Early next morning some natives were observed occasionally peeping from a hill overlooking the camp. "Some time after," says Mitchell, "I perceived a figure resembling a large black quadruped, with head erect like a lion, prowling about, among the long grass beside my after breakfast tree. Taking my glass, I recognized the identical big savage of yesterday. He had evidently been watching us all night, and his party were concealed behind the hill. I fired a carbine so that the fellow should hear the bullet whistle near him into the long grass; and at the same time shouted, expressive of my disgust at his conduct, making the men join in a loud *jeering* cheer as he galloped off on all-fours toward his camp."

After pursuing a westerly course for some days they came, on the 18th of May, to a large river, skirted by a dense line of trees, and flowing from north to south. Here Mitchell established the camp for a few days, and made excursions to the neighboring hills. On the 27th he visited a conical peak at some distance to the south-west, which promised an extensive view. "On gaining the summit," he remarks, "the land around me was fair to look on; nothing could be finer than the forms of the hills, half clear of wood—the disposition of open grassy downs and vales—or the beauty of the woods. Water was not wanting, at least there seemed to be enough for the present inhabitants, and to an admirer of nature there was all that could be desired. Deeply impressed with its sublime and solitary beauty, I sketched the scene, and

descended from that hill, resolved to follow the river upward, as more favorable, in that direction, to the chief object of my mission. I named the hill overlooking that lonely dale, Mount Lonsdale, in honor of my valuable geological friend."

One morning after he had left the camp two natives who were painted white and well armed, came boldly up, followed by two women bearing loads of spears. They were ordered to halt, but, pointing after Mitchell, they motioned to the party to follow him. Finding the men firm, the speaker edged off toward a man at a distance, in charge of the horses. Corporal Graham got between, when the savages came boldly upon him, quivering their poised spears. At length the foremost man turned round and made vulgar gestures of defiance; at this the old soldier discharged his carbine over the head of the savage, who first sprang some feet into the air, and then ran off with all the others. He was afterward seen creeping up under the cover of some large trees, the rest following, and on being met he began to recite what seemed to be a description of the surrounding country, pointing to various localities. He then stuck a spear into the ground and seemed to propose that on one side the ground should be occupied by the strangers, and on the other, by them. Graham assenting to this, they seemed better satisfied, and departed.

Colonel Mitchell now made preparations for continuing his explorations up the river, and set out on the 4th of June, leaving Mr. Kennedy behind with a party, to cultivate a garden, and if possible obtain some information respecting the final course of the river, the native name of which was ascertained to be the Maranoá. After a few days' marching, the branch of the river which they ascended became nearly dry, so that they continued near its channel until the 17th of June, when they encamped for a week among some high ridges near the head of the river. The highest ridge they crossed before encamping was eighteen hundred and thirty-three feet above the sea. Next morning Colonel Mitchell sent out parties in search of water, and then went to ascend a mountain, seven miles off to the north-west. A number of mountain tops were visible from this summit. That eastward of the dépôt camp, was seen in the distance, and named Mount Kennedy, from the officer in charge of the party there. "I was now," observes Colonel Mitchell, "at a loss for names to the principal summits of the country. No more could be gathered from the natives, and I resolved to name the features, for which names were now requisite, after such individuals of our own race as had been most distinguished or zealous in the advancement of science, and the pursuit of human knowledge. I called this hill Mount Owen; a bald-forest hill to the north-east of it, Mount Clift; a lofty truncated cone, to the eastward of these, the center of a group, and one of my zero points, Mount Ogilby; a broad-topped hill far in the north-west, where I wished to continue my route, Mount Faraday; a high table-land intervening, Hope's Table-Land; the loftiest part of the coast ranges, visible on all sides, Buckland's Table-Land."

The party moved forward on the 26th of June, certain, from examination already made, of finding water for at least three days' journey, and hopeful of a water-course being before them. In passing the foot of Mount Owen they found the elevation to be two thousand and eighty-three feet; the summit was about seven hundred feet higher. On the 28th they came to a river which they followed hopefully, but in a few days it turned gradually to the south-west, and they abandoned it. They now proceeded north-west, in the hope of finding the basin of northern waters, beyond a range of summits which appeared in that direction. On the 2d of July, as Colonel Mitchell and some of the party were in advance, near Mount Faraday, they found a running stream, among some reeds in the hollow of the valley. "The water," says Mitchell, "was clear and sparkling, tasting strongly of sulphur, and Yuranigh, the guide, said this was the head of a river that never dried up. In this land of picturesque beauty and pastoral abundance, within eighty miles of the tropics, we had discovered the first running stream seen on this journey."

They now moved on along the banks of this stream which descended through an open valley toward the north and promised them an abundant supply of water on their proposed route. At length, however, the bed of the river became muddy, the banks became lined with reeds, and on the 7th it expanded into a lake covered with them. When they approached the northern limits of this reedy lake, which they named Salvator, no river flowing out of it was visible, although they found a dry channel which bore marks of a considerable stream at some seasons. Following this dry channel they found its course bore northward, and finally turned to the north-east. "Thus," says Mitchell, "in one day vanished the pleasing prospect we had enjoyed in the morning, of a stream flowing in the direction of our intended route. This might be, I then thought, the tributary to a larger river, which I still hoped would be found to flow westward from the coast ranges, and, finally, take the desired north-west direction."

In a few days they left the banks of this river, and proceeded to the north-west, through an almost impassable thicket. "After working out our way thus, for about ten miles," he continues, "our toils were rewarded with a scene of surpassing beauty, that gradually opened to us. That long-lost tree, the graceful acacia pendula, received us in the foreground, and open plains, blended with waving lines of wood, extended far into bluey distance, beyond which an azure coronet of mountains of romantic forms terminated the charming landscape."

Traversing a broken country, in which they crossed several water-courses bearing westward, they reached, on the 14th, the borders of extensive plains and open downs, extending far to the eastward. "All this rich land," continues Mitchell, "was thickly strewed with small fragments of fossil wood, in silix, agate, and chalcedony. Many of the stones, as already observed, most strikingly resembled decayed wood,

certain, from exam-
 three days' journey,
 In passing the foot
 thousand and eighty-
 et higher. On the
 fully, but in a few
 abandoned it. They
 e basin of northern
 d in that direction.
 f the party were in
 ing stream, among
 er," says Mitchell,
 , and Yuranigh, the
 r dried up. In this
 within eighty miles
 stream seen on this

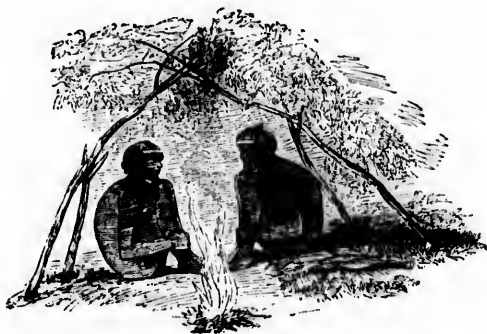
am which descended
 sed them an abund-
 nlength, however, the
 ined with reeds, and
 them. When they
 which they named
 hough they found a
 am at some seasons.
 bore northward, and
 tchell, "in one day
 a the morning, of a
 ce. This might be,
 I still hoped would
 and, finally, take the

nd proceeded to the
 "After working out
 our toils were re-
 ally opened to us.
 received us in the
 lines of wood, ex-
 e coronet of mount-
 scape."

ssed several water-
 th, the borders of
 the eastward. "All
 strewn with small
 lony. Many of the
 ed decayed wood,

and in one place the remains of an entire trunk lay together like a heap of ruins, the *dilapidated* remains of a tree! I obtained even a portion of petrified bark; but specimens of this were rare."

On the 21st they came to the bed of a river, with water in the channel, bearing northward. Along this they now advanced, believing they had at length discovered the head of a north-western river. On the 25th of July they passed the Tropic of Capricorn; much thunder had been heard through the night toward the north, which, at this season of the year, indicated their approach to that line. "There was no hill or other geographical feature near our route," observes Mitchell, "whereby it might have been possible to mark the limit of tropical Australia. We were the first to enter the interior beyond that line."



NATIVES OF AUSTRALIA.

At length it became evident that this river also bore too far eastward for the Gulf of Carpentaria, and the western tributaries, which they examined, still led them too far to the south-west. On the 7th of August they came to a river bearing westward, which was as large and important as the one they had been following, and contained ponds of water; but its course was *from* the west, and left them no hope that the channel they had been pursuing would turn westward. They encamped for several days in this region, exploring the water-courses of the neighborhood, and determining the route to be pursued. Meanwhile they were occasionally visited by natives. On the 10th, during the absence of Colonel Mitchell, a party armed with clubs came up with evidently hostile intentions. They were suddenly checked, however, when they saw five men drawn up in a line, with incomprehensible weapons in their hands. Just then three dogs from the camp ran at them, and they all took to their heels, greatly laughed at, even by the rest of their tribe. The only casualty befell the shepherd's dog, which, biting at the legs of a native running away, he turned round, and hit

the dog so cleverly, that it was dangerously ill for months afterward. The whole of them then disappeared, shouting through the woods to their women. It was remarkable, that on seeing the horses, they exclaimed, "Yerraman," the colonial natives' name for a horse, and that of these animals they were not at all afraid, whereas they seemed in much dread of the bullocks.

On tracing the river below the junction, Mitchell found its height to be little more than six hundred feet above the level of the sea. "I could no longer doubt," he continues, "that the division between eastern and western waters was still to the westward. I accordingly determined to retrace our wheel-tracks back to the head of the Salvator, and to explore from thence the country to the north-west, as far as our stock of provisions and the season would permit."

On the 24th they re-crossed the line of Capricorn, having been exactly one month in the interior of tropical Australia. On the 5th of September they encamped on the Salvator a few miles above the lake, where they formed a *dépôt*, and remained a few days to refresh the horses, before setting out with the best of them toward the west. Meanwhile Colonel Mitchell prepared dispatches to the governor, giving an account of his proceedings and discoveries, and left them at the *dépôt*, to be forthcoming in the event of any misfortune befalling him or his party. They set forward on the 10th, and proceeded westward from the valley of the Salvator, hoping to find beyond the distant hills what had so long been the object of these researches—a river flowing to the Gulf of Carpentaria. On the 14th day they discovered a rocky gap leading to the north-west, and hastily descended toward it. With eager steps they followed a slight channel downward to a little valley, verdant with young grass, where the red sky of sunset shone reflected from several broad ponds of water.

"As soon as daylight appeared," says Mitchell, "I hastened toward the gap, and ascended a naked rock on the west side of it. I there beheld downs and plains extending westward beyond the reach of vision. Ulloa's delight at the first view of the Pacific could not have surpassed mine on this occasion, nor could the fervor with which he was impressed at the moment have exceeded my sense of gratitude, for being allowed to make such a discovery. From that rock, the scene was so extensive as to leave no room for doubt as to the course of the river, which, thus and there revealed to me alone, seemed like a reward direct from heaven for perseverance, and as a compensation for the many sacrifices I had made, in order to solve the question as to the interior rivers of tropical Australia."

They traced the course of this river in a north-westerly direction until the 23d, when it fell off to the south-west. On the 22d they passed a large river coming in from the north-east, below which the united channel formed a broad, deep river, as large as the Murray. This deep reach continued but a few miles, below which the channel contained

months afterward, through the woods to the horses, they exchanged a horse, and that means they seemed in

well found its height level of the sea. "I the division between ward. I accordingly head of the Salvator, th-west, as far as our

unicorn, having been alia. On the 5th of miles above the lake, y days to refresh the n toward the west. o the governor, giv- and left them at the fortune befalling him proceeded westward pond the distant hills shes—a river flowing discovered a rocky ed toward it. With ard to a little valley, sunset shone reflected

"I hastened toward de of it. I there be- d the reach of vision. l not have surpassed ich he was impressed le, for being allowed ene was so extensive he river, which, thus reward direct from r the many sacrifices he interior rivers of

th-westerly direction the 22d they passed ow which the united Murray. This deep e channel contained

ponds only, and next day they followed a dry river. The term of one month, to which this western excursion was limited, was now half elapsed, but Mitchell resolved to follow the course of this interesting river a few days longer. Their horses, however, began to droop, and it became necessary to return while the stock of provisions lasted; the natives, too, whose language was unintelligible, manifested a hostile disposition; they therefore turned eastward on the 25th. They returned by the left bank, intending to cut off the great sweep which the river described toward the north, and to meet with any tributaries it might receive from the south. Before leaving the river Mitchell bestowed upon it a name, in which connection he remarks: "It seemed to me, to deserve a great name, being of much importance, as leading from temperate into tropical regions, where water was the essential requisite. This river seemed to me typical of God's providence, in conveying living waters into a dry parched land, and thus affording access to open and extensive pastoral regions, likely to be soon peopled by civilized inhabitants. It was with sentiments of devotion, zeal, and loyalty, that I therefore gave to this river the name of my gracious sovereign, Queen Victoria."

On the 6th of October he climbed Mount Pluto, to make some observations. From this point the camp on the Salvator was visible. "We reached it before sunset," he continues, "and were received with loud cheers. All were well, the natives had not come near, the cattle were in a high condition. The grass looked green and luxuriant about the camp, and the spot proved a most refreshing home both to us and to our jaded horses, on whose backs we had almost constantly been for nearly a month."

They set out on the 10th of October to return, and on the 18th, encamped within a day's ride of the *dépôt* on the Marañón. They were anxious to know how Mr. Kennedy and the natives had agreed, and looked forward with impatience to the morrow. The main body of the party had been stationary four months and a half, a long time to remain undisturbed in a country still claimed and possessed by savages.

"On the 19th," continues Colonel Mitchell, "the party was early in motion—old tracks of cattle, when the earth had been soft, and the print of a *shoe*, were the first traces of the white man's existence we met with; nor did we see any thing more conclusive, until the tents on the cliffs overhanging the river were visible through the trees. We saw men, also, and even recognized some of them, before our party was observed; nor did they see us advancing, with a flag on the cart, until Brown sounded the bugle. Immediately all were in motion, Mr. Kennedy coming forward to the cliffs, while the whole party received us with cheers, to which my men heartily responded. Mr. Kennedy ran down the cliffs to meet me, and was the first to give me the gratifying intelligence that the whole party were well; that the cattle and sheep were safe and fat; and, that the aborigines had never molested them. A

good stock-yard had been set up; a storehouse had also been built; a garden had been fenced in, and contained lettuce, radishes, melons, cucumbers, etc. Indeed, the whole establishment evinced the good effects of order and discipline."

Proceeding by the most direct route homeward, the expedition crossed the Darling on the 9th of December, and on the 14th reached Snodgrass Lagoon, where Colonel Mitchell left the party and proceeded by the settlements on the Namboy. Of the conclusion of the expedition he says: "The party which I had left in charge of Mr. Kennedy near Snodgrass Lagoon arrived in the neighborhood of Sydney on the 20th of January, and the new governor, Sir Charles Fitzroy, kindly granted such gratuities to the most deserving of my men as I had recommended, and also sent the names to England of such prisoners as his excellency thought deserving of her majesty's gracious pardon."

LEICHHARDT'S OVERLAND JOURNEY TO PORT ESSINGTON

Dr. Leichhardt, a German who had settled in Australia, spent the two years after his arrival, in various exploring trips through the country northward of Moreton Bay. On returning to the latter place, at the end of this time, he found the attention of the public, as well as the legislative council, occupied by the subject of an overland expedition to Port Essington on the north coast of Australia. He at once desired to undertake the journey, and confident of success, he prevailed against the solicitations of his friends, and began to make arrangements for the undertaking. Aided by the contributions of a few friends, the preparations were rather hurriedly completed by the 13th of August, 1844, when he set sail from Sydney for Moreton Bay. His companions were Messrs. Calvert and Roper; a lad named Murphy; Wm. Phillips, a prisoner of the crown; and "Harry Brown," a native of the Newcastle tribe; making with himself six persons. At Brisbane he received fresh contributions from his friends, and was reluctantly prevailed upon to increase his party. Mr. Hodgson, a resident of the district; Mr. Gilbert, a zealous naturalist; Caleb, an American negro; and "Charley," an aboriginal of the Bathurst tribe, were added to the expedition.

In the latter part of September the party crossed the coast range, and proceeded over the Darling Downs to Jimba, the last settlement on their route. On the 1st of October they left this place, and set out, full of hope, into the wilderness of Australia. In a few days they came to the Condamine, a large sluggish stream, flowing in a north-westerly course, parallel to the coast range, from whose western slope it receives its tributaries. They followed this river until it bore off toward the

also been built; a
dishes, melons, cu-
ed the good effects

rd, the expedition
n the 14th reached
arty and proceeded
sion of the expedi-
ge of Mr. Kennedy
of Sydney on the
les Fitzroy, kindly
y men as I had rec-
f such prisoners as
acious pardon."

JOURNEY

Australia, spent the
ps through the coun-
the latter place, at
public, as well as the
verland expedition to
He at once desired to
prevailed against the
arrangements for the
y friends, the prepara-
3th of August, 1844,
His companions were
hy; Wm. Phillips, a
tive of the Newcastle
ano he received fresh
ly prevailed upon to
the district; Mr. Gil-
o; and "Charley," an
expedition.

ossed the coast range,
a, the last settlement
his place, and set out,
a few days they came
ng in a north-westerly
estern slope it receives
bore off toward the

interior on the left, then continued their course to the north-west over a broken country, interrupted by lagunes and water-courses bearing off to the south-west. Their progress was much obstructed by numerous thickets of acacia and brigaloe scrub, and in the latter part of October the heat was oppressive by day, although the nights were often very cold. It was found, also, that the game was insufficient to supply the party with animal food, and that the want of it was impairing their strength. They were, at the same time, consuming more flour than was consistent with Dr. Leichhardt's plans, and he became convinced that the party, which he had reluctantly increased at Moreton Bay, was too large for the supply of provisions. He therefore, on the 3d of November, made known to his companions the necessity of reducing their number, and although all were anxious to continue the journey, Mr. Hodgson, who suffered most from fatigue, and Caleb, the negro, prepared to return. Previous, however, to their departure, they assisted in killing one of the steers, the meat of which was cut into thin slices and dried in the sun.

On the 3d they were visited by a party of natives, who appeared very friendly. They pointed out honey in one of the trees, helped to cut it out and eat it, and asked for tobacco. They particularly admired the red blankets; were terror-struck at the sight of a large sword, which they tremblingly begged might be returned into the sheath; and wondered at the ticking of a watch, and at the movement of its wheels.

On the 5th they came to a creek flowing westward, which at length took a north-westerly course, and became a considerable river. In a few days the valley of the river became obstructed with thickets, and the river itself divided into numerous branches, which, with the shallow water-courses of occasional floods from the hills, made the whole valley a maze of channels, from which they could only with difficulty extricate themselves. The open forest was sometimes one large field of flowers with bright yellow blossoms, while the scrub plains were thickly covered with grass. They followed the river, which they named the Dawson, until the 14th, when it bore off to the east and they continued in their former direction. On emerging from a dense thicket they were delighted by the view of a lake surrounded by dark verdure, with swarms of ducks playing on its surface. Beyond lay an open forest in which the palm-tree was conspicuous, and along the creek they passed several rocky gullies filled with palms. Beyond the head of "Palm-tree Creek" they reached the channel of a large stream which came down from the north-west, and here turned off to the south. There were numerous lakes and lagunes in this region, and at length they had a constant supply of water in the creek itself. In a few days they entered a mountainous country, the banks of the creek became sometimes steep and broken, rendering their progress slow and difficult, and by the latter part of November they were among high mountain ranges at the head

of this creek. Here they encamped a few days to reconnoiter the country.

At first the party had suffered from change of diet and habits, but latterly constant exposure and exertion had sharpened their appetites. Iguanos, opossums, and birds of all kinds, were cooked, neither good, bad, nor indifferent being rejected. Dried kangaroo's meat, one of their luxuries, resembled dried beef in flavor, and afforded an excellent broth. They realized how soon man becomes indifferent to the niceties of food. One day a bullock had torn one of the flour bags, and about fifteen pounds of flour were scattered over the ground. They all set to work to scrape it up, and when it became too dirty to mix with the flour, rather than lose so much, they collected about six pounds of it, well mixed with dried leaves and dust, and of this made a porridge, which every one enjoyed highly.

On the 4th of December they crossed the range; thence passing over a country traversed by several creeks and water-courses, that were mostly dry, they came to the foot of Expedition Range on the 9th. The channels of this intervening basin led to the north-east, converging toward a plain that appeared unlimited in that direction. Beyond Expedition Range Leichhardt spent several days reconnoitering the surrounding country, while the men increased the stock of provisions by slaughtering a fat bullock. After Christmas they proceeded northward along the channel of a creek, to which they gave the name of Comet River, and which led them, on the 12th of January, 1845, to a large river coming in from the west, and flowing east and north. On the 13th they encamped near the line of Capricorn, on the new river, to which Leichhardt gave the name of Mackenzie. Having ascertained, by following its course a few days, that it flowed to the north-east, he left it, and resumed his course to the north-west, across beautiful plains and a highly-timbered country. At length they approached a high range of mountains, which rose up from the level plain before them in isolated, gigantic, conical peaks, and on the 2d of February passed through a defile east of two of these summits which he called Scott's and Roper's Peaks. From these the chain extended north-west in a high broken range, which received the name of Peak Range. Leaving Peak Range on the left, they directed their course northward through a hilly country, in which the streams bore eastward, and on the 10th of February came to a creek well supplied with water, which they followed a few days in an easterly direction. As they descended it the water soon disappeared in a sandy bed; it led them to the broad, deep channel of a river, now perfectly dry. They named this river the Isaacs, and now turning their course, they ascended it to the north-west and north, until they reached its sources in a high mountain gorge. They had followed the river about seventy miles, through a country well adapted to pastoral pursuits; water was, however, very scarce, although it was found, by digging, at a short distance below the surface.

On the 7th of March the party moved through the gorge, and in a few miles came to another system of water, which collected in a creek flowing westward. This stream led them to a large river, to which they gave the name of Suttor, and which they followed by a circuitous course, at first toward the south-west, and afterward to the north, until it joined another called the Burdekin, and the united channel bore off to the east. They found the usual scarcity of water in the Suttor, its bed being only occasionally supplied with water-holes; several miles before its union with the Burdekin, the Suttor is joined by a river as large as itself, coming from the south-west, to which Leichhardt gave the name of Cape River. Within the bed of the Burdekin, which was a mile wide at the junction, there were narrow and uninterrupted belts of small trees, separating broad masses of sand, through which a stream ten yards wide, and two or three feet deep, was meandering, but which at times spread into large sheets of water, occasionally occupying the whole width of the river.

On the 3d of April they set out along the banks of the Burdekin, and ascended the river in a north-westerly direction, until they reached its head waters in a high basaltic table-land, about the middle of May. On this route, as on the Suttor River, they sometimes saw traces of the natives, who, however, were mostly invisible; and if they chanced to come upon any by surprise, they were shy and reserved, and quickly made their escape, or showed signs of hostility. The approaches to the basaltic plains were most difficult, and for a few days they made little progress. Mr. Roper's horse lost its footing on the steep banks of the river, and broke its thigh. As the animal was young and healthy, they saved the meat, and although there was some prejudice against horse-flesh, they found it a good substitute for beef.

Beyond the sources of the Burdekin they passed a series of high mountain ranges, in the eighteenth degree of south latitude, and came on the 23d of May to a river flowing north-west, down which they continued their course. For several days they passed through the most mountainous and rocky country they had seen. The ranges formed the banks of the river itself, which gradually enlarged, and was formed by several channels fringed with drooping tea-trees. As soon as it had left the basaltic formation, fine large flats of sandy soil succeeded on both sides, and further down the country was broken by low ranges of various extent, formed by rocky hills and peaks, which lifted their rugged crests above the open forests that covered their slopes. As they proceeded, the water-holes in the river became large and numerous, and some of the tributaries contained running water.

On the 16th of June they came to a large river flowing in from the east, to which the one they had been following, which they named the Lynd, became a tributary. The new river was called the Mitchell. The bed was broad, sandy, and quite bare of vegetation, showing the more frequent recurrence of floods. A small stream meandered through the

TRALIA.

to reconnoiter the
 diet and habits, but
 ned their appetites.
 boked, neither good,
 roo's meat, one of
 afforded an excellent
 fferent to the nice-
 the flour bags, and
 the ground. They
 ne too dirty to mix
 ted about six pounds
 of this made a por-

ange; thence passing
 ter-courses, that were
 Range on the 9th.
 north-east, converging
 rection. Beyond Ex-
 reconnoitering the sur-
 tock of provisions by
 proceeded northward
 ve the name of Comet
 ary, 1845, to a large
 and north. On the
 , on the new river, to
 Having ascertained,
 to the north-east, he
 across beautiful plains
 ey approached a high
 el plain before them in
 d of February passed
 which he called Scott's
 ended north-west in a
 Peak Range. Leaving
 se northward through
 ward, and on the 10th
 water, which they fol-
 they descended it the
 em to the broad, deep
 named this river the
 el it to the north-west
 high mountain gorge.
 es, through a country
 however, very scarce,
 ance below the surface.

sheet of sand, and from time to time expanded into large water-holes. The united river continued in a north-westerly course, along which they advanced over a comparatively level country until the 25th of June, when they had passed the sixteenth degree of south latitude, and were considerably beyond the head of the Gulf of Carpentaria. Dr. Leichhardt therefore determined to leave the Mitchell at this point, to approach the sea-coast, and pass around the bottom of the Gulf.

Accordingly, on the 26th they set forward to the south-west. On the 27th, as Charley and Brown were in search of game, they saw a native sneaking up to the bullocks, while a party of his black companions were waiting with poised spears to receive them. The men hurried up to prevent them, when the native gave the alarm, and all took to their heels, except a lame fellow, who tried to persuade his friends to stand fight. Charley, however, fired his gun, which had the intended effect of frightening them, for they deserted their camp in a great hurry, leaving several articles behind. The women had previously retired, a proof that mischief was intended.

Next day they saw by the smoke rising in every direction that the country was thickly inhabited, and near the lagunes frequently discerned marks of the camp-fires of the natives. In the afternoon they encamped in the belt of trees bordering on a lagune, and Dr. Leichhardt had just retired in the evening, sleeping on the ground, as usual, at a little distance from the fire, when he was suddenly roused by a loud noise and a call for help from Calvert and Roper. Natives had attacked the camp. They had doubtless marked the position of the different tents, and as soon as it was dark they sneaked up and threw a shower of spears at the tents of Calvert, Roper, and Gilbert, a few at that of Phillips, and one or two toward the fire. Charley and Brown called for caps and discharged their guns into the crowd of natives, who instantly fled, leaving Roper and Calvert pierced with several spears, and severely beaten by their clubs. Several of the spears were barbed, and could not be extracted without difficulty. Murphy had succeeded in getting behind a tree, whence he fired at the natives, and severely wounded one of them before Brown had discharged his gun. Hearing that Mr. Gilbert had fallen, Dr. Leichhardt hastened to the spot and found him lying on the ground at a little distance from the fire, but every sign of life had departed.

As soon as they recovered from the panic into which they were thrown by this fatal event they extinguished the fires and watched through the night to prevent another surprise. The night was unpleasantly cold, and they passed it in a state of most painful suspense as to the fate of their surviving companions. The dawn of next morning was gladly welcomed, and Dr. Leichhardt proceeded to examine and dress the wounds of his companions. Mr. Roper had received two or three spear-wounds on his head, one spear had passed through his left arm, another into his cheek and injured the optic nerve, and another in his

loins, besides a heavy blow on the shoulder. Mr. Calvert had received several heavy blows, one on the nose which had crushed the nasal-bones, and others on his arm and hands; besides which a barbed spear had entered his groin, and another his knee. Both suffered great pain, and were scarcely able to move. The spear that terminated Gilbert's existence had entered the chest; from the direction of the wound he had received it when stooping to leave his tent. In the afternoon they buried the body of their ill-fated companion, and afterward made a large fire over the grave, to prevent the natives from detecting it.

Calvert and Roper recovered rapidly, considering the severe injuries they had received, and as it was thought hazardous to remain long at the place, the party set out on the 1st of July. On the 5th they obtained the first sight of the gulf, which was hailed by all with feelings of indescribable pleasure, although Dr. Leichhardt's joy was mingled with regret at not having succeeded in bringing his whole party to the end of what he considered the most difficult part of the journey. He had now discovered a line of communication by land between the eastern coast of Australia and the Gulf of Carpentaria, and had traveled along never-failing, and for the most part, running waters, and over an excellent country, available, almost in its whole extent, for pastoral purposes.

At dusk, on the 7th, a native glided into the camp, and walked up to the fire. Instantly the cry of "blackfellow!" was raised, and every gun was ready. But the stranger was unarmed, and evidently unconscious of his position; and when he saw himself suddenly surrounded by the horses and the men he nimbly climbed a tree and stood immovable in the summit, without heeding the calls and signs for him to descend, or the discharge of a gun. At length Charley was sent up a neighboring tree, whereupon the black began calling and shouting most lustily, until he made the forests re-echo with the wild sounds of his alarm. The horses were frightened, and those that were loose ran away, and the men were much afraid that his cries would bring the whole tribe to his assistance. Dr. Leichhardt then went to a fire at a short distance, where the man could see him distinctly, and made signs for him to descend and go away. He began to be more quiet and to talk; but soon hallooed again, and threw sticks at Leichhardt, at his companions, and at the horses. The whole party now retired a few yards to allow him to escape; and after continuing his lamentations for some time, he ceased; in a few minutes a slight rustling was heard, and he was gone; doubtless delighted at having escaped the pale-faced cannibals. Next morning the whole tribe, well armed, watched them from a distance, but allowed them quietly to load their bullocks and depart, without offering them the least annoyance.

While the party were butchering a steer on the 11th, some natives made their appearance. Leichhardt held out a branch as a sign of peace, when they ventured up to hold a parley, though evidently with great

to large water-holes, along which they on the 25th of June, at the same latitude, and were at Carpentaria. Dr. Leichhardt, at this point, to approach the Gulf.

On the south-west. On the 1st of July, they saw a native black companion. The men hurried up and all took to their arms, and his friends to stand by. The intended effect of this was a great hurry, leaving the party retired, a proof that

every direction that the natives frequently dis- the afternoon they entered, and Dr. Leichhardt ground, as usual, at a camp, only roused by a loud

Natives had attacked the position of the different parties, and threw a shower of spears, a few at that of Mr. Calvert and Brown called for the natives, who instantly raised their spears, and severely wounded the natives, and could not succeed in getting the natives severely wounded one

Hearing that Mr. Gilbert was not and found him lying on the ground, every sign of life had

into which they were taken, the fires and watched the night was unpleasant and painful suspense as to the fate of the party. On the next morning was to examine and dress the wounds, which received two or three spears through his left arm, and another in his

suspicion. They examined Brown's hat, and expressed a great desire to keep it. While Dr. Leichhardt went to the tents for some pieces of iron as a present to them, Brown, wishing to surprise them, mounted his horse and began trotting, which frightened them so much that they ran away and did not come again. In passing around the southern extremity of the gulf they had occasional interviews with the natives, who appeared quite amicably disposed, especially on receiving some trifling presents.

After a most tedious and fatiguing march around the head of the gulf, during which their progress was greatly obstructed by the numerous lagoons and creeks along the coast, they approached the head of Limmen Bight, the western extremity of the Gulf of Carpentaria, on the 6th of October. The whole country around the gulf, particularly in the southern part, and on the plains and approaches to the rivers and creeks, was well covered with grass. The large water-holes were frequently surrounded with a thick turf of small sedge, upon which the horses greedily fed. Stiff grasses made their appearance near the sea-coast, on the plains as well as in the forest. From the coast of Limmen Bight they ascended a large river of brackish water, which they named Limmen Bight River. After following its banks to the south-west for about a week, they took a north-westerly course, and on the 19th of October, came to the banks of a fresh-water river, five to eight hundred yards wide, and flowing westwardly to the Bight. They continued their route to the north-west along the banks of this river, which was called the Roper. On the 21st they had the misfortune to lose three of their most vigorous horses, which were drowned in the river. In consequence of this diminution of their number, the remaining animals had to bear their burdens continually, and became so much reduced that it was often necessary to rest a day to recruit them.

By the 6th of November they had left all the eastern waters, and came upon the margin of a sandy table-land, from which they overlooked a large valley bounded by high ranges to the westward. As they advanced the country became mountainous, and on the 17th they were proceeding along the high banks of a western creek, when suddenly the extensive view of a magnificent valley opened out before them. They stood on the brink of a deep precipice, of about eighteen hundred feet in descent, which extended far to the eastward. A large river, joined by many tributaries from different quarters, meandered through the valley, which was bounded by high ranges. They had great difficulty in finding a passage down the precipices, but finally succeeded, and on the 20th arrived safely in the valley. Their horses and cattle were, however, in a distressing condition. The passage along rocky creeks had rendered them very foot-sore, and their feed had latterly consisted of coarse grasses or a small sedge which they did not like. But in the valley all the tender grasses reappeared in the utmost profusion, on which the horses and bullocks fed most greedily.

essed a great desire to
s for some pieces of
prise them, mounted
em so much that they
ound the southern ex-
ews with the natives,
ly on receiving some

ound the head of the
tructed by the numer-
approached the head of
of Carpentaria, on the
e gulf, particularly in
aches to the rivers and
water-holes were fre-
edge, upon which the
pearance near the sea-
n the coast of Limmen
ter, which they named
to the south-west for
and on the 19th of
, five to eight hundred
. They continued their
river, which was called
e to lose three of their
river. In consequence
g animals had to bear
duced that it was often

ne eastern waters, and
which they overlooked
estward. As they ad-
on the 17th they were
eck, when suddenly the
ut before them. They
eighteen hundred feet
A large river, joined
eandered through the
ey had great difficulty
ally succeeded, and on
orses and cattle were,
ge along rocky creeks
l had latterly consisted
d not like. But in the
ost profusion, on which

By observations on the 24th, Dr. Leichhardt found they were at the South Alligator River, about sixty miles from its mouth, and one hundred and forty from Port Essington. As they advanced the river gradually increased in size, and its banks were fringed with luxuriant vegetation. In a few days their progress along the river was checked by extensive swamps which filled the intervals between densely wooded ridges, and leaving its course they proceeded toward the north. On the 1st of December they encamped near the head of Van Diemen's Gulf. While they were waiting for their bullocks next morning a fine native stepped out of the forest with the confidence of a man to whom the white race was familiar. He was unarmed, but a great number of his companions were watching the reception he should meet with. They received him cordially, and on being joined by one of his party, he uttered distinctly the words, "Commandant!" "Come here!" "Very good!" "What's your name?" The travelers from the wilderness were electrified; their joy knew no bounds, and they were ready to embrace the fellows, who, seeing the happiness they inspired, joined with a merry grin in the loud expression of their feelings. These natives knew the white people of Victoria, and called them Balanda, a name which they derived from the Malays, signifying "Hollanders." They were very kind and attentive to Dr. Leichhardt's party, brought them roots and shell-fish, and invited them to accompany them to their camping-place, where a plentiful dinner was ready.

After crossing a plain next morning they were stopped by a large sheet of salt water, at the opposite side of which a low range was visible, and the natives informed them they would have to go far to the south-east and south before they could cross the river. This was the East Alligator River, which obliged them to make a detour of several days, after which they continued their journey northward. Every day they were visited by the natives in great numbers, some of whom spoke a few English words they had picked up in their intercourse with the people at Victoria. They imitated with surprising accuracy the noises of the various domesticated animals they had seen at the settlement; and it was amusing to hear the crowing of the cock, the cackling of the hen, the quacking of ducks, grunting of pigs, mewing of the cat, etc., evident proofs that these natives had been at Victoria.

The party were now seized with impatience to come to the end of their journey, but were obliged to content themselves with the slow progress of their animals, and at length, on the 14th of December, they came to the sea-shore. A large bay lay before them, with islands and headlands stretching far out into the ocean, which was open and boundless to the north. It was Mount Morris Bay, and they were now entering the neck of Coburg Peninsula. Guided by the natives, they made their way slowly up the peninsula, and on the 17th came to a cart-road which wound around the foot of a high hill; and having passed a fine grove of cocoa-nut palms, the white houses and a row of snug thatched

cottages burst suddenly upon them. They were kindly received by Captain Macarthur, commandant of Port Essington, and by the other officers, who supplied them with every thing they needed.

After a month's stay at Port Essington they embarked in the schooner *Heroine*, and sailing by way of Torres Strait and the Inner Barrier, a route only once before attempted with success, they arrived safely in Sydney on the 29th of March, 1846. A year afterward, Dr. Leichhardt set out with another party, to cross the heart of the Australian continent, from Moreton Bay to Swan River, on the western coast—a journey which, he estimated, would require two years and a half. Since then, however, nothing has been heard of him or any of his party, and the intrepid explorers have no doubt either perished by hunger and thirst, or been murdered by the natives.

RALIA.

kindly received by
n, and by the other
eeded.

y embarked in the
trait and the Inner
uccess, they arrived
year afterward, Dr.
heart of the Austr-
on the western coast
wo years and a half
a or any of his party,
ished by hunger and

L Y N C H ' S

EXPLORATION OF THE DEAD SEA.

AFTER the surrender of Vera Cruz, Lieutenant W. F. Lynch, of the American navy, applied to the government for permission to explore the Dead Sea. An act appropriating \$10,000 for this purpose having been passed by Congress, Mr. Lynch received orders from the Secretary of the Navy to make preparations for the expedition. On the 2d of October, 1847, he was appointed to the command of the store-ship *Supply*. While the ship was fitted up for service he had two metallic boats constructed, and shipped ten seamen for their crews. He selected young, muscular, native-born Americans of sober habits, from each of whom he exacted a pledge to abstain from intoxicating drinks. To this abstinence he ascribes their final recovery from the extreme prostration to which they were reduced by fatigue and exposure. Lieutenant Dale and Passed-Midshipman Aulick, both excellent draughtsmen, were chosen to assist him in the projected enterprise.

In November he received orders to proceed to Smyrna, and, through the American Minister at Constantinople, apply to the Turkish government for permission to pass through its dominions in Syria, for the purpose of exploring the Dead Sea, and tracing the river Jordan to its source. For the transportation of the boats two low trucks were made, and stowed away in the hold.

The expedition sailed from New York on the 26th of November, and on the 15th of February, 1848, entered the port of Smyrna. Captain Lynch proceeded to Constantinople and applied for the necessary firman from the Porte. After some delay this was received on the 6th of March: it was addressed to the pashas of Saida and Jerusalem, the highest dignitaries in Syria, calling on them to give Captain Lynch and his companions, seventeen in number, all due assistance in their explorations, and to protect and treat them with a regard due to the friendship existing between the American government and the Sublime Porte.

From Smyrna Captain Lynch embarked for Syria, and anchored off Beyrout on the 25th of March, where the Rev. Eli Smith, of the Amer-

ican Presbyterian mission, kindly exerted himself in behalf of the expedition. An intelligent young Syrian, named Ameuny, was procured for dragoman of the party, and an Arab, named Mustafa, engaged as cook. The other members of the mission rendered all the assistance in their power. Sailing thence toward Acre, the expedition landed at Haifa, under Mount Carmel, and made preparations at Acre for marching into the interior. The miserable horses, which they obtained with difficulty, were found to be wholly unused to draught, and after much perplexity the experiment of substituting camels for draught-horses was tried, and happily proved successful. The huge animals, three to each truck, with the boats, marched off with perfect ease. This novel experiment was witnessed by an eager crowd of people, and the successful result taught them a new accomplishment of that patient and powerful animal.

The trucks moved on in advance, and on the 4th of April the party took up the line of march after the boats, having sixteen horses, eleven loaded camels, and a mule. From the plains of Acre the road lay over a rugged country, sometimes attaining an elevation of fifteen hundred feet. On the 6th Captain Lynch gained the heights overlooking the Sea of Galilee, and soon afterward reached the city of Tiberias, on its margin. The boats had been dragged with difficulty along a series of valleys and ridges, and with the utmost exertions they were only brought to the precipitous range overlooking the lake, by sunset on the 7th. Next morning all hands went up to bring them down. Sometimes it was feared that, like the herd of swine, they would rush precipitately into the sea, but at length they reached the bottom in safety, and, with their flags flying, were borne triumphantly beyond the walls and amid a crowd of spectators launched upon the waters of Galilee—the Arabs meanwhile singing, clapping their hands, and crying for bak-sheesh. Buoyantly floated the two *Fannies*, bearing the stars and stripes. Since the time of Josephus and the Romans no vessel of any size had sailed upon this sea, and for many ages but a solitary keel had furrowed its surface.

They had not time to survey this lake, on account of the advancing season and the lessening flood in the Jordan, and therefore left the necessary observations until their return. The bottom is a concave basin; the greatest depth previously ascertained was twenty-seven and a half fathoms, but from copious rains and rapid evaporation, the depth is constantly varying.

Captain Lynch now assigned to each man his special duty. In the land party Mr. Dale was to take the topographical department, Dr. Anderson the geological, Mr. Francis Lynch the botanical, while Mr. Bedlow (an American gentleman who joined the party) was to note the aspect of the country and the incidents of the route. In the water party Lynch assigned to himself, in the *Fanny Mason*, the physical aspect of the river and its banks, the productions, animal and vegetable,

f in behalf of the ex-
 meuny, was procured
 Mustafa, engaged as
 ed all the assistance in
 expedition landed at
 ons at Aere for march-
 ch they obtained with
 aught, and after much
 for draught-horses was
 animals, three to each
 ase. This novel experi-
 ple, and the successful
 patient and powerful

4th of April the party
 sixteen horses, eleven
 Aere the road lay over
 tion of fifteen hundred
 eights overlooking the
 city of Tiberias, on its
 fficulty along a series of
 rtions they were only
 e lake, by sunset on the
 ing them down. Some-
 they would rush precip-
 e bottom in safety, and,
 ly beyond the walls and
 e waters of Galilee—the
 ls, and crying for bak-
 bearing the stars and
 omans no vessel of any
 but a solitary keel had

ount of the advancing
 nd therefore left the ne-
 tom is a concave basin;
 twenty-seven and a half
 aporation, the depth is

is special duty. In the
 phical department, Dr.
 e botanical, while Mr.
 party) was to note the
 route. In the water
 y *Mason*, the physical
 s, animal and vegetable,

with a journal of events. To Mr. Anlick, who had charge of the *Funny Skimmer*, was assigned the topographical sketch of the river and its shores.

It was found necessary, from the best information they could obtain respecting the river, to employ camels. As the Jordan was represented to run between high banks, and the navigation to be dangerous, the safety of the party, and the success of the expedition, might depend materially upon the vigilance and alacrity of the land party. Captain Lynch, therefore, placed it under command of Mr. Dale, with directions to keep as near the river as possible, and hasten to the assistance of the water party, should a given signal be heard. To aid in transportation down the Jordan, and upon the Dead Sea, an old frame boat was purchased and fitted up, with the name of *Uncle Sam*.

Proceeding down the river, the party in the boats soon came to a rapid, at the ruins of the bridge of Semakh. From the disheartening account he had received of the river, Captain Lynch had come to the conclusion that it might be necessary to sacrifice one of the boats to save the rest. He therefore decided to take the lead in the *Funny Mason*, which, being of copper, could be more easily repaired. The boats passed down the rapids without serious injury. Next day they reached a series of rapids, where the channel was so completely obstructed, that it became necessary to transport the boats around the most difficult. Here they labored, up to their waists in water, for several hours. Starting again, they descended a cascade at the rate of twelve knots, and immediately afterward passed down a shoal rapid, where the foremost boat struck, and hung for a few moments on a rock. In passing the eleventh rapid, the velocity of the current was so great that one of the seamen, who lost his hold, was nearly swept over the fall, and with great difficulty gained the shore. In the evening they anchored at the head of the falls and whirlpool of Bük'ah.

Next morning the *Uncle Sam* was shattered upon the rocks and foundered, consequently the hope of transporting the tents from place to place along the Dead Sea was abandoned. The metallic boats passed down the first rapid in safety; down the second, a desperate-looking cascade, with a bluff rock obstructing the channel at its foot, they were lowered by ropes, and by the assistance of some Arabs who accompanied the land party, the dangerous passage was made without accident. In this manner they proceeded down the rocky bed of the Jordan, whose winding course enabled the land party to keep equal pace with the boats in their descent.

In the afternoon of the 17th they arrived at El Meshra, the bathing-place of Christian pilgrims. This ford is consecrated as the place where the Israelites passed over with the Ark of the Covenant, and where the Saviour was baptized by John. "Feeling that it would be a desecration to moor the boats at a place so sacred," says Captain Lynch, "we passed it, and with some difficulty found a landing below." They en-

camped with the land party, who had pitched their tents on the bank, but were aroused at three o'clock in the morning with the intelligence that the pilgrims were coming. Rising hastily they beheld thousands of torch-lights moving rapidly over the hills, and had scarcely time to remove their tents and effects a short distance, when the procession was upon them—men, women and children, mounted on camels, horses, mules and donkeys, rushed impetuously on toward the river. The motley procession continued until daybreak, and, dismounting as they arrived, they disrobed with precipitation, rushed down the bank, and threw themselves into the stream. Absorbed by an impulsive feeling, they seemed perfectly regardless of observation. Each one plunged, or was dipped, three times below the surface, and then filled a bottle from the river. The bathing-dress of many of the pilgrims was a white gown with a black cross upon it. As soon as they had dressed, they cut branches from the *agnus castus*, or willow, and, dipping them in the consecrated stream, bore them away as memorials of their visit. In an hour they began to depart, and in less than three hours the whole crowd was gone. The pageant disappeared as rapidly as it had approached, and left the travelers once more in the silence and solitude of the wilderness. Eight thousand human beings had passed and repassed before their tents, and left no vestige behind them.

The expedition moved on in the afternoon, and in a few hours the boats entered the Dead Sea. On rounding the point, they endeavored to make a west course toward the encampment of their friends; but a fresh north-west wind was blowing, and increased so rapidly, that it was impossible to head it. The sea rose with the increasing wind, and presented an agitated surface of foaming brine; the spray left incrustations of salt upon their clothes, hands and faces; it conveyed a prickly sensation whenever it touched the skin, and was exceedingly painful to the eyes. The boats, heavily laden, struggled sluggishly at first; but when the wind freshened in its fierceness, it seemed as if their bows "were encountering the sledge-hammers of the Titans, instead of the opposing waves of an angry sea." In the evening the wind suddenly abated, the waves fell, and the boats now glided rapidly over an unrippled surface. On reaching the camp the men made a frugal supper, and then, wet and weary, threw themselves upon the ground beside a fetid marsh;—the dark, fretted mountains behind; the sea, like a huge caldron, before them, with its surface shrouded in lead-colored mist. "Toward midnight, while the moon was rising above the eastern mountains, and the shadows of the clouds were reflected, wild and fantastic, on the surface of the somber sea; when every thing, the mountains, the sea, the clouds, seemed specter-like and unreal, the sound of the convent-bell of Mar Saba struck gratefully upon the ear; for it was the Christian call to prayer, and told of human wants and human sympathies to the wayfarers on the borders of the Sea of Death."

Akil, an Arab shekh of the border, who had accompanied them from

their tents on the bank, with the intelligence they beheld thousands had scarcely time to see, when the procession mounted on camels, horses, and toward the river. The men, dismounting as they came down the bank, and with an impulsive feeling, each one plunged, or then filled a bottle from the grins was a white gown he had dressed, they cut it, dipping them in the folds of their visit. In an hour the whole crowd as it had approached, and solitude of the wilderness and repassed before

and in a few hours the point, they endeavored of their friends; but a and so rapidly, that it was increasing wind, and the spray left incrustations conveyed a prickly sensation exceedingly painful to the fishy at first; but when as if their bows "were instead of the opposing wind suddenly abated, over an unrippled surface frugal supper, and then, ground beside a fetid the sea, like a huge d in lead-colored mist. ing above the eastern reflected, wild and fan- every thing, the mount- l unreal, the sound of pon the ear; for it was wants and human sym- a of Death."

accompanied them from

Aere, and to whom they had all become much attached, came to see them next morning, previous to his departure. Learning that he was well acquainted with the tribes on the eastern shore, and on friendly terms with them, Captain Lynch prevailed on him to proceed there by land, to apprise the tribes of the approaching party, and make arrangements to supply it with provisions.

On the 20th the boats were sent to sound diagonally and directly across to the eastern shore. At a late hour they returned, having been retarded by a fresh wind and the corresponding heavy swell of the sea. The distance in a straight line to the Arabian shore was nearly eight statute miles, the greatest depth one hundred and sixteen fathoms. In a line running diagonally to the south-east the depth was one hundred and seventy fathoms, almost from shore to shore.

Next day they broke up the camp and moved southward, taking every thing in the boats except a load for the only remaining camel. Soon after noon on the 22d they hauled up the boats below Wady Sudeir and pitched their tents at a little distance from the fountain-stream of Engaddi. They found a broad, sloping delta, whose dusty surface was covered with coarse pebbles and flinty stones, with here and there a lotus-tree or an osher. The course of the stream across the plain was marked by a narrow strip of luxuriant green. In the evening some of the tribe of Ta'amirah came in, and being hungry, had begun to devour a pot of rice which was given them, when one of them suggested that perhaps pork had been cooked in the same vessel. Their countenances fell when they learned that this had been the case, and although nearly famished they would not touch the rice, and there was nothing else to give them. Fearing that his provisions would fall short, Captain Lynch advised them to return to their tents. The principal food of the Arab, as of all southern nations of this continent, is rice. These Arabs were such pilferers that strict watch had to be kept over every thing except the pork, which, being an abomination to the Moslem, was left about the camp, in full confidence that it would be untouched.

Provisions were becoming scarce when Dr. Anderson returned on the 23d with a supply from Jerusalem. They were seen shortly after noon creeping like mites along the lofty crags, but did not reach the camp for three hours afterward. With them came four Turkish soldiers, to guard the camp in the absence of the party. The scene at sunset was magnificent; on one hand the wild, towering cliffs, on the other the dull, Dead Sea, and the shadows climbing up the eastern mountain. And Kerak stood castled on the loftiest summit of the range.

Next morning Captain Lynch started with Dr. Anderson for the peninsula, which was visible in the south-east, while Mr. Aulick pulled directly across to Wady Mojeb (the river Arnon of the Old Testament), to sound in that direction, and Mr. Dale remained with the rest of the party to make observations at the camp. Mr. Aulick found the width of the sea to be about nine statute miles, and the greatest depth one hun-

dred and eighty-eight fathoms. Captain Lynch returned directly across to the western shore, and thus they continued their measurements into the southern sea. On the 25th they passed Wady Séyál Sebbeh (Ravine of Acacias), above which the cliff of Sebbeh, or Masada, rose perpendicularly to the height of twelve or fifteen hundred feet. It is isolated by a deep ravine on each side; on the level summit stands a line of broken walls, the remains of a fortress built by Herod. "The peculiar purple hue of its weather-worn rock is so like that of coagulated blood that it forces the mind back upon its early history, and summons images of the fearful immolation of Eleazar and the nine hundred Sicarii, the blood of whose self-slaughter seems to have tinged the indestructible cliff forever."

On the 26th they started early and steered in a direct line for Râs Hish (Cape Thicket), the northern point of the salt mountains of Usdum, sounding every few minutes for the ford. Soon after passing the point, to their astonishment they saw, on the eastern side of Usdum, a lofty, round pillar, standing apparently detached from the general mass, at the head of a deep, narrow, and abrupt chasm. On examination they found the pillar to be solid salt, capped with carbonate of lime, cylindrical in front and pyramidal behind. The upper or rounder part is about forty feet high, resting on a kind of oval pedestal, from forty to sixty feet above the level of the sea. It slightly decreases in size upward, crumbles at the top, and is one entire mass of crystallization.

At length they approached the southern extremity of the sea, but from the shallowness of the water the boats grounded three hundred yards from the shore. Mr. Dale landed to observe the latitude. His feet sank first through a layer of slimy mud a foot deep, then through a crust of salt, and then another foot of mud, before reaching the firm bottom. The beach was so hot as to blister the feet. From the water's edge he made his way with difficulty for more than a hundred yards over black mud, coated with salt and bitumen. In returning to the boat one of the men attempted to carry Mr. Dale to the water, but sank down, and they were obliged separately to flounder through. They ran when they could, and described it as like running over burning ashes.

"It was indeed," says Captain Lynch, "a scene of unmitigated desolation. On one side, rugged and worn, was the salt-mountain of Usdum, with its conspicuous pillar, which reminded us at least of the catastrophe of the plain; on the other were the lofty and barren cliffs of Moab, in one of the caves of which the fugitive Lot found shelter. To the south was an extensive flat intersected by sluggish drains, with the high hills of Edom semi-girding the salt plain where the Israelites repeatedly overthrew their enemies; and to the north was the calm and motionless sea, curtained with a purple mist, while many fathoms deep in the slimy mud beneath it lay imbedded the ruins of the ill-fated cities of Sodom and Gomorrah. The glare of light was blinding to the eye, and the

atmosphere difficult of respiration. No bird fanned with its wing the attenuated air, through which the sun poured his scorching rays upon the mysterious element on which we floated, and which alone of all the works of its Maker, contains no living thing within it.

"While in full view of the peninsula, I named its northern extremity 'Point Costigan,' and its southern one 'Point Molyneux,' as a tribute to two gallant Englishmen who lost their lives in attempting to explore this sea."

Toward evening a hot, blistering hurricane arose from the south-east, the thermometer being at 102°. The men, closing their eyes to the blast, were obliged to pull with all their might to stem the rising waves, and after an hour they gained the shore, much exhausted. Captain Lynch had his eyelids blistered, being unable to protect them while steering the boat. Some went up a ravine to escape the stifling wind; others, driven back by the glare, returned to the boats and crouched under the awning. One mounted spectacles to protect his eyes, but the metal became so heated that he was obliged to remove them. At five o'clock, finding the heat intolerable, they went up a dry ravine in search of water, and discovering some pools, they washed and bathed in them, but the relief was only momentary. The wind rose to a tempest, and the heat rather increased than lessened after sunset. At eight o'clock the thermometer was 106°.

The Arabs who accompanied the expedition were indispensable; they brought food when the men were nearly famished, and water when parched with thirst. They acted as guides and messengers, and faithfully guarded the camp. A decided course tempered with courtesy wins at once their respect and good will. Although an impetuous race, not an angry word passed between them and Captain Lynch's party.

The expedition now returned northward to complete the survey. Notwithstanding the high wind, the tendency to drowsiness became irresistible. The men pulled mechanically, with half-closed lids, and except the oarsmen and Captain Lynch, every one in the copper boat was fast asleep. The necessity of steering and observing every thing, alone kept him awake. The drowsy sensation, amounting almost to stupor, was greatest in the heat of the day, but did not disappear at night. Every day this stupefying influence became more painfully apparent, but Captain Lynch resolved to persevere and leave no part of the work undone, endeavoring to be as expeditious as possible without working the party too hard.

They reached Point Costigan in the afternoon of the 30th, and steered across the south-eastern bay, to search for water and for signals from 'Akil. The heat was still intense, and rendered less endurable by the white spiculae of the peninsula and the dazzling reflection from the surface of the sea. There were Arabs among the low bushes on the shore; and preparing for hostilities they pulled directly in and hailed them. One of them proved to be Jum'ah, a messenger of 'Akil, who

turned directly across
eir measurements into
Séyál Sebbeh (Ravine
Masada, rose perpen-
ed feet. It is isolated
mmit stands a line of
ferod. "The peculiar
nt of coagulated blood
, and summons images
ne hundred Sicarii, the
ged the indestructible

in a direct line for Ràs
e salt mountains of Us-
Soon after passing the
stern side of Usdum, a
from the general mass,
. On examination they
carbonate of lime, cylin-
per or rounder part is
pedestal, from forty to
ly decreases in size up-
s of crystallization.

extremity of the sea, but
rounded three hundred
serve the latitude. His
not deep, then through a
efore reaching the firm
feet. From the water's
than a hundred yards
n. In returning to the
e to the water, but sank
ounder through. They
e running over burning

ence of unmitigated deso-
salt-mountain of Usdum,
t least of the catastrophe
barren cliffs of Moab, in
d shelter. To the south
ains, with the high hills
israelites repeatedly over-
calm and motionless sea,
homs deep in the slimy
ill-fated cities of Sodom
ing to the eye, and the

had arrived at Kerak. In the evening the son of Abd' Allah, Christian shekh of Kerak, came with an invitation to visit his father at his mountain fortress, seventeen miles distant. An invitation was also received from the Moslem shekh. Captain Lynch accepted it with a full sense of the risk incurred, but the whole party was so much debilitated by the sirocco and the subsequent heat, that it became absolutely necessary to invigorate it at all hazards.

The deputation from Kerak expressed great delight at seeing fellow-Christians on the shores of this sea, saying that if they had known of their first arrival they would have gone round and invited them over. It was a strange sight to see these wild Arab Christians uniting themselves so cordially to the Americans. These people had never seen a boat, and could hardly believe that any thing so large could be made to float. One of the fellahs from Mezra'a, when he first beheld them, stood for some time lost in thought and then burst forth in joyful shouts of recognition. He was an Egyptian by birth, and being stolen away when young, had forgotten every thing connected with his native country until the sight of the boats reminded him of having seen things resembling them; and the Nile, and the boats upon it, and the familiar scenes of his childhood, rushed upon his memory.

On the 1st of May the horses and mules for which they had sent, arrived, and with them came Mohammed, the son of Abd' el Kadir, the Moslem shekh, and Abd' Allah, the Christian shekh. Mohammed was overbearing in his manners, and his almost insulting conduct awakened distrust. He had come down with about eight men, his brother with fourteen more, and by two and three at a time they continued to drop in, until by nine o'clock there were upward of forty around the camp. Early next morning the party set out; the sailors mounted on miserable cradles, extending along the backs of their mules, while the horses were little better caparisoned. One of the seamen, who had been least affected by the heat, remained at his own request. To him and the Bedouin Jum'ah, who had several Arabs with him, Captain Lynch gave charge of the boats.

Arriving at the brow of a hill, three thousand feet above the Dead Sea, they had before them a high rolling plain, where the grass was withered and the grain blighted by the sirocco and the locust. Turning to the north, they passed along the walls and towers of the town, into which they entered by an arch cut through the rock. The passage was thirty feet high and twelve wide, and about eighty feet long in an irregular line.

The people assembled on dirt-heaps and mud roofs to see the strangers pass, and the room they occupied was crowded the whole day; the doorway sometimes blocked up. It seemed to be regarded as a sort of menagerie. When at length the men were left to themselves, they lay down under a roof for the first time in twenty-three days, having first enjoyed the unwonted luxury of a draught of sweet milk.

Abd' Allah, Christian
his father at his moun-
tion was also received
ted it with a full sense
so much debilitated by
no absolutely necessary

delight at seeing fellow-
if they had known of
and invited them over.
Christians uniting them-
people had never seen a
large could be made to
first beheld them, stood
with in joyful shouts of
and being stolen away
ed with his native coun-
h of having seen things
upon it, and the familiar

for which they had sent,
son of Abd' el Kadir, the
shekh. Mohammed was
ulting conduct awakened
ght men, his brother with
e they continued to drop
forty around the camp.
ers mounted on miserable
es, while the horses were
n, who had been least af-
t. To him and the Be-
nim, Captain Lynch gave

and feet above the Dead
ain, where the grass was
o and the locust. Turn-
and towers of the town,
h the rock. The passage
out eighty feet long in an

mud roofs to see the
s crowded the whole day;
ed to be regarded as a
were left to themselves,
n twenty-three days, hav-
draught of sweet milk.

Placing a board against the door, that its fall might rouse them at an attempted entrance, they lay down with their arms in their hands. Mohammed, who had been in an ill-humor at receiving no presents, came in early next morning, very surly. Captain Lynch refused to converse with him, but referred him to 'Akil, whom he had commissioned to procure horses, and make the necessary purchases. The party would gladly have remained another day for the benefit of the mountain air, and to examine the neighborhood, but from appearances it was deemed unsafe. While they made preparations for departing, the Arabs were in consultation below, Mohammed gesticulating violently. But 'Akil and his friends they knew would stand by them, and their horses were procured. When they were starting, Mohammed again demanded baksheesh, and, being refused, he said he would not go down with them, and sneeringly asked what they would do if they found a hundred men in their path. They replied that they would take care of themselves, and set out. They had not gone over a mile when Mohammed, black and surly, overtook them with some horsemen. Captain Lynch now had the game in his own hands, and detaching an officer and one of his most trusty men, he directed them to keep by him, and shoot him at the first sign of treachery. At length Mohammed realized that he was a prisoner, and from being insolent and overbearing, he became first respectful, and then submissive.

With a light breeze they steered up the bay and along the coast toward the river Arnon, of the Old Testament, upon which Aroer, one of the principal cities of the Moabites, was situated. Eight miles north of it is the supposed Mount Nebo, from the summit of which Moses viewed the promised land. As they proceeded, the scenery was grand and wild. Wherever there was a rivulet, its course was marked by lines of green cane and tamarisk, and an occasional date-palm. On the 4th of May they stopped for the night in a cove formed by the Zerka Main, the outlet of the hot springs of Callirrhoe. The stream, twelve feet wide and ten inches deep, rushed out with great velocity into the sea. The water is slightly sulphurous to the taste; its temperature ninety-five degrees. They bathed in the sea, and afterward in the stream. It was a delightful transition from the dense, acrid water of the sea, which made their innumerable sores smart severely, to the soft, tepid and refreshing waters of Callirrhoe. The water of the sea was very buoyant; it was difficult to keep their feet beneath the surface. A few days before, they had tried whether a horse and donkey could swim in the sea without turning over; the animals turned a little to one side, but did not lose their balance. A muscular man floated nearly breast-high without the least exertion.

Next day they sounded across to Ain Turäbeh, making a straight line to intersect the diagonal one of the preceding day. Two furlongs from land the soundings were twenty-three fathoms; the next cast, five minutes after, gave one hundred and seventy-four, gradually deepening

to two hundred and eighteen fathoms; the bottom soft brown mud, with rectangular crystals of salt. At Ain Turábeh they found their tents in the charge of Sherif. Two Arabs were sent to meet Mr. Aulick, at the mouth of the Jordan; he returned next day, having completed the topography of the shore, and taken observations at the mouth of the river. Dr. Anderson had collected many specimens in the geological department, and the exploration of the sea was now complete.

On the 9th Mr. Dale went with the interpreter to reconnoiter the route over the desert toward Jerusalem. Two sick seamen were sent to the convent at Mar Saba. In the evening the party bathed in the Dead Sea preparatory to their spending their twenty-second and last night upon it. They had now carefully sounded this sea, determined its geographical position, taken the exact topography of its shore, ascertained the temperature, width, depth, and velocity of its tributaries, collected specimens of every kind, and noted the winds, currents, changes of weather, and all atmospheric phenomena.

On the 10th the tents were struck, and the party ascended the pass of Ain Turábeh. They proceeded to the convent of Mar Saba, and thence continued their route toward Jerusalem, where they arrived on the 17th. There were many Jewish women and children, clothed in white, under the olive-trees in the valley as they passed. They were families from the city, who thus came to spend the day beneath the shade, away from the stifling air of the Jews' quarter. Next day the boats were sent to Jaffa, under the care of Sherif, and the party remained in camp until the 22d, during which time the officers and men had time to recruit, and to visit Jerusalem and its vicinity. On breaking up the camp, they started to run a line of level across to the Mediterranean, thirty-three miles distant, in a direct line. The desert being passed, they substituted mules for camels, to transport the baggage. They found the depression of the surface of the Dead Sea below that of the Mediterranean to be a little over thirteen hundred feet.

After remaining a few days at Jaffa, the land party, under the command of Mr. Dale, started on the morning of June 6th, for Acre. In the evening Captain Lynch embarked with the remainder in an Arab brig, and arrived at Acre on the next evening. Charles Homer, a seaman, with the land party, was severely wounded on the way by the accidental discharge of a gun. He was sent immediately to Beyrout, in charge of Mr. Bedlow and a few men, and placed under medical attendance.

On the 10th, Captain Lynch started for Nazareth, whence he proceeded to the sources of the Jordan, still taking observations to connect with the preceding ones. Receiving intelligence, on the 19th, that Homer was out of danger, and that Messrs. Aulick and Bedlow were on the way to rejoin him, he started to lead the party over the Anti-Lebanon into the plain of Damascus. After spending a few days in

om soft brown mud,
Abel they found their
ere sent to meet Mr.
rned next day, having
en observations at the
many specimens in the
the sea was now cen-

ter to reconnoiter the
sick seamen were sent
the party bathed in the
twenty-second and last
ed this sea, determined
graphy of its shore, as
elocity of its tributaries,
d the winds, currents,
ena.

party ascended the pass
nvent of Mar Saba, and
, where they arrived on
and children, clothed in
they passed. They were
nd the day beneath the
quarter. Next day the
herif, and the party re-
me the officers and men
its vicinity. On break-
level across to the Med-
st line. The desert being
o transport the baggage.
the Dead Sea below that
n hundred feet.

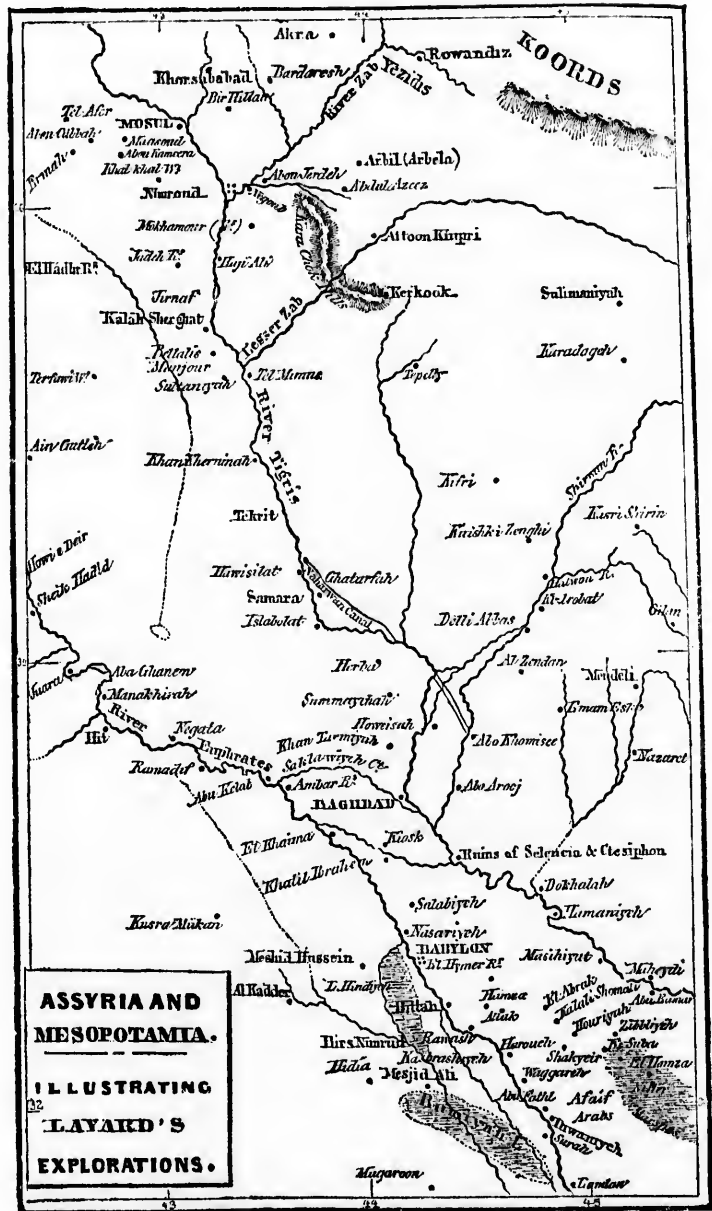
nd party, under the com-
June 6th, for Acre. In
e remainder in an Arab
. Charles Homer, a sea-
ded on the way by the
immediately to Beyrout,
placed under medical at-

Nazareth, whence he pro-
cing observations to con-
lligence, on the 19th, that
Aulick and Bedlow were
the party over the Anti-
r spending a few days in

Damascus, they proceeded by a mountainous road toward the sea. On the 30th they were four thousand feet above the level of the sea; the road was difficult, and some of the men were sick. Mr. Dale, who was the worst, was sent ahead with Mr. Bedlow, that he might obtain the best medical advice as soon as possible. On arriving at Beyrout next day, nearly the whole party were exhausted, and some required immediate medical attendance, but in a few days they were mostly convalescent. On the 10th Mr. Dale rode to Bhamdun, twelve miles distant, in the hope of being more speedily invigorated by the mountain air. It was on the dreadful Damascus road, which they had traveled eleven days before, and he arrived thoroughly exhausted, but was much recruited next day. On the second day, however, a sirocco set in, which lasted for three days, and completely prostrated him. He lingered until the 24th, when he died. Determined to take the remains home, if possible, Captain Lynch started immediately with them for Beyrout, and proceeded by a slow, dreary ride down the rugged mountain by torchlight.

On the 30th the physicians advised them to leave at once, as there was no hope of recovery of the sick at Beyrout. Captain Lynch therefore chartered a small French brig for Malta. An accident in transporting the remains to the vessel, and the superstitious fears of the captain and crew, compelled him to land them, and at sunset, as the Turkish batteries were saluting the first night of the Ramadan, they escorted the body to the Frank cemetery, and laid it beneath a Pride of India-tree. A few appropriate chapters of the Bible were read, and some affecting remarks made by the Rev. Mr. Thompson; after which the sailors advanced and fired three volleys over the grave.

At 9 p. m. they embarked on board the *Perle d'Orient* and after a tedious passage of thirty-eight days, during which they suffered much from sickness, debility, and scarcity of food and water, they reached Malta, where they received every possible attention from the American Consul, Mr. Winthrop. On the 12th of September, the *Supply* having arrived, the expedition re-embarked, with only three of its members on the sick-list. They touched at Naples, Marseilles, and Gibraltar, in the hope of procuring supplies, but in the two former they were refused pratique, and from the latter they were peremptorily ordered away. Depending therefore on the rains to replenish their supply of water, they pursued their homeward voyage, and early in December reached the United States.



SCHÖNBERG & CO. AGRAPHERY NEW YORK.

menced excavations in the large mound of Kouyunjik, on the opposite side of the Tigris. Only some fragments of brick and alabaster, upon which were engraved a few letters in the cuneiform, or arrow-headed character, had then been discovered. After reaching Constantinople, Layard wrote to M. Botta, advising him to excavate in the mounds of Nimroud; but the latter gentleman, following the advice of some of the natives, turned his attention to a large mound, upon which the village of Khorsabad was built. After sinking a well for some distance through the rubbish, the workmen came to a wall built of sculptured slabs of gypsum. M. Botta at once directed a wider trench to be formed, and to be carried in the direction of the wall. He soon found that he had opened a chamber, which was connected with others, and constructed of slabs of gypsum covered with sculptured representations of battles, sieges, and similar events. His wonder may easily be imagined. A new history had been suddenly opened to him—the records of an unknown people were before him. He was equally at a loss to account for the age and the nature of the monument. The art shown in the sculptures; the dresses of the figures; their arms and the objects which accompanied them, were all new to him, and afforded no clew to the epoch of the erection of the edifice, and to the people who were its founders. However, it was evident that the monument appertained to a very ancient and very civilized people; and it was natural from its position to refer it to the inhabitants of Nineveh, a city, which, although it could not have occupied a site so distant from the Tigris, must have been in the vicinity of the place. M. Botta had discovered an Assyrian edifice, the first, probably, which had been exposed to the view of man since the fall of the Assyrian empire.

The excavation was continued, and by the beginning of 1845, the monument had been completely uncovered. The researches of M. Botta were not extended beyond Khorsabad, and, having secured many fine specimens of Assyrian sculpture, he returned to Europe with a rich collection of inscriptions, the most important result of his discovery. This success increased Layard's desire to explore the ruins of Assyria. He was more than ever convinced that Khorsabad was not the only relic of Assyrian art, and that, as it could not represent Nineveh, the remains of that city were to be found at Nimroud. He received little encouragement in his desires, until, in the autumn of 1845, Sir Stratford Canning, British Minister at Constantinople, expressed his readiness to incur, for a limited period, the expenses of an exploration. Layard accepted the proposal, set out from Constantinople at once, and, traveling with all speed, reached Mosul by the last of October.

"There were many reasons," says Layard, "which rendered it necessary that my plans should be concealed, until I was ready to put them into execution. Although I had always experienced from M. Botta the most friendly assistance, there were others who did not share his sentiments; from the authorities and the people of the town I could only

expect the most decided opposition. On the 8th of November, having secretly procured a few tools, and engaged a mason at the moment of my departure, and carrying with me a variety of guns, spears, and other formidable weapons, I declared that I was going to hunt wild boars in a neighboring village, and floated down the Tigris on a small raft constructed for my journey. I was accompanied by Mr. Ross, a British merchant of Mosul, my cawass, and a servant."

On reaching Nimroud, Layard succeeded in engaging six Arabs to work under his direction. The next morning he commenced operations, and was not long left in suspense. Seeing a piece of alabaster projecting above the soil, he ordered his men to dig around it, and found that it was the upper part of a large slab. Its exhumation revealed a second, then a third, and in the course of the morning ten were discovered, the whole forming a square, which was apparently the top of a chamber. Digging down the face of the stones, an inscription in the cuneiform character was soon exposed to view. The next day he hired more workmen, and completed the excavation of the chamber, which was built of slabs eight feet high. "In the rubbish near the bottom of the chamber," says he, "I found several ivory ornaments, upon which were traces of gilding; among them was the figure of a man in long robes, carrying in one hand the Egyptian crux ansata, part of a crouching sphinx, and flowers designed with great taste and elegance. Awad, who had his own suspicions of the object of my search, which he could scarcely persuade himself was limited to mere stones, carefully collected all the scattered fragments of gold leaf he could find in the rubbish; and, calling me aside in a mysterious and confidential fashion, produced them wrapped up in a piece of dingy paper. 'O Bey,' said he, 'Wallah! your books are right, and the Franks know that which is hid from the true believer. Here is the gold, sure enough, and, please God, we shall find it all in a few days. Only don't say any thing about it to those Arabs, for they are asses and can not hold their tongues. The matter will come to the ears of the pasha.' The shekh was much surprised, and equally disappointed, when I generously presented him with the treasures he had collected, and all such as he might hereafter discover."

The news of this discovery soon reached Mosul, and created quite a sensation. It was rumored that immense treasures had been found, and the pasha, who was very oppressive and unpopular, determined to interfere, and stop further excavations. Layard, to avoid difficulty, pretended to acquiesce, but asked for a guard to protect the sculptures, while he made drawings of them. During the few days which intervened while the subject was under discussion, the work had been vigorously prosecuted, and several bas-reliefs representing battles and sieges, and winged bulls, fourteen feet in length, were discovered. The experiment had been fairly tried; there was no longer any doubt of the existence not only of sculptures and inscriptions, but even of vast edifices in the interior of the mound of Nimroud, as all parts of it that had yet been exam-

unjik, on the opposite
k and alabaster, upon
form, or arrow-headed
aching Constantinople,
vate in the mounds of
the advice of some of
nd, upon which the vil-
well for some distance
all built of sculptured
a wider trench to be
wall. He soon found
nected with others, and
ulptured representations
er may easily be imag-
ed to him—the records
was equally at a loss to
ent. The art shown in
r arms and the objects
and afforded no clew to
the people who were its
onument appertained to
it was natural from its
n, a city, which, although
n the Tigris, must have
l discovered an Assyrian
posed to the view of man

beginning of 1845, the
researches of M. Botta
having secured many fine
to Europe with a rich col-
lt of his discovery. This
he ruins of Assyria. He
was not the only relic of
ent Nineveh, the remains
received little encourage-
5, Sir Stratford Canning,
his readiness to incur, for
on. Layard accepted the
e, and, traveling with all

"which rendered it neces-
I was ready to put them
rienced from M. Botta the
ho did not share his senti-
of the town I could only

ined, furnished remains of buildings and carved slabs. He lost no time, therefore, in acquainting Sir Stratford Canning with his discovery, and urging the necessity of a firman, or order from the Porte, which would prevent any future interference on the part of the authorities, or the inhabitants of the country.

About this time word reached Mosul that the pasha was to be removed, and another appointed in his place. The country was very unsettled, and as it was impossible to continue the excavations at Nimroud, Layard proceeded to Baghdad, to consult Major Rawlinson, and to make arrangements for the removal of the sculptures to England. Returning to Mosul in January, 1846, he found the new governor, Ismail Pasha, who received him with courtesy, and gave him full permission to continue his researches at Nimroud. He took up his residence at Nimroud, and engaged a party of Nestorian Christians to assist him in the work. About the middle of February, the excavations were recommenced, in the north-western side of the mound. One chamber opened into another, and these into halls and courts, the walls of which were of alabaster, covered with bas-reliefs and inscriptions. The sculptures assumed a more interesting character, the further they advanced; the monarch, with his attendant ministers and servants, tributary kings, battles, sieges, and finally the gods of a lost religion, colossal figures carved with the most astonishing minuteness of detail, were one after another exposed to view.

"On all these figures," says Layard, "paint could be faintly distinguished, particularly on the hair, beard, eyes, and sandals. The slabs on which they were sculptured had sustained no injury, and could be without difficulty packed and moved to any distance. There could no longer be any doubt that they formed part of a chamber, and that, to explore it completely, I had only to continue along the wall, now partly uncovered.

"On the morning following these discoveries, I rode to the encampment of Sheikh Abd-ur-rahman, and was returning to the mound, when I saw two Arabs of his tribe urging their mares to the top of their speed. On approaching me they stopped. 'Hasten, O Bey,' exclaimed one of them—'hasten to the diggers, for they have found Nimrod himself. Wallah, it is wonderful, but it is true! we have seen him with our eyes. There is no God but God;' and both joining in this pious exclamation, they galloped off, without further words, in the direction of their tents.

"On reaching the ruins I descended into the new trench, and found the workmen, who had already seen me, as I approached, standing near a heap of baskets and cloaks. While Awad advanced, and asked for a present to celebrate the occasion, the Arabs withdrew the screen they had hastily constructed, and disclosed an enormous human head sculptured in full out of the alabaster of the country. They had uncovered the upper part of the figure, the remainder of which was still buried in

the earth. I saw at once that the head must belong to a winged lion or bull, similar to those of Khorsabad and Persepolis. It was in admirable preservation. The expression was calm, yet majestic, and the outline of the features showed a freedom and knowledge of art, scarcely to be looked for in the works of so remote a period. The cap had three horns, and, unlike that of the human-headed bulls hitherto found in Assyria, was rounded and without ornament at the top.

"I was not surprised that the Arabs had been amazed and terrified at this apparition. It required no stretch of imagination to conjure up the most strange fancies. This gigantic head, blanched with age, thus rising from the bowels of the earth, might well have belonged to one of those fearful beings which are pictured in the traditions of the country, as appearing to mortals, slowly ascending from the regions below. One of the workmen, on catching the first glimpse of the monster, had thrown down his basket and run off toward Mosul as fast as his legs could carry him. I learned this with regret, as I anticipated the consequences.

"While I was superintending the removal of the earth, which still clung to the sculpture, and giving directions for the continuation of the work, a noise of horsemen was heard, and presently Abd-ur-rahman, followed by half his tribe, appeared on the edge of the trench. As soon as the two Arabs had reached the tents, and published the wonders they had seen, every one mounted his mare and rode to the mound, to satisfy himself of the truth of these inconceivable reports. When they beheld the head they all cried out together, 'There is no God but God, and Mohammed is his Prophet!' It was some time before the shekh could be prevailed upon to descend into the pit, and convince himself that the image he saw was of stone. 'This is not the work of men's hands,' exclaimed he, 'but of those infidel giants of whom the Prophet, peace be with him! has said, that they were higher than the tallest date-tree; this is one of the idols which Noah, peace be with him! cursed before the flood.' In this opinion, the result of a careful examination, all the bystanders concurred. I now ordered a trench to be dug due south from the head, in the expectation of finding a corresponding figure, and before night-fall reached the object of my search about twelve feet distant."

The sensation caused by this discovery, and the prejudices of the Moslem Cadi of Mosul, obliged him to suspend operations for a time. By the end of March, however, he uncovered a pair of winged human-headed lions, the human shape being continued to the waist and furnished with arms. "In one hand each figure carried a goat or stag, and in the other, which hung down by the side, a branch with three flowers. They formed a northern entrance into the chamber of which the lions previously described were the southern portal. I completely uncovered the latter, and found them to be entire. They were about twelve feet in height, and the same number in length. The body and limbs were admirably portrayed; the muscles and bones, although

strongly developed to display the strength of the animal, showed at the same time a correct knowledge of its anatomy and form. Expanded wings sprung from the shoulder and spread over the back; a knotted girdle, ending in tassels, encircled the loins. These magnificent specimens of Assyrian art were in perfect preservation; the most minute lines in the details of the wings and in the ornaments had been retained with their original freshness. Not a character was wanting in the inscriptions."

The operations having been suspended until further means should arrive from Constantinople, Layard determined to pay a visit to Sofuk, the shekh of the great Arab tribe of Shammar, which occupied nearly the whole of Mesopotamia. On this excursion he was accompanied by Mr. Rassam, the English vice-consul, and his wife, and Mr. Ross. On his return, he received the firman from Constantinople, and a further supply of money, which enabled him to resume the work of excavation. About thirty men, chiefly Arabs, were employed, and their labors were rewarded by the discovery of many more chambers, filled with bas-reliefs of the most interesting character, in perfect preservation. Layard now determined to remove the most valuable specimens, for transportation to England. The slabs were sawed into several pieces, and all the superfluous stone cut away; after which they were packed in felts and matting, and deposited in rough wooden cases. They were then floated down the Tigris to Baghdad, on a raft made of poplar wood and inflated skins.

By this time the summer had arrived, and the heat became so great that the explorer's health began to suffer from his continued labors on a spot where the thermometer frequently reached 115° in the shade. He therefore returned to Mosul, and excavated for a time in the mound of Kouyunjik, where he discovered an entrance formed by two winged figures, leading into a chamber, paved with limestone slabs. As the figures were mutilated and the walls of the chamber without inscriptions, he gave up any further exploration, and returned to Nimroud in the middle of August. His health, however, again gave way, and he then determined to make an excursion to the Tiyari Mountains, inhabited by the Chaldean Christians, and to the Alpine country of Koordistan. His description of this journey, which occupied some weeks, and of the annual religious festival of the Yezidis, or Devil-Worshippers, in the valley of Shekh Adi, are of great interest and value. After his return to Mosul, he accompanied the pasha on a military expedition into the Sinjar Mountains.

"On my return to Mosul," he writes, "I received letters from England, informing me that Sir Stratford Canning had presented the sculptures discovered in Assyria, and had made over all advantages that might be derived from the order given to him by the sultan, to the British nation; and that the British Museum had received a grant of funds for the continuation of the researches commenced at Nimroud,

and elsewhere. The grant was small, and scarcely adequate to the objects in view." Nevertheless, he determined to persevere, and accomplish as much as possible, with the limited means. Mr. Hormuzd Rassam took the part of overseer and pay-master, and soon acquired an extraordinary influence among the Arabs. After building a winter-residence for himself and servants, Layard recommenced the excavations, on a large scale, on the 1st of November.

The six weeks following the commencement of excavations upon a large scale, were among the most prosperous, and fruitful in events, during his researches in Assyria. One of the most remarkable discoveries was made in the center of the mound, near where the colossal winged bulls had been found. After quarrying out a shaft of about fifty feet in length, and finding nothing but fragments of sculptures in yellow limestone, Layard was about to abandon the work, when a corner of black marble was uncovered, which proved to be part of an obelisk, about seven feet high, containing twenty small bas-reliefs, and an inscription of two hundred and ten lines. The whole was in the best preservation; scarcely a character of the inscription was wanting; and the figures were as sharp and well defined as if they had been carved but a few days before. The king is twice represented, followed by his attendants; a prisoner is at his feet, and his vizir and eunuchs are introducing men leading various animals, and carrying vases and other objects of tribute on their shoulders, or in their hands. The animals are the elephant, the rhinoceros, the Bactrian, or two-humped camel, the wild bull, the lion, a stag, and various kinds of monkeys.

"I lost no time in copying the inscriptions," says Layard, "and drawing the bas-reliefs, upon this precious relic. It was then carefully packed, to be transported at once to Baghdad. A party of trustworthy Arabs were chosen to sleep near it at night; and I took every precaution that the superstitious and prejudices of the natives of the country, and the jealousy of rival antiquaries, could suggest."

Early in December, a sufficient number of bas-reliefs had been collected to load another raft, and preparations were accordingly made for sending a second cargo to Baghdad. "On Christmas day," says Layard, "I had the satisfaction of seeing a raft, bearing twenty-three cases, in one of which was the obelisk, floating down the river. I watched them until they were out of sight, and then galloped into Mosul to celebrate the festivities of the season, with the few Europeans whom duty or business had collected in this remote corner of the globe.

"The north-west palace," he continues, "was naturally the most interesting portion of the ruins, and to it were principally directed my researches. I had satisfied myself beyond a doubt that it was the most ancient building yet explored in Assyria. Not having been exposed to a conflagration like other edifices, the sculptures, bas-reliefs, and inscriptions, which it contained, were still admirably preserved. When the excavations were resumed after Christmas, eight chambers had been

discovered. There were now so many outlets and entrances, that I had no trouble in finding new rooms and halls—one chamber leading into another. By the end of the month of April I had explored almost the whole building; and had opened twenty-eight chambers cased with alabaster slabs."

Before his means should be completely exhausted, Layard determined to make some excavations in the mounds of Kalah Shergat, further down the Tigris—mounds which equal in extent those of Nimroud and Kouyunjik. The only important object he discovered at this place was a headless sitting figure of black basalt, of the size of life. On his return to Nimroud, he set about the task of removing two of the winged bulls and lions, for transportation to England. With the scanty mechanical contrivances of the country, this was a work of immense labor and difficulty, and weeks were employed in taking the colossal figures from their stations at the doorway of the palace, bringing them to the bank of the Tigris, and shipping them on large rafts, ready to proceed to Bassora. Every thing was at last safely accomplished, and some sheep having been slaughtered to insure a propitious voyage, the rafts disappeared on their doubtful way down the Tigris.

"By the middle of May," says Layard, "I had finished my work at Nimroud. My house was dismantled. The windows and doors, which had been temporarily fitted up, were taken out; and, with the little furniture that had been collected together, were placed on the backs of donkeys and camels to be carried to the town. The Arabs struck their tents and commenced their march. I remained behind until every one had left, and then turned my back upon the deserted village. We were the last to quit the plains of Nimroud; and, indeed, nearly the whole country to the south of Mosul, as far as the Zab, became, after our departure, a wilderness." After making further excavations at Kouyunjik, sufficient to convince him that the mound covered the ruins of a palace of great extent and magnificence, Layard determined to return to Europe, as the funds placed at his disposal were exhausted, and he learned that the British Museum was not inclined to encourage further explorations. Leaving Mosul on the 24th of June, 1847, he took the road to Constantinople, on his way to England.

SECOND VISIT TO NINEVEH.

Layard remained some months in England to recruit his health, and publish the results of his travels and researches. In 1848, he returned to Constantinople and resumed his post as attaché to the British embassy. The interest which his work excited, however, and the acknowledged importance of his discoveries, induced the trustees of the British Museum to propose to him a second expedition into Assyria. He at once accepted this offer, and drew up an extended plan which should

embrace the thorough exploration not only of the Assyrian remains, but also those of Babylonia, but this was not accepted. He was merely directed to resume the excavations at Nimroud. Mr. Cooper, an artist, was selected by the trustees of the Museum to accompany him—in addition to whom he was joined at Constantinople by Mr. Hormuzd Rassam, and Dr. Sandwith, an English physician. Cawal Yusuf, the head of the preachers of the Yezidis, with four chiefs from the neighborhood of Diarbekir, who had been for some months at Constantinople, completed his party.

On the 28th of August, 1849, the expedition left the Bosphorus in a steamer for Trebizond, where they landed on the 31st, and continued their journey by way of Erzeroum, the lake of Wan, and the mountain country of the Koords, to Mosul. The journey was accomplished without accident, and on arriving at their destination Layard was received with the greatest enthusiasm by his old friends and workmen. He immediately hired his former assistants, secured the services of a hundred men, and commenced a thorough excavation of the mound of Kouyunjik. The accumulation of earth was so great that it was necessary to adopt a system of tunneling, removing only as much earth as was necessary to show the sculptured walls. While the preparations were going forward, he accepted an invitation from the Yezidis, and again witnessed their peculiar religious festival in the valley of Shekh Adi.

On the 18th of October, Layard rode to Nimroud for the first time. He says: "The mound had undergone no change. There it rose from the plain, the same sun-burnt yellow heap that it had stood for twenty centuries. The earth and rubbish, which had been heaped over the excavated chambers and sculptured slabs, had settled, and had left uncovered in sinking the upper part of several bas-reliefs. A few colossal heads of winged figures rose calmly above the level of the soil, and with two pairs of winged bulls, which had not been reburied on account of their mutilated condition, was all that remained above ground of the north-west palace, that great storehouse of Assyrian history and art. Since my departure the surface of the mound had again been furrowed by the plow, and ample crops had this year rewarded the labors of the husbandman. The ruins of the south-west palace were still uncovered. The Arabs had respected the few bas-reliefs which stood against the crumbling walls, and Saleh Shahir pointed to them as a proof of the watchfulness of his people during my long absence."

Collecting together a number of his former workmen, he ordered them to continue the excavations at the points where they had formerly been abandoned. For two months his time was divided between Kouyunjik and Nimroud, excavations being carried on at both places without interruption. "By the end of November," he writes, "several entire chambers had been excavated at Kouyunjik, and many bas-reliefs of great interest had been discovered. The four sides of a hall had now been explored. In the center of each side was a grand entrance, guarded

by colossal human-headed bulls. This magnificent hall was no less than one hundred and twenty-four feet in length by ninety feet in breadth, the longest sides being those to the north and south. It appears to have formed a center, around which the principal chambers in this part of the palace were grouped. Its walls had been completely covered with the most elaborate and highly-finished sculptures. Unfortunately all the bas-reliefs, as well as the gigantic monsters at the entrances, had suffered more or less from the fire which had destroyed the edifice; but enough of them still remained to show the subject, and even to enable me in many places to restore it entirely.

"There can be no doubt that the king represented as superintending the building of the mounds and the placing of the colossal bulls, is Sennacherib himself, and that the sculptures celebrate the building at Nineveh of the great palace and its adjacent temples described in the inscriptions as the work of this monarch. The bas-reliefs were accompanied in most instances by short epigraphs in the cuneiform character, containing a description of the subject with the name of the city to which the sculptures were brought. The great inscriptions on the bulls at the entrances of Kouyunjik record, it would seem, not only historical events, but, with great minuteness, the manner in which the edifice itself was erected, its general plan, and the various materials employed in decorating the halls, chambers, and roofs. When completely deciphered they will perhaps enable us to restore, with some confidence, both the general plan and elevation of the building."

During the month of December, several discoveries of the greatest interest and importance were made, both at Kouyunjik and Nimroud. At the former place, the grand entrance to the palace of Sennacherib, was discovered, guarded by two human-headed, winged bulls, twenty feet long, and when entire, more than twenty feet high. This entrance led to the uncovering of the whole south-eastern façade of the palace. Ten colossal bulls, with six human figures of gigantic proportions, were here grouped together, and the length of the whole, without including the sculptured walls continued beyond the smaller entrances, was one hundred and eighty feet. On the great bulls forming the center portal of the grand entrance were inscriptions containing the annals of six years of the reign of Sennacherib, besides numerous particulars connected with the religion of the Assyrians. In one of these inscriptions, which has been deciphered by Dr. Hincks, there occurs a most interesting confirmation of the historic record of the Bible. "Hezekiah, king of Judah," says the Assyrian king, "who had not submitted to my authority, forty-six of his principal cities, and fortresses, and villages depending upon them, of which I took no account, I captured, and carried away their spoil. I *shut up* (?) himself within Jerusalem, his capital city. The fortified towns, and the rest of his towns, which I spoiled, I severed from his country, and gave to the kings of Ascalon, Ekron, and Gaza, so as to make his country small. In addition to the former tribute imposed upon

their countries, I added a tribute, the nature of which I fixed." The next passage is somewhat defaced, but the substance of it appears to be that he took from Hezekiah the treasure he had collected in Jerusalem, thirty talents of gold and eight hundred talents of silver, the treasure of his palace, besides his sons and his daughters, and his male and female servants or slaves, and brought them all to Nineveh.

At Nimroud, Layard made discoveries which proved to him that the high conical mound at the north-western corner of the ruins, was the remains of a square tower, which he conjectured to have been the tomb of Sardanapalus. From the amount of rubbish, he supposed the tower to have been at least two hundred feet high. In another part of the ruins a vaulted drain was discovered, near which was a perfect arch of brick-work. One of the bronze sockets of the palace-gate, weighing several pounds, was also found in one of the chambers. But the most important discovery of all was made at the commencement of January, 1850. A new chamber was opened in the north-west palace, adjoining the great central-hall. The walls were of plain, sun-dried bricks, and there were no sculptured slabs, but in the earth and rubbish which filled it, were some of the most interesting Assyrian relics yet found. The first objects discovered were two plain copper vessels or caldrons, two feet and a half in diameter, and three feet deep, with their mouths closed by large tiles. They were completely filled with small articles, among which were bronze bells with iron tongues, hundreds of buttons and studs, made of mother-of-pearl and ivory, hooks, rosettes, and the feet of tripods. Near these caldrons were two circular flat vessels, nearly six feet in diameter, and two feet deep.

Behind the caldrons was a heap of curious and interesting objects. In one place were piled without order, one above the other, bronze cups, bowls, and dishes of various sizes and shapes. The upper vessels having been most exposed to damp, the metal had been eaten away by rust, and was crumbling into fragments, or into a green powder. As they were cleared away, more perfect specimens were taken out, until, near the pavement of the chamber, some were found almost entire. Many of the bowls and plates fitted so closely, one within the other, that they have only been detached in England. It required the greatest care and patience to separate them from the tenacious soil in which they were embedded. Around the vessels were heaped arms, remains of armor, iron instruments, glass bowls, and various objects in ivory and bronze. The arms consisted of swords, daggers, shields, and the heads of spears and arrows, which being chiefly of iron fell to pieces almost as soon as exposed to the air.

The most interesting of the ivory relics were, a carved staff, perhaps a royal scepter, part of which has been preserved, although in the last stage of decay; and several entire elephants' tusks, the largest being about two feet five inches long. In the further corner of the chamber, to the left hand, stood the royal throne. "Although it was utterly im-

possible, from the complete state of decay of the materials, to preserve any part of it entire," says Layard, "I was able, by carefully removing the earth, to ascertain that it resembled in shape the chair of state of the king, as seen in the sculptures of Kouyunjik and Khorsabad, and particularly that represented in the bas-reliefs already described, of Sennacherib receiving the captives and spoil, after the conquest of the city of Lachish. With the exception of the legs, which appear to have been partly of ivory, it was of wood, cased or overlaid with bronze, as the throne of Solomon was of ivory, overlaid with gold.

"By the 28th of January," he writes, "the colossal lions forming the portal to the great hall in the north-west palace of Nimroud were ready to be dragged to the river-bank. The walls and their sculptured paneling had been removed from both sides of them, and they stood isolated in the midst of the ruins. We rode one calm cloudless night to the mound, to look on them for the last time before they were taken from their old resting-places. The moon was at her full, and as we drew nigh to the edge of the deep wall of earth rising around them, her soft light was creeping over the stern features of the human heads, and driving before it the dark shadows which still clothed the lion forms. One by one the limbs of the gigantic sphinxes emerged from the gloom, until the monsters were unveiled before us. I shall never forget that night, or the emotions which those venerable figures caused within me. A few hours more and they were to stand no longer where they had stood unscathed amidst the wreck of man and his works for ages. It seemed almost sacrilege to tear them from their old haunts to make them a mere wonder-stock to the busy crowd of a new world. They were better suited to the desolation around them; for they had guarded the palace in its glory, and it was for them to watch over it in its ruin. Shekh Abd-ur-rahman, who had ridden with us to the mound, was troubled with no such reflections. He gazed listlessly at the grim images, wondered at the folly of the Franks, thought the night cold, and turned his mare toward his tents. We scarcely heeded his going, but stood speechless in the deserted portal, until the shadows again began to creep over its hoary guardians."

Layard had long wished to examine the river Khabour (the Chebar of the Old Testament), a branch of the Euphrates, the greater portion of which had never been explored by Europeans. Having procured the escort of Suttum, a shekh of one of the branches of the Shammar tribe, he left Mosul about the end of March, accompanied by Mr. Rassam and the rest of his party. They were absent on this excursion until the 10th of May, having been treated with the greatest hospitality by all the Bedouin tribes whom they visited. They discovered some interesting remains at Arban, on the Khabour—colossal winged bulls and lions, Egyptian scarabei and ornaments, and a curious glass bottle, upon which were old Chinese characters.

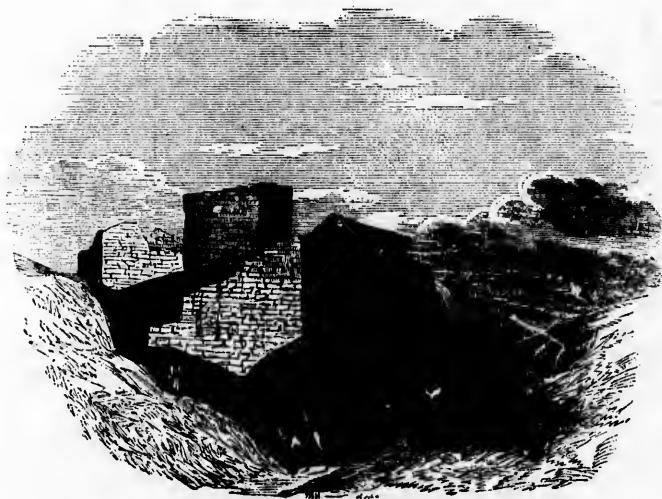
During this time the excavations at Kouyunjik had been actively

carried on. A great number of interesting historical bas-reliefs had been exhumed, together with a colossal figure of Dagon, the fish-god of the Assyrians. Much the most important discovery, however, was that of two small chambers which appear to have been a depository for the historical archives of the kingdom. To the height of a foot or more they were covered with tablets of baked clay, some entire, but the greater part broken into fragments. "These documents," says Layard, "appear to be of various kinds. Many are historical records of wars, and distant expeditions undertaken by the Assyrians; some seem to be royal decrees, and are stamped with the name of a king, the son of Essarhaddon; others again, divided into parallel columns by horizontal lines, contain lists of the gods, and probably a register of offerings made in their temples. On one Dr. Hincks has detected a table of the value of certain cuneiform letters, expressed by certain alphabetical signs, according to various modes of using them; a most important discovery: on another, apparently a list of the sacred days in each month; and on a third, what seems to be a calendar. The adjoining chambers contained similar relics, but in far smaller numbers. Many cases were filled with these tablets before I left Assyria, and a vast number of them have been found, I understand, since my departure. A large collection of them is already deposited in the British Museum. We can not overrate their value. They furnish us with materials for the complete decipherment of the cuneiform character, for restoring the language and history of Assyria, and for inquiring into the customs, sciences, and, we may perhaps even add, literature of its people. The documents that have thus been discovered at Nineveh probably exceed all that have yet been afforded by the monuments of Egypt."

As the summer came on the party was increased by the arrival of several European travelers, among whom was the Honorable Mr. Walpole. The increasing heat prostrated one member of the party after another; they were attacked with fever, and were driven to the cooler region of the Koordish Mountains to recruit. Layard still remained behind, to ship other cargoes of relics on rafts to Baghdad and Bussora, but on the 11th of July was obliged to leave, like the others. In a few days the scattered invalids were collected, and set off on a summer excursion through Koordistan. They proceeded as far as the Lake of Wan, whence some of the party returned to Europe; Layard and the remainder again directed their course toward Mosul, where they arrived on the 30th of August, after an absence of seven weeks. During this time the workmen had all been employed at Konyunjik, and had succeeded in opening many new chambers, together with a hall, one hundred and forty by one hundred and twenty-six feet, the sides of which were covered with grand historical sculptures.

EXPLORATIONS AT BABYLON.

As the winter drew near, and the season became more favorable for a visit to the marshy country of the Euphrates, Layard determined to devote some time to an exploration of the ruins of Babylon. Taking with him a small party of experienced workmen, he left Mosul on the 18th of October, and set out on a raft for Baghdad, accompanied by Mr. Rassam and Mr. Romaine, an English traveler. After a voyage of eight days the party reached Baghdad, but found the country so overrun with Bedouins and other tribes in open revolt against the government, that it was some time before they could venture to leave the city for the ruins of Babylon.



RUINS OF BABYLON.

Finally, on the 5th of December, he left Baghdad, provided with letters from the pasha and from influential Arab shekhs, to the principal chiefs of the southern tribes, and proceeded to Hillah, on the Euphrates. "After riding about four hours," he says, "we perceived a huge hill to the south. As we drew nearer, its flat table-like top and perpendicular sides, rising abruptly from an alluvial plain, showed that it was the work of man, and not a natural elevation. At length we could plainly distinguish around it great embankments, the remains of walls and canals. Gradually, as the caravan slowly advanced, the ruin assumed a definite

shape. It was the mound of Babel, better known to travelers as the Mujelibé, a name not now given to it by the Arab inhabitants of the surrounding country.

"This is the first great ruin seen on approaching ancient Babylon from the north. Beyond its long lines of palms hem in the Euphrates, which now winds through the midst of the ancient city. To the vast mound of Babel succeed long undulating heaps of earth, bricks, and pottery. A solitary mass of brickwork, rising from the summit of the largest mound, marks the remains known to the Arabs as the 'Mujelibé,' or the 'overturned.'

"Other shapeless heaps of rubbish cover for many an acre the face of the land. The lofty banks of ancient canals fret the country like natural ridges of hills. Some have long been choked with sand; others still carry the waters of the river to distant villages and palm-groves. On all sides, fragments of glass, marble, pottery, and inscribed brick are mingled with that peculiar nitrous and blanched soil, which, bred from the remains of ancient habitations, checks or destroys vegetation, and renders the site of Babylon a naked and hideous waste. Owls start from the scanty thickets, and the foul jackall skulks through the furrows. Truly 'the glory of kingdoms and the beauty of the Chaldees' excellency is as when God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah. Wild beasts of the desert lie there; and their houses are full of doleful creatures; and owls dwell there, and satyrs dance there. And the wild beasts of the island cry in their desolate houses, and dragons in their pleasant palaces,' for her day has come.

"Southward of Babel, for the distance of nearly three miles, there is almost an uninterrupted line of mounds, the ruins of vast edifices, collected together as in the heart of a great city. They are inclosed by earthen ramparts, the remains of a line of walls which, leaving the foot of Babel, stretched inland about two miles and a half from the present bed of the Euphrates, and then turning nearly at right angles completed the defenses on the southern side of the principal buildings that mark the site of Babylon, on the eastern bank of the river.

"The Birs Nimroud, the 'palace of Nimrod' of the Arabs, and 'the prison of Nebuchadnezzar' of the Jews; by old travelers believed to be the very ruins of the tower of Babel; by some, again, supposed to represent the temple of Belus, the wonder of the ancient world; and, by others, to mark the site of Borsippa, a city celebrated as the high-place of the Chaldean worship, is a vast heap of bricks, slag, and broken pottery. The dry nitrous earth of the parched plain, driven before the furious south wind, has thrown over the huge mass a thin covering of soil in which no herb or green thing can find nourishment or take root. Thus, unlike the grass-clothed mounds of the more fertile districts of Assyria, the Birs Nimroud is ever a bare and yellow heap. It rises to the height of one hundred and ninety-eight feet, and has on its summit a compact mass of brickwork, thirty-seven feet high by twenty-eight

more favorable for
ard determined to
Babylon. Taking
left Mosul on the
accompanied by Mr.
a voyage of eight
so overrun with
government, that
the city for the



provided with let-
as, to the principal
on the Euphrates.
ved a huge hill to
and perpendicular
at it was the work
ould plainly distin-
walls and canals.
assumed a definite

broad, the whole being thus two hundred and thirty-five in perpendicular height. Neither the original form or object of the edifice, of which it is the ruin, have hitherto been determined. It is too solid for the walls of a building, and its shape is not that of the remains of a tower. It is pierced by square holes, apparently made to admit air through the compact structure. On one side of it, beneath the crowning masonry, lie huge fragments torn from the pile itself. The calcined and vitreous surface of the bricks fused into rock-like masses, show that their fall may have been caused by lightning; and, as the ruin is rent almost from top to bottom, early Christian travelers, as well as some of more recent date, have not hesitated to recognise in them proofs of that Divine vengeance, which, according to tradition, arrested by fire from heaven the impious attempt of the first descendants of Noah."

The excavations at Babylon produced no important result. The vast accumulation of rubbish, much of which had been already explored, rendered it very difficult and dangerous to carry shafts or tunnels to any distance, as the loose mass continually fell in upon the workmen. The principal articles found were coffins, the contents of which fell to dust when exposed to the air, arrow-heads, glass bottles, and vases of earthenware. Relinquishing, finally, any further explorations at this place, Layard set out on the 15th of January, 1851, for the mounds of Niffer and Wurka, in the country of the Afijj Arabs, about fifty miles south of Hillah, in the midst of the marshes which lie between the Euphrates and the Tigris. This was a perilous journey, as the road was infested with tribes of marauding Arabs, but they were fortunate enough to escape attack. Excavations were carried on for some days in the mounds of Niffer, and great numbers of coffins of glazed earthenware, containing bones and dust, discovered. The mound of Wurka is composed almost entirely of these coffins, which must amount to many hundred thousands.

In a few days Layard was stricken down by fever, and the situation of his party became perilous, on account of the warfare among the Arab tribes. He therefore judged it prudent to return, and succeeded in reaching Baghdad in safety, though completely exhausted, while his Arab workmen were attacked and plundered on the road. He left Baghdad for Mosul on the 27th of February, traveling by land under the protection of Sahiman, one of the shekhs of the Shammar Arabs. After his return to Mosul the excavations at Kouyunjik and Nimroud were carried on for some time, until it became evident that the richest treasures of the mounds had been discovered and secured. The funds appropriated for the purpose were also nearly exhausted by this time, and Layard determined to return to Europe with his collections, leaving Mr. Hodder, an artist who had been sent out by the trustees of the British Museum, to take charge of the exhumed palaces. On the 28th of April he bade adieu to his faithful Arab friends and left Mosul. His second work was published in 1853, and in the following year he was

elected a member of Parliament. Few works published in modern times are more interesting and valuable than the narratives of his explorations, and his visits to the tribes of the Assyrian Desert, and the mountains of Koordistan. This outline of his discoveries scarcely gives more than a glimpse of the wealth of information contained in his volumes.

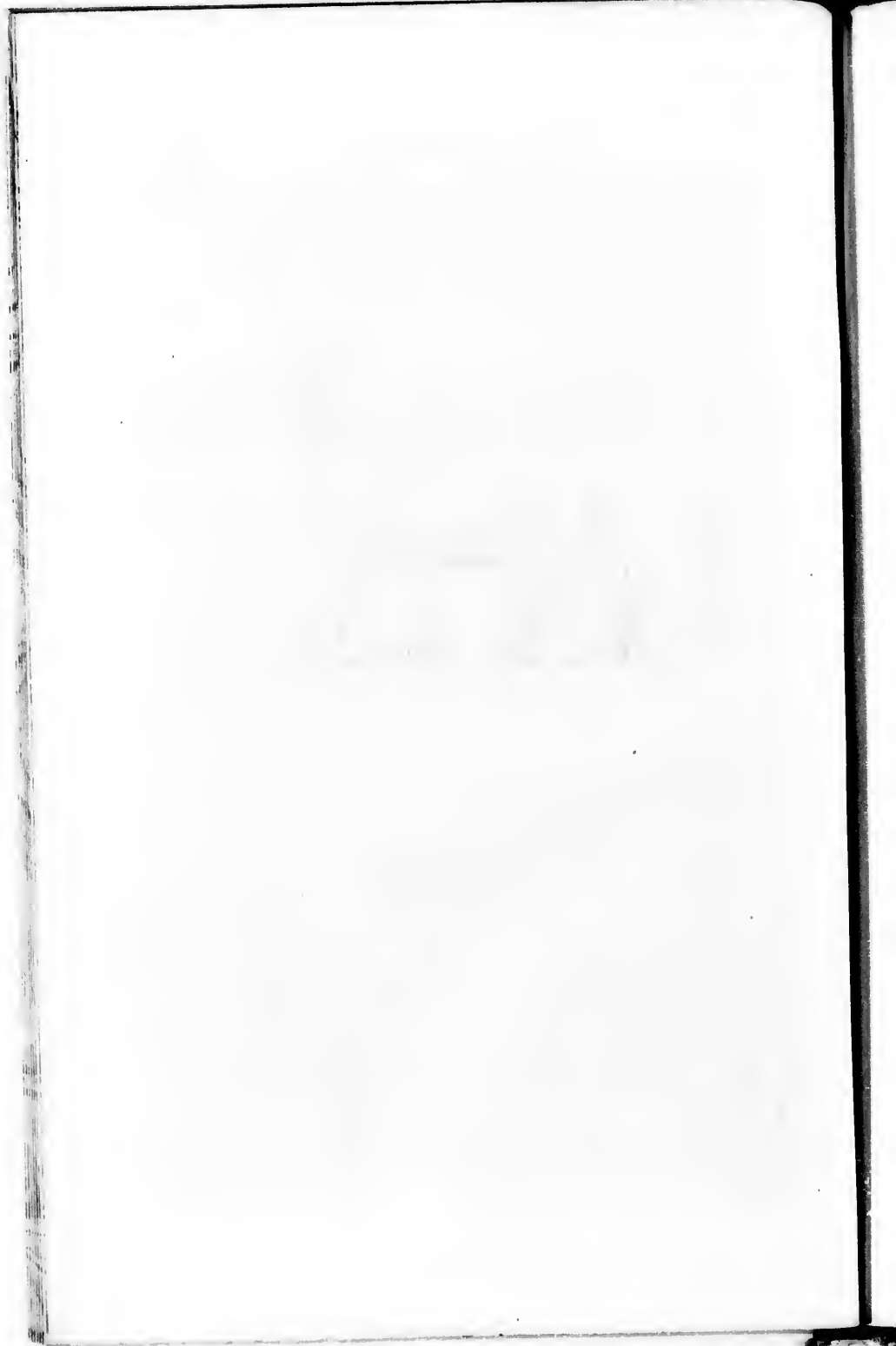


COLOSSAL WINGED LION, FROM NINEVEH.

ve in perpendic-
edifice, of which
too solid for the
nains of a tower.
t air through the
owning masonry,
ined and vitreous
hat their fall may
almost from top
e of more recent
s of that Divine
fire from heaven

ant result. The
already explored,
afts or tunnels to
on the workmen.
of which fell to
tles, and vases of
olorations at this
or the mounds of
about fifty miles
lie between the
ney, as the road
ey were fortunate
on for some days
of glazed earthen-
ound of Wurka is
amount to many

and the situation
e among the Arab
and succeeded in
hausted, while his
ne road. He left
ing by land under
e Shammar Arabs.
jijik and Nimroud
nt that the richest
eured. The funds
sted by this time,
collections, leaving
he trustees of the
nces. On the 28th
d left Mosul. His
wing year he was



TRAVELS OF IDA PFEIFFER.

JOURNEY TO PALESTINE AND EGYPT.

This celebrated traveler is a native of Vienna, where she was born toward the close of the last century. From her earliest childhood, she cherished an intense desire to see the different countries of the world. She could not even meet a traveling carriage without stopping to watch it as it passed out of sight, regarding the postilion, who had accompanied it, as she thought, during the long journey, as the happiest of men. When a little girl of ten or twelve years old, she eagerly devoured every book of travels that came within her reach, and secretly envied the navigator or discoverer, who was permitted to explore the secrets of the natural world. The sight of a distant hill that she could not climb would affect her to tears. Her taste for traveling was gratified by frequent journeys with her parents, and also after her marriage, with her husband, until the cares of a family, which occupied all her time, compelled her to forego the enjoyment.

After the education of her two sons was completed, she once more indulged in the dreams and fancies of her youth, and so insatiable was her longing to visit the scenes of sacred history, that in spite of every obstacle, she resolved to undertake the enterprise. Leaving Vienna on the 22d of March, 1842, she commenced her adventurous journey to the Holy Land. The voyage down the Danube was marked by no incident of special moment, and on the morning of April 8th, she entered the harbor of Constantinople. The sun was just rising over the imperial city, which presented a spectacle of gorgeous magnificence to the eyes of the astonished traveler.

She remained about six weeks in Constantinople, feasting her curiosity with the wonders of the city, but adding no new information to the descriptions given by previous travelers. During her stay in Constantinople, she was invited to make one of a party consisting of Mr. Sattler, the painter of the celebrated cosmoramas, and two German noblemen, on an excursion to Broussa, a beautiful little town at the foot of Mount Olympus. The route was across the Sea of Marmora to Gemlik, the port:

of Bythinia, and thence by land, a distance of four German miles, to Broussa. This part of the journey was to be accomplished on horseback, and as Ida had never attempted that mode of traveling, she felt some natural misgivings as to the result. Her experience shall be told in her own words. "At half-past two o'clock the horses arrived. I swung myself boldly upon my Rosinante, called on my good angel to defend me, and away we started, slowly at first, over stock and stone. My joy was boundless when I found that I could sit steadily upon my horse; but shortly afterward when we broke into a trot, I began to feel particularly uncomfortable, as I could not get on at all with the stirrup, which was continually slipping to my heel, while sometimes my foot slid out of it altogether, and I ran the risk of losing my balance. Oh, what would I not have given to have asked advice of any one! But unfortunately I could not do so without at once betraying my ignorance of horsemanship. I therefore took care to bring up the rear, under the pretense that my horse was shy, and would not go well unless it saw the others before. My real reason was that I wished to hide my maneuvers from the gentlemen, for every moment I expected to fall. Frequently I clutched the saddle with both hands, as I swayed from side to side. I looked forward in terror to the gallop, but to my surprise found that I could manage this pace better than the trot. My courage brought its reward, for I reached the goal of our journey thoroughly skaken, but without mishap."

Upon applying for her passports to the Austrian consul, she was strongly advised not to venture on a journey to the Holy Land. The disturbances on Mount Lebanon were then at their height; the plague was prevailing to a fearful extent; and no traveler, she was told, should encounter such formidable dangers without the most urgent necessity. But she was deaf to these friendly warnings. Finding that nothing could shake her from her purpose, her advisers tried to persuade her to perform the journey in male attire. She refused to do this, shrewdly foreseeing the annoyances to which it would expose her. Her short, spare figure would have seemed to belong to a youth, while her face was like that of an old man. This incongruity, together with the absence of a beard, could not fail, as she thought, to expose her disguise, and hence she determined to retain the simple costume which she then wore, consisting of a kind of blouse, and wide Turkish trowsers.

Embarking on board an Austrian steamboat, she left Constantinople on the 17th of May, not without a certain desolate feeling at finding herself alone among a crowd of people with nothing to sustain her but her trust in heaven. Every thing around her was strange. There was not a person on board to whom she could speak. But, as she glanced upward at the unchanging stars, her despondency passed away, and she soon began to contemplate the new scenes in which she was placed with her usual interest. Her satisfaction was increased, after the vessel had got out of the harbor, by finding among the swarthy Oriental passen-

gers, an intelligent European gentleman, intending, like herself, to visit the Holy Land. After conversing with him for some time in the French language, she discovered that he was an Englishman, and the well-known artist and author, Mr. W. H. Bartlett. They agreed to make the journey from Beyrout to Jerusalem in company.

A pleasant voyage of eight days among the islands of the Grecian Archipelago brought them to Beyrout, where, without remaining over night, they at once took passage in a sailing vessel for Joppa. In the afternoon of the second day, they came under the walls of that ancient city, and entered the harbor, which is partially closed up with sand, with less difficulty than had been anticipated. She soon had an opportunity of becoming initiated into the customs of oriental hospitality, but the first impression on her mind was far from agreeable. This was at an entertainment at the house of the Austrian consul. "Mats, carpets, and pillows were spread out on the terrace of the house, and a very low table placed in the center. Round this the family sat, or rather reclined, cross-legged. I was accommodated with a chair somewhat higher than the table. Beside my plate and that of the consul were laid a knife and fork, that appeared to have been hunted out from some lumber-closet; the rest ate with a species of natural knife and fork, namely—fingers. The dishes were not at all to my taste. I had still too much of the European about me, and too little appetite, to be able to endure what these good people seemed to consider immense delicacies."

Early the next morning she left Joppa, and after a ride on horseback of some eleven hours, over bad roads, and in extreme heat, she was seized with such a violent giddiness, that she could scarcely keep from falling from her horse. She was ashamed to inform her companion of her sufferings, lest he should regard her as a puny traveler, and perhaps separate from her on the return from Jerusalem to Joppa. She therefore dismounted, and thus saved herself from a fall, staggering along beside her horse, until she felt strong enough to mount and move. Mr. Bartlett had wished to complete the journey—a sixteen hours' ride—at one stretch, and, upon his asking her if she could endure so much fatigue, she assured him that she could hold out for five or six hours longer without much difficulty. Fortunately for her reputation, however, he was soon afterward attacked with the same symptoms which had troubled her, and begun to think that it might be advisable to rest for a few hours in the next village, especially as they could not hope in any case to reach Jerusalem before sunset. Ida felt an inward joy at the opportune occurrence, and well knowing the course he would choose, left the decision entirely to her fellow-traveler. "Thus," says she, "I accomplished my object without being obliged to confess my weakness."

Their resting-place was in the neighboring village, which was on the site of the ancient Emmaus, where the risen Saviour met the disciples, and where there is still a ruin of a Christian church in a tolerable state

of preservation. She took possession of the entrance-hall of a mosque, near which a delicious spring sparkled forth from a grotto. The water was singularly grateful and refreshing, and she so completely recovered from her indisposition, as to be able to enjoy the beautiful evening. As soon as the shekh of the village heard that a party of Franks had arrived, he dispatched four or five dishes of provisions to them, but they were able to eat only the buttermilk. Soon after, the shekh came in person to pay his respects, and through the medium of the dragoman, kept up a conversation with Mr. Bartlett for some time, much to the discomfort of Ida, who, wearied with the journey, wished to seek repose. He at length took his leave, but the tired travelers were doomed to enjoy no sleep that night. Mr. Bartlett was seized with the fancy of pursuing the journey at midnight, and to his somewhat strange proposal, Ida unhesitatingly consented. She acknowledged that she felt a little afraid to venture upon the wild and dangerous road at that hour; but she kept her fears to herself, her pride not allowing her to confess the truth.

In the gray morning twilight they approached the holy city; silently and thoughtfully watching for the first glimpses of it in the distance; hoping with the ascent of every hill to behold their sacred goal, till at length the Mount of Olives lay spread before them, and just as the red streaks of dawn had begun to tinge the eastern sky, they stood before the walls of Jerusalem. "I was so lost in reflection, and in thankful emotion," says Ida, "that I saw and heard nothing of what was passing around me. And yet I should find it impossible to describe what I thought, what I felt. My emotion was deep and powerful; my expression of it would be poor and cold."

After devoting a week to visiting the consecrated localities of Jerusalem and its vicinity, she joined a party of German travelers on an excursion to the river Jordan and the Dead Sea. The cavalcade, consisting of Mr. Bartlett, five German nobles, two doctors and herself, together with half a dozen servants, and a body-guard of twelve Arabs, under two Bedouin chiefs, started on the afternoon of June 7th. All were strongly armed with guns, pistols, swords, and lances, presenting a quite formidable appearance to any person with hostile intentions. The road lay through the Via Dolorosa, through St. Stephen's Gate, past the Mount of Olives, over hill and dale. Everywhere the scene was barren. Though many fruit trees were in bloom, there was not a trace of grass or flowers. The goal of the first day's journey was the Greek convent of St. Saba in the Waste about eight miles from Jerusalem. About half an hour before reaching the convent, they entered upon the wilderness where Christ fasted forty days, and was afterward "tempted of the devil." Vegetation here entirely ceases; not a shrub nor a root appears; and the bed of the brook Kedron is completely dry. A deathly silence brooded over the whole landscape, broken only by the foot-falls of the horses echoing sullenly from the rocks. At length, on

turning sharply round an angle of the road, the caravan came in sight of a large handsome building, surrounded by a strong fortified wall, and rising in the form of terraces toward the brow of a hill. Several other edifices, and in front of all a church, with a small cupola, plainly showed that St. Saba stretched below.

The priests had observed the procession winding down the hill, and at the first knocking the gates were opened. Masters, servants, Arabs, Bedouins, all passed through; but a woman was an unexpected spectacle; and on the approach of Ida, the cry was "Shut the gate;" and she was thus prevented from entering, with the prospect of passing the night in the open air—a fate by no means agreeable considering the dangers of the neighborhood. At length, a lay-brother made his appearance, and pointing to a square solitary tower, some seven or eight hundred paces from the convent, intimated to her that she would find a night's lodging in that place. He procured a ladder from the convent, and going with her to the tower, they mounted by its aid to a little low doorway of iron. The conductor pushed this open, and they crept in. A wooden stair-case led still further to two tiny rooms, situated near the center of the tower. One of these miniature apartments, dimly lighted by the rays of a lamp, contained a small altar, and served as a chapel, while the second was used as a sleeping-room for female pilgrims. A wooden divan was the only piece of furniture in the room. The conductor then took his leave, promising to return shortly, with some provisions, a bolster, and a coverlet. Ida found herself in a strange condition. She was guarded, like a captive princess, by bolt and bar. She could not have fled had she wished to do so, for the conductor had locked the creaking door behind him and taken away the ladder. After examining the capabilities of her prison-house, she mounted the stair-case and gained the summit of the tower. Her elevated position enabled her to gain a wide view of the surrounding country. She could distinctly trace the desert, with its several rows of hills and mountains skirting the horizon. Every thing was bare and desolate. Not a tree, nor a shrub, nor a human habitation was to be seen. Silence brooded heavily over the landscape, and as the sun sunk beneath the mountains, the place seemed ordained as a memorial of our Saviour's fasting, and in an ecstasy of devotion, the pious traveler fell on her knees, to offer up her prayers and praise to the Almighty amid the rugged grandeur of the desert.

The increasing darkness at length drove her back into the little chamber. Shortly afterward, a priest and a lay-brother appeared, and with them Mr. Bartlett. The priest had brought her supper and bedding, while her English fellow-traveler proposed to send a few servants as a guard to relieve the dreariness of the night in the lonely tower. Summoning all her courage, she disclaimed every emotion of fear, and declined the considerate offer.

After a quiet night's rest, she rose with the sun, and at five o'clock

in the morning the cavalcade took up their line of march toward the Dead Sea. They reached the object of their journey in safety, and on the second day again turned their faces in the direction of Jerusalem. A few days after her return from this excursion, she left the holy city, with a feeling of grateful happiness that she had been permitted to behold those regions, to visit which had so long been a favorite day-dream of her life. On the 11th of June, with the same party which she had accompanied to the Dead Sea, she started for Beyrout by land, intending to go by the way of Nazareth, Galilee, Canaan, and other places of peculiar interest to the Christian traveler. They reached Nazareth on the third day. In the morning, she had been seized on the road with violent headache, nausea, and other feverish symptoms, but she was obliged to conceal her illness, as she had done on the journey to Jerusalem, through fear of being left behind. She was also unwilling to give up visiting the holy places in Nazareth, and hence making a great effort, she accompanied the party through the whole day, though she was obliged every moment to retire into the back-ground that her condition should not be observed. Thanks to her sunburnt skin, through which no paleness could penetrate, her secret was not detected, and toward evening she began to grow better. On the return of her appetite, no more savory refectations could be obtained than some bad mutton-broth, and an omelette made with rancid oil. A little bread and wine, however, was at last procured, and served as a substitute for more substantial viands.

After a journey of ten consecutive days, the party arrived at Beyrout on the 21st of June. The distance from Jerusalem is about two hundred miles, allowing for the circuitous route by way of Tiberias. The journey through Syria was one of great toil and hardship. The horses suffered dreadfully, as they were constantly obliged to climb over rocks, stones, and mountains, or to wade through hot sand, in which they sank above the fetlocks at every step. The temperature was subject to sudden changes. By day the heat fluctuated between 18° and 39° Reaumur, and the nights, too, were no less capricious, being sometimes oppressively sultry, and sometimes bitterly cold.

After passing two very unsatisfactory days at Beyrout, she again fell in with the artist Sattler, who proposed that she should join a party with which he was traveling to Damascus. She gladly accepted the proposal, and soon completing her arrangements, was on the way to Mount Lebanon. A European woman is seldom seen in those regions. Ida was an object of great curiosity to all the inhabitants. Wherever they halted, many women and children would gather round her, busily pulling her dress, putting on her straw hat, and looking at her from all sides, while they attempted to converse with her by signs.

They arrived at Damascus on the 3d of July, and after remaining two days in that city set off on a tour to Balbeck. Having visited those celebrated ruins they proceeded on their journey toward Lebanon. In

a narrow passage of the road, so shut in by chasms and abysses on one side, and walls of rock on the other, as scarcely to admit a foothold for a horse, they suddenly heard the call to "halt." It came from a soldier who was escorting a woman afflicted with the plague. She had been sent from the village where she had been the first victim of the terrible disease to another where it was raging. It was impossible to turn aside. The soldier could only drag the sick woman a few paces up the steep rocky wall, and then they came close to her as they passed. He told the party to cover their mouths and noses. He had anointed the lower part of his own face with tar, as a preventive against contagion. The poor victim was bound on an ass—she appeared resigned to her fate—and turned her sunken eyes upon the company with an expression of entire indifference. The only visible trace of the plague was the yellow appearance of the face. The soldier seemed as cool as if he were walking beside a person in perfect health. As the plague prevailed throughout the valleys of Lebanon, the caravan avoided the villages afflicted by the scourge, encamping for the night in the open fields.

On the 10th of July they arrived safely at Beyrout, having accomplished the journey to Damascus and back, a distance of one hundred and eighty miles, in ten days. No vessel was ready to sail for Alexandria until the 28th, when our traveler embarked on board a Greek brig, and, after a voyage of ten days, reached the harbor of that city. The trip was tedious in the extreme. The vessel was crowded with passengers and merchandise. There was no room either by night or day but on deck. During the day-time, she had nothing but an umbrella to screen her from the sun, and at night her cloak was soon wet through by the dew. There was not even an awning of sail-cloth. The company was no better than the accommodations. Their manners were vulgar and offensive, and the Arabs and Greeks seemed disposed to carry the theory of common property into practical effect. A knife, a pair of scissors, a drinking-glass, or any other small article would be taken from the owner without permission and given back, after being used, in a soiled condition. A negro and his master would not hesitate to lie down on the mat or carpet which you had brought on board for your own bedding. One day Ida was using her tooth-brush, when laying it down for a moment, it was snatched up by a Greek sailor, who after coolly cleaning his teeth with it, returned it to the owner with an expression of entire satisfaction. The diet was shocking. As the common fare they had for dinner pilau, stale cheese, and onions, and in the evening anchovies, olives, stale cheese again, and ship-biscuit instead of bread. The provident Ida, however, took no share in these dainties, as she had brought with her a few live fowls, some rice, butter, dried bread, and coffee with which she prepared a comfortable meal for herself.

Upon arriving at Alexandria, the passengers were put in quarantine for ten days. At length they were permitted to disembark at the quarantine hospital, and treading on the soil of Africa for the first time,

Ida could not but wonder at the courage and perseverance which had enabled her thus far to fulfill what had seemed her almost chimerical project. Her stay in Alexandria was short. On the 17th of August, the same day that she left the quarantine-house, she proceeded to the Nile canal, and took passage for Atfe, on the route to Cairo. In four days she arrived at Cairo, after an interesting and agreeable passage. On the 25th, she made an excursion to the pyramids of Gizeh, and ascended the loftiest of them, the pyramid of Cheops. Returning to Cairo, she was tempted to try an excursion on a camel, and selected a trip to Suez, for that purpose. The journey proved monotonous and wearisome, and she had no wish to attempt another of a similar kind. Leaving Cairo on the 2d of September, she returned to Alexandria, and on the 7th embarked on board a French steam-packet for Malta. She reached this port in just one week, and after an interesting visit, took passage in a steamer, October 4th, for Palermo.

After a sojourn of five days in that city, she embarked for Naples, where she spent about three weeks, diligently exploring the wonders of art and nature presented by that capital, and on the 8th of November arrived at Rome. Here she remained a fortnight, walking about the streets from morning till night, visiting St. Peter's almost every day, and the Vatican several times. Her journey to Jerusalem obtained her an audience of the pope. His holiness received her in a great hall adjoining the Sistine chapel. He was at that time seventy-eight years of age, but with a noble presence, and most winning manners. He asked some questions of the enterprising pilgrim, gave her his blessing, and permitted her at parting to kiss the embroidered slipper. She now hastened to complete the tour of Italy, and in the first week of December returned to Vienna in safety and perfect health, having endured hardships of no slight magnitude in her various wanderings, but with her thirst for seeing foreign lands by no means abated.

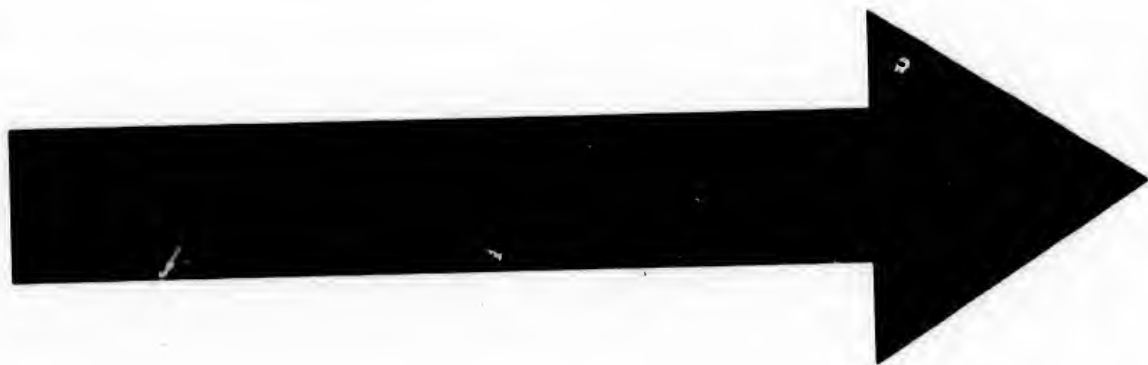
JOURNEY TO ICELAND.

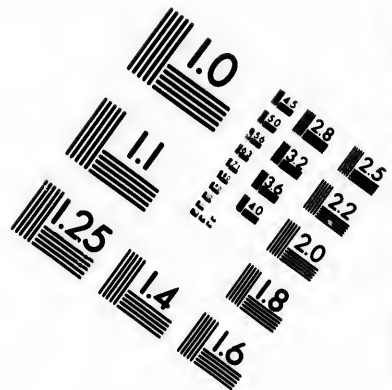
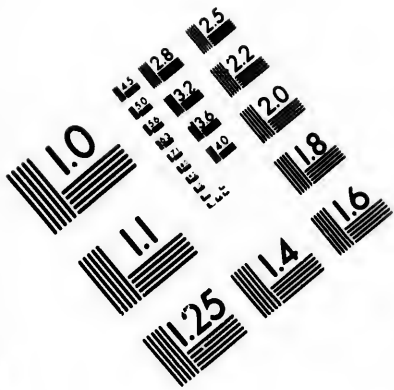
Iceland was one of the countries which, from her earliest recollection, had cast a spell over the imagination of Ida Pfeiffer, and within three years from her return from the East, she resolved to brave the perils of an expedition to that inhospitable clime. She left Vienna on the 10th of April, 1845, and passing through Prague, Dresden, Leipsic, and Hamburg, arrived at Copenhagen on the 29th, at which port she took passage in a sailing vessel for Iceland, on the 4th of May. On the seventh day they came within sight of Iceland, but as they approached the coast, a contrary wind sprang up, and they were kept beating about for several days and nights, until at the close of the eleventh day, they reached the harbor of Havenfiord, two miles from Reikjävick, the capital of Iceland. In spite of the remains of sea-sickness, which made

R.
everance which had
almost chimerical
the 17th of August,
he proceeded to the
s to Cairo. In four
l agreeable passage.
ramids of Gizeh, and
pops. Returning to
amel, and selected a
ed monotonous and
er of a similar kind.
l to Alexandria, and
cket for Malta. She
interesting visit, took

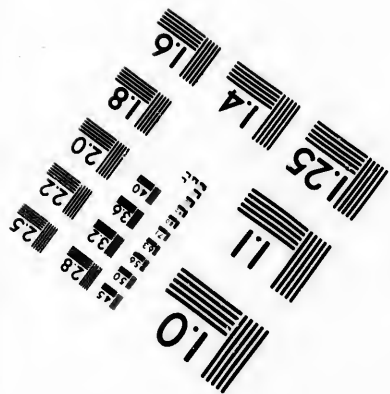
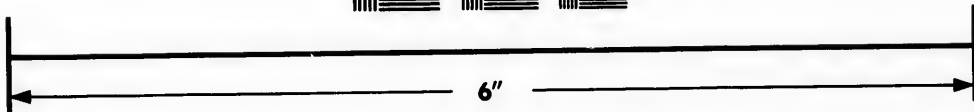
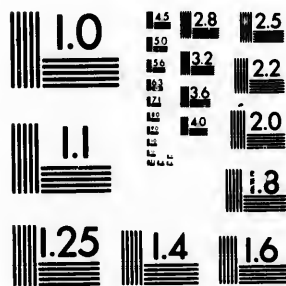
embarked for Naples,
bring the wonders of
the 8th of November
t, walking about the
's almost every day,
rusalem obtained her
er in a great hall ad-
eventy-eight years of
manners. He asked
her his blessing, and
d slipper. She now
first week of Decem-
ealth, having endured
wanderings, but with
ated.

er earliest recollection,
suffer, and within three
ed to brave the perils
eft Vienna on the 10th
len, Leipsic, and Ham-
which port she took
4th of May. On the
out as they approached
ere kept beating about
the eleventh day, they
from Reikjävick, the
a-sickness, which made





...
**IMAGE EVALUATION
 TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



Photographic
 Sciences
 Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET
 WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
 (716) 872-4503

**CIHM/ICMH
Microfiche
Series.**

**CIHM/ICMH
Collection de
microfiches.**



Canadian Institute for Historical Microreproductions / Institut canadien de microreproductions historiques

© 1983



every thing dance around her, Ida at once sallied forth to examine the place, which she found to consist of three dwellings built of wood, a few warehouses of the same material, and several huts inhabited by the peasantry.

"The wooden houses," she says, "occupied by the merchants or their factors, are of a single story, with five or six windows in front; a low flight of steps leads to an entrance, in the center of the building, which opens into a vestibule, with two doors communicating with the rooms to the right and left. In the rear is the kitchen, and the courtyard is beyond. Such a house contains four or five rooms on the ground floor, and a few small chambers under the roof.

"The arrangements are entirely European; the furniture, a great deal of which is mahogany, is all brought from Copenhagen, as well as the mirrors, and the cast-iron stoves. Handsome rugs are spread in front of the sofas, neat curtains hang before the windows; the white-washed walls are ornamented with English engravings, and china, silver, cut-glass, etc., are displayed upon the chests or corner-tables. The rooms are scented with roses, mignonette, and pinks, and I even saw one piano-forte here. Any person who should suddenly be set down in a house like this, without having made the journey, would be sure to imagine himself in some town on the continent of Europe, and not in that distant region of poverty and barrenness, the island of Iceland. I next entered some of the huts, which I found to be decidedly more Icelandic. They are small and low, built of lava blocks, filled in with earth, the whole sodded over with grass, and they might easily be mistaken for natural elevations in the ground, if the wooden chimneys, the low doors, and almost imperceptible windows, did not betray that they were tenanted by human beings. A dark and narrow passage, not more than four feet high, leads on one hand to the dwelling-room, and on the other to the store-room, where the provisions are kept, which is also used in winter to stable the cows and sheep. The fireplace is generally at the end of this passage, which is purposely built so low in order to exclude the cold. The walls and floors of these huts are not boarded; the dwelling-rooms are barely large enough to sleep in, and perhaps to turn round; the whole furniture consists of the bedsteads, with a very scanty supply of bedding, a small table, and a few chests; the latter are used for seats as well as the beds. Poles are fastened in the walls to which clothes, shoes and stockings, and other things of that kind are suspended; and a little shelf, with a few books on it, is generally found in each hut. No stoves are needed in these crowded rooms, which are sufficiently heated by the warmth of their numerous inmates."

On arriving at Reikjävick, she was received into a private family, which treated her with a rare degree of cordiality and affection during her long residence with them. Her host was a worthy baker, to whom she was introduced by the owner of the vessel in which she had been a passenger. Ida soon formed a warm attachment to all the members of

his excellent household, but was less charmed with the manners of the higher classes in the society of the capital.

"Nothing," says she, "struck me so much as the great dignity of carriage at which the ladies here all aim, and which is so apt to degenerate into stiffness where it is not perfectly natural, or has not become a second nature by habit. They incline their head very coolly when you meet them, with less civility than we should use toward an inferior or a stranger. The lady of the house never accompanies her guests beyond the door of the room, after a call; if the husband is present he goes a little further, but when this is not the case you are often at a loss which way to turn, as there is no servant on the spot to open the street-door for you, unless it may happen to be in the house of the Stifsamann, the first dignitary of the island. I had already observed traces of this formality in Hamburg, and the further I advanced toward the north, the more it increased, till in Iceland it reached its greatest height."

The facilities for traveling in Iceland are not so extraordinary as to tempt the pleasure-seeking tourist. The best season for a journey is from the middle of June to the end of August. Before that time the streams are still so much swollen by the melted snows that it is dangerous to ford them, and many patches of snow cover deep pits and heaps of lava, obstructing the way of the traveler. On the other hand, heavy storms of rain and flurries of snow occur as early as September.

"Upon the whole," says Ida, "I found the difficulties and discomforts of traveling in this country much greater than any I had encountered in the East. I suffered more from the violent tempests, the sharp air, the drenching rain, and the cold, than I had ever done from the heats of Palestine. The latter did not cause my face and lips to chap; but on the fifth day of my journey here, my lips were bleeding, and my face was all in scales, as if I had had the measles. My long dresses were another great drawback to my comfort; it was necessary to be warmly clad, and the weight of my clothes, often increased by the wet, made me at times quite helpless when I was to get on or off my horse. But the greatest annoyance of all, was to stop to rest in a meadow during a violent shower, when my long skirts would soak up all the water from the wet grass; and at such times I often had not a dry thread about me."

Toward the end of June, Ida set off for the Geiser and Hecla, riding the first day as far as the lake of Thingvalla. Coming within sight of the object of her eager curiosity, she found the basin and principal caldron filled with water as clear as crystal and slightly boiling. In this state the neighborhood is dangerous, as they might overflow at any moment. "For fear of missing an explosion," says the traveler, "it is customary to watch during the whole night. An occasional vigil would present no great difficulty to many travelers, but for me it was a serious undertaking. However, there was no remedy, for an Iceland peasant

is not to be depended upon, and few of them would be roused by an outbreak of Hecla itself.

"At last, after waiting till the second day of my sojourn at the Geiser, the long-desired explosion took place on the 27th of June, at half-past nine o'clock in the morning. The peasant, who came twice a day to inquire if I had yet seen an eruption, was with me when the first dull sounds which announced the event were heard. We hurried to the spot, and as the waters boiled over as usual, and the noise died away, I thought I was doomed to disappointment again; but the last tones were just expiring when the explosion suddenly took place. I have really no words to do justice to this magnificent spectacle, which once to behold in a lifetime is enough.

"It infinitely surpassed all my expectations. The waters were spouted with great power and volume; column rising above column, as if each were bent on outstripping the others. After I had recovered in some degree from my first astonishment, I looked round at the tent—how small, how diminutive it seemed, compared to those pillars of water! And yet it was nearly twenty feet high; it was lying rather lower, it is true, than the basin of the Geiser; but tent might have been piled on tent—yet, by my reckoning, which may not have been perfectly accurate, however—five or six, one above the other, would not have reached the elevation of these jets, the largest of which I think I can affirm, without any exaggeration, to have risen at last to the height of a hundred feet, and to have been three or four feet in diameter."

Her account of Mount Hecla presents a different view of that celebrated volcano from the description given by most previous travelers: "At last the summit was attained, after two more hours of laborious climbing, and I stood upon the highest peak of Hecla; but I looked in vain for a crater—there was no trace of any to be found; at which I was all the more astonished, as I had read minute accounts of it in several books of travels. I walked around the whole summit of the mountain, and clambered to the jokul which lies next to it, but still I saw no opening or crevice, no sunken wall, or any sign whatever, in fact, of a crater. Much lower down on the sides of the mountain I found some wide rents and chinks, from whence the streams of lava must have flowed. The height of this mountain is said to be four thousand three hundred feet.

"The sun had been obscured during the last hour of our ascent, and thick clouds now rushed down upon us from the neighboring glaciers, which concealed the whole prospect from our sight, and prevented our distinguishing any thing for more than ten paces before us. After awhile they dissolved, fortunately not in rain, but in snow, which soon covered the dark crisp lava with large and innumerable flakes; they did not melt, and the thermometer showed one degree of cold (Reaumur).

"Gradually the clear and inimitable blue of the heavens reappeared, and the sun once more rejoiced us with his presence. I remained on

the top of the mountain till the clouds had opened in the distance and afforded a welcome and extensive view, which I fear my pen is much too feeble to describe. I despair of conveying to my readers a distinct idea of the immense waste which lay displayed before me, with its accumulated masses of lava, and its peculiar appearance of lifeless desolation. I seemed to stand in the midst of an exhausted fire. The blocks were piled in heaps above each other, till they formed high hills; the valleys were choked by vast streams of rock, whose length and breadth I was not able to distinguish, although the course of the last eruption could be plainly traced among them. I was surrounded by the most dreadful ravines, caves, streams, hills, and valleys; I could hardly understand how I had reached this point, and was seized with a feeling of horror at the thought which forced itself upon me, that perhaps I might never be able to find my way out of this terrible labyrinth of ruin."

Having visited every part of Iceland which possessed any claims upon her attention, Ida embarked for Copenhagen on the 29th of July, and traveling through part of Norway and Sweden, returned once more to Vienna after an absence of about six months.

FIRST JOURNEY ROUND THE WORLD.

In a little more than six months we find Ida Pfeiffer again on her travels, engaging in a far greater and more perilous enterprise than that from which she received her initiation into the marvels of distant climes. On the 1st of May, 1846, she left Vienna with the intention of embarking at Hamburg for Rio Janeiro. It was not until the middle of June that she sailed from that port, having waited several weeks for the arrival of Count Berchthold, one of her traveling companions in the East, who had engaged to accompany her on the voyage to Brazil. On the 16th of September, they entered the bay and port of Rio Janeiro, where Ida remained above two months, exclusive of the time devoted to different excursions into the interior of the country.

On one of these rural excursions, she met with an adventure in which she had a narrow escape of her life. She was going to Petropolis, a colony founded by Germans in the neighborhood of Rio Janeiro, situated in a region of remarkable beauty, and approached by a romantic road through the virgin forests of the country. They found the journey delightful. Gathering a rich harvest of flowers, plants, and insects, they loitered idly amid the enchantments of the scene without observing that they were followed by a negro, who suddenly sprang upon them in a lonely spot, with a knife in one hand and a lasso in the other, indicating more by gestures than words that he intended to murder and then drag them into the forest. Her description gives a vivid idea of the rencontre.

"We had no arms, as we had been told that the road was perfectly

safe, and the only weapons of defense we possessed were our parasols, if I except a clasped knife, which I instantly drew out of my pocket and opened, fully determined to sell my life as dearly as possible. We parried our adversary's blows as long as we could with our parasols, but these lasted but a short time; besides, he caught hold of mine, which, as we were struggling for it, broke short off, leaving only a piece of the handle in my hand. In the struggle, however, he dropped his knife, which rolled a few steps from him; I instantly made a dash, and thought I had got it, when he, more quick than I, thrust me away with his feet and hands, and once more obtained possession of it. He waved it furiously over my head, and dealt me two wounds, a thrust and a deep gash, both in the upper part of the left arm; I thought I was lost, and despair alone gave me the courage to use my own knife. I made a thrust at his breast; this he warded off, and I only succeeded in wounding him severely in the hand. The Count sprang forward, and seized the fellow from behind, and thus afforded me an opportunity of raising myself from the ground. The whole affair had not taken more than a few seconds. The negro's fury was now roused to its highest pitch by the wounds he had received: he gnashed his teeth at us like a wild beast, and flourished his knife with frightful rapidity. The Count, in his turn, had received a cut right across the hand, and we had been irrevocably lost, had not Providence sent us assistance. We heard the tramp of horses' hoofs upon the road, upon which the negro instantly left us, and sprang into the wood. Immediately afterward two horsemen turned a corner of the road, and we hurried toward them; our wounds, which were bleeding freely, and the way in which our parasols were hacked, soon made them understand the state of affairs. They asked us which direction the fugitive had taken, and, springing from the horses, hurried after him; their efforts, however, would have been fruitless, if two negroes, who were coming from the opposite side, had not helped them. As it was, the fellow was soon captured. He was pinioned, and, as he would not walk, severely beaten, most of the blows being dealt upon the head, so that I feared the poor wretch's skull would be broken. In spite of this he never moved a muscle, and lay, as if insensible to feeling, upon the ground. The two other negroes were obliged to seize hold of him, when he endeavored to bite every one within his reach, like a wild beast, and carry him to the nearest house. Our preservers, as well as the Count and myself, accompanied them. We then had our wounds dressed, and afterward continued our journey; not, it is true, entirely devoid of fear, especially when we met one or more negroes, but without any further mishap, and with a continually increasing admiration of the beautiful scenery."

On relating their story, after their return to Rio Janeiro, they would scarcely have been believed, had they not been able to show the wounds which they had received in the conflict. The negro was at first thought to have been drunk or insane, but it was afterward discovered that he

R.

in the distance and
ear my pen is much
my readers a distinct
fore me, with its ac-
ence of lifeless desola-
ted fire. The blocks
med high hills; the
length and breadth
of the last eruption
ounded by the most
; I could hardly un-
ized with a feeling of
that perhaps I might
abyrith of ruin."

possessed any claims
on the 29th of July,
, returned once more

WORLD.

Pfeiffer again on her
s enterprise than that
vels of distant climes.
ntention of embarking
e middle of June that
weeks for the arrival
ions in the East, who
Brazil. On the 16th
io Janeiro, where Ida
e devoted to different

an adventure in which
going to Petropolis, a
ood of Rio Janeiro,
oached by a romantic
ey found the journey
ants, and insects, they
without observing that
rang upon them in a
in the other, indicat-
d to murder and then
a vivid idea of the

he road was perfectly

had been punished by his master for an offense, and took that method to wreak his vengeance upon the whites.

The Indians in the interior of Brazil naturally excited the curiosity of the traveler. With a view to observing their manners, she proceeded into the heart of the forest, and in the wretched huts of the Puras found a degree of want and misery, which surpassed all her previous experience of human degradation.

"On a small space, under lofty trees, five huts, or rather sheds, formed of leaves, were erected, eighteen feet long, by twelve feet broad. The frames were formed of four poles stuck in the ground, with another reaching across, and the roof of palm-leaves, through which the rain could penetrate with the utmost facility. On three sides, these bowers were entirely open. In the interior hung a hammock or two; and on the ground glimmered a little fire, under a heap of ashes, in which a few roots, Indian corn, and bananas, were roasting. In one corner, under the roof, a small supply of provisions was hoarded up, and a few gourds were scattered around: these are used by the savages instead of plates, pots, water-jugs, etc. The long bows and arrows, which constitute their only weapons, were leaning in the background against the wall.

"I found the Indians still more ugly than the negroes. Their complexion is a light bronze, stunted in stature, well-knit, and about the middle size. They have broad and somewhat compressed features, and thick, coal-black hair, hanging straight down, which the women sometimes wear in plaits fastened to the back of the head, and sometimes falling down loose about them. Their forehead is broad and low, the nose somewhat flattened, the eyes long and narrow, almost like those of the Chinese, and the mouth large, with rather thick lips. To give a still greater effect to all these various charms, a peculiar look of stupidity is spread over the whole face, and is more especially to be attributed to the way in which their mouths are always kept open. Most of them, both men and women, were tattooed with a reddish or blue color, though only round the mouth, in the form of a moustache. Both sexes are passionately fond of smoking, and prefer brandy to every thing. Their dress was composed of a few rags, which they had fastened round their loins.

"The good creatures offered me the best hut they possessed, and invited me to pass the night there. Being rather fatigued by the toilsome nature of my journey on foot, the heat, and the hunting excursion, I very joyfully accepted their proposition: the day, too, was drawing to a close, and I should not have been able to reach the settlement of the whites before night. I therefore spread out my cloak upon the ground, arranged a log of wood so as to serve instead of a pillow, and for the present seated myself upon my splendid couch. In the meanwhile, my hosts were preparing the monkey and the parrots, by sticking them on wooden spits, and roasting them before the fire.

In order to render the meal a peculiarly dainty one, they also buried some Indian corn and roots in the cinders. They then gathered a few large fresh leaves off the trees, tore the roasted apo into several pieces with their hands, and placing a large portion of it, as well as a parrot, Indian corn, and some roots upon the leaves, put it before me. My appetite was tremendous, seeing that I had tasted nothing since the morning. I therefore immediately fell to on the roasted monkey, which I found superlatively delicious: the flesh of the parrot was far from being so tender and palatable."

Leaving Rio Janeiro on the 9th of December, Ida embarked in an English vessel for Valparaiso, which port she reached on the 2d of March. The passage round the Cape enabled them to see the shore of Terra del Fuego so distinctly, that they could make out every bush with the naked eye. The coast appeared steep, but not high. The foreground was composed of meager pasture alternating with tracts of sand, and in the background were ranges of woody hills, beyond which rose snow-covered mountains. The country struck Ida as being more inhabitable than Iceland.

The society of Valparaiso did not accord with her ideas of propriety or good taste. She was shocked by the immodest character of the national dances, which were unscrupulously performed in public, and before spectators of the most tender age. Nor did another singular feature of Valparaiso habits find more favor in her sight. "I was equally displeased," says she, "with a remarkable custom prevalent here, in accordance with which the death of a little child is celebrated by its parents as a grand festival. They name the deceased child an *angelito* (little angel), and adorn it in every possible way. Its eyes are not closed, but, on the contrary opened as wide as possible, and its cheeks are painted red; it is then dressed out in the finest clothes, crowned with flowers, and placed in a little chair in a kind of niche, which also is ornamented with flowers. The relations and neighbors then come and wish the parents joy at possessing such an angel; and during the first night, the parents, relations, and friends execute the wildest dances, and feast in the most joyous fashion before the *angelito*. I heard that in the country it was not unusual for the parents to carry the little coffin to the chureyard themselves, followed by the relations with the brandy bottle in their hands, and giving vent to their joy in the most outrageous manner."

On the 17th of March, she took passage for Canton, and on the 9th of July arrived in Macao Roads, having devoted some three weeks to a thorough exploration of Tahiti, where the vessel stopped to discharge a cargo of provisions for the French garrison on that island. Her arrival at Canton brought her into a new scene of perils, through her ignorance of the customs of the country. "It is only during the last few years that we European women have been allowed to visit or remain in the factories at Canton. I left the vessel without any apprehension; but first I had to consider how I should find my way to the house of a gen-

tleman named Agassiz, for whom I had brought letters of recommendation. I explained to the captain, by signs, that I had no money with me, and that he must act as my guide to the factory, where I would pay him. He soon understood me, and conducted me to the place, and the Europeans there showed me the particular house I wanted. On seeing me arrive, and hearing the manner in which I had traveled, and the way that I had walked from the vessel to his house, Mr. Agassiz was extremely surprised, and would hardly credit that I had met with no difficulties or injury. From him I learned what risks I, as a woman, had run in traversing the streets of Canton, with no escort but a Chinese guide. Such a thing had never occurred before, and Mr. Agassiz assured me that I might esteem myself as exceedingly fortunate in not having been insulted by the people in the grossest manner, or even stoned. Had this been the case, he told me my guide would have immediately taken to flight, and abandoned me to my fate."

She sailed from Canton on the 25th of August, and after a voyage of nine days arrived at the port of Singapore. The climate of this island, compared to that of other countries, seemed to her delightful; the temperature was uniform; the days and nights were of equal length, as the place was near the equator; and scarcely an interval of twilight attended the rising or setting sun. Her next stage was Ceylon, which she reached on the 7th of October. After remaining on that island about three weeks, she sailed for Calcutta, and arrived in that city on the 4th of November. Here she soon found herself more at home than she had been for many months of miscellaneous wanderings. She received numerous friendly attentions from Sir Lawrence Peel, the chief judge of Calcutta, and Mr. Cameron, a member of the supreme council of India. In the first circles of society she was warmly welcomed as an intelligent traveler, while she accepted their hospitality with her usual unaffected simplicity. "During my stay in Calcutta," she tells us, "I was invited to a large party in honor of Mr. Peel's birthday; but I refused the invitation, as I had no suitable dress. My excuse, however, was not allowed, and I accompanied Lady Cameron, in a simple colored muslin dress, to a party where all the other ladies were dressed in silk and satin, and covered with lace and jewelry; yet no one was ashamed of me, but conversed freely with me, and showed me every possible attention."

After a stay of more than five weeks, Ida left Calcutta for Benares, arriving at the holy city of India on the 28th of December. Her recollections of the Ganges were far from agreeable. During her whole voyage of about a thousand miles, she did not meet with a single spot remarkable for its especial beauty, or one picturesque view. Leaving Benares on the 7th of January, 1848, she proceeded to Allahabad, Cawnpore, and Agra, the former residence of the Great Mogul of India. Thence she went to Delhi, where she remained for ten days, leaving that renowned imperial city for Bombay. Her mode of traveling was by a wagon drawn by oxen, until her arrival at Kottah, the chief city of

the kingdom of Rajpootan, when the king Ram-Shegh, who was profuse in his attentions to so great a novelty as a female European traveler, offered her the use of as many camels as she required for the remainder of the journey, and two sepoy on horseback as attendants. In the course of the tour, while making an excursion to the rock temples of Ellora, ten miles from Roja, she had an adventure with a tiger, which she relates as follows :

"I had scarcely left the gates of the town behind, when I perceived a number of Europeans seated upon elephants, coming from the bungalow. On meeting each other we pulled up and commenced a conversation. The gentlemen were on the road to search for a tiger-lair, of which they had received intimation, and invited me, if such a sport would not frighten me too much, to take part in it. I was greatly delighted to receive the invitation, and was soon seated on one of the elephants, in a howdah about two feet high, in which there were already two gentlemen and a native—the latter had been brought to load the guns. They gave me a large knife to defend myself with, in case the animal should spring too high and reach the side of the howdah. Thus prepared, we approached the chain of hills, and, after a few hours, we were already pretty near the lair of the tigers, when our servants cried out softly, '*Bach, Bach!*' and pointed with their fingers to some brushwood. I had scarcely perceived the flaming eyes which glared out of one of the bushes before shots were fired. Several balls took effect on the animal, who rushed, maddened, upon us. He made such tremendous springs, that I thought every moment he must reach the howdah, and select a victim from among us. The sight was terrible to see, and my apprehensions were increased by the appearance of another tiger; however, I kept myself so calm, that none of the gentlemen had any suspicion of what was going on in my mind. Shot followed shot; the elephants defended their trunks with great dexterity by throwing them up or drawing them in. After a sharp contest of half an hour, we were the victors, and the dead animals were triumphantly stripped of their beautiful skins. The gentlemen politely offered me one of them as a present; but I declined accepting it, as I could not postpone my journey sufficiently long for it to be dried."

After a tedious journey of seven weeks, she reached Bombay, where she was invited to stay at the country-house of the Hamburg consul, Mr. Wattenbach. Leaving Bombay, April 23d, she bent her course for Baghdad, by way of Bassora, and reached the latter city in one month from the time of her departure. From Baghdad she made two long excursions, one to the ruins of Ctesiphon, and the other to those of Babylon. She then joined a caravan going through the desert to Mosul, a distance of three hundred miles, visited the ruins of Nineveh, and on the 8th of July, started on a journey to Persia. Extending her travels to Asiatic Russia, Armenia, Georgia, and Mingrelia, she arrived at Odessa on the 30th of September. The previous day she stopped at

what she calls "the strong and beautiful fortress of Sebastopol." Her description presents a clear idea of the condition at that time of the place which has since become so famous in the annals of modern warfare. "The works are partly situated at the entrance of the harbor, and partly in the harbor itself; they are executed in massive stone, and possess a number of towers and outworks which defend the entrance to the harbor. The harbor itself is almost entirely surrounded by hills, and is one of the safest and most excellent in the world. It can hold the largest fleets, and is so deep that the most gigantic men-of-war can lie at anchor close to the quays. Sluices, docks, and quays have been constructed in unlimited splendor and magnificence. The whole of the works were not quite finished, and there was an unparalleled activity apparent. Thousands of men were busy on all sides. Among the workmen I was shown many of the captured Polish nobles who had been sent here as a punishment for their attempt, in 1831, to shake off the Russian yoke. The works of the fortress and the barracks are so large that they will hold about thirty thousand men."

From Odessa she took her departure for Constantinople, and after visiting the principal object of interest in Greece, completed her "First Journey round the World," by returning to Vienna on the 1st of November, the day after it was stormed by the revolutionists of 1848.

SECOND JOURNEY ROUND THE WORLD.

On the 18th of March 1851, Ida Pfeiffer once more resumed her journeyings, leaving her native city for London, with the intention of embarking for Australia. The discovery of the gold fields in that country, however, prevented the accomplishment of her purpose, as the rush of emigrants thither was so great as to enhance the cost of living beyond her restricted means. For some time she was at a loss as to what part of the world she should direct her steps, but at length deciding in favor of the Dutch settlements in the East Indies, she set sail for that quarter on the 24th of May, in a vessel bound for the Cape of Good Hope. After a voyage of seventy-five days, she arrived at Cape Town, where she remained about four weeks, and on the 25th of August sailed for the Straits of Sunda. The voyage was completed in forty days, and sailing through the Sea of Java, along the coast of Sumatra, she reached Singapore on the 10th of November. From Singapore, she proceeded to the west coast of Borneo, for the purpose of visiting Sarawak, the independent territory of the English Rajah Brooke.

After exploring this region, she started on the 5th of January, 1852, for a circuitous journey by land and water for Pontianah, a Dutch colony on the west coast of Borneo. The route lay through the country of the Dyaks, a nation of wild and savage tribes, among whom her life was supposed to be not free from danger. She performed the journey,

however, without unusual inconvenience, and on the 6th of February, found herself safe and sound at Pontianah. After numerous excursions into the interior, she embarked for Batavia, and having visited the most important objects of interest on the island of Java, proceeded to Sumatra. She reached Padang, the chief town of the Dutch settlements in Sumatra, on the 10th of July, and shortly after commenced a journey to the interior among the cannibal Batak. Her acquaintance strongly advised her against this project. They told her that in 1835, two American missionaries, Messrs. Lyman and Munson, had been killed and eaten by the Bataks, and that no European could venture among them without a military escort. She, however, turned a deaf ear to their protests. On the 19th of July she started on horseback, and in ten days reached the borders of the Batak territory. Here she was kindly entertained by the comptroller of the settlement, who sent for the regents of the different villages, in order to speak with them concerning her intended journey.

"In the evening," says she, "we sat in solemn conclave surrounded by regents, and by a great crowd of the people, for it had been noised abroad far and wide that here was a white woman who was about to venture into the dreaded country of the wild Bataks. Regents and people all concurred in advising me to renounce so perilous a project; but I had tolerably well made up my mind on this point, and I only wanted to be satisfied as to one thing, namely, whether it was true, as many travelers asserted, that the Bataks did not put their victims out of their pain at once, but tied them living to stakes, and, cutting pieces off them, consumed them by degrees with tobacco and salt. The idea of this slow torture did a little frighten me; but my hearers assured me, with one accord, that this was only done to those who were regarded as criminals of a deep dye, and who had been on that account condemned to death. Prisoners of war are tied to a tree and beheaded at once; but the blood is carefully preserved for drinking, and sometimes made into a kind of pudding with boiled rice. The body is then distributed; the ears, the nose, and the soles of the feet are the exclusive property of the rajah, who has besides a claim on other portions. The palms of the hands, the soles of the feet, the flesh of the head, and the heart and liver, are reckoned peculiar delicacies, and the flesh in general is roasted and eaten with salt. The regents assured me, with a certain air of relish, that it was very good food, and that they had not the least objection to eat it. The women are not allowed to take part in these grand public dinners. A kind of medicinal virtue is ascribed to the trees to which prisoners have been tied when they have been put to death, and the stem is usually cut into sticks five or six feet long, carved into figures or arabesques, and decorated with human hair; and these sticks are taken in the hand by people who go to visit the sick, or when any medicine is to be given."

Resuming her journey the next day, Ida met with no startling

Sebastopol." Her
at that time of the
of modern warfare.
the harbor, and
no stone, and pos-
sible entrance to the
ed by hills, and is

It can hold the
men-of-war can lie
quays have been
. The whole of
paralleled activity
Among the work-
es who had been
to shake off the
cracks are so large

Constantinople, and after
completed her "First
na on the 1st of
ationists of 1848.

WORLD.

more resumed her
h the intention of
fields in that coun-
purpose, as the rush
st of living beyond
oss as to what part
h deciding in favor
ail for that quarter
pe of Good Hope.
Cape Town, where
f August sailed for
in forty days, and
umatra, she reached
ore, she proceeded
siting Sarawak, the

h of January, 1852,
Pontianah, a Dutch
through the coun-
, among whom her
formed the journey,

adventure until the 13th of August, when matters began to assume rather a serious aspect. "More than eighty armed men," says she, "stood in the pathway and barred our passage, and before we were aware of it, their spear-men had formed a circle round me and shut me in, looking the while indescribably terrible and savage. They were tall robust men, full six feet high: their features showed the most violent agitation, and their huge mouths and projecting teeth had really more resemblance to the jaws of a wild beast than to any thing human. They yelled and made a dreadful noise about me, and had I not been in some measure familiar with such scenes, I should have felt sure that my last hour was at hand. I was really uneasy, however: the scene was too frightful; but I never lost my presence of mind. At first I sat down on a stone that lay near, endeavoring to look as composed and confidential as I could; but some rajahs then came up to me with very threatening looks and gestures, and gave me clearly to understand that if I did not turn back they would kill and eat me. Their words, indeed, I did not comprehend, but their action left no manner of doubt, for they pointed with their knives to my throat, and gnashed their teeth at my arm, moving their jaws then, as if they already had them full of my flesh. Of course, when I thought of coming among the wild Battakers, I had anticipated something of this sort, and I had therefore studied a little speech in their language for such an occasion. I knew if I could say any thing that would amuse them, and perhaps make them laugh, I should have a great advantage over them, for savages are quite like children, and the merest trifle will often make them friends. I got up, therefore, and patting one of the most violent, who stood next me, upon the shoulder in a friendly manner, said, with a smiling face, in a jargon half Malay and half Battaker, 'Why, you don't mean to say you would kill and eat a woman, especially such an old one as I am! I must be very hard and tough!' And I also gave them by signs and words to understand that I was not at all afraid of them, and was ready, if they liked, to send back my guide, and go with them alone, if they would only take me as far as the *Eier-Tau*. Fortunately for me, the doubtless very odd way in which I pronounced their language, and my pantomime, diverted them, and they began to laugh. Perhaps, also, the fearless confidence that I manifested made a good impression; they offered me their hands, the circle of spear-men opened, and, rejoicing not a little at having escaped this danger, I journeyed on, and reached in perfect safety a place called *Tugala*, where the rajah received me into his house.

After traveling in Sumatra seven hundred miles on horseback and one hundred and fifty on foot, she returned to Batavia, and renewed her explorations of Java. On the 14th of December, she took her departure for Macassar, the chief settlement of the Dutch on Celebes, visited the Molucca Islands, and returning to Batavia on the 22d of May, 1853, embarked on the 6th of July for San Francisco. She arrived at the golden

gate on the 27th of August, soon pushed her way into the interior, visited the northern settlements, made acquaintance with the Oregon Indians, and returning to San Francisco, took passage for Panama, December 10th.

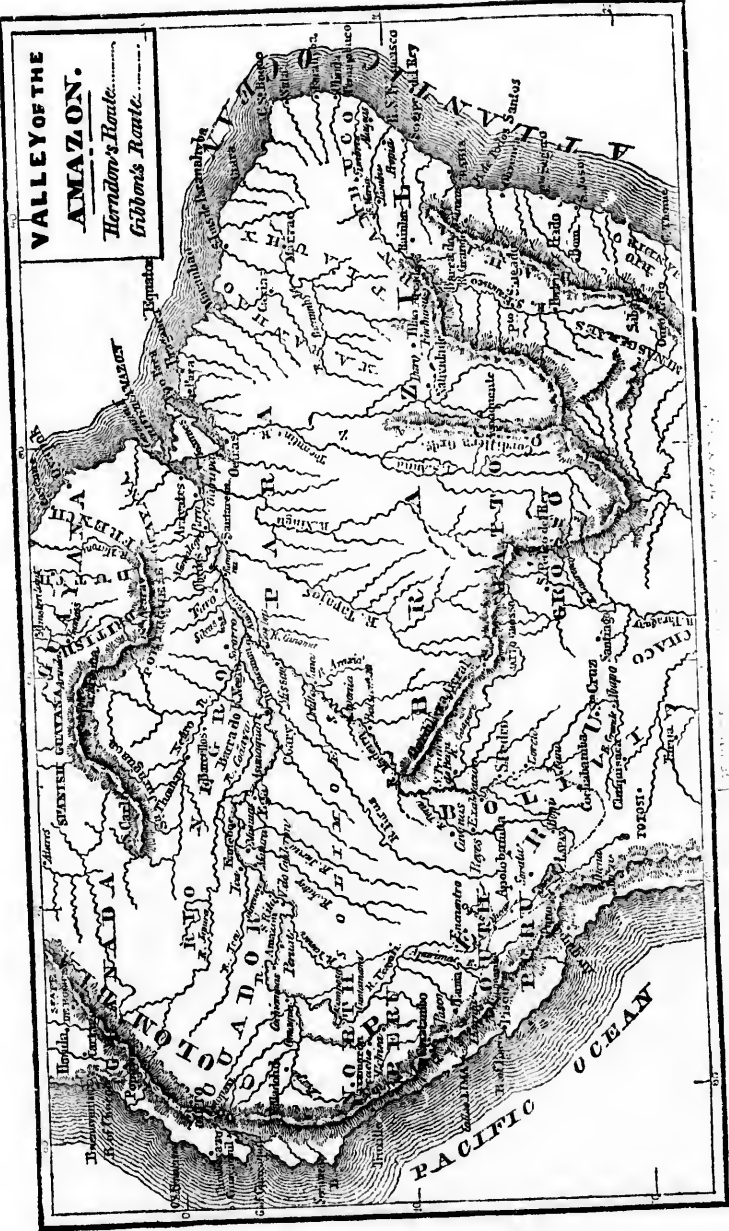
After celebrating the new year with friends at Panama, she embarked for Lima, where she arrived on the 19th, and took up her residence at the house of the Hamburg consul, Mr. Rodewald. Thence she proceeded to Quito, which city she left on the 3d of April, returned to Panama, and on the 31st of May sailed from Aspinwall for New Orleans. After a stay of three weeks in that city, she ascended the Mississippi as far as St. Paul, crossed the country to Chicago, and at Milwaukee took passage to the Sault St. Marie, August 26th. On her return, she visited Detroit, Cleveland, and Buffalo, arriving at the Falls of Niagara on the 10th of September. After a short visit in New York and Boston, she sailed on the 10th of November for Liverpool, but before returning to Vienna, made an excursion to the Azore Islands, where she passed the winter, took a hasty glance at Lisbon, and returned to London June 14, 1854, thus happily ending her second journey round the world.

So far from being satisfied with her achievements, which have never been equaled by any female traveler before her, Ida Pfeiffer is at present (June, 1856) preparing for a voyage to Madagascar. She is a small woman, quiet and unpretending in her manners, tanned and weather-beaten from her travels, but with a keen, dark eye, denoting the boundless enthusiasm and courage which sustain her.

began to assume
l men," says she,
d before we were
d me and shut me
e. They were tall
d the most violent
h had really more
ing human. They
I not been in some
t sure that my last
the scene was too
first I sat down on
ed and confidential
ch very threatening
d that if I did not
s, indeed, I did not
ot, for they pointed
r teeth at my arm,
em full of my flesh.
ld Battakers, I had
efore studied a little
knew if I could say
make them laugh, I
vages are quite like
n friends. I got up,
who stood next me,
a smiling face, in a
don't mean to say
n old one as I am I
ve them by signs and
hem, and was ready,
a them alone, if they
tunately for me, tho
eir language, and my
h. Perhaps, also, tho
od impression; they
pened, and, rejoicing
yed on, and reached
ajah received me into

on horseback and one
, and renewed her ex-
o took her departure
n Celebes, visited the
22d of May, 1853, em-
arrived at the golden

**VALLEY OF THE
AMAZON.**
Herridon's Route.
Gibbons's Route.





EXPLORATION OF THE RIVER AMAZON.

JOURNEY OF LIEUTENANT HERNDON.

LIEUTENANT WILLIAM LEWIS HERNDON was attached to the United States sloop-of-war *Vandalia*, of the Pacific squadron, and while that vessel was lying at anchor in the harbor of Valparaiso, in August, 1850, he received a communication from Lieutenant Maury, superintendent of the National Observatory, informing him that orders to explore the valley of the Amazon would be transmitted to him by the next mail-steamer. On the 4th of April, 1851, Lieutenant Lardner Gibbon, of the navy, arrived at Lima with orders from the Navy Department to Lieutenant Herndon, authorizing him to proceed with the exploration, and appointing Lieutenant Gibbon to assist him in the service. After much deliberation it was resolved to divide the party, and Lieutenant Gibbon was instructed to proceed to Cuzco and examine the country eastward of that place, to ascertain whether the river Madre de Dios was connected with the Purus and formed a navigable communication with the Amazon, or should this route be impracticable, to pass around the southern shores of Lake Titicaca to La Paz, and thence by Cochabamba to the Mamoré, and descend that river and the Madeira to the Amazon.

"That the rains might be entirely over and the roads on the mend in the Cordillera," says Lieutenant Herndon, "I fixed upon the 20th of May as the day of departure, and Mr. Gibbon and I set about making the necessary preparation. I engaged the services of Don Manuel Ijurra, a young Peruvian, who had made the voyage down the Amazon a few years before, as interpreter to the Indians; and Captain Gauntt, of the frigate *Raritan* then lying in the harbor of Callao, was kind enough to give me a young master's mate from his ship, named Richards; besides supplying me with carbines, pistols, ammunition, and a tent. Captain Magruder, of the *St. Mary's*, also offered me any thing that the ship could supply, and furnished me with more arms, and fifteen hundred fathoms of the fishing-line now put on board ships for deep-sea soundings."

The *arriero* was ordered to bring the mules on the 20th, but when

he found this was Tuesday he said it was an unlucky day, and begged them to be ready by Monday, which was lucky. This could not be done, therefore on Wednesday, the 21st of May, they loaded up, after being finally obliged to bribe the old fellow to take on all the baggage, which he represented to be too much for his beasts. The party was short of a servant, and the mules were overloaded, but Lieutenant Herndon was unwilling to delay, and after a hard morning's work in drumming up the Peruvian part of the expedition, he took the broad, beaten road which ascends the river Rimac.

On the 25th they left the coast district and entered that called the Sierra, the climate of which is said to be one perpetual spring. Their encampment here was in a beautiful dell entirely and closely surrounded by mountains, with the snowy summits of the Cordillera, in sight at a short distance. "The nights in the Cordillera at this season," says Herndon, "are very beautiful. The traveler feels that he is lifted above the impurities of the lower strata of the atmosphere, and is breathing air entirely free from taint. I was never tired of gazing into the glorious sky, which, less blue, I think, than ours, yet seemed palpable—a dome of steel lit up by the stars. The stars themselves sparkled with intense brilliancy. A small pocket spy-glass showed the satellites of Jupiter with distinctness; and Gibbon even declared on one occasion that he could see them with the naked eye. The temperature is now getting cool, and I slept cold last night, though with all my clothes on, and covered with two parts of a heavy blanket and a woolen poncho."

On the 2d of June, at two o'clock, they reached the highest point of the road. Here the peaks of the Cordillera presented the appearance of a hilly country on a winter-day; and their snowy tops contrasted with the bright green of the lower ranges, and the placid lakes which lay snug and still in their midst. While Gibbon sketched the Cordillera, and Herndon was boiling snow for the atmospheric pressure, poor Richards lay shivering on the ground, enveloped in *pillons*, a martyr to the *veta*. The sickness caused by rarity of the atmosphere at great elevations is called *veta*, or vein, by the Indians, because they believe it is caused by veins of metal diffusing a poisonous infection. "It is remarkable," observes Herndon, "that although this affection must be caused by absence of atmospheric pressure, yet in no case except this (and Richards was ill before) has it been felt at the greatest elevation, but always at a point below. The affection displays itself in a violent headache, with the veins of the head swollen and turgid, a difficulty of respiration, and cold extremities. I did not observe that our animals were affected, though they trembled and breathed hard, which, I think, was attributable to the steepness of the hill up which we rode. The barometer stood at 16,730, indicating an elevation of sixteen thousand and forty-four feet. Water boiled at $182^{\circ} 5'$; temperature of the air 43° ."

The road thence cut along the flank of the mountain, at whose base

ky day, and begged
This could not be
ney loaded up, after
on all the baggage,
ists. The party was
led, but Lieutenant
l morning's work in
a, he took the broad,

tered that called the
ctual spring. Their
nd closely surrounded
dillera, in sight at a
at this season," says
that he is lifted above
ere, and is breathing
zing into the glorious
ed palpable—a dome
sparkled with intense
satellites of Jupiter
one occasion that he
ature is now getting
ay clothes on, and cov-
ven poncho."

ned the highest point
presented the appear-
their snowy tops con-
s, and the placid lakes
Gibbon sketched the
atmospheric pressure,
oped in *pillons*, a mar-
of the atmosphere at
Indians, because they
a poisonous infection.
although this affection
sure, yet in no case ex-
een felt at the greatest
affection displays itself
l swollen and turgid, a
I did not observe that
ed and breathed hard,
of the hill up which we
g an elevation of sixteen
82° 5'; temperature of

mountain, at whose base

was a series of beautiful lakes. Though not sixty miles from the Pacific, they had crossed the great dividing ridge, and the waters at their feet flowed into the Atlantic.

In the evening they arrived at Morococho, and next morning all went to see the mountain of *Puy-puy*, said to be higher than Chimborazo. The place of view, about three miles distant, was gained by a most toilsome ascent, but the magnificence of the scene amply repaid their labors. A lofty, conical mountain, covered with snow to the cylindrical base on which it rested, rose in solitary majesty from the plain beneath them. Gibbon almost froze in taking a sketch of it, and the rest of the party tired themselves nearly to death in trying to get a shot at a herd of shy vicuñas which were feeding among the distant rocks. They had a fatiguing ride, and enjoyed a late dinner and a good night's rest.

On the 6th, they gradually descended into the region of vegetation, and arrived in the afternoon at the little city of Tarma, which was hailed with delight as a resting-place, after the tedious passage of the Cordillera. From Tarma they made an excursion to Fort San Ramon on the Chanchamayo, during which Mr. Gibbon made a narrow escape. He was riding ahead on a road cut round a precipice several hundred feet deep, when suddenly at a turn before him a bull appeared, followed by several cattle, while the drivers could be heard far behind, urging on the herd. It was too late to retreat; the bull, with lowered crest, and savage, sullen look, had come on and placed his head between the perpendicular rock and the neck of Gibbon's mule, when the sagacious beast, pressing her haunches hard against the wall, gathered her feet close under her and turned as upon a pivot. This placed the bull on the outside, and he rushed by, followed by the rest of the herd in single file.

It was now determined to divide the party; to Gibbon was assigned the task of exploring the Bolivian tributaries, while Herndon took the head-waters and main trunk of the Amazon. It was a bold undertaking, for the party was already small; but the prospect of covering such an extent of territory, and gaining a knowledge of countries and rivers so little known, prevailed over every objection. The equipage, Indian presents, arms and ammunition, instruments, etc., were divided, and Gibbon was directed to hire a guide in Tarma, and as soon as Richards should be able to travel, to start for Cuzco.

Herndon set out with his party on the 1st of July, and at the entrance of the valley of Acobamba took leave of Gibbon, who returned to make the necessary arrangements for his expedition. He was much affected at parting with his friend, whom he felt that he was exposing to unknown perils, while depriving himself of a pleasant companion, and a most efficient auxiliary.

On the 2d they rode over the hill called "Cuesta de la Veta," because of the sickness travelers suffer in passing it. The ascent brought

them to the plain of Junin, where, on the 6th of August, 1824, Bolivar defeated the Spaniards. Half an hour's ride brought into view the Western Cordillera, the Lake Chinchaycocha, and the pyramid erected by the Prefect Mariano Rivero, to commemorate the battle. On the 6th, they reached the mining-town of Cerro Pasco, among the hills of the Western Cordillera. It is a most curious-looking place, entirely honey-combed, and having the mouths of mines gaping everywhere. The hill of Santa Catalina, from which the best view is obtained, is penetrated in every direction. Vast pits, called "Tajos," surround this hill, from which millions of silver have been taken; and the miners are still burrowing, like so many rabbits, in the bottoms and sides. Immediately after leaving the Cerro, on the 13th, they passed, close at hand, a marshy spot of ground which had some interest for them, as they were not to quit the waters which they saw trickling in tiny streams from it, until, swelled by many others, they poured themselves into the Atlantic by a mouth one hundred and eighty miles broad. This was the source of the Huallaga, one of the head tributaries of the Amazon.

Huanuco, which they reached on the 16th, is one of the most ancient cities of Peru. It is pleasantly situated on the banks of the Huanuco, or Huallaga River, which is here about forty yards wide, and was at this time (the dry season) about two feet deep. Resuming their journey on the 22d, they came on the 1st of August to Juana del Rio, a settlement of five or six houses, but as the houses were all shut up, they crossed the river and walked down about a half a mile to the pueblo of San Antonio del Tingo Maria. *Tingo* is the Indian name for the junction of two rivers, the Monzon emptying into the Huallaga just above the town. Here they prepared to embark on the river, which was a hundred yards broad, and smooth, and deep. After breakfast on the 4th the governor and his wife, with some acquaintances of the party, accompanied them to the river. "After loading the canoes," says Herndon, "the governor made a short address to the canoemen, telling them that we 'were no common persons; that they were to have a special care of us; to be very obedient, etc., and that he would put up daily prayers for their safe return;' whereupon, after a glass all round, from a bottle brought down specially by our hostess, and a hearty embrace of the governor, his lady, and my fat friend of the night before, we embarked and shoved off. We had two canoes; the largest about forty feet long, by two and a half broad; hollowed out from a single log, and manned each by five men and a boy. They are conducted by a *puntero* or bowman, who looks out for rocks or sunken trees ahead; a *popero*, or steersman, who stands on a little platform at the stern of the boat and guides her motions; and the *bogas*, or rowers, who stand up to paddle, having one foot in the bottom of the boat and the other on the gunwale. When the river was smooth and free from obstructions, we drifted with the current; the men sitting on the trunks and boxes, chatting and

August, 1824, Bolivar
 brought into view the
 the pyramid erected
 the battle. On the
 o, among the hills of
 looking place, entirely
 gaping everywhere.
 view is obtained, is
 "Tajos," surround this
 n; and the miners are
 toms and sides. Im-
 they passed, close at
 interest for them, as
 saw trickling in tiny
 they poured themselves
 ighty miles broad. This
 head tributaries of the

one of the most ancient
 banks of the Huanuco,
 s wide, and was at this
 aming their journey on
 a del Rio, a settlement
 shut up, they crossed
 the pueblo of San An-
 me for the junction of
 uallaga just above the
 river, which was a hun-
 er breakfast on the 4th
 ces of the party, accom-
 canoes," says Herndon,
 emen, telling them that
 o have a special care of
 ld put up daily prayers
 all round, from a bottle
 hearty embrace of the
 ht before, we embarked
 est about forty feet long,
 single log, and manned
 ed by a *puntero* or bow-
 head; a *popero*, or steers-
 n of the boat and guides
 and up to paddle, having
 other on the gunwale.
 ructions, we drifted with
 and boxes, chatting and

laughing with each other; but, as we approached a mal-paso, their serious looks, and the firm position in which each one planted himself at his post showed that work was to be done."

On the 12th they arrived at the port of Balsayacu and slept at the pueblo, which was half a mile from the port, and consisted, as usual, of one house. At the village of Lupuna, the port of Pachiza, where they arrived on the 17th, the women were engaged in spinning; the balls of cotton thread which they manufacture being generally used as currency. When they had retired to their mats beneath the shed for the night, Herndon asked the governor if he knew a bird called *el alma perdida*. As the latter did not know it by name, the former whistled an imitation of its notes, whereupon an old woman on a mat near them related, with animated tones and gestures, a story in the Inca language, the substance of which was that an Indian and his wife once went out from the village to work, taking their child with them; that the woman went to the spring for water, and finding it dried up, went further to look for another. The husband, alarmed at her long absence, left the child and went in search of her. When they returned, the child was gone; and to their repeated cries as they wandered through the woods the only response was the wailing cry of this little bird, heard for the first time, whose notes their excited imagination syllabled into *pa-pa ma-ma*, the present Quichua name of the bird. This story had probably suggested to the Spaniards the name of "the lost soul."

At Tarapoto they met a fellow-countryman named Hackett, employed in making copper kettles for distilling, and in all kinds of smith and foundry work; he had adopted the habits and manners of the people and seemed settled in the country for life. An American circus company had passed through Tarapoto a few months before; they had come from the Pacific coast and were bound down the Amazon. It seemed probable that the adventure did not pay, as Herndon's party encountered traces of them, in broken-down horses, at several villages on the river. They floated their horses down on rafts.

Chasuta, the port of the district of Tarapoto, is an Indian village of twelve hundred inhabitants. "These Indians," says Herndon, "are a gentle, quiet race; very docile, and very obedient to their priest, always saluting him by kneeling and kissing his hand. They are tolerably good boatmen, but excel as hunters. Like all the Indians, they are much addicted to drink. I have noticed that the Indians of this country are reluctant to shed blood, and seem to have a horror of its sight. I have known them to turn away to avoid killing a chicken, when it was presented to one for that purpose. An Indian whom Ijurra struck did not complain of the pain of the blow, but, bitterly and repeatedly, that his blood had been shed. They eat mosquitoes that they catch on their bodies, with the idea of restoring the blood which the insect has abstracted."

Below Yurimaguas, toward the close of August, they entered the lake

country; and hence to the mouth of the Amazon, lakes of various sizes, and at irregular distances, border the rivers. They all communicate with the rivers by channels, which are commonly dry in the dry season. They are the resort of immense numbers of water-fowl, particularly cranes and cormorants; and the Indians, at the proper season, take many fish and turtles from them. Many of these lakes are, according to traditions of the Indians, guarded by an immense serpent, which is able to raise such a tempest in the lake as to swamp their canoes, when it immediately swallows the people. It is called in the Inca language, "Yacu Mama," or mother of the waters; and the Indians never enter a lake with which they are not familiar that they do not set up an obstreperous clamor with their horns, which the snake is said to answer.

"On the 3d of September," continues Herndon, "we arrived at the mouth of the Huallaga. Several islands occupy the middle of it. The channel runs near the left bank. Near the middle of the river we had nine feet; passing toward the left bank we suddenly fell into forty-five feet. The Huallaga, just above the island, is three hundred and fifty yards wide; the Amazon, at the junction, five hundred. The water of both rivers is very muddy and filthy, particularly that of the former, which for some distance within the mouth is covered with a glutinous scum, that I take to be the excrement of fish, probably that of porpoises.

"The Huallaga, from Tingo Maria, the head of canoe navigation, to Chasuta (from which point to its mouth it is navigable for a draught of five feet at the lowest stage of the river), is three hundred and twenty-five miles long; costing seventy-four working-hours to descend it; and falling four feet and twenty-seven hundredths per mile. From Chasuta to its mouth it has two hundred and eighty-five miles of length, and takes sixty-eight hours of descent, falling one foot and twenty-five hundredths per mile.

"We now entered upon the main trunk of the Amazon. The march of the great river in its silent grandeur was sublime; in the untamed might of its turbid waters as they cut away its banks, tore down the gigantic denizens of the forest, and built up islands, it was awful. It rolled through the wilderness with a stately and solemn air. Its waters looked angry, sullen, and relentless; and the whole scene awoke emotions of awe and dread—such as are caused by the funeral solemnities, the minute gun, the howl of the wind, and the angry tossing of the waves, when all hands are called to bury the dead in a troubled sea."

They reached Nauta about noon on the 9th, having traveled two hundred and ten miles from the mouth of the Huallaga. Here they purchased a boat, thirty feet long, and engaged twelve rowers and a popero, and set them to work to fit it up with decks and coverings, preparatory to exploring the Ucayali. They started on the 25th, and an hour afterward arrived at the mouth of the Ucayali. This is a beautiful stream, with low, shelving, green banks at its mouth. Being the largest

tributary above Brazil it is called by some the main trunk of the Amazon, but it is not more than half as wide at its mouth as the latter river. They ascended the Ucayali as far as Sarayacu, where they arrived on the 18th of October. This was a neat-looking Indian village of about a thousand inhabitants, under the government of Franciscan friars, of the college of Ocopa. Herndon had intended to continue as far as Chanchamayo, and also to examine the Pachitea, but he could not find men enough at Sarayacu who were willing to go at that season, and was obliged to desist from further explorations in that direction. On this occasion he observes: "I felt, in turning my boat's head down stream, that the pleasure and excitement of the expedition were passed; that I was done, and had done nothing. I became ill and dispirited, and never fairly recovered the gayety of temper and elasticity of spirit which had animated me at the start until I received the congratulations of my friends at home."

They left Sarayacu on the 28th, and in eight days made the descent to Nauta, which had cost them twenty-three in the ascent—the distance from Sarayacu to the mouth of the river being, by the channel, two hundred and seventy miles. Two of the men deserted at Nauta, although paid as far as Pebas; and fearing to lose more, Herndon collected the few birds and animals he had left here, and started on the evening of November 5th. On the 8th, he arrived at the mouth of the Napo; found it two hundred yards broad, thirty-five to forty feet deep, and of a gentle current. At Chorococha, a settlement just below the Napo, he breakfasted with some Nauta friends, who were here salting fish, and proceeding thence down the river he arrived at Pebas next day. He remained a fortnight in this vicinity, where he greatly increased his collection of animals.

On the 4th of December he reached Tabatinga, the frontier of Brazil. The American flag floated over the boat, and when it was descried at Tabatinga, the Brazilian flag was hoisted at that place. Herndon landed in uniform and was received by the commandant, also in uniform, to whom he presented his Brazilian passport. As soon as his rank was ascertained he was saluted with seven guns. The commandant used much stately ceremony toward him, but never left him a moment to himself until he was safely in bed on board his boat. He insisted on furnishing Herndon with a boat in place of his own, which he said was not large enough for the navigation of the lower part of the Amazon. Herndon at first declined, but finding that the law of the empire forbids foreign vessels to navigate its interior waters, he accepted the proposition, and exchanged boats; thus enabling the commandant to say, in the frontier passport which he issued to Herndon, that the latter was descending the river in a Brazilian vessel.

The party resumed their journey after noon on the 6th. They passed the mouth of the Iça toward evening on the 9th, and found it a fine-looking river, half a mile broad at the mouth, and opening into an

estuary of a mile in width. It was one hundred and thirty-eight feet deep, and had a current of two and three quarter miles an hour. On the 14th they passed the Juruá, which is half a mile wide at its mouth. The Amazon at this point is a mile and a quarter wide. Concerning the Indians of the Juruá, M. Castelnau has some curious stories, and gives the following passage from Padre Noronho: "The Indians, *Cauamas* and *Uginas*, live near the sources of the river. The first are of very short stature, scarcely exceeding five palms (about three and a half feet), and the last (of this there is no doubt) have tails, and are produced by a mixture of Indians and *Coata* monkeys. Whatever may be the cause of this fact, I am led to give it credit for three reasons: first, because there is no physical reason why men should not have tails; secondly, because many Indians, whom I have interrogated regarding this thing, have assured me of the fact, telling me that the tail was a palm and a half long; and, thirdly, because the Reverend Father Friar José de Santa Theresa Ribeiro, a Carmelite, and curate of Castro de Avelaças, assured me that he saw the same thing in an Indian who came from Japurá."

On the 16th they encamped on an island near the mouth of the Japurá. At this place Herndon estimates the width of the Amazon to be four or five miles. It is separated into several channels by islands. Next day they arrived at Egas, where they remained until the 28th. They now parted with the Sarayacu boatmen, who though lazy enough, were active and diligent compared with the stupid and listless Ticunas who were engaged to succeed them. Still floating onward down the river they entered the Rio Negro on the evening of January 5th, 1852. "We were made aware of our approach to it," says Herndon, "before getting into the mouth. The right bank at the mouth is broken into islands, and the black water of the Negro runs through the channels between these islands and alternates, in patches (refusing to mingle), with the muddy waters of the Amazon. The entrance is broad and superb. It is far the largest tributary of the Amazon I have yet seen; and I estimate its width at the mouth at two miles. There has been no exaggeration in the description of travelers regarding the blackness of its water. Lieutenant Maw describes it perfectly when he says it looks like black marble. It well deserves the name of 'Rio Negro.' When taken up in a tumbler, the water is a light-red color, like a pale juniper water; and I should think it colored by some such berry. A body immersed in it has the color, though wanting the brilliancy, of red Bohemian glass."

Next day they arrived at Barra, the capital of the province of Amazonas. During a sojourn of six weeks at this place, Herndon obtained much useful information respecting the country and its productions, and the character of the rivers Negro and Purus. Having sent Mr. Gibbon to look for the head waters of the Purus, he had hoped to ascend it from its mouth, but now he was too much exhausted to undergo the hardship and exposure necessary for a thorough examination of the river.

Having had the boat thoroughly repaired, and well fitted with palm

coverings, he sailed from Barras on the 18th of February. Ninety miles below, his boat was made fast for the night to some bushes on the low, western bank of the Madeira. A large island occupies the middle of the Amazon, opposite the mouth of the Madeira, and the latter is divided by a smaller island. The western mouth is three-quarters of a mile wide; the eastern one a mile and a quarter. Herndon looked long and earnestly for the broad *Z* that Gibbon was to cut on a tree at the mouth of whatever tributary he should descend, in hopes that he had already come down the Madeira, and, not being able to go up stream to Barra, had gone on down; but it was nowhere to be seen.

On the 1st of March the party entered the mouth of the Tapajos and arrived at Santarem. This city is four hundred and sixty miles from the Rio Negro and six hundred and fifty miles from the sea. It is the largest town in the province, after Pará; the official returns giving it over six thousand five hundred inhabitants, of whom nearly fifteen hundred are slaves. Herndon, however, estimates the population at about two thousand, all the planters for miles around, and all the tapuios engaged in the navigation of the river, being included in the official returns.

Herndon left Santarem on the 28th of March, in the evening. The delegado, whose men were employed in building, could muster him only three tapuios and a pilot, and had, moreover, no conception that he would sail on the day appointed; as the people of the country never do, by any chance. He proceeded, however, without delay, and floated rapidly on toward the mouth of the immense river. At Gurupá, about five hundred miles from the sea, the river is ten miles wide, and the tide is very apparent. About thirty-five miles below Gurupá commences the great estuary of the Amazon. The river suddenly flares out into an immense bay, which is probably one hundred and fifty miles across in its widest part. This might appropriately be called the "Bay of the Thousand Islands," for it is cut up into innumerable channels. The great island of Marajo, which contains about ten thousand square miles, occupies nearly the center of it, and divides the river into two great channels: one, the main channel of the Amazon, which runs out by Cayenne; and the other, and smaller one, the river of Pará.

Entering these intricate channels, Herndon and his party arrived at the Mojú, upon which forty-five miles of descent brought them to the junction of the Acará, which comes in from the south-east. The estuary formed by the junction is called the river Guajará. The descent of the Guajará brought them to the Pará River, five miles above the city, where they arrived in the evening, on the 11th of April. Herndon was so worn out when they arrived that instead of going to the consul's house for letters which he knew must be there, he anchored in the stream, and wrapping himself in his blanket, went to sleep. On the 12th of May he embarked in the United States brig *Dolphin*, having previously shipped his collections on board of Norris's clipper bark the *Peerless*.

estuary of a mile in width. It was one hundred and thirty-eight feet deep, and had a current of two and three quarter miles an hour. On the 14th they passed the Juruá, which is half a mile wide at its mouth. The Amazon at this point is a mile and a quarter wide. Concerning the Indians of the Juruá, M. Castelnau has some curious stories, and gives the following passage from Padre Noronho: "The Indians, *Cauamas* and *Uyimas*, live near the sources of the river. The first are of very short stature, scarcely exceeding five palms (about three and a half feet), and the last (of this there is no doubt) have tails, and are produced by a mixture of Indians and *Coata* monkeys. Whatever may be the cause of this fact, I am led to give it credit for three reasons: first, because there is no physical reason why men should not have tails; secondly, because many Indians, whom I have interrogated regarding this thing, have assured me of the fact, telling me that the tail was a palm and a half long; and, thirdly, because the Reverend Father Friar José de Santa Theresa Ribeiro, a Carmelite, and curate of Castro de Avlacãs, assured me that he saw the same thing in an Indian who came from Japurá."

On the 16th they encamped on an island near the mouth of the Japurá. At this place Herndon estimates the width of the Amazon to be four or five miles. It is separated into several channels by islands. Next day they arrived at Egas, where they remained until the 28th. They now parted with the Sarayacu boatmen, who though lazy enough, were active and diligent compared with the stupid and listless Ticunas who were engaged to succeed them. Still floating onward down the river they entered the Rio Negro on the evening of January 5th, 1852. "We were made aware of our approach to it," says Herndon, "before getting into the mouth. The right bank at the mouth is broken into islands, and the black water of the Negro runs through the channels between these islands and alternates, in patches (refusing to mingle), with the muddy waters of the Amazon. The entrance is broad and superb. It is far the largest tributary of the Amazon I have yet seen; and I estimate its width at the mouth at two miles. There has been no exaggeration in the description of travelers regarding the blackness of its water. Lieutenant Maw describes it perfectly when he says it looks like black marble. It well deserves the name of 'Rio Negro.' When taken up in a tumbler, the water is a light-red color, like a pale juniper water; and I should think it colored by some such berry. A body immersed in it has the color, though wanting the brilliancy, of red Bohemian glass."

Next day they arrived at Barra, the capital of the province of Amazonas. During a sojourn of six weeks at this place, Herndon obtained much useful information respecting the country and its productions, and the character of the rivers Negro and Purus. Having sent Mr. Gibbon to look for the head waters of the Purus, he had hoped to ascend it from its mouth, but now he was too much exhausted to undergo the hardship and exposure necessary for a thorough examination of the river.

Having had the boat thoroughly repaired, and well fitted with palm

and thirty-eight feet miles an hour. On e wide at its mouth. wide. Concerning curious stories, and "The Indians, *Cauer*. The first arc of (about three and a have tails, and are eys. Whatever may it for three reasons: should not have tails; errogated regarding at the tail was a palm Father Friar José de astro de Avelaefis, aso came from Japurá." ar the mouth of the lth of the Amazon to channels by islands. ained until the 28th. o though lazy enough, l and listless Ticunas g onward down the of January 5th, 1852. ys Herndon, "before outh is broken into ough the channels be- g to mingle), with the oad and superb. It is en seen; and I estimate en no exaggeration in as of its water. Lieu- o looks like black mar- When taken up in a juniper water; and I ody immersed in it d Bohemian glass."

the province of Ama- ce, Herndon obtained d its productions, and iving sent Mr. Gibbon oped to ascend it from to undergo the hard- nation of the river.

t well fitted with palm

coverings, he sailed from Barras on the 18th of February. Ninety miles below, his boat was made fast for the night to some bushes on the low, western bank of the Madeira. A large island occupies the middle of the Amazon, opposite the mouth of the Madeira, and the latter is divided by a smaller island. The western mouth is three-quarters of a mile wide; the eastern one a mile and a quarter. Herndon looked long and earnestly for the broad *Z* that Gibbon was to cut on a tree at the mouth of whatever tributary he should descend, in hopes that he had already come down the Madeira, and, not being able to go up stream to Barra, had gone on down; but it was nowhere to be seen.

On the 1st of March the party entered the mouth of the Tapajos and arrived at Santarem. This city is four hundred and sixty miles from the Rio Negro and six hundred and fifty miles from the sea. It is the largest town in the province, after Pará; the official returns giving it over six thousand five hundred inhabitants, of whom nearly fifteen hundred are slaves. Herndon, however, estimates the population at about two thousand, all the planters for miles around, and all the tapuios engaged in the navigation of the river, being included in the official returns.

Herndon left Santarem on the 28th of March, in the evening. The delegado, whose men were employed in building, could muster him only three tapuios and a pilot, and had, moreover, no conception that he would sail on the day appointed; as the people of the country never do, by any chance. He proceeded, however, without delay, and floated rapidly on toward the mouth of the immense river. At Gurupá, about five hundred miles from the sea, the river is ten miles wide, and the tide is very apparent. About thirty-five miles below Gurupá commences the great estuary of the Amazon. The river suddenly flares out into an immense bay, which is probably one hundred and fifty miles across in its widest part. This might appropriately be called the "Bay of the Thousand Islands," for it is cut up into innumerable channels. The great island of Marajo, which contains about ten thousand square miles, occupies nearly the center of it, and divides the river into two great channels: one, the main channel of the Amazon, which runs out by Cayenne; and the other, and smaller one, the river of Pará.

Entering these intricate channels, Herndon and his party arrived at the Moju, upon which forty-five miles of descent brought them to the junction of the Acará, which comes in from the south-east. The estuary formed by the junction is called the river Guajará. The descent of the Guajará brought them to the Pará River, five miles above the city, where they arrived in the evening, on the 11th of April. Herndon was so worn out when they arrived that instead of going to the consul's house for letters which he knew must be there, he anchored in the stream, and wrapping himself in his blanket, went to sleep. On the 12th of May he embarked in the United States brig *Dolphin*, having previously shipped his collections on board of Norris's clipper bark the *Peerless*.

JOURNEY OF LIEUTENANT GIBBON.

On the 9th of July, 1851, Lieutenant Gibbon left Tarma and turned south-east, accompanied by Henry C. Richards, a native of Virginia, and José Casas, a Peruvian of Spanish descent. A mestizo arriero, with his little son, drove their train of mules. The route lay over an elevated mountain district, in which they presently came in sight of the great valley of Juaja, stretching away to the south. High, snow-covered peaks bounded the eastern view.

On leaving the valley of Juaja they passed through a rough mountain country, and in a few days arrived, by a long and tiresome descent, at the town of Huancavelica. The town is situated in a deep ravine, amid a cluster of lofty mountains. It contains about eight thousand inhabitants, and is the capital of the district. After visiting the quicksilver mines Gibbon proceeded eastward toward the town of Huanta, where he entered the province of Ayacucho. "On this part of our journey," says Gibbon, "Indian girls, with *chicha* and *chupe* for sale, are seated at the tops of the steep ascents. *Chicha* is the favorite drink of the Indians. A party—generally old women—seat themselves around a wooden trough containing maize. Each one takes a mouthful, and mashes the grain between her teeth—if she has any—and casts it back into the trough in the most sickening manner. As the mill-stones are often pretty well worn, the operation requires time and perseverance. The mass, with water added, is then boiled in large coppers, after which it is left to ferment in huge earthen jars. *Chupe* is the Peruvian national dish, and may be made of any and every thing, so long as it holds its relationship to soup. It is made generally of mutton, potatoes, eggs, rice, all highly seasoned with pepper, etc."

On the way a man in *poncho* and a traveling dress, with an Indian girl behind on his saddle, overtook them and accosted them in English. He was born in New Haven, was proprietor of a circus company, and had been many years in South America. As they slowly wound their way up the mountain, he told his past history; what he had seen, and how often he thought of returning to New England. "But nobody knows me now," he said. "Years ago I heard of the changes there, and don't believe I should know my native place. I have adopted the manners and customs of these people, and if I should return to the United States again, I fear my earnings would not be sufficient. I have worked in this country for years, and am worth nothing at last."

The approach to the Apurimac was among wild mountains; on winding around one of them they came suddenly in sight of the river, its waters foaming as they dashed over a rocky bed. At another turn they entered a tunnel, cut into the mountain, which rises perpendicularly from the river side. Skylights are cut through the rock, and as they

GIBBON.

left Tarma and turned
a native of Virginia,
a mestizo arriero, with
e lay over an elevated
in sight of the great
High, snow-covered

rough a rough mount-
and tiresome descent,
ated in a deep ravine,
out eight thousand in-
visiting the quicksilver
own of Huanta, where
s part of our journey,"
e for sale, are seated at
avorite drink of the In-
selves around a wooden
ithful, and mashes the
casts it back into the
-stones are often pretty
severance. The mass,
s, after which it is left
Peruvian national dish,
as it holds its relation-
potatoes, eggs, rice, all

g dress, with an Indian
costed them in English.
f a circus company, and
they slowly wound their
what he had seen, and
ngland. "But nobody
d of the changes there,
ec. I have adopted the
i should return to the
ot be sufficient. I have
nothing at last."

ild mountains; on wind-
sight of the river, its
. At another turn they
h rises perpendicularly
the rock, and as they

advance in alternate light and darkness the mules are shy and the arrieros shout at the top of their voices at the train. They came out at the toll-house, which stood on the brink of the abyss and was inhabited by two women, a man, a child, a dog, and two jugs of chicha. The ropes of the suspension-bridge, of bark, were made fast to the posts which supported the roof of the house. Gibbon thought best not to examine too particularly how these ropes were fastened. A windlass in the middle of the house kept the ropes hauled up when they slack off. One woman, a good-looking black, was seated by a large jar of chicha, which she sold to travelers, with her child on the other side; she spun cotton, with a smoking fire close by to keep off the sand-flies, which were here in swarms. A white woman was seated by the windlass, holding her head in her hands. She seemed to have had the small-pox, but the red marks on her face were caused by these annoying flies.

The bridge is eighty yards long and six feet wide, distant one hundred and fifty feet above the dark green waters. There are six floor-ropes, crossed by small sticks, lashed with strips of hide to the cables. This platform is hung to two side-cables by small bark ropes.

As they approached the city of Cuzco the population increased and the land was more highly cultivated. By a paved road they ascended a slight elevation in the valley, then passing under the lofty arch of a stone aqueduct, they halted to gaze upon the ancient curiosity of the New World—the city of Cuzco, centuries ago the seat of the Incas. It was a beautiful view: close against the hills at the west end of the valley stood the ruins of the Temple of the Sun, and near it rose the steeples and roofs of a large city. The floor of the valley was carpeted with green, while afar off were the snow-capped Andes in a clear blue sky.

"I found," says Gibbon, "a very friendly disposition toward the expedition, with a desire to aid me. The prefect offered twenty soldiers as an escort in the low country, to the east of the Andes. A number of young men volunteered to accompany me. A meeting of the citizens was held for the purpose of forming a company to join me. At their suggestion, the President of Peru was applied to for the payment of twenty thousand dollars, appropriated by Congress, for the exploration of the Rio Madre de Dios, supposed to be the same with the river Purus, rising among the mountains to the eastward of Cuzco. I was very much pleased also to hear that a spirited young officer had applied to command the soldiers."

On the 16th of September, he started for the head-waters of the Madre de Dios. The road led along the valley of the Mapacho, then ascended a steep ridge of mountains, and soon attained an elevation of eleven thousand feet above the level of the sea. Gibbon was obliged to leave his instruments in Portocamba on account of bad roads, and take barley for the mules. By law, the cargo of a mule descending the eastern slope of the Andes is one hundred and fifty pounds—one half the usual load. On the 22d he reached the eastern frontier settlement,

where one hundred men were engaged cultivating the coca-plant. The seed is planted in rows like maize. In two years the bush, five or six feet high, is full grown, bearing bright green leaves, two inches long, with white blossoms, and scarlet berries. The women and boys were gathering the ripe leaves, while the men cleared the fields of weeds. The gathering takes place three times a year, in cotton bags. The leaf is spread out in the sun on mats and dried.

As the party advanced, they were obliged to dismount and literally cut their way through the forest. A most difficult struggle of twelve hours brought them to the Cosnipata River, in the territory of the Chuncha savages. Next day they built a raft and attempted to cross the river; there were falls above and below, and as the river became too deep for the poles, the raft lodged against a small island, after being nearly carried over the falls. In the evening they lay down upon the rocks, under a heavy rain, with loud claps of thunder, which echoed up the Andes. Toward midnight, an old Indian of the company awoke them with the cry that the river was rising; the night was dark, and the rain poured down. On striking a light, they found that a rise of three feet more would carry them off, and that escape from the island was impossible. The old Indian called Gibbon a bad man for bringing him there when he could not swim. A mark was placed by the edge of the water, which was roaring terribly, and they seated themselves very uncomfortably to await their fate. In this state of anxiety, they spent the rest of the night, but as daylight appeared, the storm abated. The water soon lowered, and they passed over to the opposite shore.

Gibbon descended the tributaries to the main head of the Madre-de-Dios, but finding it impracticable to descend the river, he prepared to retrace his steps. "At the end of the sixth day from the head of the Madre-de-Dios," he continues, "we arrived in Cuzco, after an absence of twenty-one days. Richards was still much reduced, but gaining health. The prefect expressed his regrets at not being authorized to send troops with me, and asked the favor of a written account of my visit to the east, in behalf of the Peruvian government."

On the 28th of October, the expedition left Cuzco, well supplied with provisions by the kind hospitality of the people, and proceeded toward the south-east. "The night of November 6th," says Gibbon, "we spent at Caracota. To the left of us we beheld the deep blue waters of the great southern lake Titicaca. The east wind troubled its waters; the white-capped waves reminded us of the trade-wind region of the ocean. Large barren islands intercepted our view; not a tree nor a bush was to be seen; the only living thing in sight was a llama, seeking food among the tumbled-up rocks on the unproductive hills. The scene is wild and deadly silent. Our only view was to the south-east, where we saw tops of islands beyond tops of islands, backed by mountain peaks. Winding round a hill, and descending a ravine, we

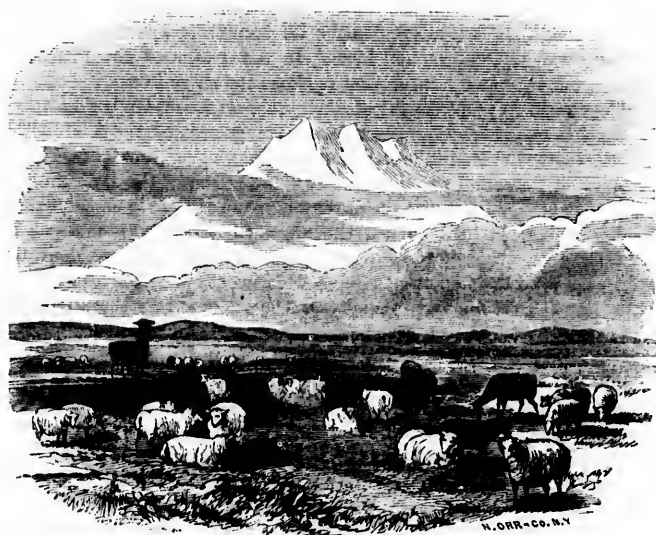
the coca-plant. The
 the bush, five or six
 leaves, two inches long,
 women and boys were
 the fields of weeds,
 cotton bags. The leaf

dismount and literally
 a struggle of twelve
 the territory of the
 and attempted to cross
 as the river became
 small island, after being
 they lay down upon the
 under, which echoed up
 of the company awoke
 the night was dark, and
 they found that a rise of
 escape from the island
 a bad man for bringing
 was placed by the edge
 they seated themselves
 state of anxiety, they
 it appeared, the storm
 ed over to the opposite

n head of the Madre-de-
 e river, he prepared to
 y from the head of the
 Cuzco, after an absence
 uced, but gaining health.
 uthorized to send troops
 ount of my visit to the

eft Cuzco, well supplied
 people, and proceeded
 ber 6th," says Gibbon,
 e beheld the deep blue
 e east wind troubled its
 f the trade-wind region
 l our view; not a tree
 g in sight was a llama,
 n the unproductive hills.
 view was to the south-
 ps of islands, backed by
 descending a ravine, we

come to an arched gateway, and enter the city of Puno. It is a dry, dusty, uninteresting-looking place, of about five thousand inhabitants, and is the capital of the department of the same name. The town is situated about a quarter of a mile from the west shore of Lake Titicaca.



ILLIMANI, HIGHEST PEAK OF THE ANDES.

They crossed the Desaguadera by a floating bridge, at the southern end of the lake, and continued their journey over the dry table-lands of Bolivia. "Suddenly arriving at the edge of a deep ravine, we saw the tile-roofs of the city of La Paz, near the base of the great snow-capped mountain, Illimani. Descending by a steep, narrow road, and passing the cemetery, the air was found loaded with the perfume of sweet flowers. Springs of fresh water gushed out by the road-side, into which our mules sunk their noses before we could get a drink. As we entered the town, some one called out from a shaded piazza for our passports.

"La Paz is a most busy inland city. The blacksmith's hammer is heard. The large mercantile houses are well supplied with goods. The plaza is free from market people, for there is a regular market-house. The dwellings are well built, of stone and adobe. The home and foreign trade appears to be possessed with a life seldom met with in an inland town, without shipping or railroads. The people appear to be active. There is less lounging against the door-posts. The place has a healthy appearance."

On the 1st of December they quitted La Paz in a southern direction, proceeding along the edge of the great Titicaca basin, then turning eastward among the Andes, they came to the beautiful city of Cochabamba, which has a population of over thirty thousand. The streets are laid off at right angles. On the south of the main plaza stands a large cathedral, and opposite to it the palace occupies the whole side of the block. It is remarkable for its handsome appearance, being much superior to the palace in Lima. In the center of the plaza is a fountain fed by water from a snow peak on the ridge in sight.

The President and his cabinet being here on a visit, Gibbon hastened to make a commercial proposition to the government. A Brazilian minister had concluded a treaty of limits and navigation between his country and Peru, and was now awaiting the action of the Bolivian government to secure the use of the navigable rivers of Bolivia for the Brazils alone. Gibbon decided to ask the right to navigate these rivers by steamboats or other vessels. In an interview with the President, the latter expressed the hope that a more direct route between the United States and Bolivia might be found than Cape Horn; to which the President replied, that he had heard of Gibbon's arrival in La Paz, and was glad to see him. "My country," said he, "is in its infancy. I would be the more pleased to join hands with the United States, because we are all Americans. You may depend upon me for aid and assistance in your enterprise."

Through the interposition of the British minister at Sucre, the Brazilian envoy sent to Gibbon passports to the authorities on his route, and also wrote to the governor of Matto Grosso on his behalf.

On the 12th of May, 1852, the party bade farewell to Cochabamba, and followed a train of nineteen loaded mules toward the east. "On the river bank the women seated themselves in a row to take the last dram with the men who were going with us. They shouted, sang, and danced; then shaking hands all round, the arrieros called to their mules, and we all moved along single file on our way home through the river bed, which was now dry again, the wet season being just over."

They soon began to descend the Andes, proceeding in a north-easterly direction, along the head waters of the Chaparé. At Espiritu Santo, they saw about a hundred Creoles cultivating patches of coca. "The coca," says Gibbon, "is a great favorite of the Quichua Indian; he prizes it as the Chinaman does his opium. While the one puts to sleep, the other keeps awake. The Indian brain being excited by coca, he travels a long distance without feeling fatigue. While he has plenty of coca, he cares little for food. Therefore, after a journey he is worn out. In the city of Cuzco, where the Indians masticate the best quality of coca, they use it to excess. Their physical condition, compared with those who live far off from the coca market, in a climate equally inhospitable, is thin, weak, and sickly; less cheerful, and not so good look-

in a southern direction, to a basin, then turning to the beautiful city of Cochabamba. The streets of the main plaza stands a fountain which occupies the whole side of the appearance, being the center of the plaza is a bridge in sight.

On a visit, Gibbon hastened to the government. A Brazilian navigation between his son of the Bolivian government of Bolivia for the Brazils to navigate these rivers by with the President, the treaty between the United States; to which the Presidential in La Paz, and was in its infancy. I would have visited the United States, because we needed aid and assistance in

at Sucre, the Brazilian difficulties on his route, and on his behalf.

He went to Cochabamba, toward the east. "On the way in a row to take the last of the day. They shouted, sang, and the carriers called to their way home through the wet season being just

proceeding in a north-easterly direction. At Espiritu Santo, the patches of coca. "The Quichua Indian; he while the one puts to sleep, being excited by coca, he

While he has plenty of a journey he is worn out. I can attest the best quality of condition, compared with a climate equally inhospitable, and not so good look-

ing. The chewers also use more brandy and less tamborine and fiddle; seldom dance or sing. Their expression of face is doleful, made hideous by green streaks of juice streaming from each corner of the mouth."

Having rested their mules, they pushed on over a level road to Vinchuta, the point where the traders of the province of Mojos reach those of Cochabamba with salt. "The next morning the governor made his appearance, read our passports, and said there was a large canoe ready for us; that she might go off to-morrow. He seemed to be an active little man and very obliging; wanted to know all the news from Cochabamba, and was constantly complaining he had nothing nice to give us, besides which he was very particular to let us know he had the roads put in fine order, as he had been ordered to do by the prefect of his department, as they knew we were coming. The crew of the canoe were stout, fine-looking Indians of the Canichanas tribe. They stood before us with straw hats in hand, listening to the advice of the governor."

On the 25th of May, they entered the canoe. It was made of a log, forty feet long, and four feet wide, being one of the largest used by the Bolivian Indians. From the stream they had a last view of the Andes, far back among the clouds. They soon entered the river Chaparé, which was a hundred yards wide, and twelve feet deep, and increased as they descended.

On the 30th, they reached the Mamoré, and continued their route pleasantly along its smooth, broad surface, sometimes traveling by night.

"After the sun went down," says Gibbon, "the bright moon lit up our water-path through the wilds. The earth seemed asleep as we watched the nodding Indians at their paddles, which hung dripping over the sides of the canoe. At one moment a rustling noise was heard among the canes. We swept close in toward the bank by the current. The burning piece of wood which the old captain kept on his part of the boat, disturbed the black tiger, or a serpent slipped softly from a cluster of canes into the water to avoid us. As we turn, the moon shines directly up the river, and the sheet of water appears like a silvery way. We think of obstruction, and fear we are not going fast enough to see the glad waters of the Atlantic."

They arrived at Trinidad on the 30th of May, where their crew took leave, and returned with the boat. Don Antonio, an active trader of Trinidad, who owned the only two boats from the Amazon on the upper waters, which were of the proper build for the falls of the Madeira, offered one of them to Gibbon, but he had no men to spare, and it was necessary to wait and go with him to Brazil to get them. During this long stay at Trinidad, they made acquaintance with the motley populace, consisting of natives, Creoles, and Spaniards; witnessed a bull-fight, and other amusements and occupations of the people; and meanwhile made an excursion to Loreto, twelve leagues distant.

Over a hundred Indians died of small-pox while they were in Trinidad, and the people were still suffering with it when they left. The idea of being fastened up amid disease during a long rainy season, while doubting by which route they were to find an outlet to the Atlantic, became daily more painful to Gibbon. Finally, on the 14th of August, Don Antonio found his cargo could not be disposed of in Trinidad, and he must return to Brazil with his boats. He had Brazilian boatmen—negroes and mestizos—who came up from the Amazon with him, and were thought the only kind of people who could be employed upon the expedition.

The baggage was stowed on board the *Igarite*, over which the flag of the United States was hoisted, and Don Antonio embarked his cargo on the *Coberta*, from which the flag of Brazil was suspended. On entering the Mamoré River again they found thirty-three feet of water, the current being one mile an hour. They stopped a week at Exaltacion, then continued down the Mamoré to its junction with the Itenez, and ascending the latter, arrived at Fort Principe da Beira, in Brazil, on the 7th of September.

A canoe came out with two armed negro soldiers, one of whom politely gave his commander's compliments to Gibbon, with the request that they would keep off. Gibbon sent up the letter of the Brazilian minister, after which two old negroes, of the health-department, brought the commander's invitation for them to land at the fort. When they landed, a young negro lieutenant in the emperor's army came to meet Gibbon and offered, in the most polite manner, to escort him to a house in town. As they passed the guard-house the negro soldiers respectfully saluted the American uniform, but they handled the musket very awkwardly.

When Don Antonio arrived, he had his boat fitted up for Gibbon's party, and gave them as pilot a man who had passed up the Madeira with him. The boat was twenty-three feet long, with four feet seven inches beam. Her bottom was of one piece, cut out of a very large tree, with washboards nailed rudely on the sides, caulked with oakum, and well pitched outside and in. The two ends were fastened up by a solid piece of wood, also made water-proof. In this craft they set out on the 14th of September, parting at the fort with Don Antonio, who expected to be two years longer trading off the cargoes of his two small boats.

On the 20th of September they reached the falls. These consist of a series of distinct rapids, several miles apart, down which they passed the empty boats, and transported the baggage along the rocky banks of the river. The channel is broken and obstructed by rocks, over which the waters rush down in numerous streams, and keep up a continuous deafening roar. It is impossible to pass these falls with a steamboat, at any season of the year.

Below the falls the boat was carried along at a rapid rate by the cur-

while they were in
th it when they left.
g a long rainy season,
find an outlet to the

Finally, on the 14th
not be disposed of in
boats. He had Brazil-
up from the Amazon
ple who could be em-

te, over which the flag
io embarked his cargo
was suspended. On
rty-three feet of water,
oped a week at Exalta-
nction with the Itenez,
da Beira, in Brazil, on

soldiers, one of whom
ibbon, with the request
letter of the Brazilian
th-department, brought
t the fort. When they
or's army came to meet
to escort him to a house
negro soldiers respect-
andled the musket very

at fitted up for Gibbon's
passed up the Madeira
ng, with four feet seven
cut out of a very large
les, caulked with oakum,
were fastened up by a
n this craft they set out
with Don Antonio, who
the cargoes of his two

falls. These consist of
down which they passed
along the rocky banks of
ed by rocks, over which
and keep up a continuous
e falls with a steamboat,

at a rapid rate by the cur-

rent, which boiled up in great globular swells. They did not, however, proceed at night, as the navigation was still obstructed by rocks and occasional rapids, but at their encampment they became aware of a new danger—the treachery of the blacks in their employ. The one on duty shot a dog which was faithfully prowling the woods around the camp, pretending he had taken it for an approaching tiger. Gibbon had placed great confidence in this dog, from which he expected a quick report of savages or wild beasts. From what he had seen of the men he was convinced they were a rough, savage set who would put his party to death as unceremoniously as the dog, and he ordered another man on watch, at which they expressed an impudent dissatisfaction. They lay at night with their pistols prepared for an attack, and by daylight Gibbon was particular to let every man of them see his revolver; he and Richards kept a close watch upon them night and day.

“We are about to pass out of the Madeira Plate,” says Gibbon, “having arrived at the north-east corner of the territory of Bolivia. The lands about the mouths of the Beni and Mamoré are now inhabited by wild Indians; some parts of them are free from inundation. Cacao grows wild in the forests. The head of the Madeira contains a number of islands. Here we find the outlet of streams flowing from the Andes and from the Brazils collected together in one large river. Water from hot springs and cold springs, silvered and golden streams joining with the clear diamond brooks, mingled at the temperature of 82° Fahrenheit.

“The Madeira River flows through the empire of Brazil, and keeps the northerly course pointed out for it by the Mamoré. The first falls we met were close to the junction of the Mamoré and Beni, called ‘Madeira,’ three quarters of a mile long. It is difficult to judge the difference of level between the upper and lower surfaces of the river. As the falls are shelving, and extend a great distance in length, the distance we run during the day is not easily estimated. At one time we go at the rate of fifteen miles an hour, and then not more than one mile in half a day. This fall is not less than fifteen feet. Large square blocks of stone stand one upon another in unusual confusion. The boat was paddled through for a quarter of a mile, and by passing half the baggage out over the rocks, she was sledded and floated through narrow channels close along the eastern bank.”

On the 23d they came to the Ribeiras falls, which are two miles long. The baggage was carried five hundred yards over a path on the east bank. Don Antonio transported his vessels on wooden rollers here, and was nearly one month getting up these two miles. The men were anxious to see whether they could not pass this fall with the boat in the water. They launched her down one shoot of twenty feet nearly perpendicular by the rope painters in the bow and stern.

“On the 25th,” continues Gibbon, “we came to a number of rocky islands in the river, and took up our quarters on one of them for the

night. We slept under blankets; there is a heavy dew, and the nights are quite cool. Richards was aroused by a severe pain in his ear; he was suffering all night long. The men told me it was common among the soldiers at the fort, caused by exposing the ear to the night air and dew. The only remedy reported was 'woman's milk,' which was not at hand."



DESCENDING THE RAPIDS OF THE MADEIRA.

Descending the Arares Rapids and Pedreneira Falls next day, they at length reached the Paredao Falls, which they had much difficulty in passing. Here they were surrounded by a party of savage women and children, and two unarmed men, who were quite friendly and manifested great curiosity at every thing they saw. The women were all ugly; the boys cheerful and good-looking. Some of the men who came afterward, left their bows and arrows behind the rocks, and walked up unarmed. The women carried their babies under the arm, seated in bark cloth straps, slung over the opposite shoulder. The infants appeared terribly frightened at the sight of a white man; one of them screamed out when Pedro milked the mother into a tin pot, for the benefit of Richards' ear, which still troubled him. The woman evidently understood what was wanted with it, and stood still for Pedro to milk her as much as he chose.

The Teotoni Falls, at which they arrived on the 30th, were the most

...y dew, and the nights
...e pain in his ear; he
...it was common among
...ar to the night air and
...milk,' which was not at



MADEIRA.

...eira Falls next day, they
...ey had much difficulty in
...ty of savage women and
...te friendly and manifested
...he women were all ugly;
...the men who came after-
...rocks, and walked up un-
...er the arm, seated in bark
...er. The infants appeared
...an; one of them screamed
...in pot, for the benefit of
...e woman evidently under-
...ll for Pedro to milk her as
...on the 30th, were the most

formidable of them all. The roaring of the water over and through the rocks was like distant thunder. Here Gibbon was attacked with severe bilious fever, which prostrated him, and all the party were worn out and haggard. The passage of the falls was made next day, by carrying the baggage and transporting the boats upon rollers. The men were busy from daylight till dark at the work. Five miles below they passed, on the 2d of October, the San Antonio Falls, at the foot of which they breakfasted with feelings of gratitude at having passed in safety the perils of seventeen cataracts.

As they move on, the land becomes more elevated, and better adapted to cultivation. The forest-trees are small where the lands are free from inundation. Small streams flow in from the east, while on the west "madres," or large pools, have an outlet through the bank. They passed swiftly along by the force of paddles, the current being only one mile an hour, and arrived by moonlight at the town of Borba, on the 14th of October.

"Borba," observes Gibbon, "is a small town of three hundred inhabitants. Two rows of miserable wooden huts stand parallel with a most distressingly dilapidated church; bells, old and cracked, are hung under a small shed near the door. There were no men belonging to Borba to take us on. The authorities ordered the soldiers who came with us to go on. I regretted this, as we were in hopes of getting rid of these impudent, half-savage free negroes, who refused to obey the authorities of the town. A larger boat was fitted out, and we pushed off with three Portuguese passengers.

"During the 21st of October we lay all day by a sand island, unable to proceed until evening. When the wind died away, we paddled on by the light of the moon. As the negroes lifted their paddles out of the water, we dipped the thermometer in the Madeira for the last time, 88° Fahrenheit. Suddenly, the bow of our little canoe touched the deep waters of the mighty Amazon. A beautiful apple-shaped island, with deep-green foliage, and sandy beach encircling it, lies in the mouth of the great serpentine Madeira.

"The distance from the foot of San Antonio Falls to the mouth of the Madeira, is five hundred miles by the river. A vessel drawing six feet water may navigate this distance at any season of the year. A cargo from the United States could reach the foot of the falls, on the Madeira, within thirty days. By a common mule road, through the territory of Brazil, the goods might be passed from the lower to the upper falls on the Mamoré, in less than seven days, a distance of about one hundred and eighty miles; thence by steamboat, on that river and the Chaparé, a distance of five hundred miles to Vinchuta, in four days. Ten days more from the base of the Andes, over the road we traveled, would make fifty-one days' passage from Baltimore to Cochabamba, or fifty-nine days to La Paz, the commercial emporium of Bolivia, where

cargoes arrive generally from Baltimore in one hundred and eighteen days, by Cape Horn—often delayed on their way through the territory to Peru from the sea-port of Arica. Goods by the Madeira route, sent over the Cordillera range to the Pacific coast, might get there one month before a ship could arrive from Europe on the eastern coast of the United States, by two oceans or the old route."

AMAZON.

hundred and eighteen
through the territory
the Madeira route, sent
might get there one
the eastern coast of
,"

RICHARDSON'S

TRAVELS IN THE SAHARA.

MR. JAMES RICHARDSON, a native of the town of Boston, in England, became interested, like many others of his countrymen, in the project of suppressing the African slave-trade. While at Algiers, in January, 1845, he conceived the design of visiting and exploring the celebrated Oasis of Ghadames, lying in the Sahara, south-west from Tripoli. His principal object was to ascertain to what extent the commerce in slaves was carried on in the desert, and what would be the most feasible plan of preventing it. Full of this idea, he repaired to Tunis and afterward to Tripoli, where he arrived on the 18th of May, of the same year.

At Tripoli, Mr. Richardson received no encouragement, but on the contrary every one endeavored to dissuade him from persevering in what they considered an insane undertaking. Mr. Warrington, the British Consul, nevertheless made application to the pasha on his behalf for the necessary permission which was at first granted, but accompanied by all sorts of remonstrances and objections. The formal permit and passport were not given until the end of July, when through the persistence of Mr. Warrington the pasha ordered passports to be made out for Mr. Richardson, his servant, and camel-driver. On the 2d of August he left Tripoli for Ghadames.

A caravan for Ghadames had started before him, but he pressed forward and overtook it on the evening of the first day. He gives the following account of his equipment: "I had two camels on hire, for which I paid twelve dollars. I was to ride one continually. We had panniers on it, in which I stowed away about two months' provisions. A little fresh provision we were to purchase *en route*. Upon these panniers a mattress was placed, forming with them a comfortable platform. I myself was dressed in light European clothes, and furnished with an umbrella for keeping off the sun. This latter was all my arms of offense and defense. The other camel carried a trunk and some small boxes, cooking utensils, and matting, and a very light tent for keeping off sun and heat." As it was the height of summer the heat was intense, but

after four days the caravan reached the castle of Yofran, in the Atlas, where there was a cooler air. Here Richardson was stared at by the inhabitants, as he was the first European Christian who had ever visited the place. The commandant of the fortress, however, sent him a brace of partridges, with some milk and grapes, supposing that he had been appointed British Consul for Ghadames.

At this place he left the caravan, in order to visit the district of Rujban, in the mountains, the native-country of his camel-driver, Mohammed. He was lodged in the house of the latter, and remained there eight days, treated with the greatest kindness and hospitality by all the inhabitants, many of whom came to him to be cured of various diseases. The shekh of the place, in particular, became very intimate and familiar. "He offered to sell me his authority, his shekhdom," says Richardson, "and retire from affairs. I bid one thousand dollars for the concern. 'No, no,' said he, 'I'll take ten thousand dollars, nothing less.' Then, getting very familiar, he added, 'Now, you and I are equal, you're consul and I'm shekh—you're the son of your sultan, and I'm commander under the sultan of Stamboul.' The report of my being a consul of a remote oasis of the Sahara was just as good to me on the present occasion as if I had her majesty's commission for the consular affairs of all north Africa."

On the 16th, he left Rujban to rejoin the caravan. Nearly all the mountaineers offered him their services, and were willing to leave their homes and go with him anywhere. After four days' march he rejoined the caravan, and encamped on a plateau on the southern side of the Atlas. After crossing the mountains he expected to find a plain, corresponding to that on the northern side; but the country was at first undulating, and then sloped into a sandy level, beyond which rose other heights, called by the natives, Saharan Mountains. During his journey over the desert, Richardson suffered much from the heat and want of sleep, as the caravan traveled principally by night. "Every day," says he, "until I reached Ghadames, there was a sort of point of halting between life and suffocation or death in my poor frame, when the European nature struggled boldly and successfully with the African sun, and all his accumulated force darting down fires and flames upon my devoted head. After this point or crisis was past, I always found myself much better."

The journey from Tripoli to Ghadames may be made in nine days, but the caravan consumed twenty-three. "At dawn of day, on the 25th," continues the narrative, "we started fresh on the last march. Just when day had broken over half the heavens, *I saw Ghadames!* which appeared like a *thick streak of black* on the pale circle of the horizon. This was its date-woods. I now fancied I had discovered a new world, or had seen Timbuctoo, or followed the whole course of the Niger, or had done something very extraordinary. Gradually we neared the city as the day got up. It was dusty, and hot, and disagreeable.

ofran, in the Atlas,
stared at by the
who had ever visited
er, sent him a brace
g that he had been

visit the district of
camel-driver, Mo-
and remained there
ospitality by all the
of various diseases.
imate and familiar.
," says Richardson,
ers for the concern.
othing less.' Then,
e equal, you're con-
nd I'm commander
being a consul of a
on the present occa-
nsular affairs of all

an. Nearly all the
willing to leave their
' march he rejoined
outhern side of the
o find a plain, cor-
country was at first
nd which rose other
During his journey
e heat and want of
"Every day," says
point of halting be-
when the European
African sun, and all
es upon my devoted
found myself much

made in nine days,
awn of day, on the
on the last march.
I saw Ghadames!
pale circle of the
I had discovered a
whole course of the
Gradually we neared
t, and disagreeable.

My feelings were down at zero; and I certainly did not proceed to enter the city in style of conqueror, one who had vanquished the galling hardships of the desert, in the most unfavorable season of the year. We were now met with a great number of the people of the city, come to welcome the safe arrival of their friends, for traveling in the desert is always considered insecure even by its very inhabitants. Among the rest was the merchant Essnousse, whose acquaintance I had made in Tripoli, who welcomed me much to my satisfaction when thus entering into a strange place. Another person came up to me, who, to my surprise, spoke a few words in Italian, which I could not expect to hear in the desert. He followed me into the town, and the governor afterward ordered him to be my turjeman ("interpreter"). Now, the curiosity of the people became much excited, all ran to see *The Christian!* Every body in the city knew I was coming two months before my arrival. As soon as I arrived in Tripoli, the first caravan took the wonderful intelligence of the appointment of an English Consul at Ghadames. A couple of score of boys followed hard at the heels of my camel, and some running before, to look at my face; the men gaped with wide open mouths; and the women started up eagerly to the tops of the houses of the Arab suburb, clapping their hands and *loolooing*. It is perhaps characteristic of the more gentle and unsophisticated nature of womankind, that women of the desert give you a more lively reception than men. The men are gloomy and silent, or merely curious without any demonstration.



GHADAMES.

I entered the city by the southern gate. The entrance was by no means imposing. There was a rough-hewn, worn, dilapidated gate-way, lined with stone-benches, on which the ancients were once accustomed

to sit and dispense justice as in old Israelitish times. Having passed this ancient gate, which wore the age of a thousand years, we wound round and round in the suburbs within the walls, through narrow and intricate lanes, with mud walls on each side, which inclosed the gardens. The palms shot their branches over from above, and relieved this otherwise repulsive sight to the stranger. But I was too much fatigued and exhausted to notice any thing, and almost ready to drop from off my camel."

On his arrival, Richardson was conducted to a commodious and tolerably clean house, not far from the residence of the governor. The latter received him in a friendly manner, and was glad to make use of his medicines for his eyes, which were afflicted with ophthalmia. Most of the inhabitants seemed kindly disposed toward the traveler, and though there were occasional cries of "Infidel!" as he passed through the streets, he was not otherwise molested. He adopted the character of a *marabout*, or traveling mendicant saint, and a physician, and was soon busily occupied in administering to the wants of the sick, who flocked to his house. He remained three months in Ghadames, familiarizing himself with the life of the Sahara, and collecting information regarding the routes to Soudan. He formed the design of penetrating as far as Timbuctoo, and after a long consultation with the Touaricks, engaged one of them to take him to that city; but the plan was afterward relinquished. His journal of the residence in Ghadames is quite interesting, though loosely and carelessly written. Our limits will only allow us to quote a few of the most striking passages.

Soon after his arrival, he writes: "During the four or five days of my residence here, the weather has been comparatively temperate; at least, I have not felt the heat excessive. To-day has been close and cloudy: no sun in the afternoon: wind hot, *ghiblee*. I continue to be an object of curiosity among the people, and am followed by troops of boys. A black from Timbuctoo was astonished at the whiteness of my skin, and swore I was bewitched. The Ghadamsee Moors eat sugar like children, and are much pleased with a suck of it. The young men carry it about in little bags to suck."

Toward the end of September, Richardson writes: "To-day, resident thirty days in Ghadames which I have certainly not lost. My expenses of living, including a guard to sleep in the house at night, and Said, are only at the rate of eighteen pence per day; this, however, excludes tea, coffee, and sugar. Besides, Shekh Makouran refuses to take any thing for house-rent, saying, 'It would be against the will of God to receive money from you, who are our sure friend, and our guest of hospitality.' Few patients, in comparison with the past. As the winter approaches, the cases of ophthalmia are less. In the precipitation of leaving Tripoli, brought little ink with me, and most of that I gave away; so am obliged to go about the town to beg a little. The custom is, when one person wants ink, he begs it of another.

times. Having passed
and years, we wound
through narrow and
inclosed the gardens.
and relieved this other-
too much fatigued and
to drop from off my

to a commodious and
of the governor. The
glad to make use of
th ophthalmia. Most
ard the traveler, and
as he passed through
adopted the character
a physician, and was
ants of the sick, who
n Ghadames, familiariz-
ing information regard-
of penetrating as far as
the Touraricks, engaged
an was afterward relin-
nes is quite interesting,
s will only allow us to

four or five days of my
oly temperate; at least,
een close and cloudy:
ontinue to be an object
by troops of boys. A
iteness of my skin, and
eat sugar like children,
ung men carry it about

writes: "To-day, resi-
ainly not lost. My ex-
he house at night, and
day; this, however, ex-
lakouran refuses to take
against the will of God
riend, and our guest of
the past. As the winter
In the precipitation of
ost of that I gave away;
ittle. The custom is,
r.

"My taleb, backed with two or three Mussulman doctors, charged me in the public streets with corrupting and falsifying the text of the Word of God. 'This,' he said, 'I have found by looking over your Elengeel (Gospel).' It is precisely the charge which we make against the Mohammedans. But our charge is not so much corrupting one particular revelation as falsifying the entire books of the Jews and the Christians, of giving them new forms, and adding to them a great number of old Arabian fables. A taleb opened the Testament at the Gospel of St. Mark, and read, *that Jesus was the Son of God*. Confounded and vexed at this, he said, '*God neither begets nor is begotten*' (a verse of the Koran). An Arab from the Tripoline mountains turned upon me and said, 'What! do you know God?' I answered sharply, 'Yes; do you think the knowledge of God is confined to you alone?' The bystanders applauded the answer.

"In general, the ignorant of the population of this part of north Africa, as well as southern Morocco and Wadnoun, think the Christians are not acquainted with God, something in the same way as I heard when at Madrid, that Spaniards occasionally asked, if there were Christians and churches in England. But in other parts of Barbary, I have found, on the contrary, an opinion very prevalent, that the religion of the English is very much like the religion of the Moors, arising, I have no doubt, from the absence of images and pictures in Protestant churches.

"Speaking to the Moor of the Sahara, I said, 'The Sahara is always healthy; look at these Touraricks, they are the children of the desert.' He replied, 'The Sahara is the sea *on land*, and like sea, is always more healthy than cultivated spots of the earth. These Touraricks are chiefly strong and powerful from drinking camels' milk. They drink it for months together, often for four or five months, not eating or drinking any thing else. After they have drunk it some time, they have no evacuations for four or five days, and these are as white as my bornouse. It is the camels' milk which makes the Touraricks like lions. A boy shoots up to manhood in a few years; and there's nothing in the world so nourishing as camels' milk.' Caillié mentions that the chief of the Braknas lived for several months on nothing but milk; but it was cows' milk. Many of the Saharan tribes are supported for six months out of twelve on milk.

"Treating some Moors with coffee and loaf-sugar, one asked me if there were blood in sugar, for so he had heard from some Europeans in Tripoli. I told him in loaf-sugar. 'What, the blood of pigs?' one cried. 'How do I know?' I rejoined; 'if the refiner has no bullock's blood, why not use that of pigs?' This frightened them all out of their senses. They will not eat loaf-sugar again in a hurry."

After giving up the idea of crossing the desert to Timbuctoo, Richardson resolved to proceed to Kano, in the kingdom of Houssa, by way of Ghat and the unvisited country of Aheer, or Asben, which lies in a desert, south-west of Fezzan. Toward the end of November, prepara-

tions were made for the departure of a caravan to Ghat and Soudan, and the traveler determined to be of the party. The governor of Ghadames, after some hesitation, gave his permission, and Shekh Makouran, the owner of the house in which Richardson lived, had a testimonial drawn up, and signed by the Kadi in behalf of the people of Ghadames, stating that during his residence there he had conducted himself well, and had given offense to no one. He then purchased a she-camel for \$25, hired another to carry the baggage, and procured a complete Arab dress. The shekh, who had treated him with the greatest kindness, furnished him with a store of cakes for the journey, made of honey and dates.

The 24th was fixed upon for the departure of the caravan, but as the day drew nigh the place was disturbed with rumors that the Shanbah, a predatory desert tribe, were lurking in the neighborhood, ready for attack. On the afternoon of the appointed day, the camels were loaded, and the whole population of Ghadames collected to see the caravan start, but just as it was passing the gate, a man and boy who had come in from the desert, cried out that the Shanbah were on the road. All was now confusion and dismay; the caravan halted, and a Senawanee, or native of Senawan, was sent forward as a scout. He did not return until next day at noon, when he reported that the supposed Arabs were merely a herd of stray cattle. The merchants, entirely relieved by this news, at once put the caravan in motion.

"Mounted on my camel, pressing on through the desert," says Richardson, "my thoughts still lag behind, and as I turn often to look back upon the city of merchants and marabouts, its palms being only now visible in the dingy red of the setting sun, I endeavor to form a correct opinion of its singular inhabitants. I see in them the mixture of the religious and commercial character, blended in a most extraordinary manner and degree, for here the possession of wealth scarcely interferes with the highest state of ascetic devotion. To a religious scrupulousness, which is alarmed at a drop of medicine that is prohibited falling upon their clothes, they add the most enterprising and determined spirit of commercial enterprise, plunging into the desert, often in companies of only two or three, when infested with bandits and cut-throats, the journeys the mean while extending from the shores of the Mediterranean to the banks of the Niger, as low down to the western coast as Noufee and Rabbah. But their resignation to the will of heaven is without a parallel. No murmur escapes them under the severest domestic affliction; while prayer is their daily bread. Besides five times a day, they never omit the extraordinary occasions. The aspirations of the older and retired men continue all the live-long day; this incense of the soul, rising before the altar of the Eternal, is a fire which is never extinguished in Ghadames! Intelligent, instructed, and industrious, they are the greatest friends of civilization in north Africa and the great desert."

to Ghat and Sondan, ty. The governor of mission, and Shekh Madison lived, had a testi- behalf of the people of ere he had conducted e then purchased a she- e, and procured a com- him with the greatest r the journey, made of

the caravan, but as the orors that the Shanbah, a hborhood, ready for at- he camels were loaded, ed to see the caravan and boy who had come were on the road. All lted, and a Senawanee, ut. He did not return e supposed Arabs were entirely relieved by this

ough the desert," says as I turn often to look ts, its palms being only I endeavor to form a see in them the mixture ended in a most extra- sion of wealth scarcely evotion. To a religious dicine that is prohibited rprising and determined the desert, often in com- bandits and cut-throats, e shores of the Mediter- a to the western coast as to the will of heaven is under the severest do- ad. Besides five times a ons. The aspirations of long day; this incense of l, is a fire which is never ructed, and industrious, in north Africa and the

The caravan consisted of eighty persons and two hundred laden camels. After traveling for three days in a south-eastern direction, the road turned to the south, entered the gorge of a low mountain range, and gradually ascended to an elevated table-land of the desert. Here, for several days, the journey was exceedingly laborious and exhausting, from the heat and blinding glare of the sand by day, and the extreme coldness of the nights, which sometimes prevented them from sleeping. "I notice as a thing most extraordinary," says Richardson, "after seven days from Ghadames, two small trees! the common desert-acacia. Another phenomenon, I see two or three pretty blue flowers! As I picked one up, I could not help exclaiming, *Elhamdullah* ('Praise to God!') for Arabic was growing second-born to my tongue, and I began to think in it. An Arab said to me, 'Yakob, if we had a reed and were to make a melodious sound, those flowers, the color of heaven, would open and shut their mouths (petals).' This fiction is extremely poetical.



THE WELLS OF MISLAH.

"But here in the center of this wilderness of sand," he continues, "we had an abundant proof of the goodness of a good God. While mourning over this horrible scene of monotonous desolation, and wondering why such regions were created in vain, we came upon *The Wells of Mislah*, where we encamped for the day. These are not properly wells, for the sand being removed in various places, about four or five feet below the surface, the water runs out. Indeed, we were obliged to make our own wells. Each party of the ghafalah dug a well for itself. Ghafalahs are divided into so many parties, varying in size from five men and twenty camels, to ten men and forty camels. Three or four wells were dug out in this way. Some of the places had been scooped out

before. Water may be found through all the valley of Mislah. A few dwarfish palms are in the valley, but which don't bear fruit. The camels, finding nothing else to eat, attacked voraciously their branches. These pits are considered as the half-way station between Ghadames and Ghat."

On the 13th of December, the caravan encountered a company of Touaricks, led by Ouweek, a predatory chief. A halt was made, a violent dispute took place, and finally all parties, after having made their customary prayers, squatted upon the ground, and commenced a solemn deliberation. Richardson, who took little notice of what was going on, was lying upon the ground eating some dates, when he was informed that Ouweek had determined to put him to death, as he was a Christian and an infidel. The people urged him either to give himself up, or offer a ransom, but when the latter was proposed to Ouweek, he fiercely demanded a thousand dollars. "Hereupon," says Richardson, "all the people cried out that I had no money. The *quasi*-bandit, nothing receding, 'Why, the Christian's mattress is full of money,' pointing to it still on the camel, for he was very near me, although I could not distinguish his features. The Touaricks who had come to see me before I arrived at the well, observed, 'He has money on his coat, it is covered with money,' alluding to the buttons. All our people, again, swore solemnly I had no money but paper, which I should change on my arrival at Ghat. The bandit, drawing in his horns, 'Well, the Christian has a nagah.' 'No,' said the people, 'the camel belongs to us; he hires it.' The bandit, giving way, 'Well, the Christian has a slave, there he is,' pointing to Said, 'I shall have the slave.' 'No, no,' cried the people, 'the English have no slaves. Said is a free slave.' The bandit, now fairly worsted, full of rage, exclaimed, 'What are you going to do with me, am I not to kill this infidel, who has dared to come to my country without my permission?' Hereat, the messenger from Ghat, Jabour's slave, of whom the bandit was afraid, and dared not lay a hand upon, interposed, and, assuming an air of defiance, said, 'I am come from my sultan, Jabour; if you kill the Christian, you must kill me first. The order of my sultan is, No man is to say a word to the Christian.' Our people now took courage from this noble conduct of the slave, declaring, 'If Yâkob is beaten, we will all be beat first; if Yâkob is to be killed, we will be killed likewise.' Ouweek now saw he must come down in his pretensions. The bargain was struck, after infinite wrangling, for two articles of clothing, of the value of four dollars!"

On the day following this adventure, the caravan reached the remarkable group of rocky hills, called the *Kasr Genoon*, or Demon's Palace, and early in the morning of the 15th approached Ghat. The plain contracted and became a narrow valley, between rocky ridges, in the bottom of which appeared the dark-green belt of the palm-trees. Richardson thus describes his arrival and reception: "We were now met by the friends of the Ghadamsee merchants, but with the exception

alley of Mislah. A few don't bear fruit. The raciously their branches. tion between Ghadames

ountered a company of A halt was made, a after having made their and commenced a solemn e of what was going on, when he was informed th, as he was a Christian give himself up, or offer Onweek, he fiercely deys Richardson, "all the quasi-bandit, nothing re of money,' pointing to it though I could not dis- come to see me before I on his coat, it is covered people, again, swore so- ald change on my arrival Well, the Christian has a longs to us; he hires it.' has a slave, there he is,' No, no,' cried the people, slave.' The bandit, now are you going to do with l to come to my country ger from Ghat, Jabour's are not lay a hand upon, aid, 'I am come from my must kill me first. The d to the Christian.' Our act of the slave, declaring, ; if Yâkob is to be killed, w he must come down in ter infinite wrangling, for illars!"

e caravan reached the re- sr Genoon, or Demon's h approached Ghat. The between rocky ridges, in a belt of the palm-trees. ception: "We were now ts, but with the exception

of Essnousse and two or three others, I received few salutes of welcome; and when we got up to the gates of the city at noon, not a single person of our caravan offered me the least assistance, either in interpreting or otherwise. I felt myself in a most deplorable predicament, but I reflected that all men must each one look after his own business, so our people were now each one occupied with his own affairs. I felt much the want of a good Moorish or Arab servant. Said was of no use whatever in this case. Strangers and loungers crowded and clamored round me, anxious to look at the face of 'the Christian.' It was covered with my traveling handkerchief, and when I untied my face to gratify their curiosity, they burst out with the rude and wild expression of surprise, 'Whooh! Whooh! Why!'

"Several of the Ghat people then asked me what I wanted. I told them, the Governor of Ghat. I was not understood. At last came up



GHAT.

to me a young Tripoline Moor of the name of Mustapha, who volunteered his services as Touarghee and Arabic interpreter, but of course, our conversation was always in Arabic. Amid a cluster of Touaricks and Ghat townsmen, the governor, was pointed out. Several shekhs were present, but it appears they gave precedence to the governor's son from a feeling of shamefacedness. Haj Ahmed's son is a very nice polite young gentleman, as smart as a Parisian dandy. After a little delay he conducted us to a house, in which some of his father's slaves were living. It was a dark, dreadful, dilapidated hovel. The young gentleman most earnestly apologized, protesting, 'the town is full of people, merchants, and strangers. We have nothing better left in the town. Perhaps you will come and live in our house out of the town.' We looked out our baggage, which had been conveyed for us by Arabs of

our caravan, and were astonished to find it scattered about outside the city gates, the caravan people having thrown it down there. However, nothing was lost, and this at once impressed me with the remarkable honesty of the Ghatee people."

Richardson was received in a very friendly manner by the Governor of Ghat, Shekh Jabour, the chief marabout, and afterward by Shafou, the Sultan of the country. The Touaricks are more bigoted than the inhabitants of Ghadames, and he was frequently insulted in the streets, but he was at least secure from violence, and found no serious obstacles in the way of proceeding to Soudan. His means, however, were scarcely sufficient for the journey, his health began to suffer, and he finally gave up the plan, after having become satisfied of its entire feasibility. He remained in Ghat two months and a half, at the end of which time he determined to return to Tripoli by way of Mourzuk. The following passages from his journals will throw some light on Touarick life and manners:

"Every body, as was the case at Ghadames, high and low, rich and poor, young and old, wishes to convert me into a good Mussulman, being mortified that so quiet a Christian should be an infidel. An old shekh paid me a visit to-day, and began, 'Now, Christian, that you have come into this country, I hope you will find every thing better than in your own country, and become a Mussulman, one loved of God. Come to my house, leave your infidel father and mother. I have two daughters. I will give you both for wives, and seven camels besides. This will make you a shekh among us. You can also be a marabout, and spend your life in prayer.' I excused myself, by saying, 'I had engagements in my country. My sultan would brand me with disgrace, and I should be fetched out of this country by the Turks, who were always the friends of the English.' The shekh sighed, raised up his aged body, and departed, mumbling something, a blessing or a curse, upon my head."

One day he writes: "Had a visit from some score of Touarick women, of all complexions, tempers, and ages. After staring at me for some time with amazed curiosity and silence, they became restless. Not knowing what to do with them, I took out a loaf of white sugar, cut it into pieces, and then distributed it among them. The scene now suddenly changed, joy beamed in every eye, and every one let her tongue run most volubly. They asked me, 'Whether I was married—whether the Christian women were pretty—whether prettier than they—and whether, if not married, I should have any objection to marry one of them?' To all which questions I answered in due categorical form: 'I was not married—the Christian women were pretty, but they, the Touarick women, were prettier than Christian women—and, lastly, I should see whether I would marry one of them when I came from Soudan.' These answers were perfectly satisfactory. But then came a puzzler. They asked me, 'Which was the prettiest among them?' I looked at one, and then at another, with great seriousness, assuming

ed about outside the
own there. However,
e with the remarkable

anner by the Governor
afterward by Shafou,
more bigoted than the
nsulted in the streets,
nd found no serious
His means, however,
a began to suffer, and
satisfied of its entire
d a half, at the end of
way of Mourzuk. The
ome light on Touarick

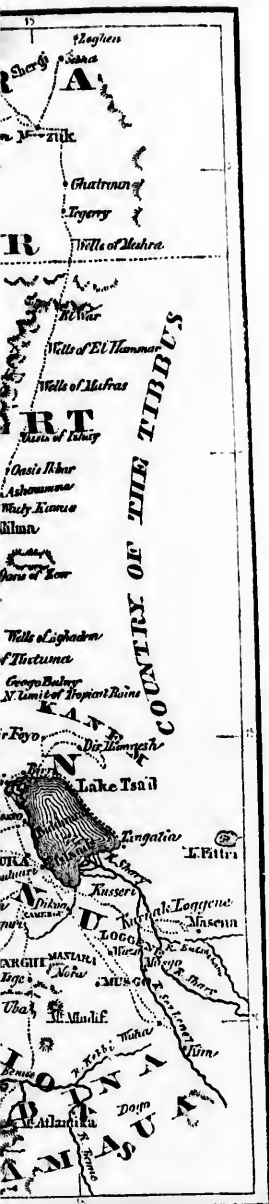
high and low, rich and
to a good Mussulman,
be an infidel. An old
w, Christian, that you
nd every thing better
nan, one loved of God.
d mother. I have two
seven camels besides.
an also be a marabout,
rself, by saying, 'I had
rand me with disgrace,
Turks, who were always
aised up his aged body,
a curse, upon my head.'
e score of Touarick wo-
fter staring at me for
y became restless. Not
f of white sugar, cut it
n. The scene now sud-
very one let her tongue
I was married—whether
rettier than they—and
ection to marry one of
ue categorical form: 'I
pretty, but they, the
women—and, lastly, I
em whom I came from
tory. But then came a
ttest among them?' I
at seriousness, assuming

very ungallant airs (the women the meanwhile giggling and coquetting, and some throwing back their barracans, shawls I may call them, further from their shoulders, baring their bosoms in true ball-room style), and, at last falling back, and shutting my eyes, placing my left hand to my forehead, as if in profound reflection, I exclaimed languidly, and with a forced sigh, 'Ah, I can't tell, you are all so pretty!' This created an explosion of mirth, some of the more knowing ones intimating by their looks, 'It's lucky for you that you have got out of the scrape.' But an old lady, close to me, was very angry with me: 'You fool, Christian, take one of the young ones; here's my daughter.'

"Nothing surprises the natives of Ghat and the Touaricks so much as my gloves. I am obliged to put them off and on a hundred times a day to please people. They then try them on, look at them inside and outside, in every shape and way, expressing their utter astonishment by the most sacred names of Deity. Some also, have not seen stockings before, and examine them with much wonderment. But the gloves carry the palm in exciting the emotion of the terrible. One said, after he had put the glove on his hand, 'Ah! ah! whey, whoo! that's the hand of the devil himself!'"

On the 5th of February, 1846, Richardson left Ghat with a Touarick caravan for Mourzuk. On approaching the Demon's Palace, he left the caravan and wandered off to the wonderful natural fortress, with the design of procuring some curious geological specimens. Losing himself soon, however, among the rocky mazes, he wandered about all night without finding any trace of the road, and in the morning, nearly delirious from thirst, set off to wander back to Ghat, when, after three hours, he was fortunate enough to stumble upon his own party. The merchants supposed that he had been killed by the demons, and some of them said to him: "You were very foolish, you ought not, as a Christian, to have presumed to go to the Palace of the Demons, without a Mussulman, who could have the meanwhile prayed to God to preserve you, and likewise himself. The demons it is who have made you wander all night through the desert." Nothing of any special interest occurred during the remainder of the journey, and on the 22d he arrived at Mourzuk.

Richardson soon recovered his health, under the hospitable care of Mr. Gagliuffi, the English vice-consul at Mourzuk, and by the 5th of March, was well enough to start with a caravan for Tripoli. He reached Sockna, on the 21st, and halted there nine days. His route from Ghat to Tripoli was precisely the same as that traversed by Denham and Clapperton; the character of the country and its inhabitants is described in the narrative of these explorers, and need not be repeated here. On the evening of the 10th of April, Richardson arrived at Tripoli, after a tour of eight months and a half in the Sahara, during which time he traveled sixteen hundred miles. His entire expenses were less than \$300, which sum he earned on the road by writing letters to the *London Times*.



RICHARDSON AND BARTH'S EXPEDITION TO CENTRAL AFRICA.

JOURNEY THROUGH AIR, OR ASBEN, TO SOUDAN.

AFTER his return to England, Mr. Richardson did not lose sight of the project of a visit to Soudan, which he had been obliged to relinquish at Ghat, but endeavored to enlist the sympathies of the public, and obtain the sanction of government. Finally, in the summer of 1849, he received a government commission to visit Central Africa on a political and commercial mission. Drs. Barth and Overweg, of Prussia, who were highly recommended by Humboldt, Ritter, and Encke, volunteered to accompany him, the former as antiquarian and philologist, the latter as naturalist, on condition that the British government should defray their expenses. Their offer was accepted, and an appropriation of \$4,000 made for them, in addition to which they received \$3,000 from the Geographical Society of Berlin, the King of Prussia, and other sources. The explorers met at Tripoli, where they were delayed some time for the purpose of having a boat constructed for the navigation of Lake Tsad. Finally, on the 30th of March, 1850, the party started, comprising a caravan of forty camels, with which they joined the great semi-annual caravan to Bornou.

The route followed by the expedition from Tripoli to Lake Tsad (Tchad of Denham and Clapperton), was not the direct road via Murzouk and Bilma through the country of the Tibboos, but one from Murzouk, deviating greatly westward and extending through the Tuarick country, with the kingdom of Air to Kano, the great mart of Soudan. The object of this deviation was to explore countries never before visited by Europeans. The expedition entered the elevated regions south of Tripoli by the Gharian Pass, near which is mount Tekut. As far as the Well of Taboniah, situated at the foot of the northern edge of the Hamada, many deep wadis intersect this table land, and the ruins of several Roman monuments and columns were discovered by the travelers. To the south of Taboniah is the Hamada, an immense stony desert

of 2,000 to 2,500 feet elevation, and extending about 110 geographical miles southward. As far as the eye can reach, neither trees nor indications of wells are visible, and the scanty vegetation which occurs, is only found here and there in the trifling irregularities of the surface. The ground is covered with small stones, pyramids of which, erected with great labor, serve as road-marks to the intrepid camel-drivers by day, while the Polar star and Antares are the guides by night. After six long days' journey, the expedition reached the southern edge of this table land, which descends in perpendicular walls to the Wady el Hessi. The monotony of the dreary black rock was relieved by the yellow sand, without which the whole of Fezzan would be a lifeless wilderness, as it is in the sand that the palm trees grow, and in the wadis filled with it that the wells are found. In the great Wady of Fezzan the expedition passed through a complete forest of palms, as well as through cultivated fields of wheat and barley. Another small table land was traversed by the travelers, after which they reached Murzouk on the 6th of May, 1850.

Here they were compelled to make a long stay, as they were awaiting the arrival from Ghat of the Tuarick escort, headed by Hateeta, the well-known Tuarick chief, who calls himself "the friend of the English," from having escorted Oudney and Clapperton to Ghat. The journey from Murzouk to Ghat, generally accomplished in twelve days, occupied the travelers thirty-six, owing partly to the delay caused by Hateeta, partly to the slow rate of traveling of this old and decrepit man. The travelers were, however, compensated by the discovery of some extremely curious rock sculptures in the Wady Telissareh, which is situated about mid-way between Murzouk and Ghat. One of these sculptures consists of two human bird and bull headed figures, armed with spears, shields, and arrows, and combating for a child. The other represents a fine group of oxen going to a watering-place, most artistically grouped and skillfully executed. In the opinion of the travelers, the two works bear a striking and unmistakable resemblance to the sculptures of Egypt. They are evidently of a very high antiquity, and superior to numerous other sculptures of more recent date found at the same time, in which camels generally formed the principal object. They most probably relate to a period of ancient Libyan history when camels were unknown in that part of Africa, and oxen were used instead.

At Serdalous, the road, till then from east to west, suddenly turned almost due south, in the direction of the celebrated Kasr Janoon or Palace of the Demons, a small range of hills composed chiefly of slate-marl, and most curiously shaped, having the appearance of ruinous cathedrals and castles. This region is held in the most superstitious dread by the inhabitants, who never go near it. It had well-nigh cost the life of Dr. Barth, who, on the caravan arriving on the spot, with Dr. Overweg, determined to visit this curious group of hills. As they could procure no guide or companion, they set off alone, while Mr.

about 110 geographical
neither trees nor indica-
station which occurs, is
ularities of the surface.
ramids of which, erected
strepid camel-drivers by
guides by night. After
the southern edge of this
ls to the Wady el Hessi.
s relieved by the yellow
ll be a lifeless wilderness,
y, and in the wadis filled
Wady of Fezzan the ex-
alms, as well as through
er small table land was
ched Murzouk on the 6th

stay, as they were await-
t, headed by Hateeta, the
he friend of the English,"
n to Ghat. The journey
l in twelve days, occupied
delay caused by Hateeta,
and decrepit man. The
discovery of some extremely
sarah, which is situated

One of these sculptures
gures, armed with spears,
l. The other represents a
most artistically grouped
e travelers, the two works
to the sculptures of Egypt.
and superior to numerous
t the same time, in which
They most probably relate
mels were unknown in that

t to west, suddenly turned
celebrated Kasr Janoon or
composed chiefly of slate-
he appearance of ruinous
d in the most superstitious
it. It had well-nigh cost
arriving on the spot, with
us group of hills. As they
y set off alone, while Mr.



THE PALACE OF THE DEMONS.

Richardson pitched his tent at the nearest well. The day wore on, it blew gales of wind, and none of them returned. At last toward the evening Dr. Overweg returned, but without his companion, from whom he had separated without seeing him again. Great fears began to be entertained that an accident had befallen the latter. Search was commenced just before sunset, and continued up to midnight, but in vain. At day-break, the search was more vigorously resumed, and a considerable reward was offered as a stimulus to the Tuaricks, but the day wore on without result. Just before sunset, however, the joyful intelligence was brought to the camp, that Dr. Barth had at last been discovered, still alive, and even able to speak. One of the Tuaricks had found him about eight miles from the camp, lying on the ground, unable to move. For twenty-four hours he had remained in the same position, perfectly exhausted with heat and fatigue. On seeing his deliverers, he could just muster strength to say, "Water, water!" He had finished the small supply he had taken with him the day before at noon, and had from that time suffered the most horrible tortures from thirst. He had even drunk his own blood: twenty-eight hours in the Sahara without water! The Tuaricks could scarcely at first credit that he was alive; for their saying is, that no one can live more than twelve hours when lost in the desert during the heats of summer. The doctor, however, being of robust constitution, was well enough the next day to mount his camel, and proceed with the caravan. The travelers arrived at Ghat on the 17th of July.

At Ghat, the travelers remained a week: which time was by no means one of rest or recreation, as they were continually harassed by the greedy demands of the chiefs, and by the fanaticism of the inhabit-

ants: so much so, indeed, that they had but few opportunities of exploring the town and surrounding country, except when their medical assistance happened to be required. Even old Hateeta proved a faithless "friend of the English." On the 25th of July the expedition left Ghat.

"The departure from Ghat," so writes Mr. Richardson, "was, for the most of us, an exciting moment. So far I had considered myself comparatively on familiar ground; for although I had followed different routes, the great points of Murzouk and Ghat were well known to me. Now, however, we were about to enter upon a region totally unknown, of which no authentic accounts from eye-witnesses, unless we count the vague reports of natives, had ever reached us: valleys unexplored; deserts unaffronted; countries which no European had ever surveyed. Before us, somewhere in the heart of the Sahara, raised into magnificence perhaps by the mirage of report, was the unknown kingdom of Air, of which Leo Africanus hints something, but the names of whose great cities are scattered, as if at hap-hazard over the maps, possibly hundreds of miles out of their right position."

The travelers first passed Barket, a considerable town, surrounded with palm-trees and gardens, and situated in a pleasant and picturesque piece of country, nowhere exceeded in beauty in the whole region yet traversed. On the 27th of July the expedition arrived at the well of Akuru, and was there joined by a caravan of Kelowi Tuaricks, under whose protection they were to proceed as far as Tin-Tellust, in Air, the residence of the Kelowi prince. The scenery continued to be very varied, so different from the vulgar notions of a desert, or level expanse of sand. There were frequent ascents and descents, ravines and rocky plateaus. On the 30th of July they came to a small lake inclosed within immense rocks, called Aggeri Water, which is solely produced by rain. Here the expedition began to be harassed by rumors of pursuing Tuaricks. On the 4th of August, the Wady and well of Falesses was reached. Here they stayed two days to refresh themselves, as they were greatly fatigued by the long days' marches which they had made ever since leaving Ghat. They entered now upon a more elevated rocky region, an extensive hamada, uninhabited for about three hundred miles in a southerly direction.

On the 15th of August, not far from the well of Aisou, the travelers experienced the first drops of Soudan rain, and a complete Soudan atmosphere, the clouds having a vermilion tinge, and the air being hot and clammy. The next day a terrific tempest was experienced, with thunder and lightning, and so violent a shower of rain that the travelers got quite wet through almost in an instant. On the 17th of August, the Aisou, or the Seven Wells, were reached. Here reports of pursuing Tuaricks again alarmed the caravan; but the enemy was outstripped, and the travelers safely reached the borders of the kingdom of Air at Taghajit, hoping to be hospitably received by its inhabitants, and to

opportunities of ex-
pt when their medical
atecta proved a faith-
July the expedition

Richardson, "was, for
ad considered myself
had followed different
ere well known to me.
gion totally unknown,
s, unless we count the
valleys unexplored;
n had ever surveyed.
a, raised into magnif-
unknown kingdom of
ut the names of whose
er the maps, possibly

able town, surrounded
asant and picturesque
n the whole region yet
arrived at the well of
Kelowi Tuaricks, under
Tin-Tellust, in Air, the
continued to be very
desert, or level expanse
ents, ravines and rocky
all lake inclosed within
lely produced by rain.
mors of pursuing Tuar-
well of Falesseles was
emselves, as they were
ch they had made ever
more elevated rocky
about three hundred

of Aisou, the travelers
a complete Soudan at
and the air being hot
was experienced, with
rain that the travelers
the 17th of August, the
re reports of pursuing
enemy was outstripped,
the kingdom of Air at
its inhabitants, and to

rest after the fatigues of a forced march. But they were sadly disappointed.

From this moment they were greatly harassed by the attacks of what would seem to have been the lawless tribes of the border regions, and hordes of all the blackguards of the surrounding districts, in number gradually increasing from sixty to several hundreds. Earnest preparations to repel these attacks were now made by the mission; whose force consisted of about sixty men able to fight. To these, ammunition for twelve shots was distributed. The demand made by the enemy to the caravan, was, that the three Christians should be delivered over to them; but their servants, their escort, and the other members of the caravan remained faithful to the travelers. Several times the enemy challenged the caravan to battle; but when the latter showed a bold front, advanced in a body well armed, and shouted out that they accepted the challenge, the former retired, satisfied with the payment of a ransom. At last, however, the affair became more serious; and before the travelers reached the town of Seloufyeh, a troop of a hundred men, instigated by the marabouts, demanded that the travelers should become Moslems, or return by the way they had come, as no infidel had ever passed, or should ever pass through their country.

The Tuarick escort of the travelers remained faithful and firm, and by their negotiations, and by paying a heavy ransom, the enemy agreed to the proposition that the travelers should be taken to Tin-Tellust, to the great Sultan En-Noor, who should decide upon their case. On their way to that place, they passed near Tintaghoda, the city of marabouts. These marabouts, by assigning to have found the names of the travelers in their books, and other reasons, had determined to receive them with open arms and afford them their protection as far as Tin-Tellust. It was from these persons that they received the first substantial action of kindness in Air, viz., a present of two melons, some onions, and a small quantity of wheat. By a kind treatment the marabouts, it seems, hoped the Christians would still be converted into Moslems.

Under the protection of this escort, they reached, on the 3d of September, the broad and spacious valley of Tin-Tellust. The town itself is situated in the middle of this valley, with trees here and there interspersed. This place, the capital of the mighty Prince En-Noor, on whom the life and death of the travelers depended, and on which their minds had naturally dwelt so long, was found to be much less imposing, consisting, as it does, of only about one hundred and fifty houses and huts, and being in fact nothing but a large village. The travelers pitched their tents upon some sandhills overlooking the entire country. For the first time since many a day they felt themselves quite secure under the immediate protection of En-Noor, who on their arrival sent them a kind message.

The expedition now having fixed their encampment for their residence in the kingdom of Air, Mr. Richardson's chief care was that of

obtaining the signing of certain treaties on the part of the chiefs, while his scientific companions longed to explore the country around. On the 4th of September, the travelers were received by the Sultan En-Noor in his palace, a long mud-shed, when they delivered a number of presents, the largest yet given. All the articles were carefully examined, but not a word was said. The sultan, a venerable-looking black, but with something of an European cast of features, about seventy-eight years of age, received the travelers favorably, assured them of his protection, and ascribed the robberies they had suffered on the road as arising from a general fermentation, a kind of revolution throughout the country.

By the 24th of September the friendly relations with the sultan had so far increased, that Mr. Richardson paid a visit to his highness to request him to sign the treaty of amity and commerce which he had prepared. On this occasion En-Noor really seemed what he professed to be, the friend of the English, and accepted both the treaty and the present of a sword with ardent manifestations of pleasure. This was a day of rejoicing and thanksgiving to the travelers, who hoisted the union-jack over the tents and fired a salute; for they found that with the friendship of the chiefs, and particularly of En-Noor, who exerts paramount influence in Air, the people were also showing themselves more and more friendly, so that after a residence of several weeks the former felt themselves quite at home in that singular country. The fanaticism gave way by degrees, and the sultan became so much attached and condescending to his guests, that he visited them almost daily in their tents, took tea or coffee with them, and chatted with them like old friends. Thus the months of September and October passed off pleasantly enough upon the whole, and the travelers were only awaiting the departure of the great salt caravan of the sultan to Soudan, under whose protection they were to continue their journey to the south.

During the sojourn of the expedition at Tin-Tellust, Dr. Barth obtained permission and protection to visit Agadez, the capital of Air, and situated in the south-western portion. He left the former place on the 4th of October, escorted by a caravan mounted on bullocks and camels, the general direction of his route being about S.S.E., and the distance to Agadez, in a straight line, one hundred and thirty-two geographical miles, which he accomplished in six days going, and seven days returning. It is an interesting tract of country, presenting a great variety of scenery, now composed of fine valleys, now of mountain chains cut up by defiles. Here and there charming spots, green with herbage and trees, particularly rich in doun-palms, and of a truly tropical character, greeted the eyes of the traveler. Agadez is situated on a hamada or table land, consisting of sandstone and granitic formations. Its circuit is three miles, including about seven hundred houses, with seven or eight thousand inhabitants. No author is known to have mentioned this place before Leo Africanus, in whose time it was a flourishing town. There are traditions among the inhabitants, that it owes its origin chiefly

part of the chiefs, while
country around. On the
by the Sultan En-Noor
ed a number of presents,
efully examined, but not
g black, but with some-
enty-eight years of age,
of his protection, and
e road as arising from a
ghout the country.

ns with the sultan had so
his highness to request
which he had prepared.
he professed to be, the
aty and the present of a
This was a day of rejoic-
ted the union-jack over
at with the friendship of
erts paramount influence
more and more friendly,
former felt themselves
fanaticism gave way by
ed and condescending to
their tents, took tea or
old friends. Thus the
pleasantly enough upon
g the departure of the
er whose protection they

in-Tellust, Dr. Barth ob-
z, the capital of Air, and
the former place on the
on bullocks and camels,
S.S.E., and the distance
thirty-two geographical
, and seven days return-
enting a great variety of
mountain chains cut up
green with herbage and
truly tropical character,
situated on a hamada or
formations. Its circuit is
uses, with seven or eight
o have mentioned this
was a flourishing town.
it owes its origin chiefly

to some tribes coming from the north, probably belonging to the Berber race.

Agadez formerly contained not less than from fifty to sixty thousand inhabitants, there being now only about eight thousand. At present the appearance of the town is that of an almost ruined place, scarcely the sixth part of it. The inhabitants are partly merchants, partly artisans. Respecting the degree of civilization of the inhabitants, it may be mentioned that there are five or six schools in Agadez, where the boys are taught to read the Koran, and to write. The women seem to enjoy great freedom. Some of them are pretty, and have Arab features; and among the men Dr. Barth observed fine faces and good figures. The population is so mixed that it would be difficult to make out the type of the original stock.

The kingdom of Air, as it is called by the Tuaricks, and Asben by the ancient Soudan name, lies about midway between the Nilo and the western coast of northern Africa. From its natural features it can neither be considered as strictly belonging to the Sahara nor to Soudan, but it presents a transition country, where the various features of both regions are blended and mixed together. On the one hand, the tropical rains extend all over the country to its northernmost extremity, which is not the case in that part of the desert explored by Oudney, Denham, and Clapperton, and lying to the east, nor in that portion lying to the west.

The population is pretty considerable for a Saharan country, the total number of inhabitants being estimated at about sixty-four thousand, which is at least double that of the whole of Fezzan. It was stated to the travelers, that the chiefs of Air can bring fourteen thousand able-bodied warriors into the field. The largest town is Agadez, with about eight thousand inhabitants, while Tin-Tellust has only about four hundred and fifty. There are, however, about half a dozen towns, the population of each of which exceeds one thousand, while the great bulk of places contain between that number and one hundred inhabitants, and a good many contain not more than fifty.

On the 12th of December, the travelers left their protracted encampment at Tin-Teggana, and on the 14th were joined by the salt caravan from Bilma. On the 20th December, they rested opposite the eastern side of the celebrated Baghzen Mountain, Dr. Overweg ascending what may be considered its lower terrace. It consists of porous basalt, and afforded a capital view of the high and steep slopes of the Baghzen, with its narrow gorges, the home of great numbers of lions. The next day they descended along the Wady Unan which widens out to a considerable plain further south, and passed through splendid forests of the doum-palm, which, laden with fruit, imparted to the country a truly tropical aspect. Christmas-eve was passed at a place called Bargot.

On the 1st of January, 1851, the travelers passed the most barren

portion of the plateau, and descended by a gentle slope to Soudan. The weather experienced in that region was bleak and cold, with a keen bracing air from the north-east, under which the caravan suffered severely, and several camels escaped from the numbed fingers of their drivers. The next day the travelers got fairly out of the elevated desert, and entered upon a wilderness of small tholukh-trees full of birds' nests, the soil covered with karongia and other herbs. Great numbers of ant-hills were met with. The same character of landscape continued to the village of Nasámat, which was reached on the 3d of January. Here flocks of sheep and droves of oxen betrayed the commencement of an inhabited country, and a real blessing and happiness it was to the travelers to be kindly received by the inhabitants, who are Tuaricks, and belong to a tribe called Tagama. Plenty of provisions were now obtained by the hungry caravan: fowls and cheese, young ostriches and eggs of ostriches, and the flesh of the giraffe, were brought for sale. The latter was relished, and its taste found to be somewhat like beef. Hunting the giraffe is a great occupation with the people of this village, and its flesh is a source of subsistence for them.

The caravan now entered Damergou, a frontier country of Bornou, under the sway of the Tuaricks, greatly intermixed with people of Bornou and Houssa. The expedition encamped on the 7th of January at the village of Tagelal, which belongs to En-Noor. It was arranged that the travelers should part here for a time and take different routes, in order to explore as much of Soudan as possible, making Kouka their place of rendezvous. Mr. Richardson was to take the direct road by Zinder, Dr. Barth by Katshna and Kano, and Dr. Overweg by a circuitous westerly route through Guber and Mariadi. On the 11th of January, 1851, they parted, never, alas, all three to meet again. "We took leave," says Mr. Richardson in his journal, "one of the other with some emotion; for in central Africa, those travelers who part and take divergent routes, can scarcely count on all meeting together again."

The direction of Mr. Richardson's route was nearly due south for about fifteen geographical miles, when it turned about south-east and continued in that direction as far as Zinder. A protracted delay of nearly four weeks was caused at Zinder, on account of a razzia sent to the neighboring countries. Mr. Richardson was all this time well treated, had good opportunities of making observations respecting the country and people around, and also of collecting information generally; provisions of every kind were supplied to him in abundance. Sad sights, however, connected with the slave-trade, checked his delight and threw a gloom over every thing else. During his stay the sultan went out in person to hunt down the subjects of his own sovereign, that he might pay his debts by selling them into captivity.

Zinder has a population of about ten thousand souls. The military force consists of cavalry and foot—one thousand cavalry having swords, spears, and shields; and four or five thousand bowmen, having

the slope to Soudan. The
 and cold, with a keen
 the caravan suffered ac-
 numbed fingers of their
 out of the elevated des-
 molukh-trees full of birds'
 herbs. Great numbers
 of landscape continued
 on the 3d of January.
 ayed the commencement
 and happiness it was to the
 ats, who are Tuaricks, and
 provisions were now ob-
 ceese, young ostriches and
 ere brought for sale. The
 somewhat like beef. Hunt-
 people of this village, and

ontier country of Bornou,
 mixed with people of Bor-
 on the 7th of January at
 oor. It was arranged that
 and take different routes, in
 ible, making Kouka their
 o take the direct road by
 and Dr. Overweg by a cir-
 Mariadi. On the 11th of
 ree to meet again. "We
 al, "one of the other with
 avellers who part and take
 eting together again."
 was nearly due south for
 arned about south-east and
 r. A protracted delay of
 account of a razzia sent to
 on was all this time well
 observations respecting the
 iag-information generally;
 in abundance. Sad sights,
 ecked his delight and threw
 ay the sultan went out in
 a sovereign, that he might

thousand souls. The mili-
 e thousand cavalry having
 thousand bowmen, having

only bows and arrows. The houses of Zinder are mostly built of double matting, but a good number have mud walls and thatched roofs. Others are built of mud. There are no nice mosques with minarets. The residence of the sultan is a fort of mud, with walls of some height; it overlooks all the other buildings. There are two principal streets, running from the south to the north; one terminating at the castle of the governor, and the other in the market. These are of some width, there being spaces for a dozen camels to pass abreast. There are, besides, many little squares before the houses of the grandes, where the idle people lounge, of which the streets are always full. The scavengers in the streets of Zinder are the vultures and hyenas, the former walking about in great numbers by day, the latter enter the town in troops by night.

On the 8th of February, 1851, Mr. Richardson left Zinder *en route* for Kouka, under an escort, and mounted on a horse presented to him by the sultan. The general direction of his route was east, through a fine wavy country, rising at times into high hills, with comparatively few trees, and more sugar-cane fields than in the northern parts of the province. The country is very fine and park-like, and were it not for the doum-palm, would be more like some of the best parts of Europe than Africa is supposed to be. On the 11th of February, he entered Manga or Minyo, considered to be the most powerful province of Bornou; and after passing a great number of villages—for the country is densely peopled—reached the capital Gurai on the 14th. He was kindly received by the sultan, and after staying for several days at Gurai, left that place on the 19th of February. His route led through a tract of country which may be considered as the southern border of the Sahara, for the vegetation was stunted, and the fauna exceedingly poor. At Gusumana, which forms the center of a group of several towns and villages, the country was considerably improved. It is situated on a hill, overlooking a steep broad valley, full of doum-palms, while in the gardens wheat, cotton, and pepper are cultivated. Mr. Richardson reached this place on the 21st of February, and here it was that he wrote the last words of his journal, for a few days afterward he fell a victim to the fatigues of the journey, and the influence of the climate. His last words seem to hint the cause of the lamentable accident that speedily followed: "Thermometer at sunset, 82°; weather very troublesome to-day, blowing hot and cold with the same breath." Spring was advancing with its uncertain temperatures in central Africa. The thermometer stood nearly 30° between the morning and afternoon. Doubtless, however, the unusual fatigue of horse-exercise during the days that succeeded the departure from Zinder may have contributed its share in breaking down Mr. Richardson's strength.

Mr. Richardson died at Ungurutua, about six days' journey from Kouka, the capital of Bornou, on the 4th of March, 1851, eleven months after his departure from Tripoli. His fellow-traveler, Dr. Barth, hast-

ened to the spot with laudable energy as soon as he heard of the melancholy catastrophe that had taken place, and secured all his papers and effects, which he forwarded to the British consul at Tripoli. The journal of the ill-fated traveler has since been published. He was forty-two years of age at the time of his death.

From Tagelal, where the travelers separated, Dr. Barth went in a direction about south-west nearly on a straight line as far as Katshna, thus entering the dominions of the Felatahs. A few miles from Tagelal he passed Olalool, the capital of Damergou, and about half way between that place and Katshna he left the town of Tasawa a little to the right of his route, having to cross a dense forest before reaching the frontier of the Felatah empire. This forest is rendered unsafe by gangs of Felatahs. Arrived at Katshna, the capital of a Felatah province, he was detained some days by the governor, who extorted from him a high passage money. From Katshna to Kano, Barth took a more easterly route than the one of Clapperton, and found the various streams he crossed running to the eastward. He arrived at this important place, the London of Soudan in a commercial point, in the beginning of February, and stayed till the beginning of March. During this time he collected a good deal of information respecting Houssa, and but for this would have been very dissatisfied with his visit to that city; for he was much molested by the inhabitants, and suffered from the unhealthiness of the place by a slight attack of fever. In addition to this, he was greatly disappointed by his commercial transactions, for the great amount of goods he and Dr. Overweg had been induced to purchase at Murzouk—to be exchanged in the markets of Kano for Soudan money or merchandise—fetched very low prices, and thus entailed a considerable loss, which, with the robberies in the Sahara, reduced his means in a degree little anticipated.

On the 5th of March, Dr. Barth left Kano and reached Gummel, the first considerable place within the Bornouese dominions, on the 12th. After staying a few days at that place, he continued his journey, and met with a sherif on the road, who acquainted him with Mr. Richardson's death. This sad account having been confirmed by succeeding travelers, he hurried on as fast as possible, in order to fulfill the last duty to his unfortunate traveling companion; if too late for his burial, at least to make provision that his lonely grave would be respected, and also to take such measures as might be necessary for the successful prosecution of the object of the mission. Having secured all Mr. Richardson's papers, Dr. Barth hastened on to Kouka, which he reached on the 2d of April, 1851. On his arrival, he presented himself at once at the shekh's palace, as one of the surviving Christians who had come from England to bring him presents from her Britannic majesty. He was received with great kindness and hospitality.

While awaiting the arrival of Dr. Overweg, Dr. Barth made preparations for the exploration of Lake Tsad, and collected information

as he heard of the melan-
 cured all his papers and
 l at Tripoli. The journal
 shed. He was forty-two

ted, Dr. Barth went in a
 t line as far as Katshna,
 A few miles from Tagelal
 l about half way between
 asawa a little to the right
 efore reaching the frontier
 ed unsafe by gangs of Fe-
 Felatah province, he was
 xtorted from him a high
 arth took a more easterly
 d the various streams he
 ed at this important place,
 , in the beginning of Feb-
 ch. During this time he
 g Houssa, and but for this
 it to that city; for he was
 ed from the unhealthiness
 In addition to this, he was
 ctions, for the great amount
 duced to purchase at Mur-
 Kano for Soudan money or
 thus entailed a considerable
 ra, reduced his means in a

o and reached Gummel, the
 ese dominions, on the 12th.
 tinned his journey, and met
 him with Mr. Richardson's
 ed by succeeding travelers,
 to fulfill the last duty to his
 te for his burial, at least to
 d be respected, and also to
 r the successful prosecution
 ed all Mr. Richardson's pa-
 nich he reached on the 2d
 ted himself at once at the
 stians who had come from
 Britannic majesty. He was

veg, Dr. Barth made prepa-
 , and collected information

respecting every quarter of central Africa, with the zeal and indefati-
 gability which distinguish this enthusiastic traveler, though the state of
 scanty provision and disorganization in which he found the whole expo-
 sition on his arrival at Kouka, were sufficient to have discouraged the
 most energetic. In this dilemma, the Vizier of Bornou had lent him
 \$100; with which he was enabled to pay some of the debts incurred
 by Mr. Richardson, and part of the salary due to his servants. On
 the 7th of May, Dr. Overweg arrived at Kouka, and was welcomed by
 his traveling companion as one who had made himself already quite at
 home. They received from the shekh a good house of large size to
 live in, and were supplied daily with plenty of mutton, rice, wheat,
 butter, and honey. Energetic preparations were forthwith made for ex-
 ploring unknown regions, Dr. Barth directing his steps in a southerly
 direction, and Dr. Overweg commencing the exploration of Lake
 Tsad.

DR. BARTH'S JOURNEY TO ADAMOWA.

The great object of Dr. Barth and Dr. Overweg being to push their
 way southward from Lake Tsad, with the ultimate view to cross the
 whole continent of Africa and reach the Indian Ocean, they collected
 beforehand as much information as possible respecting the countries
 they were about to visit. Thus Dr. Barth, while on his way from Kano
 to Kouka, received accounts of a country of which till then scarcely more
 than the name was known, and that it was situated south of Lake Tsad.
 This country, called Adamaua, Dr. Barth inferred, from all he heard of
 it, to be the most beautiful country of central Africa, and a strong wish
 arose to reach and explore this region at the earliest opportunity. He,
 therefore, on his arrival at Kouka, directed all his energies to the realiza-
 tion of his wish, and so far succeeded, that soon after Dr. Overweg's
 arrival at that place, he was enabled to start for the south, leaving his
 companion to navigate Lake Tsad. Leaving Kouka on the 29th of May,
 accompanied by a Bornouese kashella, or captain, Dr. Barth proceeded
 southward, passing through the province of Uje. He then entered the
 territory of a tribe called the Marghi, whom he thus describes: "The
 Marghi are a very fine set of people, tall and extremely well-built; the
 color of some is black, of others copper color. They have a language
 of their own. Their villages consist of groups of huts belonging to
 separate families, and the huts are better than any I have seen in Bornou.
 The Marghi are quite naked, with the exception of a simple band of
 leather passed between their loins and fixed round their girdle, and a
 profusion of neatly made rings of iron and ivory round their arms and
 legs. The females perforate their under lips, and the males their right
 ear, but neither of them make any incisions in their face or body. The
 Marghi worship their god, called *tambi*, in holy groves, of which each
 village has one, consisting of magnificent trees, surrounded by a ditch,

and forming a kind of citadel, whither they retreat during war with all their property and what is most dear to them. They have also a rock near Kobtshee, the capital, which is the object of great veneration, and on which they perform ordeals very similar to those in the middle ages. The death of an old man is celebrated with rejoicings, that of a young man with grief and lamentations.

"The most important day," he writes, "in all my African journeys, was the 18th of June, when we reached the river Benué, at a point called Taépe, where it is joined by the river Faro. Since leaving Europe, I had not seen so large and imposing a river. The Benué, or 'mother of waters,' which is by far the larger one of the two, is half a mile broad, and nine and a quarter feet deep in the channel where we crossed it. On our return, eleven days later, it had risen one and a half feet. The Faro is five twelfths of a mile broad, and three feet deep, which increased to seven and a quarter feet by our return. Both rivers have a very strong current, and run to the west into the Kowara (Niger). We crossed the Benué in boats made out of single trees, twenty-five to thirty-five feet long, and one to one and a half feet broad, and forded the Faro, which latter was accomplished not without difficulty, on account of the strong current. The Benué is said to rise nine days' journey from Yola in a south-easterly direction, and the Faro seven days' journey distant, in a rock called Labul. During the rainy season the country is inundated to a great extent by the two rivers, which rise to their highest level toward the end of July, and remain at that level for forty days, namely, till the first days of September, when the waters begin to fall. Both rivers are full of crocodiles, and the Benué is supposed to carry gold. After having crossed the rivers, with some difficulty to the camels, we passed at first through some swampy ground, then through a very fine country thickly inhabited, and reached Yola, the capital, on the 22d of June.

"Yola is the capital of Fúmbina or Adamowa, and the residence of the Sultan Mohammed Loel, son of the Mallem Adama, who conquered this country, and on whose account it has received the name Adamowa. It is situated in a rather swampy plain, inundated during the rainy season by an inlet of the river. It covers a large area, its dimensions being two and a half miles from east to west, and one and a half miles from north to south. All the dwellings, except the houses of the sultan and his family, consist of huts, built of mud. Having rode up to the sultan's palace, we were lodged in the house of one of his chiefs, Ardo Gammawa. My letter of recommendation from the Shekh of Bornou, was delivered, and made upon the whole a good impression. It represented me as a stranger, a Christian—not without his 'holy book'—who visited Adamowa, in order to explore there and 'admire the works of the Almighty God.' These latter words made the Fellatah chief violent and unmanageable. But worse than this, was the letter delivered by my companion, the kashella, in which the disputed frontier-territory was

during war with all
 they have also a rock
 great veneration, and
 in the middle ages.
 gs, that of a young

ny African journeys,
 er Benué, at a point
 Faro. Since leaving
 ver. The Benué, or
 of the two, is half a
 the channel where we
 d risen one and a half
 , and three feet deep,
 r return. Both rivers
 o the Kowara (Niger).
 e trees, twenty-five to
 feet broad, and forded
 thout difficulty, on ac-
 rise nine days' journey
 ro seven days' journey
 y season the country is
 hich rise to their high-
 hat level for forty days,
 e waters begin to fall.
 is supposed to carry
 some difficulty to the
 y ground, then through
 ed Yola, the capital, on

ra, and the residence of
 Adama, who conquered
 ed the name Adamowa.
 dated during the rainy
 rge area, its dimensions
 nd one and a half miles
 the houses of the sultan
 Having rode up to the
 f one of his chiefs, Ardo
 n the Shekh of Bornou,
 d impression. It repre-
 ut his 'holy book'—who
 'admire the works of the
 Fellatah chief violent and
 e letter delivered by my
 ed frontier-territory was

once more claimed by the Shekh of Bornou, and this in a rather ener-
 getic manner. Consequently, on the 26th of June, after a three days'
 stay in Yola, a message from the sultan was delivered to me, requesting
 me to leave the town, and return the way I came. This most vexatious
 order was delivered by Mallem Mansúr, the brother of the sultan himself,
 and next to him in influence, and who had shown me much kindness
 during my stay, and now endeavored to appease my vexations feelings.
 He said that I would be most welcome to the sultan, if I brought a letter
 from his master in Sakatu, whose slave he was. I gave to Mallem
 Mansúr the presents destined for him, who then announced to me that
 the sultan, his brother, had sent two slaves as a present for myself, and
 requested the present intended for him. I declared, that I must decline
 his present, for in addition to it being a sin for me to possess slaves, I
 neither would give nor receive the smallest present from a sultan who
 ordered me to leave his country in the manner he had done. Shortly
 after this we left Yola, accompanied by two horsemen, who had orders
 to conduct us safely to the frontier.

"With regard to the height of the mountains seen by me, I must
 observe, that the reports of snow-capped mountains in that region of
 inner Africa, are without foundation, as not even the Alantika, the high-
 est mountain of Adamowa, and probably exceeding ten thousand feet in
 height, reaches the limit of snow. Most of the other mountains in
 Adamowa seem only three thousand feet above their basis."

Dr. Barth appears to have returned to Kouka on the same route he
 came, where he safely arrived on the 22d of July, after an absence of scarcely
 more than two months. The results of this journey, though short, are
 unquestionably the most important, both in a geographical and commercial
 point of view, of those which have yet been achieved by that expedi-
 tion, for the magnificent river discovered by Dr. Barth holds out the hope,
 that by its means will be laid open the vast unknown interior of Africa
 to our knowledge, as well as to the civilization and commerce of the
 world. Two geographical questions of importance are also set at rest
 by Dr. Barth's journey, namely, the non-existence of a great longitudinal
 mountain chain which was supposed to stretch across central Africa in
 the region traversed by that traveler, and the non-connexion of Lake
 Tsad with the Kowara.

DR. OVERWEG'S EXPLORATION OF LAKE TSAD.

The boat for exploring Lake Tsad and its numerous islands had safely,
 though with great trouble, been conveyed from the Mediterranean
 across the desert to Kouka, laden in pieces on camels. The Shekh of
 Bornou being on terms of war with the nations inhabiting the eastern
 shores of Lake Tsad, a journey round the lake was found impracticable,
 and Dr. Overweg therefore determined on a cruise on the lake during

the absence of his companion. With the assistance of Arab carpenters, he put the boat together, and named it *Lord Palmerston*. It was launched at Maduari, east of Kouka, when a vast number of people flocked together to see and admire the strange boat. A harbor near this point is the only place where an occasional trade is carried on between the inhabitants of Bornou and those of the islands in the lake, the Biddumas. Two of their boats happened to be in that harbor when the *Lord Palmerston* was launched. Dr. Overweg soon became friendly with the crews, and engaged two of the men as sailors and interpreters, in addition to whom he was accompanied by his servant, a Tripolitanian boatman, and Fugo Ali, a Sudurti chief.

On the 28th of June, Dr. Overweg embarked at Maduari, in company with two of the Bidduma boats. For the first seven hours they had to make their way through narrow channels between small islands, and through dense reeds of a luxuriant growth, infested by herds of *ungurutus*, or hippopotami, which were no less disturbed and terrified by the boat with its white sails than the Biddumas who were occasionally met with, either in boats or swimming about with great rapidity on pieces of floating timber. The hippopotami would often appear with their heads above the water, and gap at the moving sails. Toward evening the open water of the sea was reached; it is called *inkibul*. At night the boat was tied to a floating island of reeds, enlivened by hosts of phosphorescent insects. On the following day a north-easterly course was steered through the vast open expanse of the lake, the average depth of which was found to be eight to twelve feet. Floating islands of reeds were met with in that open portion of the lake, but scarcely any fishes, hippopotami, or water-fowl, all of which were plentiful in the narrow channels toward the shores.

On the 30th of June, Dr. Overweg continued his course with a fresh breeze, in which the punts of the Biddumas, not having any sails, were unable to keep up with the *Lord Palmerston*. Toward the evening the first island of the Biddumas—Kangallam—was reached, after previously sighting to the right hand the small island of Kamassa. Rounding the island of Kangallam, and steering a more easterly course, Scurom, a larger island, was passed, and Marea was reached, at which they landed for the purpose of taking in wood. The depth of the lake at this point was six feet only, and further on nine feet.

Leaving Marea, a great number of islands were passed, of which Maddch, Jerom, and Berom, were the principal ones. Near Marea the fishes reappeared. At times the open lake was seen, stretching southward through the narrow channels of the adjoining islands. In the same direction was seen an island covered with magnificent trees and herds of cattle. The night was passed close to the island of Berom. On the 1st and 2d of July, the voyage was continued in an easterly direction, through similar intricate channels formed by innumerable islands, some of which were covered with fine pastures and trees, and

ce of Arab carpenters,
Palmerston. It was
 most number of people
 boat. A harbor near
 trade is carried on be-
 islands in the lake, the
 that harbor when the
 soon became friendly
 sailors and interpreters,
 servant, a Tripolitanian

ed at Maduari, in com-
 first seven hours they
 between small islands,
 n, infested by herds of
 disturbed and terrified
 mas who were occasion-
 t with great rapidity on
 could often appear with
 moving sails. Toward
 it is called *inkibul*. At
 eeds, enlivened by hosts
 a north-easterly course
 f the lake, the average
 e feet. Floating islands
 e lake, but scarcely any
 were plentiful in the nar-

ed his course with a fresh
 t having any sails, were
 Toward the evening the
 reached, after previously
 Kamassa. Rounding the
 easterly course, Seurum, a
 ed, at which they landed
 of the lake at this point

ls were passed, of which
 al ones. Near Marca the
 as seen, stretching south-
 ojoining islands. In the
 th magnificent trees and
 to the island of Berom.
 continued in an easterly
 formed by innumerable
 e pastures and trees, and

inhabited. On the latter day the large island Belarigo was reached, but previously they met a number of its inhabitants, from whom they learned that their chief, having heard of Dr. Overweg's visit, had gone to the Bornouse shore to fetch him, and conduct him safely to his residence. No less kind than this act was the reception of the visitors in the harbor of Belarigo island. Immense multitudes of people collected round the boat to welcome the Christian, the salutation of the men consisting of shaking by the hand, and of the women by unceasing exclamations and songs. Dr. Overweg was conducted to a pleasant eminence to pitch his tent, and abundance of milk and provisions were brought to him and his companions. Late in the evening a grand procession took place to honor the guests, who were continually assured of the friendship of their entertainers. Next morning, the whole of the inhabitants, old and young, went to cultivate their cane fields; and the afternoon was spent in festival assemblies, dancing, and rejoicings, on which occasion Dr. Overweg delivered his presents, consisting of a few tobacs, pearls, needles, rings, and sugar, which were distributed among the community of the island.

Dr. Overweg stayed four days in Belarigo, and was treated invariably with the greatest kindness. The island of Belarigo stretches from north to south, and is about four miles long, and between one and two miles broad. On the 7th he left the island to extend his cruise eastward. The same labyrinth of channels and islands continued as before, but the depth of the sea was somewhat greater, namely fifteen feet. After upward of two hours' sail the large island of Doji was reached, where Dr. Overweg halted. Some of the people of Belarigo had accompanied and followed him, not in boats, but swimming across the narrow channels with their hand-floats. It appears that he was unable to extend his tour further to the east, on account of the war between the people of Waday and the Biddumas, which was not yet terminated.

The fact that the waters of Lake Tsad are fresh and clear, is fully confirmed by Dr. Overweg. A new feature now first brought out by the researches of that traveler is its comparative shallowness, the soundings taken by him ranging from eight to fifteen feet. The depth and volume of water, as well as the superficial extent of the lake, varies greatly in different seasons and periods. Inundations and droughts succeeding each other produce such changes that the channels between various islands through which Dr. Overweg sailed without obstruction, are frequently laid dry, and at other times the islands are inundated to such a degree, that the inhabitants have to retreat with their property to the ranges and summits of the sandhills found in many of the islands. The greater portion of the lake is occupied by a vast labyrinth of small islands, the largest of which were found by Dr. Overweg not to exceed five miles in length.

EXPLORATIONS IN 1851 AND 1852.

No sooner had Dr. Overweg rejoined his companion at Kouka, than they planned another journey to be undertaken conjointly. Owing to the recent death of the Sultan of Waday, a country lying to the east of Lake Tsad, the whole of that region had been involved in a civil war. The Uelad Soliman (the well-known powerful Arab tribe, formerly living near the Mediterranean, whence they were driven away by the Turks and subsequently occupied the regions to the north and north-east of Lake Tsad, forming an alliance with Bornu), determined to profit by this dissension of the people of Waday among themselves, and to invade their country. Under their protection the travelers hoped to be enabled to explore the countries to the north-east and east of Lake Tsad, as well as the mountainous region of Borgou, situated about midway between that lake and Egypt, and never yet visited by any European. Their kind host, the Shekh of Bornou, considerably equipped twenty Arabs expressly for the purpose of conducting them safe to the Arab encampment.

On the 15th of September the travelers and their escort left Kouka, and on the 1st of October they reached the encampment of the Uelad Soliman near Bir-el-Korno, and were received in a grand style by the Arab horsemen, who paraded their celebrated equestrian evolutions. The camp consisted of about one hundred Arab families, and a division of Tibbus, together with about five thousand camels, several thousand head of oxen and sheep, and two hundred horses—the whole presenting an imposing and novel spectacle to the travelers, particularly when on the march. From Bir-el-Korno the army moved on toward Maw, the capital of Kanem, through districts situated northward from that place, and inhabited by Tibbus. The western tribes of the Tibbus of Kanem were already subjugated, and the eastern ones could not stand the first attack of the Arabs, but fled, and left their herds of camels, oxen, and sheep, in the hands of the enemy. They rallied, however, and succeeded in raising all their neighbors in order to prevent the further progress of the Arabs. The latter had already approached Maw to within a few hours' distance, when, with an overwhelming force the enemy made an attack upon their camp, which proved as unexpected as it was decisive. The Uelad Soliman were defeated, and put to flight so suddenly, that Barth and Overweg saved their lives and instruments only by a quick retreat. The army made a stand in western Kanem, intending to renew their attack upon the countries eastward, as soon as an auxiliary force of the Bornouese should have joined them. As this would have caused an indefinite loss of time to our travelers, beside the uncertainty of their progress, as depending upon the chances of an invading army, they determined to return at once to their head-quarters at Kouka, where they arrived without further mishaps, on the 14th of November.

D 1852.

panion at Kouka, than conjointly. Owing to the tribe lying to the east of the country involved in a civil war. The tribe, formerly living in the south and north-east of the country, determined to profit by the confusion, and to invade the country. The Arabs hoped to be enabled to reach the east of Lake Tsad, as they had been defeated about midway by any European. They had completely equipped twenty thousand men to take them safe to the Arab

their escort left Kouka, the encampment of the army received in a grand style. The celebrated equestrian evolutions of the Arab families, and a thousand camels, several hundred horses—the whole of the travelers, particularly the army moved on toward the northward from the situated northward from the western tribes of the Tibbus. The eastern ones could not stand to part with their herds of camels, and they rallied, however, and endeavored to prevent the further advance. When they had already approached Maw to the westward, the overwhelming force of the army proved as unexpected as the defeat, and put to flight the lives and instruments of the army. The army moved on toward the west in western Kanem, in the direction eastward, as soon as they had joined them. As this would have been the chances of an invading army, their head-quarters at Kouka, on the 14th of November.

On reaching Kouka, the travelers learned that a large army of the Shekh of Bornou was about to leave for the south, to castigate the people of Mandara, a country already known through Major Denham, who there met with so narrow an escape on a similar occasion. Dr. Barth and Dr. Overweg, far from being discouraged by the dangers their predecessor had undergone, or by their own narrow escape in their late journey to Kanem, determined to accompany the Bornouese army. The 25th of November was the day of departure. The army consisted of upward of ten thousand horse, and the same number of foot soldiers, with innumerable trains of camels and other beasts of burden. The campaign lasted from the 25th of November to the 1st of February, 1852. The army penetrated to the distance of two hundred miles in a south-eastern direction, into a country called Musgo, and returned with a booty of five thousand slaves, and ten thousand head of cattle. The country was very level, and abounded with marshes.

After a short rest of a few weeks, the two travelers left Kouka in the end of March, 1852, on two distinct journeys: Dr. Barth going in a south-easterly direction toward the Nile, and Dr. Overweg in a south-westerly direction toward the Niger. Dr. Barth directed his way to Maseña, the capital of Bagirmi. Owing to the intrigues of a native of that country, who had recently returned from Kouka, and who considered himself not sufficiently honored by the sultan and the vizier, the most absurd rumors respecting the object of Dr. Barth's visit had been spread about, namely, that he was a dangerous sorcerer, and that he had come to cause mischief to the people and to dethrone the sultan. Accordingly a most determined opposition was shown him in the country of Loggene, and he was not allowed to cross the river Shary. Undeterred by these difficulties, Dr. Barth, by a circuitous route, went to another ferry at Mele, about twelve miles lower down the river, where he succeeded in crossing the river and thus entering the kingdom of Bagirmi, but his further progress was again forcibly stopped, and it was only allowed him to send his letters of recommendation to the capital, and to remain till an answer should be returned.

He reached the capital at last on the 28th of April, and though he seems to have been tolerably well received, he was not allowed to extend his journey beyond that place. For this restriction he endeavored to make up by collecting all possible information respecting the regions to the south and also to the east as far as Dar Fur, including Waday. At last, on the 10th of August, after staying upward of three months at Maseña, he was allowed to commence his return to Kouka.

On the 24th of March, Dr. Overweg left Kouka, his route being toward the south-west. On the 1st of April, he reached Gujeba, a large place, surrounded with low walls of red clay. The vegetation of the region round Gujeba is tolerably luxuriant; there are no less than fifteen different plants cultivated, and forty-seven different kinds of trees were enumerated to him by their native names, thirty-two of them bearing eatable

fruit, three eatable roots and leaves, and twelve neither eatable fruits nor roots; forty different animals are met with by the hunters of Gujeba, including the civet, the musky secretion of which is collected. Gujeba belongs to Bornou only since 1847, when it was conquered by a combined army of the shekh and the Uelad Soliman. Dr. Overweg was kindly received at Gujeba, and a house adjoining the sultan's was given him for his residence. When at home, he was contently besieged by visitors, who conducted themselves with the greatest propriety. The playing of a small musical-box he had with him, put every one in raptures, and there was an unceasing demand to hear the *molo* as they called that instrument.

Dr. Overweg left Gujeba on the 9th of April, after a stay of five days. His route was nearly due west. After crossing a considerable range of hills, forming a spur of the table land to the west, the large town of Fika was reached on the 14th of April. Fika is surrounded with a walled suburb, and the town itself has a very high wall with double ditches. It is indeed most strongly fortified, and boasts of never having been taken by an enemy, not even by the Fellatahs. It lies at the opening of a valley, extending to the west into the mountains, and is abundantly supplied with date-trees and water. The behavior of the inhabitants to the travelers was by no means so amiable as in the places visited previously, though they were readily supplied with a house and plenty of provisions. On the morning after his arrival, Dr. Overweg induced some of the inhabitants to ascend with him the hill which overlooks the town. He there enjoyed an extensive view over the vast plain to the south, draining, it was said, into the Benue. The Fellatah territory commences immediately to the south of Fika, the large town of Naffada, also Bake—the former, only three hours distant—being plainly discernible to Dr. Overweg. He was about to ascend a higher hill further west, when messengers from the sultan arrived to command his immediate return to the town. At the gate, the comers were greeted by an immense assemblage of the people, by no means in a friendly manner; the Fika men, who had conducted the stranger to the top of the hill, were unceremoniously taken hold of and led away, and doleful cries and lamentations were uttered by the multitude, sounding "La, la, ai, ai, ai, yai, yai!" Dr. Overweg pressed forward through the crowd, and reached his habitation without any violence being offered to him. It was afterward explained to him that this scene arose from his ascending the hill, which affords so complete a view over their town, that the inhabitants feared this knowledge obtained by a stranger could not but be productive of evil. And such was the excitement, that one person had proposed the stranger should at once be killed, in order to prevent the apprehended ill consequences. The sultan assured Dr. Overweg that this manifestation was not justified by his own feelings; still it appeared advisable to leave the town next morning. Accordingly the plan of penetrating further in that direction was abandoned, and the trav-

neither eatable fruits
of the hunters of Gujeba,
which is collected. Gujeba
was conquered by a com-
mander. Dr. Overweg was
by the sultan's was given
constantly besieged by
greatest propriety. The
sultan, put every one in rap-
to hear the *molo* as they

April, after a stay of five
days, crossing a considerable
distance to the west, the large
town of Fika is surrounded
by a very high wall with
towers, and boasts of never
being taken by the Fellatahs. It lies at the
foot of the mountains, and is

The behavior of the in-
habitants is amiable as in the places
visited. A house and
stables were supplied with a house and
arrived, Dr. Overweg in-
habited the hill which over-
looked the vast plain
from the town. The Fellatah terri-
tory of Fika, the large town of
the sultan's distant—being plainly
seen to ascend a higher hill fur-
ther arrived to command his
the comers were greeted
by means in a friendly man-
ner, a stranger to the top of the
hill, and doleful cries
were heard, sounding "La, la, ai,
ai" through the crowd, and
being offered to him. It
arose from his ascending
the town, that the in-
habitants a stranger could not but
be contented, that one person
was killed, in order to prevent
the assured Dr. Overweg
his own feelings; still it ap-
peared accordingly the plan
was abandoned, and the trav-

elers returned northward toward Dora. From this place they returned
to Kouka by a more southerly route, passing through the country of
the Marghi, and the province of Uje, which Dr. Barth had traversed on
his way to Adamowa. He reached Kouka in safety, though greatly
fatigued by his journey, on the 22d of May.

Not long after Dr. Overweg's return to Kouka the rains commenced,
the first shower occurring on the 15th of June. He now began anx-
iously to expect Dr. Barth's return from Bagirmi, as further operations
depended upon a mutual arrangement. The 24th of June was a joyful
day, the great caravan arriving from the north and bringing letters and
supplies so long expected. The dispatches from the British government
addressed to Dr. Barth were at once forwarded to Bagirmi by a special
messenger, but it was not till the 20th of August that that traveler was
able to return to Kouka. During this protracted delay, Dr. Overweg
had so far regained his strength as to make short excursions to the lake,
and in other directions. Dr. Barth, when arriving at Kouka, noticed
the change in his friend's appearance, who looked emaciated and had no
appetite. To avoid the dangers of the rainy season, to which he had
already too long been exposed, it was arranged that he should set out
from Kouka on an excursion along the river Yeou.

Dr. Overweg's health was satisfactory throughout this trip, and he
returned to Kouka on the 14th of September, in the hope of having re-
gained his health. Five days afterward, however, he was attacked by
fever, and after seven more days he was no more. It was on the 20th
of September that he felt seriously ill. At his own wish, he was re-
moved to Maduari, which is ten miles east of Kouka, and near Lake
Tsad. This is a very open and pleasant place, interspersed with trees,
and had always been a favorite spot with the deceased. The boat in
which he had navigated Lake Tsad was also there. It was not till the
24th that he was enabled, with the assistance of three persons, to reach
that place. There was, however, no help. The most dangerous symp-
toms manifested themselves on his arrival, his speech becoming gradually
unintelligible, and, after much suffering, he expired on the 27th of Sep-
tember, 1852, at four o'clock in the morning. In the afternoon Dr.
Barth fulfilled the heart-rending duty of interring his only companion
and friend. Thus, at the early age of thirty, and sharing the fate of
Mr. Richardson, fell the second victim out of three persons composing
this enterprise.

EXPLORATIONS OF DRs. BARTH AND VOGEL.

Meantime letters and funds had arrived from England, and Dr.
Barth, finding his own health unimpaired, determined to carry on the
undertaking single-handed, regardless of the perils and privations that
awaited him. He made preparations to leave for Sackatoo and Tim-
buctoo, but first took the precaution of forwarding all his papers to En-

gland. He finally left Kouka on the 25th of November, 1852, reached Sackatoo in April, 1853, and entered the famous city of Timbuctoo on the 7th of September. After this nothing was heard of him for a long time, and the most serious apprehensions were felt concerning him. Word at last reached Tripoli, by way of Bornou, that he had fallen a victim to the enmity of the chief of the desert tribes around Timbuctoo, who had sworn that he should never leave the city alive.

Previous to leaving Kouka, he had written to the British government, requesting that another coadjutor might be sent out to supply the loss of Dr. Overweg. Dr. Edward Vogel, an assistant of Mr. Hind, the astronomer, volunteered his services, which were accepted, and he was also permitted to take two volunteers from the corps of sappers and miners. This new party left Tripoli on the 28th of June, 1853, accompanied by Mr. Warrington, son of the English consul at that place. They reached Mourzuk on the 8th of August, and were obliged to remain there until the 13th of October, when they started for Bornou with a caravan of seventy camels. The march across the Sahara was very rapid and fortunate, and in December they arrived safely at Kouka. The next news which reached England, and which immediately followed the account of the murder of Dr. Barth, was the death of Mr. Warrington, and the dangerous illness of Dr. Vogel. The expedition seemed to be fated, in every way.

After some months of painful uncertainty, came the joyful intelligence that Dr. Barth was still alive and had left Timbuctoo, after a stay of nearly a year. The report of his death had been invented by the vizier of Bornou, who coveted the supplies belonging to the expedition, and who would no doubt have taken measures to have the story confirmed, for the sake of securing the plunder, had he not been deposed in consequence of a political revolution in Bornou. What happened to Dr. Barth during his stay in Timbuctoo has not yet been made known, but it is said that he owed his safety to the friendship of the powerful sultan of Houssa. He succeeded in exploring the whole middle course of the Kowara (Niger), which no one but the lamented Park, whose journals perished with him, ever accomplished. In his journeyings in those regions, he discovered two large kingdoms, Gando and Hamd-Allahi, the very names of which were before unknown. He was treated with the greatest reverence by the inhabitants, who bestowed upon him the name of "Modibo," and seemed to consider him as a demi-god. He reached Kano, on his return, on the 17th of October, 1854, and on the 1st of December met Dr. Vogel, his associate—the first white man he had seen for more than two years! He probably spent the winter in Kouka, and started in March or April on his return to Europe, as we find that he reached Mourzuk on the 20th of July, 1855. Dr. Barth is not yet thirty-five years of age, and with the boundless energy of an explorer, intends returning to central Africa. He stands now, indisputably, at the head of all African travelers.

Fernando Po on the 25th of June, and on the 8th of July commenced their explorations. The great result of the expedition was that it reached a point three hundred miles higher up the Benué than Allen and Oldfield in 1823; they learned that they were only sixty miles below the mouth of the Faro, a southern tributary of the Benué, and that the Benué was navigable during the rainy season as far as $11^{\circ} 30'$ east longitude. Had they found coal along the shores they might have penetrated still further into the country, but as they were not able to find any, and had started on the expedition without axes to cut wood for the furnaces, they were obliged to return.

On the 21st of July, they reached the city of Abo, on the Niger, and on the 2d of August, they made the mouth of the Benué. The river had fallen considerably, by which its ascent was materially hindered. On the 17th of August, Dr. Baikie was obliged to take the command of the steamer from the drunken captain. The vessel was then in the countries Doma and Michi, and at the city of Ojogo, in Doma, which they reached on the 23d of August, they got their first and only news of Dr. Barth, over whose probable death all Europe was mourning. A man who had come to Ojogo from Keana told about two white men who were in Keana when he left, and who had exchanged presents with the sultan. Baikie showed him the vignette on the title page of the work of Petermann, and he recognized the white man in the portrait of Dr. Barth, but remarked that he had a big beard now. Doctor Vogel also was identified, except that he now had hair on his cheeks and lips. When they arrived at this point, the river had risen five feet, and they had no cause to complain of lack of water thereafter. On the 6th of September they reached the considerable city of Gandiko, in the kingdom of Kororofa. At first the inhabitants manifested a disposition to give the strangers a hostile reception, but when they were satisfied of their peaceful intentions, they welcomed them hospitably. The king paid Dr. Baikie a visit, and a friendly and profitable trade sprang up between the city and the steamer.

The greatest difficulties commenced in Hamaruwa. On the 18th of September and the four following days, they had to contend with a current of from two and a half to three knots per hour. The wood burned poorly, and they made small progress. For two weeks there had been considerable sickness on board. The crew suffered from swelled limbs; there were symptoms also of dropsy. The disease appeared to be of a scorbutic character, and it was soon found that the ship's rations, seven or eight gills of rice, with cold water, were not sufficient for the exigencies of the crew; meat was therefore provided. On the 22d of September they reached the city of Garowa, where an envoy from the sultan of Hamanuwa was waiting for them. He bore an invitation to them to go up to the palace seven or eight miles from the city. This country lies on the northern bank of the Benué, and Messrs. Crowther and Richards, who accepted the invitation, were well received by the

ND BARTH.

h of July commenced expedition was that it the Benué than Allen re only sixty miles be of the Benué, and that n as far as 11° 30' east s they might have pen- y were not able to find kes to cut wood for the

of Abo, on the Niger, h of the Benué. The ent was materially hin- s obliged to take the n. The vessel was then ty of Ojogo, in Doma, got their first and only Europe was mourning. d about two white men exchanged presents with n the title page of the ite man in the portrait eard now. Doctor Vo- hair on his cheeks and had risen five feet, and hereafter. On the 17th city of Gandiko, in the manifested a disposition hen they were satisfied a hospitably. The king a profitable trade sprang up

aruwa. On the 18th of d to contend with a cur- our. The wood burned o weeks there had been ed from swelled limbs; ase appeared to be of a the ship's rations, seven sufficient for the exigen- d. On the 22d of Sep- ere an envoy from the e bore an invitation to es from the city. This s, and Messrs. Crowther e well received by the

INTERVIEW WITH THE SULTAN OF HAMARUWA. 907

sultan. Then Dr. Baikie went up. The country is inhabited by Fulos, who do not live upon yams, but cultivate grain. In the villages they keep goats and poultry, especially ducks. The road to the palace is only a narrow path through a boggy country thickly covered with grass and bushes. After walking fourteen miles they reached the capital on the 24th, at sunset. It is built on a little eminence at the foot of a chain of hills, and commands an extensive prospect of the marshy plain. The hunger of the travelers was first whetted by half an hour of shaking hands with the natives, and then satisfied by various preparations of milk, and with two well-known African dishes, foofoo, and palaver sauce. The city is two miles long, by a mile and a half in breadth. The houses are round and quite large, well-built and surrounded by large yards. The inhabitants are Fellatahs, and speak the Fulo or rather the Pulo language; most of them speak also the Houssa language, which the travelers understood. The appearance of the people was pleasing and sometimes even beautiful; their intelligence is well-known in Africa. Baikie had an audience with the sultan. The foreigners were seated on Turkish carpets. They did not see the prince himself, for, according to the custom of the country, a silken curtain was suspended before him. He received some presents, and talked much about peace, friendship, and future commerce, the wickedness of wars, of conquest, and about an alliance against common enemies.

The crew was so much weakened by sickness that the steamboat could be worked no further up the river. Dr. Baikie with Mr. May, on the 27th, started up the stream in a boat. That day and the following they made but little progress, but on the third day the wind rose, and they ran rapidly before it. Before noon they reached Dulti, a village which was then entirely submerged, with the exception of a dry spot about a great tree. Here they landed, and were soon surrounded by flocks of rough, savage-looking people, all entirely naked, women as well as men. At first astonishment kept them quiet, and Dr. Baikie attempted to get up a conversation with them, and get them into good humor. Soon, however, they began to be troublesome, and to press up about them with the intention evidently of carrying off their boat and plundering them. A little sporting dog which the travelers had with them fortunately showed his head at this juncture, and his sudden appearance inspired the natives with such salutary fear that they immediately retreated. As the doctor did not think it worth while to get into a fight with three or four hundred men, armed with swords, spears, bows and arrows, he gave the best-looking among them a few presents, and shoved off. While they were looking about for another landing-place, the natives suddenly came upon them in their canoes, and tried to get them in the swamps and bushes along the bank, so that they were obliged to put out for the open river. Here they were safe, as they could easily upset any canoe which might happen to be troublesome. When they had reached open water, the nine or ten canoes,

manned with eight or nine men apiece, turned back and left them. They had already fixed that afternoon as the limit of their upward voyage, and, though very unwillingly, they headed their boat down stream.

That point was in latitude $9^{\circ} 30'$ north, longitude $11^{\circ} 30'$ east. They could not give the latitude and longitude with greater accuracy, as they were interrupted in their observations by the savages. They learned that they were only sixty miles below the mouth of the Faro. On the return voyage they experienced a tropical thunder-storm, and when they arrived at Garowa they found that the *Pleid* was gone. The crew, fearing that the river was falling, had compelled the mate to start down the river, and wandering for awhile over flooded land they found the steamer and continued the return voyage without interruption. On the 5th of October the river began to fall; on the 20th they reached the Niger, and on the 4th of November at sunset they anchored before Fernando Po.

On the average, the sick-list was moderate. Fever was in all cases treated with heavy doses of quinine, and what must be regarded as almost a miracle in the African lowlands, there was not a single death during the whole voyage.

AND BARTH.

back and left them. They
of their upward voyage,
boat down stream.
tude 11° 30' east. They
greater accuracy, as they
savages. They learned
th of the Faro. On the
ler-storm, and when they
l was gone. The crew,
d the mate to start down
ed land they found the
ut interruption. On the
e 20th they reached the
et they anchored before

Fever was in all cases
must be regarded as al-
was not a single death

BURTON'S PILGRIMAGE TO MECCA.

IN the autumn of 1852, Lieutenant Richard F. Burton, of the Bombay army, offered his services to the Royal Geographical Society of London, for the purpose of undertaking an exploration of central and eastern Arabia. He was peculiarly fitted for such a journey by his long residence in India, and his familiarity with the Persian and Arabic languages, and their various dialects, to which advantages he added a decidedly Shemitic countenance. The Geographical Society favored his plan, but the Board of Directors of the East India Company refused to grant him the three years' leave of absence, demanded for its prosecution. They gave him, however, an additional furlough of a year, in order to pursue his Arabic studies.

He thereupon determined to prove, by actual experiment, that his plan was practicable. Being supplied with means by the Geographical Society, he set out, determined to cross the unknown Arabian Peninsula, either in a direct line from Medina to Muscat, or diagonally from Mecca to Makallab in the Indian Ocean. On the 3d of April, 1853, he left London, having, by the advice of a friend, already assumed the Oriental costume, and embarked at Southampton as a Persian prince. He deceived every body on the voyage, and on arriving at Alexandria was gratified to see that he was looked upon as a genuine Moslem. At this place he enjoyed the hospitality of an English friend, who, the better to establish his assumed character, lodged him in an out-house. He lost no time in securing the services of a religious shekh, plunged once more into the intricacies of the faith, revived his recollections of religious ablution, read the Koran, and again became an adept in the act of prostration. His leisure hours were employed in visiting the baths and coffee-houses, praying in the mosques, attending the bazaars, and picking up a little medical knowledge, which he judged would be of service.

"After a month's hard work at Alexandria," says he, "I prepared to assume the character of a wandering dervish, after reforming my title from 'Mirza' (Prince), to 'Shekh Abdullah.' A reverend man,

whose name I do not care to quote, some time ago initiated me into this order, the Kadiriya, under the high-sounding name of Bismillah-Shah : and, after a due period of probation, he graciously elevated me to the proud position of a Murshid (master), in the mystic craft. I was therefore sufficiently well acquainted with the tenets and practices of these Oriental Freemasons. No character in the Moslem world is so proper for disguise as that of the dervish. It is assumed by all ranks, ages, and creeds ; by the nobleman who has been disgraced at court, and by the peasant who is too idle to till the ground ; by Dives, who is weary of life, and by Lazarus, who begs bread from door to door. Further, the dervish is allowed to ignore ceremony and politeness, as one who ceases to appear upon the stage of life ; he may pray or not, marry or remain single as he pleases, be respectable in cloth of frieze as in cloth of gold, and no one asks him—the chartered vagabond—why he comes here ? or wherefore he goes there ? He may wend his way on foot alone, or ride his Arab steed, followed by a dozen servants ; he is equally feared without weapons, as swaggering through the streets armed to the teeth. The more haughty and offensive he is to the people, the more they respect him ; a decided advantage to the traveler of choleric temperament. In the hour of imminent danger, he has only to become a maniac, and he is safe ; a madman in the East, like a notably eccentric character in the West, is allowed to say or do whatever the spirit directs."

Before leaving England, Burton had neglected to provide himself with a proper passport, and it was only after much delay and perplexity that he obtained a certificate from the consul at Alexandria, declaring him to be an Indo-British subject named Abdullah, a doctor by profession. He then took passage on the Nile steamer, and proceeded to Cairo, where he quartered himself in one of the native khans. He here became acquainted with an Egyptian merchant named Hadji Wali, who advised him not to let it be known that he was a Persian, as the latter were very unpopular at Mecca, but to choose some other character. "After long deliberation about the choice of nations," says he, "I became a Pathan (Afghan). Born in India of Afghan parents, who had settled in the country, educated at Rangoon, and sent out to wander, as men of that race frequently are, from early youth, I was well guarded against the danger of detection by a fellow-countryman. To support the character requires a knowledge of Persian, Hindostani and Arabic, all of which I knew sufficiently well to pass muster ; any trifling inaccuracy was charged upon my long residence at Rangoon."

Burton remained in Cairo some time, studying the mysteries of the Moslem faith under a religious teacher. The fast-month of Ramadan occurred soon after his arrival, and he was obliged to conform to its painful rules. During this time he continued to make preparations for his departure, by purchasing a supply of tea, coffee, rice, sugar, dates, biscuits, oil, vinegar, and tobacco, together with a small tent, three water-skins, and a box of medicines. He also took about £80 in money,

go initiated me into this name of Bismillah-Shah : sly elevated me to the tic craft. I was therefore practices of these Oriental d is so proper for dis- by all ranks, ages, and ed at court, and by the Dives, who is weary of r to door. Further, the eness, as one who ceases or not, marry or remain rize as in cloth of gold, d—why he comes here ? his way on foot alone, or nts ; he is equally feared reets armed to the teeth. eople, the more they re- of choleric temperament. o become a maniac, and ly eccentric character in e spirit directs.”

ected to provide himself uch delay and perplexity at Alexandria, declaring ullah, a doctor by profes- eamer, and proceeded to e native khans. He here t named Hadji Wali, who a Persian, as the latter se some other character. mations,” says he, “I be- fghan parents, who had nd sent out to wander, youth, I was well guarded ountryman. To support t, Hindostani and Arabic, muster ; any trifling inae- Rangoon.”

ving the mysteries of the e fast-month of Ramadan bliged to conform to its to make preparations for coffee, rice, sugar, dates, with a small tent, threo took about £80 in money,

the most of which he secured in a belt about his waist. He picked up, as a traveling companion, a boy, named Mohammed El-Basyuni, a native of Mecca, from whom he bought the *ihram*, or pilgrim-robe, and the shroud, which all pilgrims carry with them. With this boy, and his Indian servant, Shekh Nur, Burton at last set out for Suez, with the avowed purpose of proceeding to Mecca via Djidda, yet secretly determined to visit Medina on the way.

At Suez, he became acquainted with a company bound for Medina and Mecca, and by making loans of various sums of money to the different members, succeeded in securing their good-will. After some further passport difficulties, which were settled by Mr. West, the British vice-consul, who had been told to expect Burton, and saw through his disguise, every thing was in readiness, and the company only waited for the sailing of a large Arab boat, bound for Yembo or Djidda. “Immense was the confusion,” says Burton, “on the eventful day of our departure. Suppose us standing upon the beach, on the morning of a fiery July day, carefully watching our hurriedly-packed goods and chattels, surrounded by a mob of idlers, who are not too proud to pick up waifs and strays, while pilgrims rush about apparently mad, and friends are weeping, acquaintances vociferating adieus, boatmen demanding fees, shopmen claiming debts, women shrieking and talking with inconceivable power, children crying—in short, for an hour or so we were in the thick of a human storm. To confound confusion, the boatmen have moored their skiff half a dozen yards away from the shore, lest the porters should be unable to make more than double their fare from the Hajis. Again the Turkish women raise a hideous howl, as they are carried off struggling vainly in brawny arms ; the children howl because their mothers howl ; and the men scold and swear, because in such scenes none may be silent. The moment we had embarked, each individual found that he or she had missed something of vital importance—a pipe, a child, a box, or a water-melon ; and naturally all the servants were in the bazaars, when they should have been in the boat.”

Scarcely had they embarked, and taken their places on the elevated poop of their vessel, the *Golden Wire*, when a company of Moghrebins or Arabs of Morocco, followed, and insolently attempted to dislodge them. This proceeding they forcibly resisted ; clubs were used and daggers were drawn, and the fight soon became fierce and general. Burton and his company, however, had the advantage of being raised four feet above the others, and this enabled them to maintain their position. “At first,” says he, “I began to lay on load with *main morte*, really fearing to kill some one with such a weapon ; but it soon became evident that the Moghrebins’ heads and shoulders could bear, and did require the utmost exertion of strength. Presently a thought struck me. A large earthen jar full of drinking-water—in its heavy frame of wood, the weight might have been one hundred pounds—stood upon the edge of the poop, and the thick of the fray took place beneath.

Seeing an opportunity I crept up to the jar, and, without attracting attention, by a smart push with the shoulder rolled it down upon the swarm of assailants. The fall caused a shriller shriek to rise above the ordinary din, for heads, limbs, and bodies, were sorely bruised by the weight, scratched by the broken potsherds, and wetted by the sudden discharge. A fear that something worse might be forthcoming made the Moghrebbins shrink off toward the end of the vessel. After a few minutes, we, sitting in grave silence, received a deputation of individuals in white-brown burnouses, spotted and striped with what Mephistopheles calls a 'curious juice.' They solicited peace, which we granted upon the condition that they would bind themselves to keep it. Our heads, shoulders, and hands were penitentially kissed, and presently the fellows returned to bind up their hurts in dirty rags."

Leaving Suez on the 6th of July, the *Golden Wire*, after lying aground a day or two off Tur, reached the mouth of the Gulf of Akaba on the 11th. While crossing to the Arabian shore, it is customary for pilgrims to recite the following prayer: "O Allah, O Exalted, O Almighty, O All-pitiful, O All-powerful, thou art my God, and sufficeth to me the knowledge of it! Glorified be the Lord my Lord, and glorified be the faith my faith! Thou givest victory to whom thou pleasest, and thou art the glorious, the merciful! We pray thee for safety in our goings-forth and our standings-still, in our words and our designs, in our dangers of temptation and doubts, and the secret designs of our hearts. Subject unto us this sea, even as thou didst subject the deep to Moses, and as thou didst subject the fire to Abraham, and as thou didst subject the iron to David, and as thou didst subject the wind, and devils, and genii, and mankind to Solomon, and as thou didst subject the moon and El Burak to Mohammed, upon whom be Allah's mercy and his blessing! And subject unto us all the seas in earth and heaven, in the visible and in thine invisible worlds, the sea of this life, and the sea of futurity. O thou who reignest over every thing, and unto whom all things return, Khyas! Khyas!"

At noon on the twelfth day after leaving Suez, the party entered the harbor of Yembo. The town, which is an ordinary Arab port, is built on the edge of a barren plain between the mountains and the sea. The pilgrims at once set about preparing for their journey to Mecca, and having engaged twelve camels, set out on the following evening. They traveled mostly by night, on account of the heat, and Burton consequently had but little opportunity to observe the scenery. Near Bir Abbas the caravan was waylaid by a horde of Bedouin robbers, who were not driven off until after a fight of some hours, and the loss of twelve men on the part of the pilgrims. Burton thus describes his approach to El Medina: "Half an hour after leaving the Wadi el-Akik, or 'blessed valley,' we came to a huge flight of steps roughly cut in a long broad line of black scoriaceous basalt. This is called the Mudarraaj or flight of steps over the western ridge of the so-called El Harratain.

, without attracting at-
 olled it down upon the
 shriek to rise above the
 e sorely bruised by the
 d wetted by the sudden
 t be forthcoming made
 the vessel. After a few
 a deputation of individ-
 riped with what Mephis-
 peace, which we granted
 mselves to keep it. Our
 kissed, and presently the
 rags."

Golden Wire, after lying
 uth of the Gulf of Akaba
 ore, it is customary for
 Allah, O Exalted, O Al-
 my God, and sufficeth to
 d my Lord, and glorified
 whom thou pleasest, and
 ay thee for safety in our
 is and our designs, in our
 ret designs of our hearts.
 bject the deep to Moses,
 and as thou didst subject
 the wind, and devils, and
 didst subject the moon and
 s mercy and his blessing!
 eaven, in the visible and
 d the sea of futurity. O
 whom all things return,

uez, the party entered the
 dinary Arab port, is built
 untains and the sea. The
 air journey to Mecca, and
 following evening. They
 heat, and Burton conse-
 the scenery. Near Bir
 of Bedouin robbers, who
 me hours, and the loss of
 ton thus describes his ap-
 veying the Wadi el-Akik, or
 of steps roughly cut in a
 This is called the Mudarra-
 the so-called El Harratain.

It is holy ground; for the Prophet spoke well of it. Arrived at the top we passed through a lane of black scoria, with steep banks on both sides, and after a few minutes a full view of the city suddenly opened upon us. We halted our beasts as if by word of command. All of us descended, in imitation of the pious of old, and sat down, jaded and hungry as we were, to feast our eyes with a view of the Holy City. 'O Allah! this is the Haram (sanctuary) of the Prophet; make it to us a protection from hell fire, and a refuge from eternal punishment! O open the gates of thy mercy, and let us pass through them to the land of joy!'

"As we looked eastward, the sun arose out of the horizon of low hills, blurred and dotted with small tufted trees, which from the morning mists gained a giant stature, and the earth was stained with gold and purple. Before us lay a spacious plain, bounded in front by the undulating ground of Nejd; on the left was a grim barrier of rocks, the celebrated Mount Ohod, with a clump of verdure and a white dome or two nestling at its base. Rightward, broad streaks of lilac-colored mists were thick with gathered dew, there pierced and thinned by the morning rays, stretched over the date groves and the gardens of Kuba, which stood out in emerald green from the dull tawny surface of the plain. Below, at the distance of about two miles lay El Medina; at first sight it appeared a large place, but a closer inspection proved the impression to be an erroneous one."

On arriving at Medina, Burton became the guest of Hamid, one of the company he joined at Suez, and continued to reside with him during his stay in the Holy City. He performed all the religious visitations required of the pilgrim, and made excursions to Jebel Ohod (the scene of one of Mohammed's battles), and the mosque of Kuba, in the vicinity, while waiting for an opportunity to proceed eastward through the heart of Arabia. He gives the following description of the Prophet's mosque:

"Passing through muddy streets—they had been freshly watered before evening time—I came suddenly upon the mosque. Like that at Mecca the approach is choked up by ignoble buildings, some actually touching the holy 'encinte,' others separated by a lane compared with which the road round St. Paul's is a Vatican square. There is no outer front, no general aspect of the Prophet's mosque; consequently, as a building, it has neither beauty nor dignity. And entering the Bab el Rahmah—the Gate of Pity—by a diminutive flight of steps, I was astonished at the mean and tawdry appearance of a place so universally venerated in the Moslem world. It is not like the Meccan mosque, grand and simple—the expression of a single sublime idea; the longer I looked at it, the more it suggested the resemblance of a museum of second-rate art, a curiosity-shop, full of ornaments that are not accessories, and decorated with pauper splendor."

Burton's design of penetrating the interior of Arabia was unfortunately frustrated. "During the whole of the afternoon of Tuesday the

30th August," says he, "the sound of firing among the mountains was distinctly heard in the city. Through the streets parties of Bedouins, sword and matchlock in hand, or merely carrying quarter staves on their shoulders, might be seen hurrying along, frantic at the chance of missing the fray. The townspeople cursed them privily, expressing a hope that the whole race of vermin might consume itself. And the pilgrims were in no small trepidation, fearing the desertion of their camel-men, and knowing what a blaze is kindled in this inflammable land by an ounce of gunpowder. I afterward heard that the Bedouins fought till night, and separated after losing on both sides ten men.

"This quarrel put an end to any lingering possibility of my prosecuting my journey to Muscat as originally intended. My disappointment was bitter at first, but consolation soon suggested itself. Under the most favorable circumstances, a Bedouin trip from El Medina to Muscat, one thousand and five hundred or one thousand and six hundred miles, would require at least ten months; whereas, under pain of losing my commission, I was ordered to be at Bombay before the end of March. Moreover, entering Arabia by El Hejaz, as has before been said, I was obliged to leave behind all my instruments except a watch and a pocket compass, so the benefit rendered to geography by my trip would have been scanty. Still remained to me the comfort of reflecting that possibly at Mecca some opportunity of crossing the Peninsula might present itself. At any rate I had the certainty of seeing the strange wild country of the Hejaz, and of being present at the ceremonies of the Holy City."

On the 1st of September, Burton left Medina for Mecca. The caravan traveled entirely by night, greatly to his annoyance, as his opportunities of observing the scenery and formation of the country were thus greatly restricted. Beyond an attack of the marauding Bedouins, no incident occurred on the way, and the caravan entered Mecca before daylight on the 11th of September, one day before the commencement of the pilgrimage. Burton's real character was not suspected by any one, and he performed all the required ceremonies with perfect impunity. His account of them corresponds very nearly with that of Burckhardt, which has been given at length in this volume. After the conclusion of the pilgrimage, he proceeded to Djidda, where he embarked for Suez, in order to take passage for India. Lieutenant Burton is admirably qualified for this journey, and his narrative of it is one of the most picturesque and characteristic accounts of Oriental life which has ever been published.

MECCA.

among the mountains was
meets parties of Bedouins,
quarter staves on their
at the chance of missing
y, expressing a hope that
And the pilgrims were
of their camel-men, and
amable land by an ounce
Bedouins fought till night,
en.

possibility of my prosecut-
ended. My disappoint-
suggested itself. Under
a trip from El Medina to
thousand and six hundred
ereas, under pain of losing
ay before the end of March.
as before been said, I was
cept a watch and a pocket
y by my trip would have
ort of reflecting that pos-
the Peninsula might present
f seeing the strange wild
at the ceremonies of the

Medina for Mecca. The
o his annoyance, as his op-
mation of the country were
the marauding Bedouins, no
an entered Mecca before day-
ore the commencement of the
ot suspected by any one, and
with perfect impunity. His
th that of Burekhardt, which
After the conclusion of the
he embarked for Suez, in
at Burton is admirably quali-
is one of the most picturesque
e which has ever been pub-

EXPLORATION OF LOO-CHOO, UNDEL. COMMODORE PERRY.

On the arrival of the American expedition to Japan, under Com-
modore Perry, at the harbor of Napha (or Napa-Kiang) in the Great
Loo-Choo island, at the end of May, 1853, the commodore determined
to send an exploring party into the interior, which had never been
visited by Europeans. The persons appointed for this service were the
Rev. George Jones, chaplain of the *Mississippi*; Mr. Bayard Taylor;
Mr. Heine, artist; Dr. Lynah, surgeon; with four seamen and four
Chinese coolies for carrying the baggage. Mr. Taylor prepared the
following report of the exploration, which is taken from the narrative of
the expedition, published by order of Congress:

Monday, the 30th of May, was the day fixed upon by Commodore
Perry for our departure. We were ordered to cross the island to the
eastern shore, follow the line of coast northward, and return through
the interior, pushing our course as far as practicable, under our instruc-
tions to return within six days. All the stores having been procured,
and packed in convenient parcels, together with portfolios and drawing-
materials, implements for preparing birds, etc., we landed about 10
o'clock, and proceeded to the house of the missionary, Dr. Bettelheim,
which had been chosen as the rendezvous. The authorities had not
been previously informed of our intention; and, as it was evident that
we should not be allowed to advance far without an escort, or espionage
of some kind, Dr. Bettelheim sent to request that a proper officer should
accompany us as guide. After waiting about an hour, and no person
appearing, we decided to set out, believing that our guide would be
forthcoming before we left the city. In fact, we had no sooner reached
the main street, communicating with the road to Sheudi, the capital of
the island, than a portly personage, with a long white beard, and two
younger officers, with black beards and swarthy complexions, joined us.
A crowd of curious natives had also collected, and followed us until we
left the city.

Each of the men carried a haversack, in addition to his arms, leaving about one hundred and twenty pounds' weight of baggage to be divided among the four coolies. The men, Terry and Mitchell, marched in advance, the former carrying the flag, while the other men, Smith and Davies, remained in the rear of the baggage; this order was preserved during the whole expedition. We had not proceeded half a mile before our coolies showed signs of breaking down under their loads, and, even though we might force them to keep up for some time longer, it was evident that we could not make much progress without further help; Mr. Jones, therefore, requested the portly old officer, who seemed to have special charge over us, to supply us with four more coolies, promising that they should be paid on our return. After waiting half an hour at the northern end of the city, four spare young natives came up with bamboo poles, and relieved the Chinamen of half their load. We now took the high-road to Sheudi, passing the salt creek which comes up from the village of Tumé, by a bridge of one arch; the crowd turned back at this point, leaving us about a dozen followers, who seemed to be attendants or subordinates of the principal officers.

Beyond the bridge we passed over a meadow, studded with singular broken rocks, of secondary limestone, covered with clumps of pine-trees. The road then passed around the base of a hill, the front of which was occupied by a temple of massive stone masonry. It was shaded with large trees, resembling in foliage the Indian fig or sycamore. Paths, over which the hedges of bamboo formed complete arches, ran up the sides of the hill. On our right were meadows of bearded rice, a variety which Dr. Lynah declared to be unknown in the southern States. The country now became open and undulating, and covered with the richest vegetation; not only was all the low land planted with rice, but the hills were in many places terraced nearly to the top, and the water carefully conducted from field to field by artificial channels. The streams were lined with thick hedges of banana, and the knolls which dotted the landscape were crowned with groves of the Loo-Choo pine, a beautiful tree, strongly resembling the cedar of Lebanon in its flat horizontal layers of foliage; it is probably a new species. There was something in the forms of the landscape which reminded me of the richest English scenery, mixed with the superb vegetation of the tropics. The views on each side increased in beauty as we approached Sheudi, the capital city of the island, which is scattered along the south-west slope of a group of hills. The houses are half buried in foliage, and stretch over an extent of a mile, the citadel, or residence of the viceroy, occupying an elevated central position.

The day was dark and cloudy, threatening rain, and fresh wind blew in our faces as we climbed the heights. Near the summit we passed through a high wooden gate, upon which were inscribed two Chinese characters, signifying "the central hill," or "place of authority," and entered the main street of the city, which is broad, handsomely paved,

addition to his arms, weight of baggage to be y and Mitchell, marched with the other men, Smith age; this order was pre- not proceeded half a mile down under their loads, up for some time longer, progress without further y old officer, who seemed with four more coolies, urn. After waiting half pare young natives came ammen of half their load. ing the salt creek which e of one arch; the crowd a dozen followers, who e principal officers.

ow, studded with singular with clumps of pine-trees. ill, the front of which was onry. It was shaded with fig or sycamore. Paths, mplete arches, ran up the of bearded rice, a variety the southern States. The d covered with the richest ated with rice, but the hills op, and the water carefully annels. The streams were a knolls which dotted the Loo-Choo pine, a beautiful anon in its flat horizontal es. There was something d me of the richest English of the tropics. The views roached Shendi, the capital the south-west slope of a in foliage, and stretch over e of the viceroy, occupying

g rain, and fresh wind blew Near the summit we passed were inscribed two Chinese r "place of authority," and is broad, handsomely paved,

and lined with high walls, behind which, and the foliage of their gardens, the principal dwellings are mostly concealed. As we reached the gate, the flag was unrolled, and fastened upon the end of a musket. A fine grove of old trees, with crooked trunks, gnarled boughs, and thick, dark-green foliage, attracted my attention on entering. We had not proceeded fifty paces before the officers attending us beckoned to us to enter a doorway on the right side of the street. We made a halt, and, leaving men and coolies outside, went in. It proved to be a *Cung-quà*, or resting-place for travelers, or rather for officers of government, since in Loo-Choo there are no other travelers. The *Cung-quà* corresponds very nearly to the Turkish khan, except that, being used only by persons of some consideration, it is far more neat and elegant in every respect. The house into which we were ushered resembled a private dwelling of the better class. The principal apartment was carpeted with very fine soft mats, and surrounded on three sides by an open verandah. Adjoining the building were kitchens and out-houses for servants, and in front a small yard planted with sago-palms and a tree resembling the *Inocarpus*. We were politely received by a gentleman in a gray robe, who performed the *ko-tow* toward us in the most approved style. Seats were brought, and tea prepared after the Chinese fashion, served in small cups. The attendant was directed, by signs, to wait first upon Mr. Jones, who was thenceforth recognized as the head of the party. The former served us on his knees, both when he offered and when he took away the cups. We remained but a few minutes, and took our leave, evidently to the surprise and perplexity of our conductors, who did not as yet comprehend our object.

On leaving Napha, we had noticed an expression of doubt and anxiety upon the faces of the natives, and this rather increased as we proceeded. No remonstrance whatever was made to us, but our movements were suspiciously scrutinized. When, therefore, we left the *Cung-quà*, and, instead of returning, took our course directly onward through the city, the faces of our convoy became clouded, and an expression of alarm communicated itself to those of the natives whose curiosity had attracted them around us. We soon reached the gate of the citadel, at the foot of the massive walls, which, rising through groves of trees, dominate over the city. The gate was closed, but had it been open, we should not have presumed to enter. The northern and eastern slope of the hill is covered with splendid old trees, divided by winding, shaded avenues, on the sides of which many natives were sitting, with fans in their hands. The sun, which shone out hot and clear for an instant, checkered this rich, park-like scenery with strong contrasts of light and shadow, and down through the depths of the trees illuminated the face of a pool of water, so completely covered with the floating leaves of a species of lily as to appear like a patch of green sward. We passed around the base of the citadel to its eastern side, and, after some deliberation, took a paved road which led through the suburbs of the city

in an east-south-east direction. Wherever we turned we could see scouts running in advance, and driving the inhabitants away from our path, so that a silence and desertion, like that which follows pestilence, took place wherever we moved. All with whom we accidentally came in contact saluted us politely, but with a settled air of melancholy, which I ascribed to the surveillance exercised over them by an unnatural government, rather than any ill-will toward us.

The northern side of Sheudi is a wilderness of rich vegetation. The appearance of a flourishing cocoa-palm, now and then, showed that the climate is entirely tropical. The eastern suburb of the capital is composed principally of bamboo huts, thatched with rice straw. The inhabitants were all hidden away out of sight, and blinds of split bamboo let down before the doors. We took a road which led along the hills toward the south-east, and after issuing from the capital, gained a ridge whence we could see a long line of the western coast, with the squadron riding at anchor in the harbor of Napha. From this point the interest of the journey properly commenced, as we were entering upon ground which no one before us had ever explored. The limit of the excursions made by others was Sheudi, and very few succeeded in entering that capital. We were, therefore, greatly enlivened by the prospect before us, and pursued our way with more alacrity than comported with the comfort of our disheartened conductors.

About a mile from Sheudi, the road turned more to the east, and after passing through a dense wood, came out upon a hill, whence we caught a glimpse of the sea on the eastern side. A temple, apparently erected during the past year—for it was destitute of either altar or god—stood in the shade of a clump of pines, and as it was now one o'clock we halted for refreshment. Some of the natives brought water, while the men picked up sufficient dead wood to boil our kettle, and in the course of time we were regaled with tea and ship's biscuit. We offered the former to the officers, but they did not appear to relish it. The Loo-Choo coolies, however, ate heartily of the biscuit, which they had better earned than our vagabond Chinese. They gave the name of the place as Piño. Mr. Heine took a sketch of it, and astonished the natives, some forty or fifty of whom had collected to look at us, by firing at a mark with his rifle. Immediately after leaving Piño, whence we started at 3 p. m., the paved road ceased, and the way became deep and miry. The soil was a lead-colored, stiff clay, the disintegration of shale rock, which here appeared for the first time. We had not proceeded more than half a mile before we reached the dividing ridge or crest of the island, and a magnificent panorama opened below us to the eastward. The sea-line of the Pacific formed the horizon, and a spacious sheet of water between two headlands which made out from the island led us to suppose that we were looking upon Barrow's Bay. Between us and the sea lay an amphitheater of hills, cultivated to their very tops, and clothed with the greenest verdure. Their sides were carefully terraced,

turned we could see inhabitants away from our which follows pestilence, when we accidentally came air of melancholy, which men by an unnatural gov-

of rich vegetation. The and then, showed that the b of the capital is coun- h rice straw. The inhab- blinds of split bamboo let h led along the hills to- the capital, gained a ridge a coast, with the squadron om this point the interest ere entering upon ground e limit of the excursions eceeded in entering that d by the prospect before than comported with the

ed more to the east, and at upon a hill, whence we le. A temple, apparently itute of either altar or god as it was now one o'clock tives brought water, while oil our kettle, and in the ship's biscuit. We offered t appear to relish it. The he biscuit, which they had They gave the name of the and astonished the natives, to look at us, by firing at a g Piño, whence we started way became deep and miry. disintegration of shale rock, We had not proceeded more iding ridge or crest of the l below us to the eastward. zon, and a spacious sheet of out from the island led us to s Bay. Between us and the ed to their very tops, and sides were carefully terraced,

and every advantage taken of the inclination of the soil, so as to collect the rains for irrigation. The cultivation was quite as patient and thorough as that of China. The picturesque formation of the hills gave a great variety of outline to the landscape, which embraced a compass of perhaps twenty miles. Toward the west we overlooked all the country we had passed, as far as a headland in the north-west, which I took to be Cape Broughton. Mr. Heine took a sketch of the view, looking eastward, while I attempted to take the western side.

Resuming our march, we descended the ridge, which was about six hundred feet above the sea-level. The clayey path leading down was very wet and slippery, and the coolies fell and rolled over several times with the baggage. Passing through gaps between the lower hills, we reached a semicircular plain, nearly two miles in breadth, extending around the head of the bay. On either side was a village of thatched huts, buried in trees. The scouts had already been before us, and the natives lay concealed in their habitations. The former supposed that we would take a road leading to a large village at the head of the bay, but as we turned abruptly to the northward, we soon saw them running across the fields to regain the road ahead of us. There were a number of villages at the base of the hills, on our left, but so thickly studded with trees that they were almost concealed from view. I collected a number of plants, one of them a species of *althæa*, with a splendid scarlet blossom. The road which we took led through the rice fields and was very deep and muddy. While stopping to rest on a bridge over one of the irrigating streams, our old conductor came up with his two assistants, and intimated to us by signs that it was time we should return to the ships. The sun would soon set, they said, and we should have no place to sleep. We replied (also by signs), that instead of returning we were going northward, and would not reach the ships again for five or six days. They appeared greatly surprised at this, and a little troubled, since it was part of their duty not to lose sight of us. The old fellow, who, in his haste to keep up, had slipped down in the muddy road and soiled the hinder part of his robe, laughed heartily at the accident, and finally became resigned to the prospect of the long tramp before him. They then pointed to the west, saying that there was a *Cung-quà* in that direction, where we could spend the night. Our course, however, was nearly north-east, and about half past five, having reached a hill overlooking the bay, on the summit of which was an open space surrounded with young pines, we determined to encamp there. The people objected to our cutting down the trees, and we made tent poles by fastening together the bamboo staves used by the coolies. There was a village on the slope of the hill below us, and after some delay, caused by the difficulty of interpreting our wants to the native officials, we obtained four fowls, forty eggs, and two bundles of firewood. One of our Chinamen, "A-shing," professed to speak the Loo-Choo language, but we soon found him as miserably deficient in this as he was in all

other useful qualities. His comrade, however, who spoke no English, could write Chinese, and the message having been thus communicated and written, was finally read by the old Pe-ching. The latter refused to accept either cash or dollars, saying that they were of no use to the people whatever, but that every thing would be furnished us. The Chinese suggested—probably on their own account—that we should pay the people in ship's biscuit, but we had scarcely enough for our own wants. It was at length decided that we should take what we required and settle for its value with the Pe-ching on our return.

The people were tardy in bringing our firewood, and we were obliged to eat our supper by the light of our camp fire. I succeeded in getting a sketch of the bay, while daylight remained. It is deep and spacious, and protected by reefs across the mouth, but, judging from the appearance of the water, too shallow to be made available for naval purposes. A large village lies at its head, and several fishing junks were at anchor before it. At night the plain sparkled with lights, some of them moving to and fro—probably lanterns carried by persons passing from one village to another. The officers determined to remain with us at all hazards, and at their command the people brought up bamboo poles and matting, out of which they erected a temporary structure beside our tent. They were perfectly good-humored in their demeanor, and submitted with great patience to what they could not avoid. Before going to sleep we arranged four watches of two hours each, from 9 p. m. until 5 a. m., and the subordinate native policemen kindled a fire and kept a counter-watch. We were all somewhat fatigued with our first march of ten miles, but the mosquitoes were so terribly annoying that few of us slept more than half an hour during the whole night.

We rose at dawn, and found the natives already stirring. The morning gave promise of fair weather. The Pe-ching and his associates came up and saluted us gravely as soon as we arose. It required about two hours to cook and eat breakfast, strike the tent, and pack the baggage for carrying. When we were all ready we found eight native coolies on hand, those whom we took from Napha having returned the evening previous. Leaving Camp Perry (as we named the spot) we took a path leading up a steep hill to the north. Winding around its brow, we descended into a valley, surrounded by abrupt, scarped hills. A stream flowing at the bottom of a deep gully, overhung with large bauana-trees, made its way out of this broad cul-de-sac toward the sea. We crossed the valley on the ridges of swampy grass, between the flooded rice-fields, and climbed a long and toilsome ridge, by wet, slippery paths, leading up through copses of young pine. We had now gained the spinal ridge of the island, and turned north-westward, over alternate hills and meadows, along its summit. The wood was principally pine, but I observed several new varieties of shrubs, not in flower. Now and then we passed the huts of the natives, generally in clusters of two and three, but even in this secluded region notice of our coming had reached

who spoke no English, been thus communicated. The latter refused. They were of no use to the island. I should be furnished us. The account—that we should scarcely enough for our should take what we re- g on our return.

wood, and we were obliged. I succeeded in getting. It is deep and spacious, judging from the appear- able for naval purposes. The junk was at anchor. The lights, some of them mov- persons passing from one to remain with us at all night up bamboo poles and a wry structure beside our their domecanor, and sub- not avoid. Before going to each, from 9 P.M. until 5. I kindled a fire and kept a- und with our first march- ibly annoying that few of hole night.

already stirring. The morn- ing and his associates came. It required about two sc. I found eight native coolies having returned the evening (at the spot) we took a path- ing around its brow, we de- t, scarped hills. A stream- ing with large banana-trees, ward the sea. We crossed between the flooded rice- ge, by wet, slippery paths,

We had now gained the th-westward, over alternate wood was principally pine, bs, not in flower. Now and erally in clusters of two and e of our coming had reached

them, and the inhabitants were hidden. I looked into some, and found the interiors to consist of a single room, smoke-blackened, and furnished with the rudest utensils. Two of them had a grating of bamboo, raised, like a floor, about six inches above the ground, and the thick mats which serve the Loo-Choans as beds were spread upon this.

Mr. Jones left the camp before us, and we had not yet found him. Coming to a deep wooded gorge, with a stream flowing westward, we discovered that our true course lay further to the east, and retraced our steps through the pine woods, and over upland rice-meadows to an open, grassy height, whence we saw Mr. Jones, surrounded by a group of natives, about half a mile to the south of us. In a short time we again reached the summit-ridge, overlooking the bay, and enjoyed the view of a superb landscape. The dividing ridge of the island, as we had already noticed, is nearest the eastern shore, to which the descent is much more abrupt than on the western. The cultivation on this side is also more thorough, and the crops more luxuriant. The knees of the mountains below us were feathered with beautiful groves of the Loo-Choo pine, intermingled with terraced fields of grain and vegetables, while the plain below, through its whole sweep of fifteen miles, was brown with its harvest of rice. We counted a dozen villages, some of them of considerable size, dotting its expanse. To the northward extended a long headland, far beyond what we had supposed to be the extremity of the bay, and projecting from the island in a south-easterly direction. It was now plain that we had not yet reached Barrow's Bay, of which this headland formed the southern boundary. While halting to rest our coolies, in the shade of a clump of pines, Mr. Heine shot a raven, with a beak much broader than the European species. There was a very large tomb, of a shape nearly circular, on the northern side of the ridge. About two miles further, the road swerving a little to the west, we came upon a singular rock, rising high out of a forest of pines. The summit, which was very sharp and jagged, was seventy or eighty feet above the crest of the ridge, and being composed of secondary limestone, honeycombed by the weather, it was an exceedingly striking and picturesque object. While Mr. Heine stopped to sketch it, and Mr. Jones to examine its geology, I climbed to the summit, which was so sharp as to make it a most uneasy seat. Finding that it was the highest peak in that part of the island, commanding a view which embraced a considerable reach of both shores, I ordered the flag to be brought, and unfurled it from the top of the rock, while the men fired a salute from the base and hailed it with three hearty cheers. We bestowed upon it the name of "Banner Rock." The natives looked on, unable how to understand our proceedings, but not in the least troubled by them. A little to the north of where we were the island narrowed suddenly, between the head of the eastern bay and a deep bight, which makes in on the western side, between Cape Broughton and the headland bounding Port Melville on the west. I judged its breadth, at this point, to be

about four miles, in a straight line. To the south-west I could see the position of Sheudi, eight or ten miles distant. The landscape was rich and varied, all the hills being coated with groves of pine. We found on the rock the "Wax-plant" of our greenhouses, in full bloom, the splendid scarlet *Athæa*, and a variety of the *Malva*, with a large yellow blossom.

Continuing our march along the summit-ridge, we came gradually upon a wilder and more broken region. Huge fragments of the same dark limestone rock overhung our path, or lay tumbled along the slopes below us, as if hurled there by some violent natural convulsion. As the hill curved eastward, we saw on its southern side a series of immense square masses, separated by deep fissures, reaching down the side nearly to its base. They were apparently fifty feet high, and at least a hundred feet square, and their tops were covered with a thick growth of trees and shrubbery. In the absence of any traces of volcanic action, it is difficult to conceive how these detached masses were distributed with such regularity, and carried to such a distance from their original place. The eastern front of the crags under which we passed was studded with tombs, some of them built against the rock and whitewashed, like the tombs of the present inhabitants, but others excavated within it, and evidently of great age. Looking down upon the bay it was easy to see that the greater part of it was shallow, and in some places the little fishing junks could not approach within half a mile of the shore. The rice-fields were brought square down to the water's edge, which was banked up to prevent the tide from overflowing them, and I noticed many triangular stone-dykes, stretching some distance into the water, and no doubt intended as weirs for fish.

In less than an hour after leaving Banner Rock we were surprised by the discovery of an ancient fortress, occupying a commanding position upon the summit of one of the spurs of the central ridge. Its outline was irregular, but with a general direction from north-east to south-west; and while some parts of it were in perfect preservation, other portions were overgrown with vines and shrubbery, and hardly to be distinguished from the natural rock upon which it was based. Passing through an arched gateway, the road led to a terrace, overgrown with trees, upon which stood a structure of masonry resembling a cenotaph. A flight of stone steps conducted us to another gateway, after passing which, and a spacious vestibule, we entered the interior of the fortress. The space was occupied by a luxuriant grove of trees, and at the further end was a private dwelling of respectable appearance. Our Pe-ching was already there, and the master (whom our Chinese coolies designated the "Japanese consul"), respectfully invited us to enter. The day was oppressively hot, and we found two or three cups of Loo-Choo tea an agreeable refreshment. Returning to the terrace, at the base of the outer wall, we halted in the shade to allow the men their mid-day rest and meal. A flight of steep steps, cut in the rock, led downward on the

uth-west I could see the
The landscape was rich
ves of pine. We found
uses, in full bloom, the
alva, with a large yellow

idge, we came gradually
e fragments of the same
umbled along the slopes
ural convulsion. As the
side a series of immense
ing down the side nearly
igh, and at least a hun-
l with a thick growth of
aces of volcanic action, it
ses were distributed with
from their original place.
passed was studded with
and whitewashed, like the
excavated within it, and
the bay it was easy to see
some places the little fish-
e of the shore. The rice-
s edge, which was banked
nem, and I noticed many
nce into the water, and no

r Rock we were surprised
ying a commanding posi-
he central ridge. Its out-
n from north-east to south-
perfect preservation, other
rubbery, and hardly to be
which it was based. Passing
a terrace, overgrown with
nry resembling a cenotaph.
her gateway, after passing
the interior of the fortress.
of trees, and at the further
appearance. Our Pe-ching
r Chinese coolies designated
us to enter. The day was
he cups of Loo-Choo tea an
terrace, at the base of the
the men their mid-day rest
rock, led downward on the

northern side to a grotto under the foundation of the castle, at the bot-
tom of which was a pool of cold, sweet water. The place was com-
pletely overhung by dense foliage, and inaccessible to the beams of
the sun.

While our meal was preparing, Mr. Jones traced out a rough plan
of the fortress, and the men took measurements. The following are its
dimensions, ascertained with tolerable accuracy:

Length	235 paces.
Breadth	70 "
Thickness of walls at bottom	6 to 12 "
Thickness of walls at top	12 feet.
Greatest height of outer wall, measuring along the slope	66 "
Height of all, from inside	12 "
Angle of outer wall	60°

The material was limestone, and the masonry of admirable con-
struction. The stones, some of which were cubes of four feet square,
were so carefully hewn and jointed that the absence of any mortar or
cement did not seem to impair the durability of the work. There were
two remarkable points about the work. The arches were double, the
lower course being formed of two stones hewn into almost a parabolic
curve, and meeting in the center, over which was the regular Egyptian
arch, with its key-stone.

The other peculiarity was, that in place of bastions, there were
square projections of masonry, presenting a concave front, which would
catch and concentrate the force of a cannon ball, rather than ward it
off. But this fortress must have been erected many centuries before the
use of fire-arms of any kind could have been known to the Loo-Chooans.
Our Chinese pretended to give the name of the place as Ching-King,
which are Chinese words, signifying the chief or capital citadel.

We resumed our march at half past one o'clock. The old Pe-ching,
"Chang-Yuen," who had become a little fatigued by this time, took a
kar-goc, or Loo-Choo chair, and followed in our rear, leaving the par-
ticular charge of us to his subordinates. The scouts were sent ahead,
as usual, for our path descended again to the populous plain at the base
of the hills. We already perceived indications of a fixed system in the
espionage to which we were subjected. Chang-Yuen and his two
secondary officers were deputed to accompany us during the whole jour-
ney, while their dozen or more attendants and helpers were changed as
we passed from one district of the island into another. Nothing could
exceed the vigilance with which they watched us. We might separate
into as many divisions as there were men, and yet each of us would still
retain his native convoy. We could neither tire them down, nor run
away from them. When, by chance, we suddenly changed our course,
we still found them before us. And though this was the result of a
jealous and exclusive system, yet they managed to give it the appearance
of being done through respect for us.

I was curious to obtain some information regarding the domestic life of the natives, and frequently entered their huts unawares, in the hope of finding them at their avocations within. In most cases I found the huts deserted, but in some others caught the merest glimpses of Loo-Choo life, in its more humble aspects. Near the castle, while our conveyance was passing around a village, I slipped into one of the alleys and entered a bamboo inclosure, within which were five neat dwellings. The mats were let down before the doors, but the people were all hidden behind screens and in lofts under the thatch, for on looking in I found no one but a child and an old man, who immediately knelt down and knocked his forehead on the floor before me. In another hut, in a village on the plain, I found an old woman and a girl of about twelve years of age, both of whom fell on their knees, and held up their hands with an expression which was at once imploring and reverential. A few words of friendly greeting, though in English, encouraged them, and I should no doubt have been able to inspect the interior of the hut, had not one of the spies come up at that moment and driven them away.

In the rich rice plains to which we descended we found sugar-cane for the first time, *sorghum*, or millet, and three varieties of the grain known in the United States as "broom-corn." The road struck out into the swampy rice fields, and we made for a green headland covered with pines. A village, almost completely buried in bowers and arcades of bamboo, lay at its foot. As we were about entering, we came upon two curious stones planted in the earth. The largest was about four feet high, and from its peculiar form struck me at once as a *lingam*, or emblem of the Phallic worship. The same idea occurred to Mr. Heine, who made a sketch of it. It was a very hard, dark-colored stone, resembling porphyry, and the only thing we could learn from the natives respecting it was, that they called it "*ishee*." There is no trace of this feature of the Hindoo religion existing either in Japan, China, or Loo-Choo. The discovery of this stone, if it should prove to be a Phallic emblem, is therefore exceedingly curious. In the course of the afternoon we found two more, one of which was prostrate and broken. In conjunction with these remains, the face of the hill behind, for a distance of two miles, is almost entirely covered with excavated tombs, resembling the simpler forms of the rock tombs of Egypt and Syria. Our native conductors, when interrogated respecting them, called them "the houses of the devil's men," and seemed amused at our taking notice of them. This fact, in a country where ancestral tombs are considered sacred, as among the Chinese, seems to point to the existence of another race on the island, in ancient times—a race who may have received the worship of the *Lingam* from Java, or other islands where memorials of it exist.

After an unavailing attempt to shoot a couple of herons in a rice field, we kept a course nearly due north, passing through several beautiful villages. The houses were surrounded with banana-trees, and the

regarding the domestic life
 puts unawares, in the hope
 In most cases I found the
 merest glimpses of Loo-
 the castle, while our con-
 into one of the alleys and
 were five neat dwellings.
 the people were all hid-
 watch, for on looking in I
 immediately knelt down
 me. In another hut, in a
 and a girl of about twelve
 s, and held up their hands
 ng and reverential. A few
 h, encouraged them, and I
 the interior of the hut, had
 and driven them away.
 ended we found sugar-cane
 three varieties of the grain
 The road struck out into
 green headland covered with
 in bowers and arcades of
 entering, we came upon
 the largest was about four
 me at once as a *lingam*, or
 idea occurred to Mr. Heine,
 hard, dark-colored stone,
 could learn from the natives
 There is no trace of this
 er in Japan, China, or Loo-
 ould prove to be a Phallic
 n the course of the after-
 prostrate and broken. In
 the hill behind, for a distance
 h excavated tombs, resem-
 of Egypt and Syria. Our
 ting them, called them "the
 sed at our taking notice of
 astral tombs are considered
 t to the existence of another
 who may have received the
 islands where memorials of

couple of herons in a rice
 using through several beauti-
 with banana-trees, and the

alleys completely overarched with bamboo. In one of the houses I found a woman weaving grass-cloth, in a loom of primitive construction. She ceased from work as I approached the door, but commenced again, in obedience to my gestures. The shuttle was a little longer than the breadth of the stuff, and thrown by hand. At the foot of the hill Dr. Lynah found a piece of lignite, which resembles coal, but is unfortunately no indication of its presence. We had a long and toilsome ascent up a barren hill which brought us again upon a cultivated upland. There were three or four cattle grazing here, the first we had noticed since leaving Napha. We saw a horse now and then, but this animal appeared to be scarce. The dividing ridge between the bays was about three miles in advance, and though the afternoon was nigh spent, and the whole party was considerably fatigued, we determined to get sight of Barrow's Bay before encamping. At last we reached a large village on the western slope of the ridge. It was surrounded with plantations of banana, and a tall pine grove towered over it. Through a deep road gate, cut in the crest of the hill, a fine picture of Barrow's Bay and the mountains beyond presented itself to our view. The southern shore of the bay was about three miles distant, and a singular range of rocks, rising in detached square masses like the walls and towers of a ruined city intervened. The landscape was more richly wooded than those on the southern bay, and the outlines of the hills were rounder and more gently undulating. We seemed to have reached a region of a different geological character. We were about to pitch our tent at this place, when the native officers gave us to understand that there was a *Cung-quà* a short distance further, and urged us so strongly to go on that we shouldered our muskets and haversacks and started again. But we had a rough tramp of nearly three miles further, and finally came, with bruised feet and aching shoulders, upon the last descent to Barrow's Bay. Picturesque crags studded the hillside, and a large village, completely covered with thickets of banana and bamboo, lay before us. Over it towered a tall crag, rent through the center and surmounted with a square rock, like a ruined tower. We threaded the village by shaded alleys, and at the further end, on a spot commanding a fine view of the bay, found a handsome *Cung-quà*, in an inclosure planted with trees. A dignitary of some kind welcomed us, and we were at once served with small cups of excellent tea. The soft, thick mats, the shelter and comfort of the building were well worth the fatigue of our forced march. Fresh water in earthen jars, with a square wooden ladle floating on the top, stood ready for us, and there was a kitchen in the rear where our men could cook conveniently. The Pe-ching came in after sunset and greeted us with much cordiality. Eggs and fowls were immediately furnished, and, as at our former camp, all payment was refused. The utmost curiosity appeared to prevail in the village respecting us, and, as it grew dark, the circle of heads peering over the wall inclosing the *Cung-quà* increased rapidly, till there could not have been less than two

or three hundred. Fires were kindled all around us, and the ruddy glow thrown up by them, and by the torches carried back and forth, flickered brilliantly over the dusty foliage of the trees.

A watch was set as before, and the mosquitoes being less annoying, we all enjoyed a tolerable rest. The Chinamen were, or feigned to be, completely spent, and for the greater part of the day the baggage had been carried by Loo-Choo coolies. The patience, good-humor, and endurance of the latter, quite put to shame the worthless and deceitful creatures whom we had been indiscreet enough to bring with us. The natives kept their counter-watch, and on rising before sunrise the next morning, we found that fifty or sixty of them had passed the night at their camp fires. The object of the officers in having a watch kept seemed to be both to prevent any of us from stealing a march upon them during the night, and to hinder any of the natives from annoying us.

Mr. Jones made application for a boat to carry us across the bay, but there was none to be had. The name of the village to which the *Cung-qua* belonged was "Missikya." We set our little file in motion and proceeded, by a pleasant path, over level land, a mile or two inland. The cultivation was thorough, but confined mostly to beans and sweet potatoes. The villages were so hidden away behind their alleys of tall, arched bamboo that the police scouts had little need to precede us. A native guide ran ahead; but as he constantly took the left-hand road, leading into the middle of the island, evidently with a view of conducting us back to Sheudi, we finally halted at the foot of an isolated hill, covered with wood, and held a consultation. The wild mountain-range north of Barrow's Bay now appeared on our right, and it was plain that our course was leading us away from the head of the bay, which we desired to reach. We therefore turned, in spite of the protestations of the guide and the native officers, and passed around the eastern brow of the hill, whereon we found two grottoes of soft limestone rock. The scenery here was a charming mixture of pine forest and cultivated field; and both in its features and its prevailing hue of dark-green resembled the landscapes of southern Germany.

In the bottom of the valley was a stream lined with bristling ranks of the *pandanus*, or false pine-apple. We were obliged to pull off our boots and wade. We here found a shrub with small white blossoms and bright-green milky leaves; another with yellow berries of a powerful aromatic taste; and a liliaceous plant, with a racine of flowers resembling those of the snap-dragon, but white in hue, with a fringed lip of the richest orange. At one of the villages on the plain I noticed the plum and the orange, and a new variety of the banyan, with very small glossy leaves. Beyond the stream we struck into fragrant pine woods, and finally into a dense forest where the path was still wet and slippery from the rains, and the branches, meeting overhead, made a perpetual shade. There were few flowers, and still fewer birds, in this

around us, and the ruddy
 es carried back and forth,
 he trees.

toes being less annoying,
 en were, or feigned to be,
 the day the baggage had
 patience, good-humor, and
 e worthless and deceitful
 gh to bring with us. The
 g before sunrise the next
 had passed the night at
 s in having a watch kept
 om stealing a march upon
 of the natives from annoy-

carry us across the bay, but
 village to which the Cung-
 little file in motion and
 nd, a mile or two inland.
 mostly to beans and sweet
 behind their alleys of tall,
 the need to precede us. A
 y took the left-hand road,
 tly with a view of conduct-
 the foot of an isolated hill,
 The wild mountain-range
 right, and it was plain that
 head of the bay, which we
 spite of the protestations of
 ed around the eastern brow
 of soft limestone rock. The
 e forest and cultivated field;
 ne of dark-green resembled

n lined with bristling ranks
 e were obliged to pull off
 shrub with small white blos-
 mer with yellow berries of a
 ant, with a racine of flowers
 white in hue, with a fringed
 villages on the plain I noticed
 ty of the banyan, with very
 e struck into fragrant pine
 e the path was still wet and
 , meeting overhead, made a
 and still fewer birds, in this

wilderness. In fact, the scarcity of birds all over the island, considering that they are not destroyed by the natives, is rather singular. The day was very clear and hot, and the trees, while they shaded us, quite shut off the sea breeze. The foliage was almost tropical, consisting of dense glossy-leaved shrubs and luxuriant ferns, overtopped by woods of pine. Smaller paths branched off here and there to the distant huts of the woodmen. After ascending for more than two miles, we crossed a ridge, and the path became gradually more open, exposing a view to the west, over high hills, covered entirely with copsewood and patches of pine forest. The country resembled the wild lands of America. There were swamps in the hollows, and we began to look out for the wild boars which are said to exist in this part of the island. Catching another view to the eastward, we found ourselves near the head of Barrow's Bay, and after a half hour's halt, to rest the coolies, set out again. Our official escort came up during the halt, much fatigued, but as cordial and good-humored as ever. Indeed, considering that all their trouble and fatigue were caused by ourselves, we had every reason to admire the unshaken patience with which they submitted to our apparently wayward course.

Crossing another hill, we passed down broad, well-trodden paths, shaded by magnificent arches of foliage, through a neat village. The houses were larger than usual, and there was an aspect of greater wealth. Among the trees was one fifteen feet high, covered with cream-colored blossoms, which exhaled the fragrance of nutmeg. An avenue of pines led down from this lovely spot to a narrow plain at the head of Barrow's Bay. The rice growing in these parts was very scanty and not yet in head. A large village, buried in trees, extended for half a mile inland from the shore. We took a path leading down to the beach; but Mr. Jones, who was in advance, entered the village, where he was very courteously received and twice presented with tea and pipes. The exhibition of his watch, and a pocket microscope, excited the unbounded wonder of the natives. The village was named "Isitza."

We forded a salt creek and pitched our noonday camp on a piny knoll, at the foot of the hills. As Mr. Jones had not arrived, we fastened our flag to the top of a tree and fired signals. I took a bath in the sea, with the men, while our kettle was boiling. The water was excessively saline, and the fine white particles of salt covered my face like dust as it became dry. At this point Mr. Jones found a stratum of gneiss, for the first time, at the water's edge. Our native friends drank three cups of our tea and asked for some biscuits, which they seemed to relish. Before starting again we had a talk with them about the route. We wished to reach a point on the coast north of Barrow's Bay, marked as "Kaneja" on our copy of the Japanese chart of Loo-Choo. The officers did not seem to recognize any such place, though they spoke of "Kannah," where there was a Cung-quà, thirty *li*, or ten miles distant, and we decided to reach it, if possible.

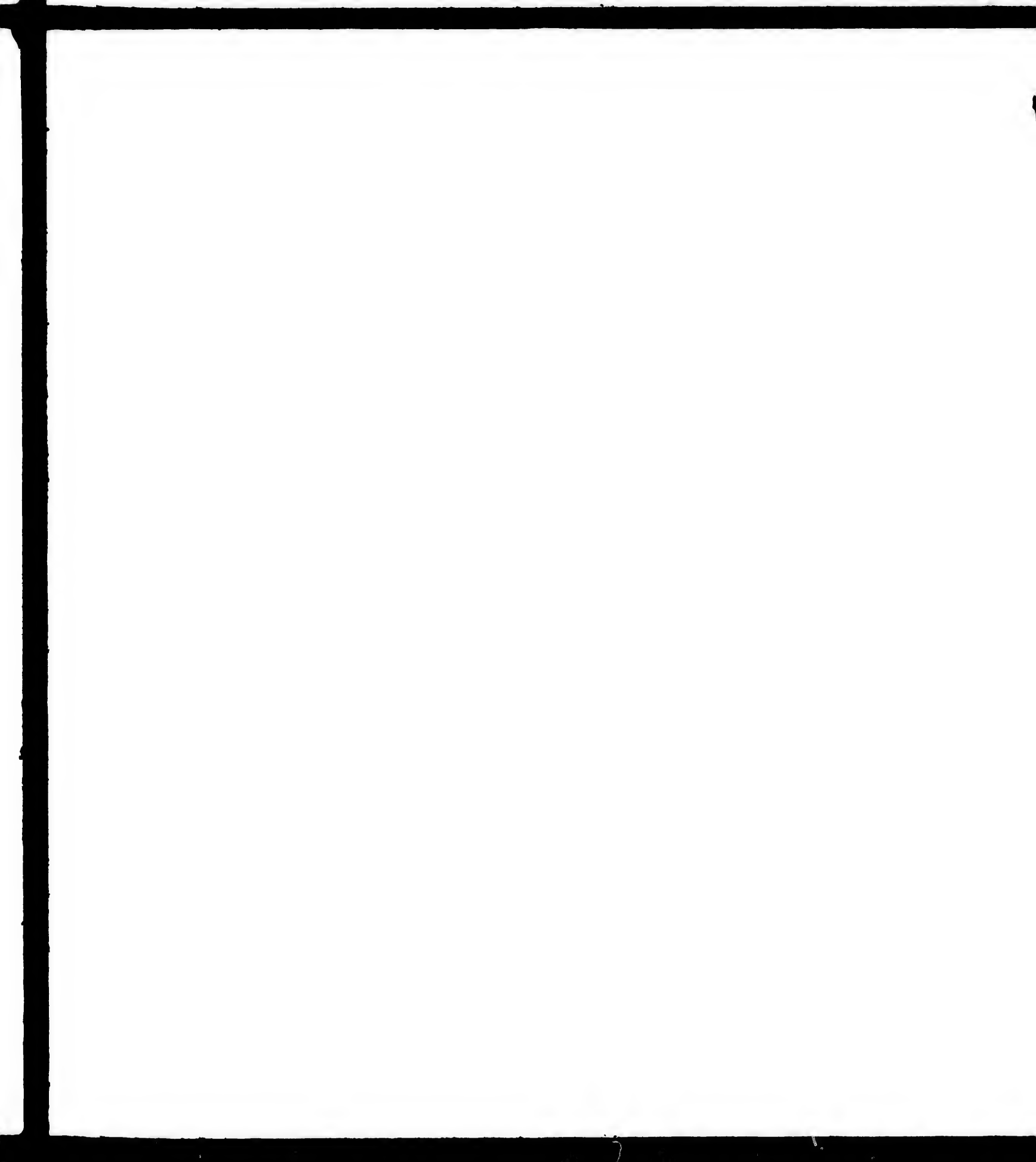
We left at half-past one, taking one of the natives as a guide. The path followed the line of the bay, and we walked, for two hours, in deep sand and crushed shells, around curve and headland. It was very toilsome work, especially as the glare of the sand struck directly in our faces. The beach was narrow and bordered with thick hedges of the pandanus, the fruit of which resembles that of the pine-apple. The mountains on our left were wild and uncultivated. There were occasional paths striking up their sides; but, although the compass told us that the shore-path led us out of our true course, the guide refused to take any of them. At the end of two hours we reached a large village, where the guide, who had followed us from "Isitza," levied a substitute and turned back. A two-masted junk, of thirty or forty tons burden, lay at anchor in a cove near this place. We were now approaching the northern extremity of Barrow's Bay, and had a full view of the long headland south of it, and the four islands which lie, like a breakwater, across its mouth. The bay appeared to be extremely shallow, except near the entrance; and I doubt whether it would be of much value, as a harbor, for shipping of large size.

The path, finally, turned off to the north, up a steep hill, which brought us upon a rolling upland, covered with abundance of wood. The mountains we had passed exhibited an outline similar to the Catskills, and there was nothing in the scenery to remind us of the vicinity of the tropics. We presently entered a fine, broad avenue of pines, at the extremity of which appeared a handsome house, with a tiled roof. Our native conductors passed on into some bamboo arches, which denoted a village beyond; but I slipped suddenly into the open entrance and found a spacious house in the midst of the garden, with a small Buddhist temple beside it. Quick as my motions had been, the mats were already let down before all the doors, and nobody was to be seen. Before the house was a plant about ten feet high, with large scarlet panicles of flowers. I had barely time to break off a cluster when one of our officers came hurrying up and urged me by signs and words, to leave, saying that the bunyo, or governor, as he designated Mr. Jones, had gone on. I, therefore, followed him through the village to the *Cung-quà*, which was larger and finer than any we had yet seen. It was like an elegant private residence; having a garden, inclosed by a square, clipped hedge of jasmin, and a separate establishment for servants and attendants. There were rows of chrysanthemums (a flower much esteemed by the Japanese) and two peach-trees in the garden, beside a stout *camellia*, clipped into a fanciful shape. We installed ourselves in the chief apartment, on the soft matting, while the Pe-ching and his train took the other building. The only supplies we could procure were raw salt fish and sweet potatoes, with some roots of a native onion, pickled in salt. Neither fowls nor eggs could be found. The natives gave the name of the village as "Ching," which, being a Chinese word, is evidently incorrect; but we could get no other. The paper screens

OO-CHOO.

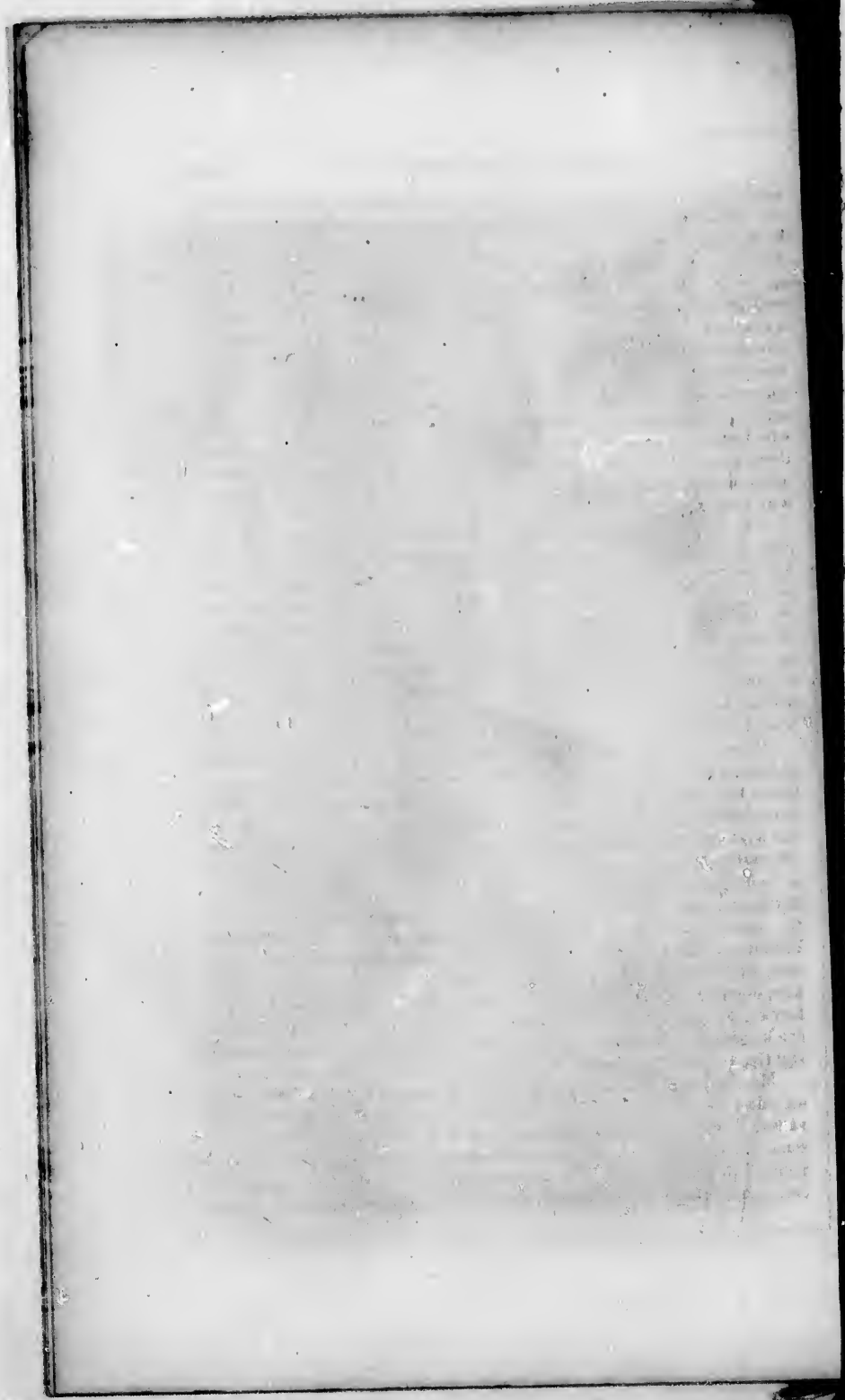
the natives as a guide. The
walked, for two hours, in deep
headland. It was very toil-
sand struck directly in our
red with thick hedges of the
that of the pine-apple. The
cultivated. There were occa-
although the compass told us
course, the guide refused to
urs we reached a large village,
n "Isitza," levied a substitute
f thirty or forty tons burden,
We were now approaching the
d had a full view of the long
s which lie, like a breakwater,
be extremely shallow, except
t would be of much value, as a

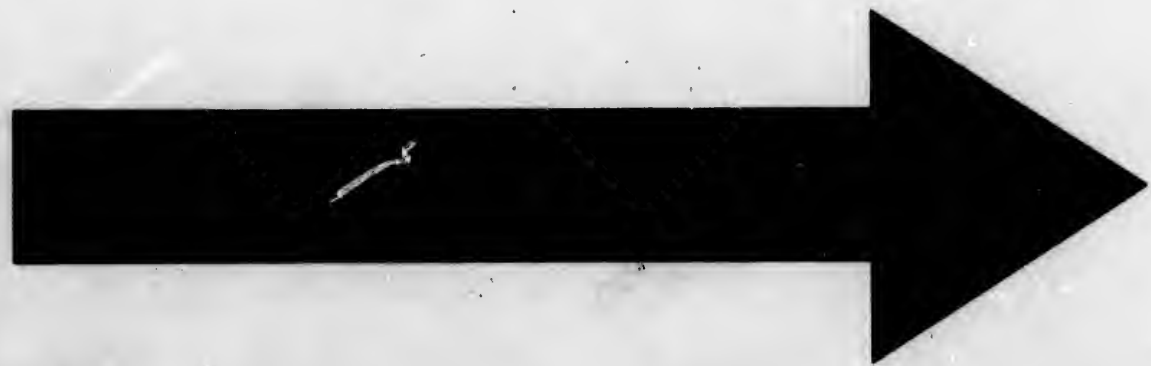
north, up a steep hill, which
ered with abundance of wood.
an outline similar to the Cats-
ry to remind us of the vicinity
fine, broad avenue of pines, at
lsome house, with a tiled roof.
ome bamboo arches, which de-
ddenly into the open entrance
st of the garden, with a small
ny motions had been, the mats
ors, and nobody was to be seen.
n feet high, with large scarlet
to break off a cluster when one
ged me by signs and words, to
or, as he designated Mr. Jones,
through the village to the Cung-
y we had yet seen. It was like
a garden, inclosed by a square,
ate establishment for servants
hrysanthemums (a flower much
ach-trees in the garden, beside a
hape. We installed ourselves in
ing, while the Pe-ching and his
y supplies we could procure were
a some roots of a native onion,
gs could be found. The natives
g," which, being a Chinese word,
et no other. The paper screens

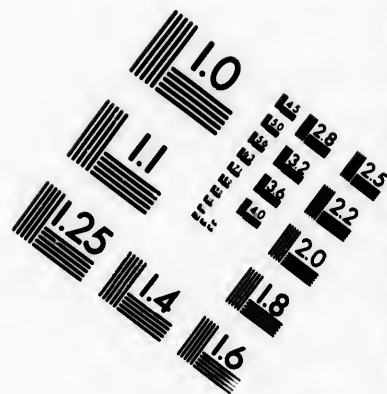
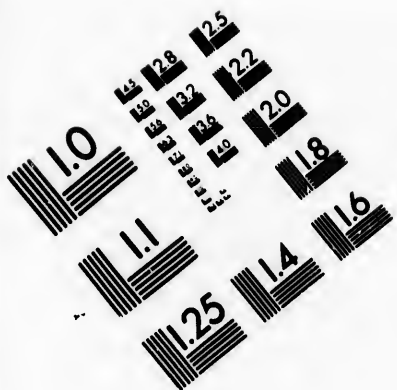




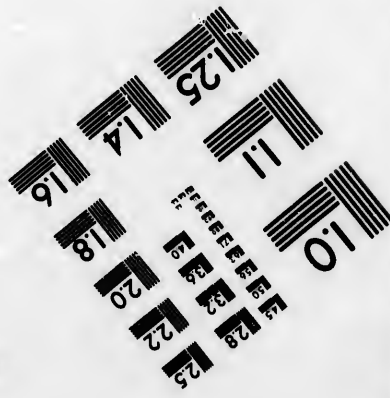
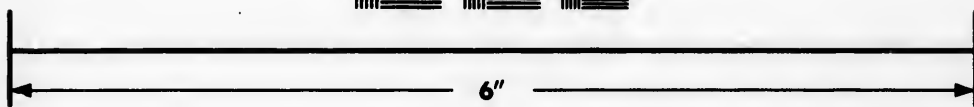
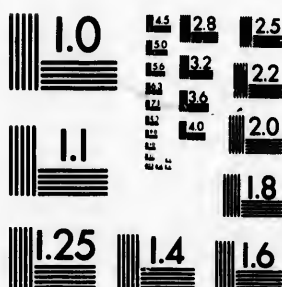
THE VILLAGE STREET







**IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

1.8
2.0
2.2
2.5
2.8
3.2
3.6
4.0
4.5
5.0
5.6
6.3
7.1
8.0
9.0
10.0
11.2
12.5
14.0
16.0
18.0
20.0
22.5
25.0
28.0
32.0
36.0
40.0
45.0
50.0
56.0
63.0
71.0
80.0
90.0
100.0

**CIHM/ICMH
Microfiche
Series.**

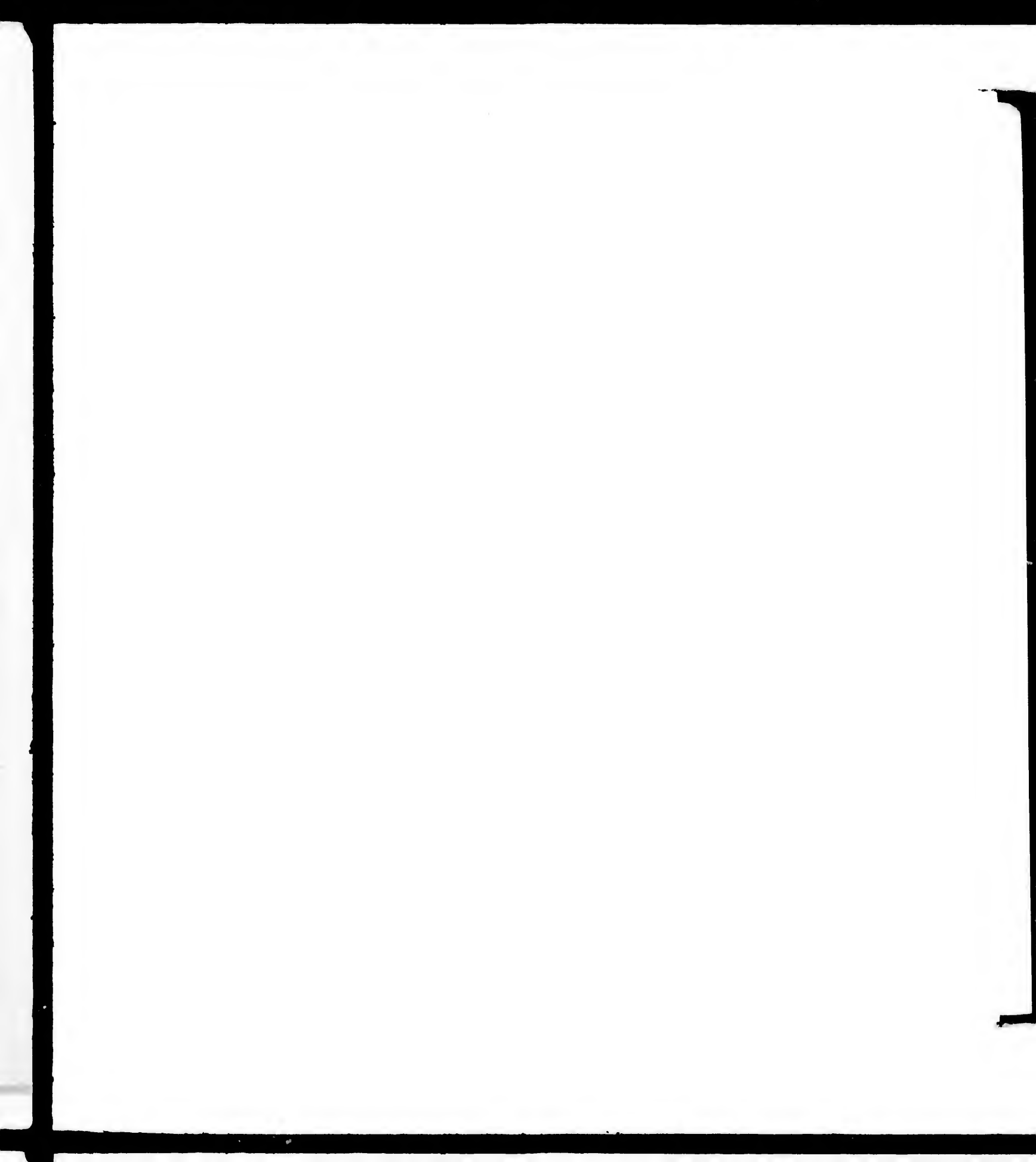
**CIHM/ICMH
Collection de
microfiches.**



Canadian Institute for Historical Microreproductions / Institut canadien de microreproductions historiques

1.0
1.1
1.2
1.5
1.8
2.0
2.2
2.5
2.8
3.2
3.6
4.0
4.5
5.0
5.6
6.3
7.1
8.0
9.0
10.0
11.2
12.5
14.0
16.0
18.0
20.0
22.5
25.0
28.0
32.0
36.0
40.0
45.0
50.0
56.0
63.0
71.0
80.0
90.0
100.0

© 1983



between the rooms were removed on our arrival, tea was brought in, and the natives busied themselves to make us comfortable; but the same unrelaxing espionage, as at "Missikya," was kept up through the whole night. Again camp-fires were kindled and guards posted around us, while crowds of curious natives peeped from behind the bushes and walls to gratify their desire of seeing us. Mr. Heine, who had the first watch, went out to the camp-fire, showed the people his watch, and other curiosities, and soon had a large crowd of villagers gathered about him; but one of the officers making his appearance, a single word of command scattered them in all directions, and they did not return again. In the evening I offered a handful of cash to one of the boys who had accompanied us from Napha. He refused it very earnestly, as there were two other boys standing near, but, watching an opportunity, when he was alone, I offered it again, when he immediately accepted it, with gestures expressive of his thanks.

The Pe-ching, who had fallen in the rear, came up after dark, and immediately sought us, to make his salutations. We found that he and his associates had been keeping a journal of our proceedings, and had already filled a roll of paper several yards in length with their remarks. We had but few mosquitoes, and slept so well that I had some difficulty in rising for the mid-watch. After much search, two tough old hens were found for our breakfast, which we ate under the scrutiny of a hundred eyes, continually peering at us over walls, or popping out from behind bushes. Whenever we noticed any of them the heads disappeared, but they returned again as soon as our gaze was removed.

We were now commencing our fourth day, and it was time to think of turning back shortly. After some consultation, it was determined to follow the coast for a short distance further, then strike across the island in the direction of Port Melville, and reach in the evening a point on the western shore corresponding to the latitude of our present camp. On starting, the native officers were very urgent in requesting us to take a road leading westward. We kept, however, a course nearly due north, and soon reached a hill, whence there was an excellent view of the country on all sides. The northern headland of Barrow's Bay lay behind us. The general direction of the coast in advance was north-east, stretching away to a distant promontory. A spinal ridge of mountains, covered with a wilderness of forests, ran parallel with the coast, leaving a narrow strip of cultivated land next the sea. A column of smoke ascended from one of the northern peaks, which we judged—and rightly, as it afterward proved—to be a fire in the woods.

Mr. Jones decided to make for a gorge between two peaks, about six miles distant, and rather to the east of north. We crossed a deep valley, with a salt creek at its bottom, and, after following the coast for some time, took a road which, after ascending a long barren ridge, plunged into the woods. The further we advanced, the more dense became the wilderness. The only persons we met were woodmen whom

we saw occasionally felling trees with their rude axes. The path was narrow, wet, and slippery, and for two or three miles a continual ascent. At length we reached a conical peak covered with trees. The ascent was very difficult, and I halted with the coolies at the base, while Mr. Jones, Dr. Lynah, and Mr. Heine, went up to obtain a view. By climbing the trees and cutting away some of the limbs, they opened space for a grand central panorama of the island, which Mr. Heine set about sketching from a tree-top. The path, which by this time had dwindled almost out of sight, passed directly over the summit. We found the ascent like a staircase, and were obliged to use hands and feet to reach the top. The Loo-Choo coolies who carried our baggage made their way up with great difficulty. As we were all suffering from thirst, I started in advance, with the seaman Mitchell, the Chinamen, and the coolies. The path, which was now a faint woodman's trail, did not appear to have been traveled for months. It was shut in by a species of small bamboo, so dense as almost to exclude light, and a large, red, hairy spider had woven innumerable webs across it. Now ascending, now descending, we pushed ourselves or crept through the almost impervious copsewood, for nearly two miles, till the path became more open, and a partial look-out to the westward showed us the China sea. On the side of the nearest peak to the northward, we distinctly saw the woods on fire and a bare space of about ten acres studded with charred trunks. The descent was very slippery, but becoming more and more open, I at length recognized our position. We were approaching the head of the deep bight south of Port Melville, and separated from it by an arm of the island, which stretches out to the north-west, at right angles to the main body. The curious peaked island called the "Sugar Loaf," off the point of this promontory, was in view before us. The western slope of the island at this point is covered almost entirely with forests, the cultivation being confined to the bottoms of valleys and ravines opening upon the sea.

The path led across the top of a narrow ledge about a yard wide, with chasms more than a hundred feet deep on each side, and then dropped to the bottom of the glen, where we found a stream of deliciously cool and sweet water. We all drank to excess, and then climbed a little ridge beyond, where the air blew fresh, and sat down to await the rest of the party. Mr. Jones found granite of fine quality in the ravine, and we afterward met with another broad stratum in a rocky gateway further below. Our only path made for a village on the shore, whither we repaired for our mid-day halt. The houses were lined with luxuriant bananas, in blossom, and the lanes between them hedged with the glossy *inocarpus*, forming walls of foliage twenty feet in height, outside of which were neat wicker fences of split bamboo. Near the village were three structures raised upon timber frames, and covered with thatched roofs. They appeared to be storehouses, elevated in this manner to preserve the grain from the moisture of the earth. Beneath

rudé axes. The path was
e miles a continual ascent.
ed with trees. The ascent
ies at the base, while Mr.
obtain a view. By climb-
ubs, they opened space for
ich Mr. Heine set about
y this time had dwindled
e summit. We found the
se hands and feet to reach
t our baggage made their
all suffering from thirst, I
ell, the Chinamen, and the
woodman's trail, did not
It was shut in by a species
ide light, and a large, red,
across it. Now ascending,
ept through the almost im-
till the path became more
d showed us the China sea.
ward, we distinctly saw the
acres studded with charred
becoming more and more
We were approaching the
yville, and separated from it
t to the north-west, at right
ked island called the "Sugar
was in view before us. The
covered almost entirely with
the bottoms of valleys and

ow ledge about a yard wide,
deep on each side, and then
we found a stream of deli-
k to excess, and then climbed
fresh, and sat down to await
granite of fine quality in the
r broad stratum in a rocky
ade for a village on the shore,
The houses were lined with
es between them hedged with
ilage twenty feet in height,
of split bamboo. Near the
n timber frames, and covered
e storehouses, elevated in this
isture of the earth. Beneath

them were wooden platforms, offering us shade and convenience for our halt. The people brought us sweet potatoes, a small pan of salt fish, and a pumpkin, which was all they could supply. Even these were refused us until the arrival of the Pe-ching, to whose authority all the others deferred. The rapidity of our march had left him in the rear, but he came up after an hour, and set himself to work with great good humor to supply our wants. In order to shield themselves from the heat of the sun, some of his attendants had tied banana leaves around their heads, and they all complained of fatigue.

We left Ny-komma, as the village was called, about half past two. At this, the most northern point we reached, we could not have been more than eight or nine miles distant from Port Melville. The intervening land was low, and another day would have enabled us to reach the head of that harbor. The native officials explained to us by signs, and by tracing lines on the sand, that the road to Shendi lay along the beach, and that there was a Cung-qui about twenty li distant. We tramped along sandy beaches and over stony headlands, following the general course of the shore, and never diverging far from it. The bay, or bight, marked with numerous abrupt indentations, presented some fine bold outlines of shore. Off the many inferior promontories lay rocky islets, covered with rich vegetation. The wooded mountains on our left were the same which we had skirted the day previous on the northern side of Barrow's Bay. The lower slopes on this side were partially cultivated, but the principal thoroughfare of the island, which we were following, kept near the sea, and often ran for half a mile through deep sand and shells. The scenery was extremely picturesque, reminding me of the coast of Sicily. Inside of the Sugar Loaf we espied two small boats, with lug-sails of white canvas, which the men declared were our ships' boats; but this has since proved to be a mistake.

Notwithstanding the sultry heat of the afternoon, the Loo-Choo coolies kept pace with us, under their heavy loads, while our lazy and complaining Chinamen lagged behind. These coolies were mostly boys, from twelve to sixteen years of age. I noticed as a curious fact that, in spite of the heavy loads they carried, and the rough by-ways we frequently obliged them to take, they never perspired in the least, nor partook of a drop of water, even in the greatest heat. They were models of cheerfulness, alacrity, and endurance, always in readiness, and never, by look or word, evincing the least dissatisfaction. Our official conductors drank but two or three times of water during the whole journey. Tea appears to be the universal beverage of refreshment. It was always brought to us whenever we halted, and frequently offered to Mr. Jones, as the head of the party, in passing through villages. Once, at an humble fisherman's village, when we asked for *mizi*, which signifies cold water, they brought us a pot of hot water, which they call *yu*, and were much surprised when we refused to drink it.

After a march of ten miles along the picturesque shore, we reached

one of the loveliest spots on the island. It was a village perched on a bold promontory, overgrown with the pine, banyan, and sago-palm, at the mouth of a charming valley which opened up between the hills to the base of the lofty peak behind Barrow's Bay. A stream of sweet water threaded the valley, which was covered with the freshest verdure, and overhung with beautiful groves of pine. It was a picture of pastoral loveliness, such as is rarely found in any country. Nothing struck me more during the journey than the great variety of scenery which the island incloses in its narrow compass. We passed through, at least, four different districts, which bore but the slightest resemblance to each other, either in features or character. We had both the groves of the tropics and the wild woods of the north; the valleys of Germany and the warm shores of the Mediterranean.

The village was large, thriving, and as neatly laid out and hedged in as an English garden. The scrupulous neatness and regularity of the Loo-Choo villages was doubly refreshing to one familiar with the squalor and filth of China. The sight of the *Cung-quà*, which occupied the place of honor at the top of the promontory, completed our raptures. Its roof of red tiles glittered in the sun; a row of feathery sago-palms threw their brilliant leaves over the wall of the inclosure; the whitest and softest of mats covered the floor; the garden blazed with a profusion of scarlet flowers; and stone basins, seated on pedestals, contained fresh water for our use. Its aspect for comfort and repose was a balm to travelers as weary as ourselves, and I directed Terry at once to hoist the stars and stripes upon the roof. I hastened back to make a sketch of the beautiful valley before sunset, while Mr. Heine occupied himself with a view of the *Cung-quà*. A venerable old man, with a snowy beard reaching nearly to his knees, approached the bank where I sat, but upon noticing me, made a profound yet dignified reverence and retired. The village was named *Uñ-fa*. We had not yet reached the region of fowls, but the people sent us two small fresh fish, with a pumpkin and some cucumbers. Our own stores were quite low, both sugar and pork having been exhausted, so that we had nothing left but tea, coffee, and ship biscuit.

The natives kindled a fire inside the grounds of the *Cung-quà*, and half a dozen of them sat around it all night. The morning was dull, and a cap of mist on the mountain threatened rain. A bath in the sea before sunrise refreshed us for the day's march. For our breakfast, there were sent two long, eel-like fish, resembling the gar, a few young egg-plants, two gourds, and a basket of sweet potatoes. So much time was occupied in cooking and consuming these delicacies, that we did not get under way before eight o'clock. Another consultation was held with our attendants, who declared that *Sheudi* was ninety *li* distant, and that it would require three days for us to reach *Napha*; this did not correspond with our own ideas of our position, and we determined to attempt reaching *Napha* the next evening, as we had been ordered.

We passed through the village of Uñ-ñia, and over the headland to a deep bay. The tide was running out, and instead of wading through the sand around its entire curve, we made a straight line for the opposite shore, tramping through water two or three inches deep over beds of decomposing coral. We had proceeded along the shore for an hour and a half, when A-shing, one of the Chinese coolies, fell sick in consequence, as it afterward appeared, of drinking sackee, and eating green peaches. His load was given to the Loo-Choo coolies, and he obtained a temporary relief by punching his throat, in three places, so violently as to produce an extravasation of blood. Counter irritation is the usual Chinese remedy for all ailments, and it is frequently very efficacious. We were near a fishing village, and Mr. Jones endeavored to obtain a canoe, in which to send both our Chinamen back to the vessel. The Pe-ching begged him to give up the idea, since one of the native officers would be obliged to accompany them, and they all feared to trust themselves in the frail craft. They brought a *kagoo*, or rude sedan, in which they offered to have the man conveyed to Napha, but he was better by this time, and declared himself able to proceed on foot. The officers expressed the greatest satisfaction when they found that none of them would be required to return in the canoe.

In the mean time the rest of us had pushed forward with the baggage. The morning was very hot, the glare from the white beach-sand struck in our faces, and we began to tire of an endless tramp around cove after cove, and headland after headland. We were now, as we calculated, opposite the head of Barrow's Bay, and Sheudi was almost in a due southerly direction; yet the road still clung to the coast, as if intent on carrying us to the extreme point of Cape Broughton, thus greatly lengthening our journey, besides which, our orders were to return through the center of the island. In answer to all our inquiries, the native officers and guides pointed along the shore and were extremely anxious to prevent our taking any inland paths. This excited our suspicion, and we imagined their object to be to prevent our seeing the interior. Finally, coming to a well-trodden path, which struck off up the hills, we shut our ears to all remonstrance and took it. In a short time it brought us to a handsome village, shaded not only with bamboo, but with splendid banyan-trees. Beyond it there was a deep ravine, with a faintly-marked foot-path leading to some water at the bottom. Again the natives entreated us to take a path which plainly led to the shore. They pointed to the gorge, crying "*mizi*," intimating that the path went no further than the water. Nevertheless, seeing traces of a path on the opposite side, we descended, followed by the unwilling officers and coolies. The pool of water which supplied the village was shaded by the largest pines I saw on the island. They were seventy or eighty feet in height, whereas the average is not more than forty feet.

Our suspicions did injustice to the natives, for we soon found that they had our convenience in view. Our path struck into a side-branch

of the ravine, which, though not more than twenty feet wide, was a rice-swamp at the bottom. The sides were nearly perpendicular walls of earth and loose rocks, so that we were obliged to plunge up to the knees in mud. One of the men, Smith, sunk so deep that it required the strength of three natives to extricate him. When, at last we reached the top of the hill, we found it covered with waste thickets, and no path to be seen except one on an opposite height, which we reached with some trouble. The path, an old and unused one, led us back to the beach, which it now seemed impossible to leave. The coolies, who had had a hard tug to get through the rice-swamp, took the whole matter very good-humoredly, and the officers laughed, as I thought, with a sort of malicious pleasure at our discomfiture. The walk over the white sand was doubly fatiguing after this, and on the arrival of Mr. Jones we determined again to make for the interior, especially as we had reached the head of the last cove, whence the coast appeared to run almost due westwardly to Cape Broughton.

Mr. Jones and Dr. Lynah, with the men Davis and Smith, took a foot-path leading southward into the mountains, and after proceeding a little further along the coast I followed them with the seaman Mitchell. Mr. Heine, with Terry and the Loo-Choo coolies, still kept the shore. We (Mitchell and I) reached with great difficulty the path taken by the first party. It ascended steeply through pine forests, alternating with dense copsewood, for about two miles, till we gained the summit of the ridge. The whole expanse of Barrow's Bay came full into view to the eastward, while to the south we looked beyond the promontory we had been doubling so tediously, and saw the same deep cove we had beheld three days before from the top of Banner Rock. But all the interior of the island was still a wilderness, and for ten miles in advance stretched an unbroken forest. Our path did not appear to have been much traveled—other small paths branched from it, but the party in advance had broken off boughs and left them as guides for us. I was much spent with the heat and the exertion of climbing so rapidly, and after drinking out of a muddy hole filled with leaves, felt an attack of mingled heat and cold, with an oppression of the heart, which took away all my strength. We saw the other party on the top of a high peak ahead of us. The path crossed a ledge as narrow as a wall, with deep gulfs on each side, and then ascended a rocky ladder, the steepness of which took away what little strength I had remaining—I was obliged to lie down for some time before I could proceed further. A rain-cloud coming up rapidly over Barrow's Bay admonished us to leave our lofty lookout. The path kept on southward through miles of wilderness, but the natives who had accompanied us pointed to another, which led back almost the way we came, and which they said would bring us to a *Cung-quà*. As there were no signs of the baggage, we were thus under the necessity of retracing our steps almost to the shore. On our way we passed through a singular gorge, which was closed up, in its nar-

twenty feet wide, was a nearly perpendicular wall, and so deep that it required a ladder to reach the top. When, at last, we reached a waste thickets, and no light, which we reached a narrow path, led us back to the river. The coolies, who were with us, took the whole matter in their hands, as I thought, with a view to the walk over the white path. The arrival of Mr. Jones was especially as we had reached the river to run almost due

Davis and Smith, took a boat, and after proceeding a short distance with the seaman Mitchell. The coolies, still kept the shore. The path taken by the party, alternating with the forests, alternating with the open, gained the summit of the mountain. The view came full into view to the east, and the promontory we had reached. The deep cove we had beheld was a bay. But all the interior of the island in advance stretched out before us. It had been much traveled, and the party in advance had been for us. I was much surprised to find it so rapidly, and after drinking a glass of mingled heat, which took away all my strength, I went up a high peak ahead of me, a wall, with deep gulfs on either side, the steepness of which was such that I was obliged to lie down. A rain-cloud came down, and we were obliged to leave our lofty look-out, and to go to another, which led back to the river. The said would bring us to a narrow path, we were thus under a shelter to the shore. On our way back, the river was closed up, in its nar-

rowest part, by fragments hurled from above by some convulsion of nature. The stream flowing at the bottom disappeared for about fifty yards, when it again issued to the light through a cavernous opening.

A rain now came on, which continued for two or three hours, and made the road slippery and toilsome. We passed through a village, romantically situated in a wooded glen, and over uplands, covered with groves of pine, the path gradually swerving to the south, till it finally struck directly across the promontory. A great part of the way was a waste of wild thickets, with marshy hollows between the hills. We saw, several times, the tracks of the wild boar, which the natives assured us were abundant; but we were not so fortunate as to get a sight of one. There were no traces of our baggage until we found the Pe-ching, and two other natives, crouching under a bush to keep out of the rain, and smoking their pipes. Finally, about half-past two, we heard the report of fire-arms, and soon after reached the Cung-quà of "*Chandakosa*," where Mr. Heino and the coolies had already been waiting some time for us. We were uncertain whether the building was a *bond file* Cung-quà or the residence of a *bunyo*, or officer, for it was occupied, when Mr. Heino arrived, by a personage of some kind with his attendants, but immediately given up for our use. There was a crowd of at least a hundred natives collected within the inclosure and looking on, with great astonishment, while Mr. Heino fired at a mark. What seemed most to interest them, next to the accuracy of his aim, was the fact of the piece exploding without the application of fire (nothing but Japanese matchlocks ever being seen on the island), and its being loaded at the breech. They appeared familiar with the nature of gunpowder, and the use of our entlasses; but during our journey we never saw a single weapon of any kind. There is said to be a small garrison of Japanese soldiers, both at Napha and Sheudi; but, if so, they were carefully kept out of the way.

The Pe-ching, who soon afterward came up, informed us that we had come thirty *li*, and that Sheudi was still sixty *li* distant, and we could not reach it on the following day. Learning, however, that there was another Cung-quà twenty *li* further, we decided to rest an hour or two, and push on to it the same evening. The people brought two fowls, with abundance of eggs and cucumbers, and, hungry and tired as we were, we made a most palatable meal.

We left again at half past four. The road was broad, well beaten, and shaded by a double row of pine-trees. It ran in a south-eastern direction, parallel with the coast, and about two miles inland. The country continued open, slightly undulating, and pleasantly diversified with groves of pine for four miles, when we came suddenly upon a deep glen, traversed by much the largest stream we had seen upon the island. The road crossed by a massive stone bridge, of three arches, remarkable for the size and rude strength of the piers, each of which had, on the inner side, in order to protect it from floods, a triangular abutment,

projecting ten or twelve feet. The sides of the glen were nearly perpendicular, and covered with wild and luxuriant vegetation. Toward the sea, under a range of broken limestone crags that hung high over the stream, were several ancient excavated tombs. A spring of excellent water gushed out from the foot of one of these crags. Mr. Heine took a sketch of the place, which was remarkable for its seclusion and picturesque beauty. The natives called the stream the "*Pi-ja*."

On reaching a height overlooking the sea, we were agreeably surprised with the sight of the squadron, lying off the furthest point to the south-west, and between fifteen and twenty miles distant, in a straight line. This encouraged us to believe that we could reach Napha at the time appointed, and we pushed on rapidly and cheerily, for it was now growing dark, and no appearance of the *Cung-quà*. The road approached the shore, and became a raised causeway, passing through rich rice swamps. The natives whom we met in the dusk of the evening took to flight on seeing us. At last, at half-past seven, weary and spent with a tramp of twenty-seven miles, the native herald who ran before us turned into a gateway, over which towered a magnificent banyan-tree. We followed, and discharged our pieces in a general *feu-de-joie*, on seeing a *Cung-quà* with the lamps lighted, attendants waiting with their trays of tea-cups, and a polite old gentleman standing in the verandah to receive us. The Loo-Choo mats were never so soft, nor the cups of unsugared native tea so refreshing, as on that evening. Eggs, cucumbers, rice, and fowls were immediately forthcoming, and our men concocted a soup which, to our minds, could not have been improved. The old *Pe-ching* made his appearance at a late hour, nearly as fatigued as ourselves, but overflowing with cordiality and good humor. A company of native guards kindled a fire under the banyan-tree, and prepared to spend the night there. Our men were so fatigued that, in anticipation of another hard journey on the morrow, we dispensed with the usual watch. It was the less important, as we had found the native guard exceedingly vigilant in keeping away all stragglers from our vicinity. The light of the ruddy camp-fire, playing over the spreading boughs of the banyan-tree, brought into strong relief the groups of swarthy faces clustered around it, and presented a picture so fantastic and peculiar that I sat looking at it long after I ought to have been asleep.

The sound of rain upon the tiles of our *Cung-quà* awoke us frequently during the night, and when we arose at daybreak the sky was overcast, the roads flooded, and a steady dismal storm had set in. The *Pe-ching* and his associates wished us to stay at "*Pi-ko*," as the *Cung-quà* was called, until the next day, slapping their legs to indicate how tired they were, and making signs of slipping up and falling down in the mud. But we were inexorable, and they sent for a new set of coolies to carry our baggage. We had another discussion about the distance,

which ended in their declaring that Sheudi was sixty-five *li* and Napha thirty *li* distant. This was absurd, and probably ought to be attributed to the ignorance of the Chinese, through whom we communicated with them. The coolies prepared themselves for the rain by putting on shaggy jackets of grass, resembling the sheep-skin garments of the Roman herdsmen. Our men had their pea-jackets, and we were partially protected by ponchos of gutta-percha and oilcloth. We were delayed in getting breakfast, and did not break up our camp until half-past nine, when we set out, every body stiff and sore from the previous day's travel. The rain was still falling, though not so heavily as at first, and the road was an alternation of water and stiff mud, through which we trudged with difficulty, and at the risk of leaving our boots behind us. After rounding the head of the bight, we struck off over the hills to the south-west, and in an hour and a half came upon another deep glen; in the bottom of which were two massive bridges over a stream so broad and deep that it was doubtless a frith of the sea. We stopped an hour to rest and enable Mr. Heine to take a sketch of the place. I noticed that the heavy triangular abutments to the piers were here placed on the side next the sea. The natives gave the glen, or river, the name of "Machinatoo."

The rain had ceased by this time, except an occasional sprinkle, and the road improved. After another hour the roads branched, that on the left striking off up the hills to Sheudi. We kept on over the hills toward Napha, the scenery gradually assuming a familiar appearance, till finally, from a height covered with pine-trees, we looked down upon the harbor and the American squadron. After fording a broad salt creek, and crossing another ridge, we descended to the village Tumé, opposite Napha. We reached our starting-point, the house of Dr. Bettelheim, at 2 P.M., and there took leave of our worthy Pe-ching and his two assistants, after having appointed a time to meet them again, and endeavor to return some compensation for the provision furnished during the journey.

The distance we traveled during the six days was one hundred and eight miles, as nearly as we could calculate. Our trip embraced a little more than half the island, leaving the extremity south of Napha (which is of limited extent), and that part north of the head of Port Melville, and lying on both sides of that harbor, for future exploration.

APPENDIX.

I.

CONCLUSION OF DR. BARTH'S TRAVELS IN CENTRAL AFRICA.

AFTER the death of Dr. Overweg, on the 27th of September, 1852, Dr. Barth relinquished his project of exploring the eastern shores of Lake Tsad, and determined to devote his whole attention towards the west—to visit the countries along the middle course of the Niger, establish friendly relations with the ruler of the powerful kingdom of Haussa (or Houssa), and, if possible, reach Timbuctoo. After a long series of delays, on account of the difficulty of procuring the requisite amount of money and equipments, he set out from Kouka on the 25th of November, with the entire concurrence of the Shekh of Bornou. Well aware of the difficulties which he would have to encounter, and not daring to be too sanguine of success, he stated in his dispatch to the British government that his principal object was to reach the Niger at the town of Say, while all beyond that was extremely uncertain.

On the following day he experienced the greatest degree of cold noticed during all his journeys in Central Africa—"the thermometer in the morning, a little before sunrise, showing only 9° Fahrenheit above the freezing point. The interior of Africa, so far removed from the influence of the sea (which is warmer in winter than the *terra firma*), forms, with regard to the cold season, an insulated cool space in the tropical regions in opposition to the warm climate of the West Indies, and the coasts and islands of the Pacific and Indian Oceans. We were all greatly affected by the cold; but it did us a great deal of good, invigorating our frames after the enervating influence of the climate of Kouka."

After a slow and tedious journey westward, he reached the city of Zinder (see map, page 884,) on the 25th of December. Here he was obliged to wait for supplies from Tripoli, without which it was impossible to proceed further, and employed the time in completing his scientific labors and researches in regard to Bornou. "At length," says his journal, "on the 20th of January, 1853, I received from the hands of the Arab Mahammed el 'Akerút, a valuable consignment, consisting of

one thousand dollars in specie, which were packed very cleverly in two boxes of sugar, so that scarcely anybody became aware that I had received money; but I received no letters on this occasion. I had also expected to be able to replace here such of my instruments as had been spoiled or broken by new ones; but I was entirely disappointed in this respect, and hence, in my farther journey, my observations regarding elevation and temperature are rather defective. I then finished my purchases, amounting altogether to the value of 775,000 cowries, of all sorts of articles which I expected would be useful on my farther proceedings, such as red common bernúses, white turbans, looking-glasses, cloves, razors, chaplets, and a number of other things, which I had at the time the best opportunity of purchasing, as all Arab and European merchandise, after the arrival of the caravan, was rather cheap."

"The whole country which we traversed on our way westward," he continues, "besides being richly studded with fixed dwelling-places, was full of parties of A'sbenáwa salt-traders, partly moving on, partly encamped, and having their merchandise carefully protected by fences of corn-stalks. But, although these people greatly contributed to the animated character of the landscape, yet their presence by no means added to the security of the country, and altogether my order of march became now a very different one from what it had been. Throughout my march from Kouka to Zinder, with a few exceptions, it had been my custom to proceed far in advance of the camels, with my horsemen, so that I used to arrive at the camping ground before the greatest heat of the day had set in; but, on account of the greater insecurity of the country, it now became necessary for me to pursue my march slowly, in company with my luggage train."

After a stay of some days at Katsena, he passed the wilderness of Gundumi, described by Captain Clapperton, by a forced march of twenty-six hours, and reached Gávasú, where 'Alíyu, the Sultah of Houssa, had taken up his camp, previous to setting out on an expedition against Gober, on the 1st of April. Much of the success of Dr. Barth's undertaking depended on the character of his reception by this prince. He thus describes the interview:

"We found 'Alíyu in the northern part of the village, sitting under a tree in front of his quarters, on a raised platform of clay. He received me with the utmost kindness and good humor, shaking hands with me, and begging me to take a seat just in front of him. Having paid my compliments to him on behalf of the Queen of England, I told him that it had been my intention to have paid him a visit two years previously, but that the losses which we had met with in the first part of our journey had prevented me from carrying out my design. I had scarcely finished my speech, when he himself assured me that at the right time he had received the letter which I had addressed to him through the Sultan of A'gades, and that from that moment up to the present time he had followed our proceedings, and especially my own, with the

CENTRAL AFRICA.

of September, 1852, eastern shores of Lake towards the west of the Niger, establish kingdom of Haussa (or after a long series of no requisite amount of in the 25th of November. Well aware ter, and not daring to spatch to the British ach the Niger at the uncertain.

reatest degree of cold —"the thermometer in y 0° Fahrenheit above r removed from the in- than the *terra firma*), ated cool space in the te of the West Indies, ian Oceans. We were great deal of good, in- nence of the climate of

he reached the city of eember. Here he was at which it was impossi- in completing his scien- "At length," says his ived from the hands of nsignment, consisting of

greatest interest, having even heard at the time a report of my journey to Adamowa."

Sultan 'Alfyu was so well pleased with the presents he received the following day, that he not only gave Dr. Barth permission to proceed further, but presented him with 100,000 cowries, (about \$40) and signed a treaty granting commercial security to English merchants and travelers. The former, however, was obliged to remain at Wurmo until the sultan's return from his expedition—a delay which he turned to advantage by visiting Soccatoo. He found the great Fellatah capital much reduced since Clapperton's visit, though still populous, and famous for its manufactures of iron and leather. He was very hospitably treated during his stay. On the 23d of April, the sultan returned, and immediately gave him permission to continue his travels, which it was necessary to hasten, as the rainy season was approaching. On the 14th of May he set out from Soccatoo, and in three days reached Gando, the residence of a powerful Pullo prince, whose dominion extended several hundred miles over the country which Dr. Barth had to traverse, and whose friendship it was of the utmost importance for him to secure, as his provinces inclosed both banks of the Niger, while the dominion of the Sultan of Soccatoo does not reach the principal branch at all. It was the more unfavorable that the present ruler of this very extensive kingdom should be a man without energy, and most inaccessible to a European and a Christian. His name is Khalilu.

Here Dr. Barth was compelled to remain two weeks, on account of the treachery and rapacity of an Arab, whom he was obliged to employ as a go-between, and the suspicions of Khalilu, whose territory had never before been visited by a European. Finally, on the 4th of June, he was furnished with a safe-conduct, and allowed to proceed. For sixteen days he traveled westward through an uninteresting country, hearing constant rumors of danger from robbers, and receiving protection from several chiefs to whom he made presents. On the 20th of June, he reached the Niger, thus attaining the first great object of his journey. "I set out," says he, "at an early hour; and after a march of a little less than two hours, through a rocky wilderness covered with dense bushes, I obtained the first sight of the river, and in less than an hour more, during which I was in constant sight of this noble spectacle, I reached the place of embarkation, opposite the town of Say.

"In a noble, unbroken stream, though here, where it has become contracted, only about seven hundred yards broad, hemmed in on this side by a rocky bank of from twenty to thirty feet in elevation, the great river of Western Africa (whose name, under whatever form it may appear, whether Dhiilibá, Máyo, Eghiréu, Tsa, Kwára, or Bákin-rúwa, means nothing but 'the river,' and which, therefore, may well continue to be called the Niger) was gliding along, in a north north-east and south-west direction, with a moderate current of about three miles an hour. On the flatter shore opposite, a large town was

TRAVELS.

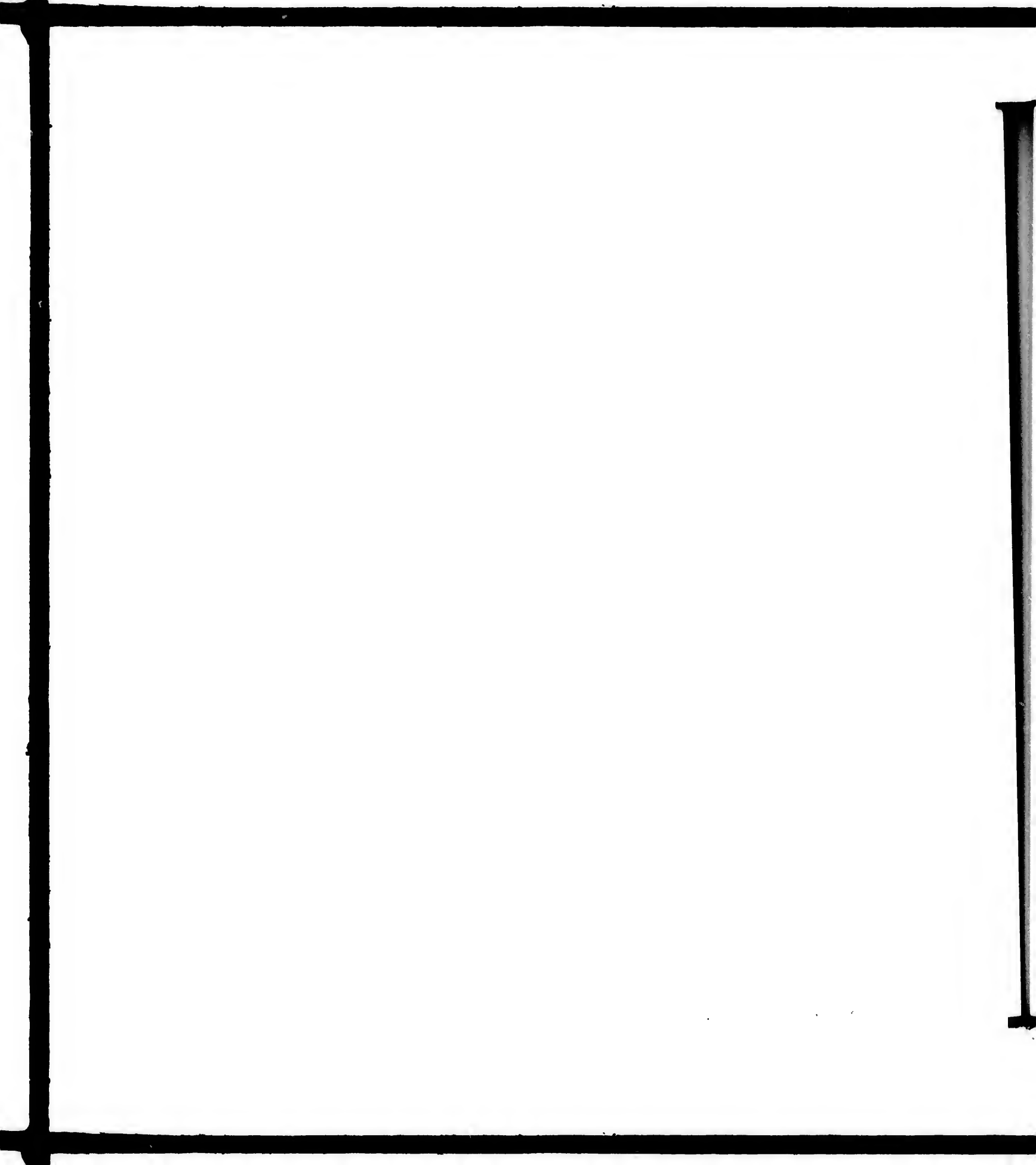
a report of my journey

resents he received the permission to proceed (about \$40) and signed with merchants and trav- ain at Wurno until the ch he turned to advan-

Fellatah capital much populous, and famous for very hospitably treated returned, and immedi- els, which it was neces- ling. On the 14th of ys reached Gando, the minion extended several th had to traverse, and ce for him to secure, as ; while the dominion of icipal branch at all. It er of this very extensive l most inaccessible to a

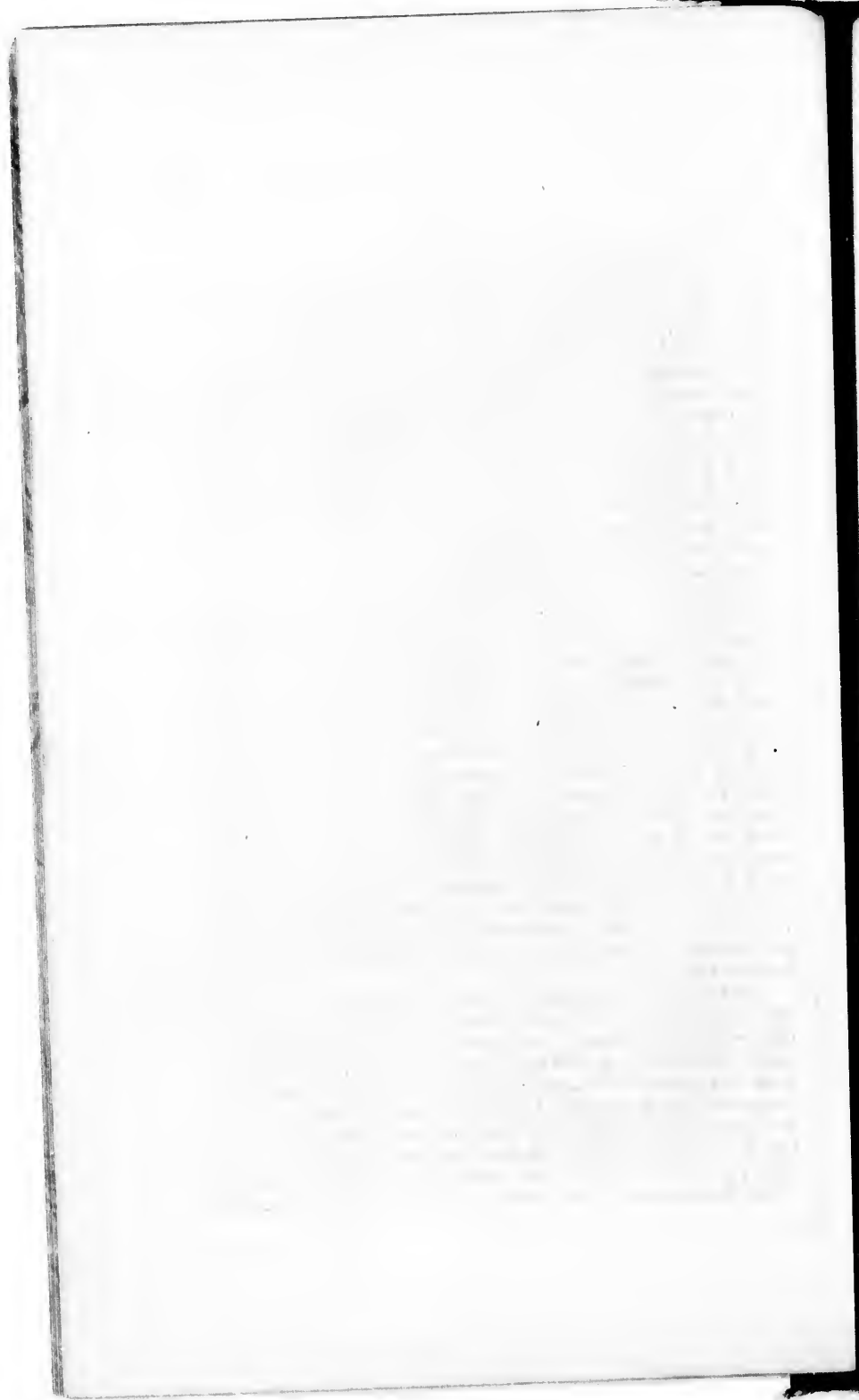
two weeks, on account of he was obliged to employ lu, whose territory had ally, on the 4th of June, ved to proceed. For six- n uninteresting country, ers, and receiving protec- presents. On the 20th of e first great object of his hour; and after a march y wilderness covered with river, and in less than an ht of this noble spectacle, the town of Say.

ere, where it has become oroad, hemmed in on this irty feet in elevation, the , under whatever form it u, sa, Kwára, or Báki-n- hich, therefore, may well g along, in a north north- moderate current of about opposite, a large town wa:





SCENE NEAR SACKATOO. PAGES 502, AND 910.



spread out, the low ramparts and huts of which were picturesquely overtopped by numbers of slender doum-palms.

"My camels, horses, people and luggage having crossed over without an accident, I myself followed about one o'clock in the afternoon, filled with delight when floating on the waters of this celebrated stream, the exploration of which had cost the sacrifice of so many noble lives. The sight of the river was the more momentous to me, as I was soon again to take leave of it; for my former notion that I should be able to reach Timbuctoo only by way of Libtáko, had been confirmed in Gando, and I only entertained a slight hope that perhaps on a future occasion I might visit that part of the river between Timbuctoo and Say. From the very beginning I entertained strong doubts whether I should be able to reach the western coast, and it seemed to me more interesting to survey the course of the Niger between the point where it has become tolerably well known by the labors of Mungo Park and René Caillié, and the lower portion explored by the Landers, than to cross the whole extent of Central Africa."

Dr. Barth was well received by the people of Say.

"About noon the second day of my stay here I paid a visit to the governor of the town. His name is A'bu Bakr, the son of the far-famed m'alleh Mohammed Jébbó. I found him a tolerably cheerful person, although he is wanting in that manliness of character which makes a lasting impression, and he bore evident signs of having been born of a female slave, while his manners appeared to me to possess something approaching to a Jewish character. He, however, was delighted to see me, as I was not only the first Christian who had ever visited this place, which Mungo Park, on his ever-memorable journey, seems to have passed by entirely unnoticed, but especially as I had come at a time when the whole intercourse of the country had been interrupted, and Arabs, as well as natives, were all afraid of visiting it. Having heard of the great superiority of Europeans over the Arabs, both in point of intelligence and industry, he entertained an earnest wish, if it could be accomplished without detriment to the welfare of his province, that a vessel or steamer belonging to them might come and fill his poor market with luxuries, and it was with the utmost surprise that he learned that I did not trade."

After a stay of four days, he continued his journey through the region lying west of the Niger, intending to strike that river a short distance above Timbuctoo. On the 6th of July he reached Sebba, the capital of the province of Yagha. The country is an alternation of forest and cultivated land, and presents no feature of interest. At a village near the last-mentioned town, Dr. Barth met an Arab from the west, who afterward played an important part in the history of his travels. "He called himself Sheikho," says he, "though this was not originally his proper name; and, in order not to cause any mistake, I will in future call him (from his father and the name of his birth-place)

Weled A'mmer Waláti. He was certainly a very remarkable fellow, and I shall have frequent occasion in the farther course of my journey to advert to his doings. Being originally a native of Waláta, he had emigrated to Timbuctoo, whence he had roved about a great deal among the Tawárek, as well as among the Fúlbe, and was, at present, on his way from Belánga, the residence of one of the principal chiefs of Gurma. Besides Arabic, he spoke Fulfúlde, Songhay, Mósi, and Bámbara fluently, and Temáshight, or the language of the Tawárek, almost as well, and, altogether, was one of the cleverest men whom I met on my journey, in spite of the trouble he caused me and the tricks he played me."

At Dóre, the capital of Libtáko, where the party arrived on the 12th of July, Dr. Barth entered into an agreement with the Arab, Waláti, by which the latter was to conduct him safely to Timbuctoo, on condition of receiving a very liberal allowance of presents. In spite of the intriguing and deceitful character of this person, the engagement, on the whole, appears to have been a fortunate thing for Dr. Barth. After a stay of nine days, he set out on the last and most dangerous stage of his journey to Timbuctoo, thinking, at the time, that he should be able to reach that celebrated place in about twenty days; but he underrated the distance, and his ideas of the difficulties which attended the journey, as well as the delays caused by his new companion, fell far short of the reality. On leaving Dóre, a great many armed people accompanied him, much against his inclination, and their conduct was so suspicious that he was obliged to make a halt and send them about their business. From this time forward, he was obliged to assume the character of a Mussulman, and received from the natives the title of *Modibo*, which means something between a philosopher and a saint.

Four days after, on the 25th of July, the party had a narrow escape. While passing through a forest, near the river Buggoma, "suddenly," says he, "we fell in with two men who were pasturing a couple of asses; but, although we made signs to them that we were their friends, they would not hear us, and, beating their shields, cried out lustily to their companions, who, all on a sudden, rushed out in every direction from behind the bushes, and, in a moment, surrounded us. There were from one hundred and fifty to two hundred people, all tall, slender men, half naked, with nothing but a poor ragged cloth around their loins, and another rag, still poorer, around their head, and each armed with a couple of spears and a ragged shield, which they brandished over their heads with warlike gesticulations. The affair seemed rather serious, and here it was fortunate that I had such a clever companion as the Waláti with me; for, while I was pointing my gun, he begged me to ride quietly in advance straight upon these people, and, at the same time, cried out to them that I was a sheriff, and a friend of the Shekh El Bakáy, to whom I was carrying a number of books from the East. All of a sudden they dropped their spears and thronged around me, requesting me to give them my blessing; and the circumstances under

favor with the Almighty was so great that it had some influence upon the fall of rain, all the inhabitants, although Mohammedans, assembled on the second day of El Waláti's absence, and headed by the emír, came to me in procession, and solicited my interference in their behalf for a good shower of rain. I succeeded this time in eluding their solicitations for a direct prayer, satisfying them by expressing my fervent hope that the Almighty would have mercy upon them. But I was so favored, that there was really a moderate shower in the evening, which did a great deal of good to the ground."

At length, after a delay of ten days, he succeeded in reaching the town of Saragamo, only a day's journey distant, and on the 1st of September, embarked for Timbuctoo in a small boat, sending his horses and camels by land. The voyage, which lasted four days, was not attended with any incident worthy of notice. As he approached Timbuctoo, the uncertainties of his position increased, his fate depending entirely on the reception which might be given him by the Emír El Bakáy, a famous Tawárek chief, whose protection he had claimed in advance. The news that this chief was absent from the city tended not a little to increase his disquietude. On the 5th of September, he writes: "The day broke, which, after so many months' exertion, was to carry me to the harbor of Timbuctoo. We started at a tolerably early hour, crossing the broad sheet of the river, first in a north-easterly, then in an almost northerly direction, till finding ourselves opposite the small hamlet Tásakal, mentioned by Caillió, we began to keep along the windings of the northern bank, which, from its low character, presented a very varying appearance, while a creek, separating from the trunk, entered the low ground. The river, a month or two later in the season, inundates the whole country to a great distance, but the magnificent stream, with the exception of a few fishing-boats, now seemed almost tenantless, the only objects which in the present reduced state of the country animated the scenery, being a number of large boats lying at anchor in front of us near the shore of the village Koróme. But the whole character of the river was of the highest interest to me, as it disclosed some new features for which I had not been prepared; for, while the water on which Koróme was situated formed only by far the smaller branch, the chief river, above three quarters of a mile in breadth, took its direction to the south-east, separated from the former by a group of islands called Day.

In the evening Dr. Barth reached Kabara, the port of Timbuctoo, where, after passing an uncomfortable night, he was cheered by the arrival of his horse, and awaited with renewed confidence the expected permission to approach the city. What afterwards transpired he thus relates: "My messengers not returning at the appointed time from their errand to the town, I had at length retired to rest in the evening, when shortly before midnight they arrived, together with Sidi A'lwate, the Shekh El Bakáy's brother, and several of his followers, who took up their quarters on the terrace of my house in order to be out of

had some influence upon Mohammedans, assembled and headed by the emir, interference in their behalf time in eluding their solicitude by expressing my fervent affection upon them. But I was so weak in the evening, which

succeeded in reaching the port, and on the 1st of September, sending his horses and provisions for four days, was not attended to until he approached Timbuctoo, the fate depending entirely on the favor of the Emir El Bakáy, who had claimed in advance. The city tended not a little to be captured in September, he writes: "The exertion, was to carry me to Timbuctoo tolerably early hour, crossing the river westerly, then in an almost direct course opposite the small hamlet Tása-p along the windings of the river, presented a very varying appearance. The trunk, entered the low lands in the season, inundates the magnificent stream, with the mud almost tenantless, the only signs of the country animated the boats lying at anchor in front of us. The whole character of the country disclosed some new features while the water on which Koma, a smaller branch, the chief river, took its direction to the westward to a group of islands called Day. Kábara, the port of Timbuctoo, in the night, he was cheered by the renewed confidence the expected success afterwards transpired he thus retired to rest in the evening, together with Sidi A'lad and several of his followers, who were sent to my house in order to be out of

the reach of the mosquitoes; and after they had been regaled with a good supper, which had been provided beforehand by some of the townspeople, I went to pay my respects to them.

"It was an important interview; for, although this was not the person for whom my visit was specially intended, and whose favorable or unfavorable disposition would influence the whole success of my arduous undertaking, yet for the present I was entirely in his hands, and all depended upon the manner in which he received me. Now my two messengers had only disclosed to himself personally that I was a Christian, while at the same time they had laid great stress upon the circumstance that, although a Christian, I was under the special protection of the Sultan of Stamboul; and Sidi A'lawáte inquired therefore of me, with great earnestness and anxiety, as to the peculiar manner in which I enjoyed the protection of that great Mohammedan sovereign.

"Now it was most unfortunate for me that I had no direct letter from that quarter. Even the firman with which we had been provided by the Pasha of Tripoli had been delivered to the governor for whom it was destined, so that, at the time, I had nothing with me to show but a firman which I had used on my journey in Egypt, and which, of course, had no especial relation to the case in question. The want of such a general letter of protection from the Sultan of Constantinople, which I had solicited, with so much anxiety, to be sent after me, was, in the sequel, the chief cause of my difficulty and dangerous position in Timbuctoo; for, furnished with such a letter, it would have been easy to have imposed silence upon my adversaries and enemies there, and especially upon the merchants from Morocco, who were instigated by the most selfish jealousy to raise all sorts of intrigues against me.

"Having heard my address with attention, although I was not able to establish every point so clearly as I could have wished, the shekh's brother promised me protection, and desired me to be without any apprehension with regard to my safety; and thus terminated my first interview with this man, who, on the whole, inspired me with a certain degree of confidence, although I was glad to think that he was not the man upon whom I had to rely for my safety.

"After a rather restless night, the day broke when I was, at length, to enter Timbuctoo; but we had a good deal of trouble in performing this last short stage of our journey, deprived, as we were, of beasts of burden; for the two camels which the people had brought from the town in order to carry my boxes, proved much too weak, and it was only after a long delay that we were able to procure eleven donkeys for the transport of all my luggage. Meanwhile the rumor of a traveler of importance having arrived had spread far and wide, and several inhabitants of the place sent a breakfast both for myself and my protector.

It was ten o'clock when our cavalcade at length put itself in motion, ascending the sand hills which rise close behind the village of Kábara,

and which, to my great regret, had prevented my obtaining a view of the town from the top of our terrace. The contrast of this desolate scenery with the character of the fertile banks of the river which I had just left behind was remarkable. The whole tract bore decidedly the character of a desert, although the path was thickly lined on both sides with thorny bushes and stunted trees, which were being cleared away in some places, in order to render the path less obstructed and more safe, as the Tawárek never fail to infest it; and, at present, were particularly dreaded on account of their having killed, a few days previously, three petty Tawáti traders on their way to A'rawán. It is from the unsafe character of this short road between the harbor and the town, that the spot about half way between Kábara and Timbuctoo, bears the remarkable name of 'Ur-immánde,' 'he does not hear,' meaning the place where the cry of the unfortunate victim is not heard from either side.

"Having traversed two sunken spots designated by especial names, where, in certain years, when the river rises to an unusual height, as happened in the course of the same winter, the water of the inundation enters, and occasionally forms even a navigable channel, and leaving on one side the talha-tree of the Welí Sálab, covered with innumerable rags of the superstitious natives, who expect to be generously rewarded by their saint with a new shirt, we approached the town; but its dark masses of clay not being illuminated by bright sunshine, for the sky was thickly overcast, and the atmosphere filled with sand, were scarcely to be distinguished from the sand rubbish heaped all around, and there was no opportunity for looking attentively about, as a body of people were coming toward us, in order to pay their compliments to the stranger, and bid him welcome. This was a very important moment, as, if they had felt the slightest suspicion with regard to my character, they might easily have prevented my entering the town at all, and thus even endangered my life.

"I therefore took the hint of A'lawáte, who recommended me to make a start in advance, in order to anticipate the salute of these people who had come to meet us; and, putting my horse to a gallop, and gun in hand, I galloped up to meet them, when I was received with many saláms. But a circumstance occurred which might have proved fatal, not only to my enterprise, but even to my own personal safety, as there was a man among the group who addressed me in Turkish, which I had almost entirely forgotten, so that I could with difficulty make a suitable answer to his compliment; but, avoiding further indiscreet questions, I pushed on, in order to get under safe cover.

"Having then traversed the rubbish which has accumulated around the ruined clay wall of the town, and left on one side a row of dirty reed huts, which encompass the whole of the place, we entered the narrow streets and lanes, or, as the people of Timbuctoo say, the tjerátin, which scarcely allowed two horses to proceed abreast. But I was not

my obtaining a view of contrast of this desolate of the river which I had tract bore decidedly the tively lined on both sides were being cleared away ss obstructed and more at present, were particu- l, a few days previously, 'rawán. It is from the he harbor and the town, nd Timbuctoo, bears the not hear,' meaning the is not heard from either

ated by especial names, to an unusual height, as water of the inundation channel, and leaving on covered with innumerable to be generously rewarded d the town; but its dark sunshino, for the sky was h sand, were scarcely to all around, and there was as a body of people were pliments to the stranger, rtant moment, as, if they my character, they might t all, and thus even endan-

who recommended me to o the salute of these people horse to a gallop, and gun I was received with many might have proved fatal, n personal safety, as there no in Turkish, which I had h difficulty make a suitable her indiscreet questions, I

h has accumulated around on one side a row of dirty place, we entered the nar- timbuctoo say, the tjerátin, ed abreast. But I was not

a little surprised at the populous and wealthy character which this quarter of the town, the Sáno Gúngu, exhibited, many of the houses rising to the height of two stories, and, in their facade, evincing even an attempt at architectural adornment. Thus, taking a more westerly turn, and followed by a numerous troop of people, we passed the house of the Shekh El Bakáy, where I was desired to fire a pistol, but, as I had all my arms loaded with ball, I prudently declined to do so, and left it to one of my people to do honor to the house of our host. We thus reached the house on the other side of the street, which was destined for my residence, and I was glad when I found myself safely in my new quarters."

The long-continued excitement and uncertainty which Dr. Barth had endured occasioned a violent attack of fever the same evening. His depression was not removed on hearing, the next morning, that Hammadi, the rival and enemy of El Bakáy, had informed the Fullan inhabitants that a Christian had entered the town, and they had come to the determination of killing him. A'lawáto also exhibited more greed and rapacity than even Waláti had done, and the traveler was forced to submit to his exactions. After a day or two, however, he received visits from some of the inhabitants, and began to feel more secure, though still obliged to keep within the house assigned to him. On the 13th he received a letter from El Bakáy, assuring him of welcome and protection, but, in spite of this, continued to be annoyed by the intrigues of the shekh's brother. A'lawáto. He thus describes his manner of life:

"I was not allowed to stir about, but was confined within the walls of my house. In order to obviate the effect of this want of exercise as much as possible, to enjoy fresh air, and, at the same time, to become familiar with the principal features of the town, through which I was not allowed to move about at pleasure, I ascended, as often as possible, the terrace of my house. This afforded an excellent view over the northern quarters of the town. On the north was the massive mosque of Sánkóré, which had just been restored to all its former grandeur through the influence of the Shekh El Bakáy, and gave the whole place an imposing character. Neither the mosque Sidi Yáhia, nor the 'great mosque,' or Jingeré-bér, was seen from this point; but toward the east the view extended over a wide expanse of the desert, and toward the south the elevated mansions of the Ghadámsiye merchants were visible. The style of the buildings was various. I could see clay houses of different characters, some low and raseemly, others rising, with a second story in front, to greater elevation, and making even an attempt at architectural ornament, the whole being interrupted by a few round huts of matting. The sight of this spectacle afforded me sufficient matter of interest, although, the streets being very narrow, only little was to be seen of the intercourse carried on in them, with the exception of the small market in the northern quarter, which was exposed to

view on account of its situation on the slope of the sand-hills, which, in course of time, have accumulated around the mosque.

"But while the terrace of my house served to make me well acquainted with the character of the town, it had also the disadvantage of exposing me fully to the gaze of the passers-by, so that I could only slowly, and with many interruptions, succeed in making a sketch of the scene thus offered to my view. At the same time, I became aware of the great inaccuracy which characterizes the view of the town as given by M. Caillié; still, on the whole, the character of the single dwellings was well represented by that traveler, the only error being that, in his representation, the whole town seems to consist of scattered and quite isolated houses, while, in reality, the streets are entirely shut in, as the dwellings form continuous and uninterrupted rows. But it must be taken into account that Timbuctoo, at the time of Caillié's visit, was not so well off as it is at present, having been overrun by the Fúlbe the preceding year, and he had no opportunity of making a drawing on the spot."

Finally, on the 26th of September, El Bakáy arrived, but as Dr. Barth was then prostrated with fever, he did not visit his protector until the next day. This was the anniversary of Mr. Overweg's death, and the survivor, worn out by illness and harassed by continual anxiety, anticipated a similar termination of his own labors. It was necessary, however, to assume a degree of cheerfulness on visiting El Bakáy, whose house was almost opposite his own, in the same street. "Ahmed el Bakáy, son of Sidi Mohammed, of the tribe of the Kumba," says Dr. Barth, "was at that time a man of about fifty years of age, rather above the middle height, full-proportioned, with a cheerful, intelligent, and almost European countenance, of a rather blackish complexion, with whiskers of tolerable length, intermingled with some gray hair, and with dark eye-lashes. His dress consisted at the time of nothing but a black robe, a fringed shawl thrown loosely over the head, and trowsers, both of the same color.

"I found my host in the small upper room on the terrace, in company with his young nephew, Mohammed ben Khottár, and two confidential pupils, and, at the very first glance which I obtained of him, I was agreeably surprised at finding a man whose countenance itself bore testimony to a straightforward and manly character; both which qualities I had found so sadly wanting in his younger brother, Sidi A'lawáte. Cheered by the expression of good nature in his countenance as he rose from his seat to receive me, and relieved from all anxiety, I paid him my compliments with entire confidence, and entered into a conversation which was devoid of any affected and empty ceremonious phrases, but from the first moment was an unrestrained exchange of thoughts between two persons who, with great national diversity of manners and ideas, meet for the first time.

"Thus the month of September," he adds, "concluded satisfactorily

the sand-hills, which, in
mosque.

erved to make me well
had also the disadvantage
by, so that I could only
n making a sketch of the
time, I became aware of
view of the town as given
er of the single dwellings
y error being that, in his
ist of scattered and quite
o entirely shut in, as the
l rows. But it must be
o of Caillió's visit, was not
run by the Fúlbe the pre-
making a drawing on the

Bakáy arrived, but as Dr.
did not visit his protector
of Mr. Overweg's death,
assed by continual anxiety,
labors. It was necessary,
n visiting El Bakáy, whose
same street. "Ahmed el
of the Kumba," says Dr.
years of age, rather above
a cheerful, intelligent, and
blackish complexion, with
h some gray hair, and with
ime of nothing but a black
e head, and trowsers, both

om on the terrace, in com-
en Khottár, and two confi-
which I obtained of him, I
ose countenance itself bore
character; both which quali-
nger brother, Sidi A'lawáte.
n his countenance as he rose
om all anxiety, I paid him
entered into a conversation
ty ceremonious phrases, but
change of thoughts between
rsity of manners and ideas,

ds, "concluded satisfactorily

and most auspiciously, as it seemed. For I had not only succeeded in reaching in safety this city, but I was also well received on the whole; and the only question seemed to be how I was to return home by the earliest opportunity and the safest route. But all my prospects changed with the 1st of the ensuing month, when the difficulties of my situation increased, and all hopes of a speedy departure appeared to be at an end; for in the afternoon of the 1st of October, a considerable troop of armed men, mustering about twenty muskets, arrived from Hamda-Alláhi, the residence of the Shekho A'hmedu ben A'hmedu, to whose nominal sway the town of Timbuctoo and the whole province has been subjected since the conquest of the town in the beginning of the year 1826. These people brought with them an order from the capital to drive me out of the town; and Hammádi, the nephew and rival of the Shekh El Bakáy, feeling himself strengthened by the arrival of such a force, availed himself of so excellent an opportunity of enhancing his influence, and, in consequence, issued a proclamation to the inhabitants of the town, commanding them, in stringent terms, to attend to the orders of the emir, and in the event of my offering resistance, not even to spare my life.

"There can scarcely be any doubt that my protector, as far as a man of a rather weak character was capable of any firm resolution, had intended to send me off by the very first opportunity that should offer; but the order issued by the emir of Hamda-Alláhi (to whose authority he was vehemently opposed), that I should be forthwith driven out of the town or slain, roused his spirit of opposition. He felt, too, that the difficulties of my leaving this place in safety were thus greatly augmented. All thoughts of my immediate departure were therefore set aside; partly, no doubt, from regard to my security, but much more from an anxious desire to show the Fulán, or Fúlbe, that he was able to keep me here, notwithstanding their hostile disposition and their endeavors to the contrary."

The real difficulty appears to have been the mutual jealousy and hostility of the two parties in the city, headed by El Bakáy and Hammadi, rather than the presence of Dr. Barth, which was used as a pretext by the latter. It therefore became a matter of pride and policy on the part of El Bakáy to retain the traveler, since his departure would have been an acknowledgment of defeat. Dr. Barth's position was most anxious and perplexing. As the relative strength of the two parties fluctuated, he was taken into the city, or removed to El Bakáy's camp, seven miles distant. A large number of the inhabitants, who took no part in these endless quarrels, evidently regarded him with good-will. The first retreat to the desert camp took place on the 11th of October, but on the 13th they all returned again to the city. The remainder of the month was spent there, and the following month at the camp.

Dr. Barth gives the following description of Timbuctoo: "The city of Timbuctoo, according to Dr. Petermann's laying down of it from my materials, lies in 17° 37' north and 3° 5' west of Greenwich. Situated

only a few feet above the average level of the river, and at a distance of six miles from the principal branch, it at present forms a sort of triangle, the base of which points toward the river, while the projecting angle is directed toward the north, having for its center the mosque of Sankoré. But, during the zenith of its power, the town extended a thousand yards further north, and included the tomb of the Faki Mahmúd, which, according to some of my informants, was then situated in the midst of the town.

"The circumference of the city at the present time I reckon at a little more than two miles and a half; but it may approach closely to three miles, taking into account some of the projecting angles. Although of only small size, Timbuctoo may well be called a city—medina—in comparison with the frail dwelling-places all over Negroland. At present it is not walled. Its former wall, which seems never to have been of great magnitude, and was rather more of the nature of a rampart, was destroyed by the Fúlbe on their first entering the place in the beginning of the year 1826. The town is laid out partly in rectangular, partly in winding streets, or, as they are called here, 'tjerátén,' which are not paved, but for the greater part consist of hard sand and gravel, and some of them have a sort of gutter in the middle. Besides the large and the small market there are few open areas, except a small square in front of the mosque of Yáhía, called Tumbutubóttema.

"Small as it is, the city is tolerably well inhabited, and almost all the houses are in good repair. There are about nine hundred and eighty clay houses, and a couple of hundred conical huts of matting, the latter, with a few exceptions, constituting the outskirts of the town on the north and north-east sides, where a great deal of rubbish, which has been accumulating in the course of several centuries, is formed into conspicuous mounds. The clay houses are all of them built on the same principle as my own residence, which I have described, with the exception that the houses of the poorer people have only one court-yard, and have no upper room on the terrace.

"The only remarkable public buildings in the town are the three large mosques: the Jingeré-bér, built by Mansa Músa; the mosque of Sankoré, built at an early period at the expense of a wealthy woman; and the mosque Sidi Yáhía, built at the expense of a kádhi of the town. There were three other mosques: that of Sidi Háj Mohammed, Msíd Belál, and that of Sidi el Bámi. These mosques, and perhaps some little msíd, or place of prayer, Caillié must have included when he speaks of seven mosques. Besides these mosques there are at present no distinguished public buildings in the town; and of the royal palace, or M'adugu, wherein the kings of Songhay used to reside occasionally, as well as the Kasbah, which was built in later times, in the south-eastern quarter, or the 'Sane-gungu,' which already at that time was inhabited by the merchants from Ghadámes, not a trace is to be seen. Besides this quarter, which is the wealthiest, and contains the best houses, there are

the river, and at a distance
ent forms a sort of trian-
while the projecting angle
ater the mosque of Sankoré.
extended a thousand yards
he Faki Mahmúd, which,
en situated in the midst of

present time I reckon at a
it may approach closely to
projecting angles. Although
called a city—*medina*—in
over Negroland. At pres-
seems never to have been
of the nature of a rampart,
tering the place in the be-
l out partly in rectangular,
led here, 'tíjeráten,' which
st of hard sand and gravel,
the middle. Besides the
open areas, except a small
d Tumbutubóttema.

l inhabited, and almost all
ut nine hundred and eighty
huts of matting, the latter,
skirts of the town on the
deal of rubbish, which has
centuries, is formed into con-
of them built on the same
described, with the excep-
ve only one court-yard, and

in the town are the three
ansa Músa; the mosque of
ense of a wealthy woman;
ense of a kádhi of the town.
Sidi Háj Mohammed, Msid
ques, and perhaps some little
included when he speaks of
ero are at present no distin-
of the royal palace, or M'a-
o reside occasionally, as well
s, in the south-eastern quar-
that time was inhabited by
is to be seen. Besides this
as the best houses, there are

six other quarters, viz., Yúbu, the quarter comprising the great market-
place (*yúbu*) and the mosque of Sidi Yáhia, to the west of Sane-gungu;
and west of the former, forming the south-western angle of the town,
and called, from the great mosque, Jingeré-bér or Zangeré-bér. This
latter quarter, from the most ancient times, seems to have been inhab-
ited especially by Mohammedans, and not unlikely may have formed a
distinct quarter, separated from the rest of the town by a wall of its own.
Toward the north, the quarter Sane-gungu is bordered by the one called
Sara-káina, meaning literally the 'little town,' and containing the resi-
dence of the shekh and the house where I myself was lodged. Attached
to Sara-káina, toward the north, is Yúbu-káina, the quarter containing
the 'little market,' which is especially used as a butchers' market. Bor-
dering on Jingeré-bér and Yúbu-káina is the quarter Baginda, occupying
the lowest situation in the town, and stated by the inhabitants to have
been flooded entirely in the great inundation which took place in 1640.
From this depression in the ground, the quarter of Sankoré, which forms
the northernmost angle of the city, rises to a considerable elevation, in
such a manner that the mosque of Sankoré, which seems to occupy its
ancient site and level, is at present situated in a deep hollow—an appear-
ance which seems to prove that this elevation of the ground is caused by
the accumulation of rubbish, in consequence of the repeated ruin which
seems to have befallen this quarter preëminently, as being the chief
stronghold of the native Songhay. The slope which this quarter forms
toward the north-eastern end in some spots exceeds eighty feet.

"The whole number of the settled inhabitants of the town amounts
to about 13,000, while the floating population during the months of the
greatest traffic and intercourse, especially from November to January,
may amount on an average to 5000, and under favorable circumstances
to as many as 10,000.

"The only manufactures carried on in the city, as far as fell under
my observation, are confined to the art of the blacksmith, and to a lit-
tle leather-work. Some of these articles, such as provision or luggage
bags, cushions, small leather pouches for tobacco, and gun-cloths, es-
pecially the leather bags, are very neat; but even these are mostly
manufactured by Tawárek, and especially females, so that the industry
of the city is hardly of any account. It was formerly supposed that
Timbuctoo was distinguished on account of its weaving, and that the ex-
port of dyed shirts from hence was considerable; but this is entirely a
mistake, almost the whole clothing of the natives themselves, especially
that of the wealthier classes, being imported either from Kanó or from
Sansánda, besides the calico imported from England. The export of the
produce of Kanó, especially by way of A'rawán, extends to the very
border of the Atlantic, where it comes into contact with the consider-
able import of Malabar cloth by way of St. Louis, or Ndér, on the
Senegal, while the dyed shirts from Sansánda, which, so far as I had an
opportunity of observing, seemed to be made of foreign or English

calico, and not of native cotton, do not appear to be exported to a greater distance. These shirts are generally distinguished by their rich ornament of colored silk, and look very pretty; and I am sorry that I was obliged to give away as a present a specimen which I intended to bring home with me. The people of Timbuctoo are very experienced in the art of adorning their clothing with a fine stitching of silk, but this is done on a very small scale, and even these shirts are only used at home. There is, however, a very considerable degree of industry exercised by the natives of some of the neighboring districts, especially Fermágha, who produce very excellent woolen blankets, and carpets of various colors, which form a most extensive article of consumption with the natives.

"The foreign commerce has especially three great high roads: that along the river from the south-west (for lower down the river there is at present scarcely any commerce at all), which comprises the trade proceeding from various points; and two roads from the north, that from Morocco on the one hand, and that from Ghadámes on the other. In all this commerce gold forms the chief staple, although the whole amount of the precious metal exported from this city appears to be exceedingly small, if compared with a European standard. It probably does not exceed an average of £20,000 sterling per year."

The greater part of the winter was spent at the camp of El Bakáy, a few miles from Timbuctoo. On the 1st of December, and again on the 16th of February, 1854, an attack was threatened, and was prevented only by the determined attitude of Dr. Barth, and the fidelity of El Bakáy. Thus, in a state of alternate excitement and inaction, seven months passed away, permission to depart being always promised, and as often delayed, for some political reason. After completing his journal and letters to Europe, he passed the time in conversation with the shekh and his friends, by whom he seems to have been regarded with much esteem. His journal of the residence in Timbuctoo is filled with recapitulations of the quarrels of the two rival chiefs, and the various intrigues of which he was ostensibly the cause.

Finally, on the 31st of March, 1854, El Bakáy brought Dr. Barth's luggage to the camp, intimating that he would soon be allowed to depart. It was not, however, until the 19th of April that the chief began to move. After a march of eleven days he received news which induced him to turn about and retrace his steps to Timbuctoo; Dr. Barth, overcome by the most gloomy forebodings, was obliged to accompany him. The chief endeavored to excuse himself, perceiving that the former was dissatisfied and mistrustful, and the event proved that he had acted only out of extreme caution, and perhaps for the best. He finally allowed Barth to remain in the neighborhood of the village of Ernesse, among the Tawáreks, while he proceeded alone to Timbuctoo.

On the 17th of May, the long suspense was happily terminated.

S TRAVELS.

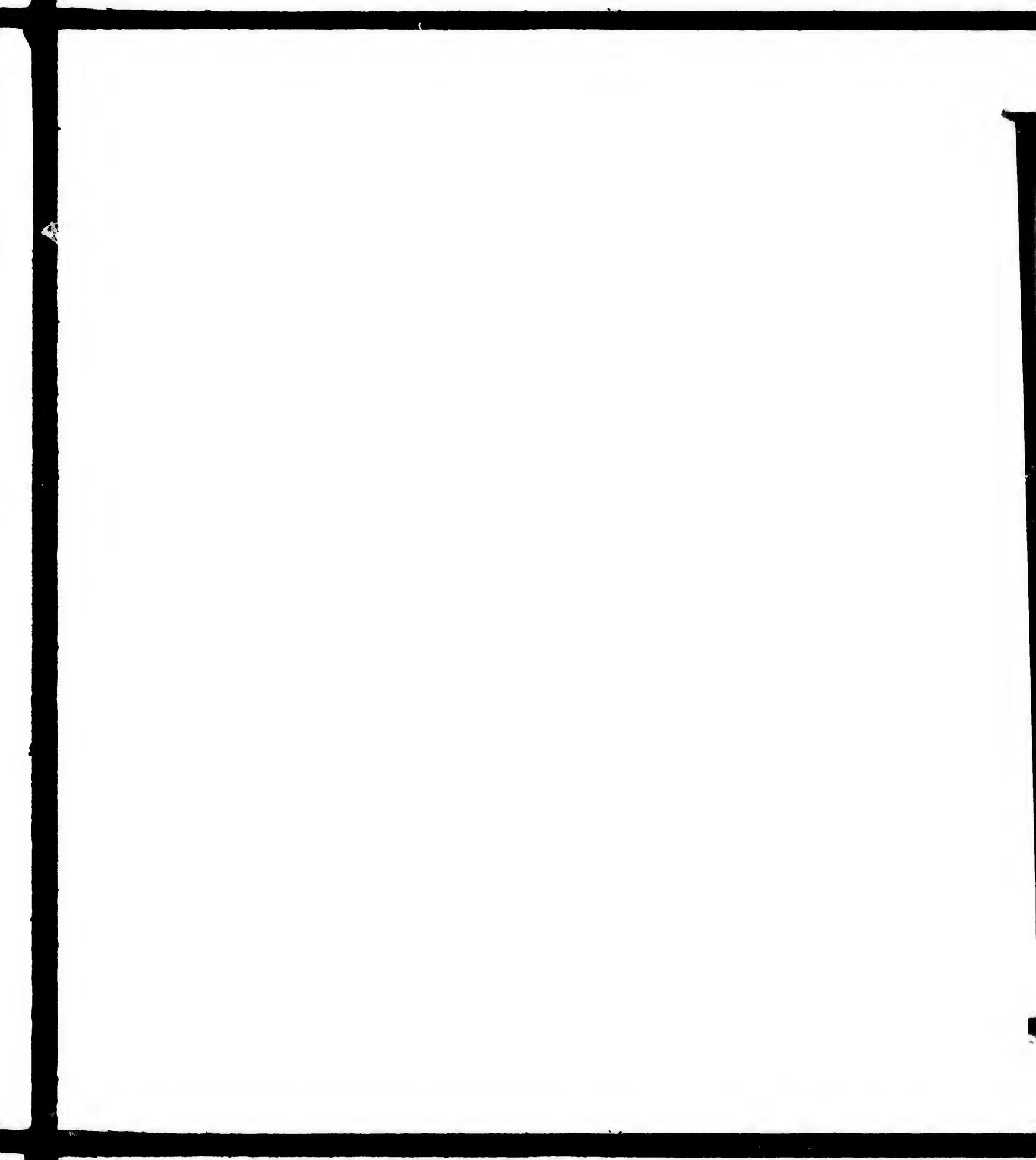
ear to be exported to a
stinguished by their rich
; and I am sorry that I
men which I intended to
too are very experienced
fine stitching of silk, but
ese shirts are only used at
degree of industry ex-
oring districts, especially
en blankets, and carpets
e article of consumption

the great high roads: that
down the river there is at
comprises the trade pro-
from the north, that from
ámes on the other. In all
though the whole amount
appears to be exceedingly
It probably does not ex-

at the camp of El Bakáy,
December, and again on the
ceded, and was prevented
rth, and the fidelity of El
ment and inaction, seven
ing always promised, and
After completing his jour-
e in conversation with the
have been regarded with
n Timbuctoo is filled with
val chiefs, and the various
e.

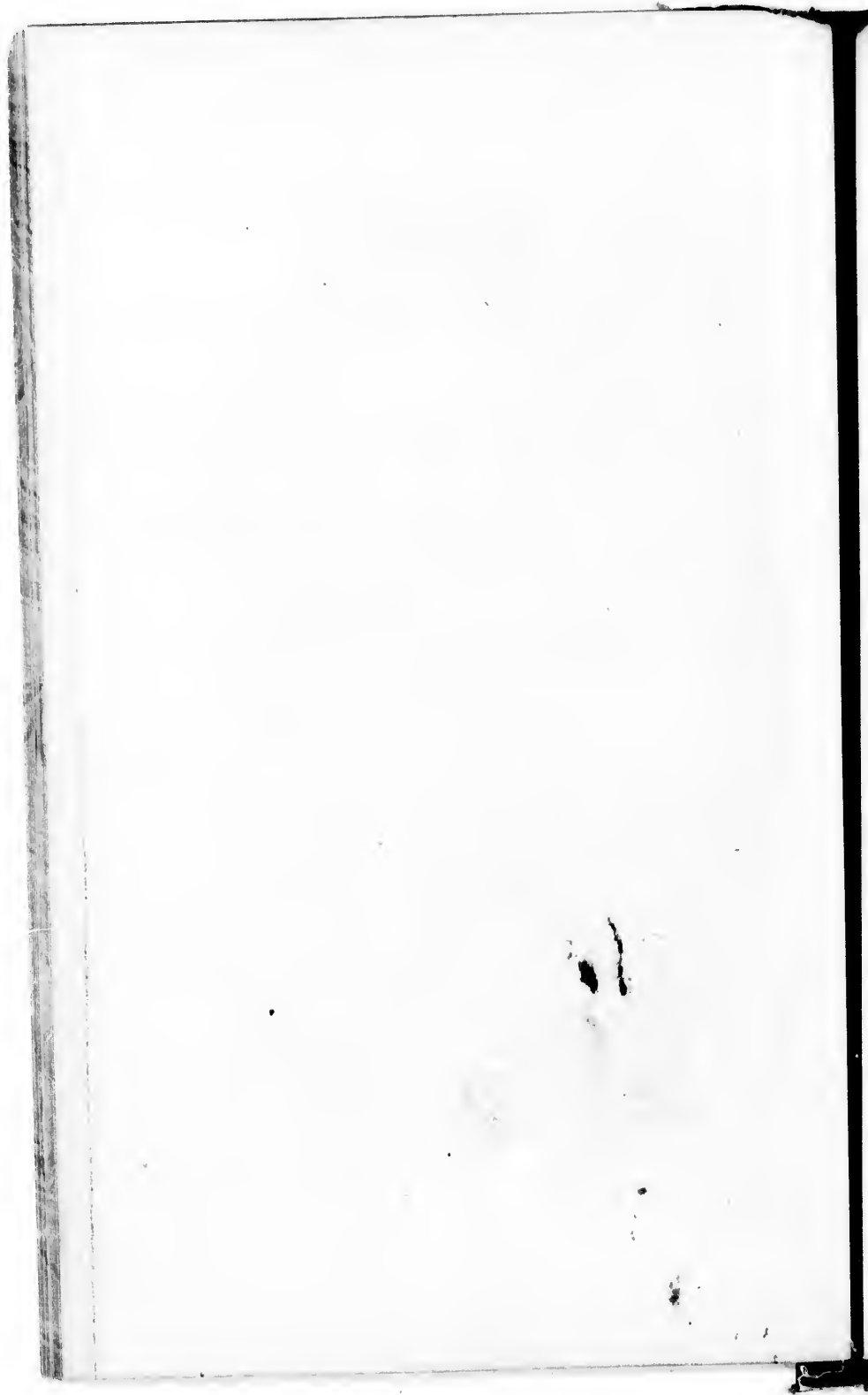
Bakáy brought Dr. Barth's
would soon be allowed to
h of April that the chief
ys he received news which
s steps to Timbuctoo; Dr.
odings, was obliged to ac-
use himself, perceiving that
and the event proved that
and perhaps for the best.
ighborhood of the village
roceeded alone to Timbuc-

e was happily terminated.



TIMBUCTOO. Page 950.





"About noon the whole encampment was thrown into a state of the greatest excitement by the arrival of two of the shekh's followers, who informed us that our friend had not only left the camp, but had even passed us, keeping along the northern border of the swamp which stretched behind our camping-ground. All was joy and excitement, and in an instant my tent was struck and my luggage arranged on the backs of the camels. But we had to take a very roundabout way to get out of this place, surrounded and insulated as it was by deep swamps. We had just marched three hours when we found ourselves opposite our encampment on the downs, separated from them by the swampy ground of about half a mile in extent.

"Uncertain as to the direction which our friend had taken, we now began to rove about, here and there, in search of him. Leaving then behind us the low downs, we entered again low swampy ground, and at length, after having traversed a thickly-wooded district, ascertained the spot whither the shekh had betaken himself, which was at a place called A'kale, the eminence on the bank of the river being called E'm-alawen. But, when we at length reached it, we found the holy man sleeping in the shade of a siwák, or *Capparis*, and the noise of our horses, as we came galloping along, was not sufficient to awaken him from his deep slumber. Such was the mild and inoffensive character of this man in the midst of these warlike and lawless hordes.

"Waiting till my protector should rise from his peaceful slumber, I sat down in the shade of a rich siwák, enjoying the faint prospect of my journey home, now opening before me. At length my friend awoke, and I went to him. He received me with a gentle smile, telling me that he was now ready to conduct me on my journey without any further delay or obstruction, and handing me at the same time a parcel of letters and papers. These were copies of two letters from Lord John Russell, of the 19th February, 1853; one from Lord Clarendon, of the 24th of the same month; a letter from Chevalier Bunsen; another from Colonel Hermann; and two from her majesty's agent in Fezzan. There were no other letters, either from home or from any of my friends; but there were, besides, ten Galignanis, and a number of the Athenæum, of the 19th March, 1853."

On the following day the journey eastward was resumed, and the traveler recovered all his cheerfulness and energy with the sense of relief which this movement gave him. Marching by slow stages, through a thinly-settled and desert country, crossed by side-arms of the Niger—the back-water of which, in the rainy season, forms innumerable creeks and marshes—the caravan reached the ancient and important town of Gogo (hitherto unknown to Europeans) on the 18th of June. This place was in former times the capital of a great empire, and even yet is only second to Timbuctoo. Here Dr. Barth remained until the 8th of July, and was present at the interviews between El Bak'iy and the neighboring chief.

"At length," says he, "the day dawned when I was, in reality, to

begin my home-journey, for all our former movements along the river had rather resembled the wanderings of the natives themselves than the direct march of a European traveler, and although I felt sincerely attached to my protector, and under other circumstances might still have found a great many objects worthy of my investigation and research in this region, I could not but feel greatly satisfied at being at length enabled to retrace my steps homeward, with a tolerable guarantee as to my safety. It was highly gratifying to me that when I left this place a great many people wished me a hearty farewell and a prosperous journey.

"Sunday, July 9th.—This was the day when I had to separate from the person whom, among all the people with whom I had come in contact in the course of my long journey, I esteemed the most highly, and whom, in all but his dilatory habits and phlegmatic indifference, I had found a most excellent and trustworthy man. I had lived with him for so long a time in daily intercourse, and in the most turbulent circumstances, sharing all his perplexities and anxieties, that I could not but feel the parting very severely. Having exhorted the messengers whom he was to send along with me never to quarrel, and to follow implicitly my advice in all cases, but especially with regard to the rate of progress, as he knew that I was impatiently looking forward to my home-journey, he gave me his blessing, and assured me that I should certainly reach home in safety."

Crossing the Niger just below Gogo, he continued his journey down the western bank towards Say, where he had first struck the great river, a year before. His account of this region is not so full and explicit as might be desired, considering that it had never before been visited by a European. The only incident which occurred, was the narrow escape of the party from an attack by a body of a hundred armed natives, who rushed out of a thicket upon them. Fortunately they were able to satisfy the savages of their peaceful intentions, and thus avoided a bloody conflict. At the end of July the party reached Say in safety.

"It was with a deep feeling of satisfaction," says the traveler, "that I again crossed this magnificent river, on whose banks I had lived for so long a time, and the course of which I had followed for so many hundred miles. It would have been of no small importance if I had been able to follow its banks as far as Yaúri, and thus to connect by my own inspection the middle course of this noble river with the lower part, as far as it has been visited by the Landers, and partly, at least, by various distinguished English officers. But such an undertaking was entirely out of the question, on account of the exhausted state of my means, the weak condition of my health, and the advanced stage of the rainy season, which made it absolutely necessary for me to reach Soccatoo as soon as possible; and, what was still more, in consequence of the rebellious state of the province of Déndino, which at the time made any intercourse along the river impossible for so small a troop as I had then

vements along the river
ives themselves than the
ough I felt sincerely at-
stances might still have
stigation and research in
ed at being at length en-
olerable guarantee as to
t when I left this place a
l and a prosperous jour-

en I had to separate from
whom I had come in con-
ned the most highly, and
matic indifference, I had
I had lived with him for
e most turbulent circum-
ies, that I could not but
ted the messengers whom
l, and to follow implicitly
ard to the rate of prog-
ng forward to my home-
ed me that I should cer-

continued his journey down
first struck the great river,
not so full and explicit as
ver before been visited by
ed, was the narrow escape
undred armed natives, who
unately they were able to
ions, and thus avoided a
y reached Say in safety.

," says the traveler, "that
se banks I had lived for so
followed for so many hun-
l importance if I had been
thus to connect by my own
ver with the lower part, as
t partly, at least, by various
n undertaking was entirely
hausted state of my means,
dvanced stage of the rainy
for me to reach Soccatoo as
in consequence of the re-
which at the time made any
small a troop as I had then

under my command. At this season of the year, moreover, it would be impracticable.

"This time also I had succeeded in crossing the river without any accident, with the single exception that a camel which belonged to one of my companions was so obstinate that it was found impossible to induce it to enter the boats, which were not of the same size as those of the preceding year. It was thus forced to cross the river by swimming alongside, and arrived in the most exhausted state, the river being about nine hundred yards across. The nearest village being too far off, we were obliged to encamp for the night on the gentle grassy slope of the bank, which, a little above and below the place of embarkation, form steep cliffs of about eighty feet elevation. The evening was beautiful, and the scenery of the river, with the feathery doum-palms on the opposite shore, was lovely in the extreme, and well adapted to leave on my mind a lasting impression of the magnificent watery high road which Nature has opened into the heart of this continent. Thus I took leave of the Niger."

The return from Say to Soccatoo was accomplished in three weeks, with the usual amount of annoyances, but with no incident of especial importance. On Dr. Barth's arrival at Wurno, the residence of Sultan Alfyu, on the 30th of August, he was taken sick, and obliged to remain there until the 4th of October. Ten days afterwards he reached Kano, where difficulties of another kind awaited him. He found neither letters nor supplies, and was entirely destitute of means, having paid nothing to his servants during the whole journey from Kouka to Timbuctoo and back. Dr. Vogel's arrival he had heard of, accidentally, from a liberated slave in Kouka, and a month afterwards, he received intelligence, in the same indirect way, of Dr. Baikie's expedition up the Benue. Singularly enough, no mention had been made of this expedition (one object of which was to bring Dr. Barth to Europe,) in the dispatches sent by Lord Palmerston. There were still four hundred dollars and a box of cutlery at Zinder, as Barth supposed, but during the attempt which had been made to depose the Sultan of Bornou, the latter had seized upon this property, alleging, as an excuse, the report of the traveler's death at Timbuctoo—: report which, there is reason to believe, he himself invented. After a detention of a month in Kano, Dr. Barth finally procured a loan of two hundred dollars from a merchant of Fezzan, and an advance of like amount from two merchants of Ghadamse, to be repaid with 100 per cent. in Tripoli, and was thus enabled to pay his debts and continue his journey. Before setting out, however, he was somewhat cheered by the news that the rebellion in Bornou had been unsuccessful, and the road thither was therefore secure.

Leaving Kano on the 21st of November, he took the direct route to Kouka, and, on the 1st of December, was so fortunate as to encounter his young associate, Dr. Vogel. He thus describes the meeting:

"I reached Bundi after a short march, proceeding in advance of my

camels, in order to pay my compliments to the governor, and to obtain from him an escort through the unsafe district which intervened between this town and Zurrükulo. After a little tergiversation, my old friend, the ghaladima, 'Omár, acceded to my request, giving me a guide, who, he assured me, would procure an escort for me in the village of Sheshéri, where a squadron of horse was stationed for the greater security of the road. I had experienced the inhospitable disposition of this officer during my former stay here, and felt, therefore, little inclination to be his guest a second time; but if I had had any foreboding that Mr. Vogel was so near at hand, I would gladly have made some stay.

"Having rejoined my camels, I set out, without delay, through the forest, taking the lead with my head servant; but I had scarcely proceeded three miles when I saw advancing toward me a person of strange aspect—a young man of very fair complexion, dressed in a tobe like the one I wore myself, and with a white turban wound thickly around his head. He was accompanied by two or three blacks, likewise on horseback. One of them I recognized as my servant M'adi, whom, on setting out from Kouka, I had left in the house as a guardian. As soon as he saw me he told the young man that I was 'Abd el Kerim, in consequence of which, Mr. Vogel (for he it was) rushed forward, and, taken by surprise, as both of us were, we gave each other a hearty reception from horseback. As for myself, I had not the remotest idea of meeting him, and he, on his part, had only a short time before received the intelligence of my safe return from the West. Not having the slightest notion that I was alive, and judging, from its Arab address, that the letter which I forwarded to him from Kano was a letter from some Arab, he had put it by without opening it, waiting till he might meet with a person who should be able to read it.

"In the midst of this inhospitable forest we dismounted, and sat down together on the ground, and, my camels having arrived, I took out my small bag of provisions, and had some coffee boiled, so that we were quite at home. It was with great amazement that I heard from my young friend that there were no supplies in Kúhawa; that what he had brought with him had been spent, and that the usurper 'Abd el Rahman had treated him very badly, having even taken possession of the property which I had left in Zinder. He moreover informed me that he himself was on his way to that place, in order to see whether fresh supplies had not arrived, being also anxious to determine the position of that important town by an astronomical observation, and thus to give a firmer basis to my own labors. But the news of the want of pecuniary supplies did not cause me so much surprise as the report which I received from him that he did not possess a single bottle of wine; for having now been for more than three years without a drop of any stimulant except coffee, and having suffered severely from frequent attacks of fever and dysentery, I had an insuperable longing for the juice of the grape, of which former experience had taught me the ben-

governor, and to obtain which intervened between conversation, my old friend, giving me a guide, who, in the village of Sheshéri, the greater security of the disposition of this officer, little inclination to be foreboding that Mr. Vogel some stay.

Without delay, through the but I had scarcely pro- ward me a person of strange dressed in a robe like the wound thickly around his blacks, likewise on horse- t M'adi, whom, on setting guardian. As soon as he el Kerim, in consequence forward, and, taken by sur- r a hearty reception from otest idea of meeting him, efore received the intelli- having the slightest notion o address, that the letter letter from some Arab, he he might meet with a per-

we dismounted, and sat els having arrived, I took e coffee boiled, so that we zement that I heard from in Kúhawa; that what he t that the usurper 'Abd e' y even taken possession of He moreover informed me ce, in order to see whether ions to determine the posi- cal observation, and thus to t the news of the want of uch surprise as the report t possess a single bottle of eree years without a drop of ered severely from frequent nsuperable longing for the nce had taught me the ben-

est. On my former journey through Asia Minor I had contracted a serious fever in the swamps of Lycia, and quickly regained my strength by the use of good French wine. I could not help reproaching my friend for having too hastily believed the news of my death before he had made all possible inquiries; but, as he was a new comer into this country, and did not possess a knowledge of the language, I could easily perceive that he had no means of ascertaining the truth or falsehood of those reports."

On reaching Kouka, Dr. Barth was received with much honor by the sultan, but was disappointed in finding no further supplies. He was therefore obliged to remain four months longer before commencing the journey to Tripoli. Corporals Church and McGuire, the two sappers who had accompanied Dr. Vogel, were in Kouka, and, on the 29th of December, the latter arrived. Dr. Barth then devoted his time to giving the necessary instructions to the new explorers, and to healing the ill-will which prevailed between them; but, unfortunately, he was only partially successful. On the 20th of January, 1855, Dr. Vogel started for Yakoba with his companions, taking a final leave of Dr. Barth, who was obliged to remain in Kouka until the 9th of May.

He chose the old caravan route to Fezzan by way of Bilma, the same traveled by Denham and Clapperton. Leaving the frontier of Bornou on the 19th of May, he reached the first station in Fezzan on the 4th of July, and Mourzuk on the 14th. Remaining here a week, he started on the last stage of the journey to Tripoli, which was then exceedingly dangerous on account of a revolution having broken out among the independent tribes. However, he boldly pushed through the disturbed district, and, on the 24th of August, reached the little oasis of Ain Zara, but a short distance from Tripoli. He thus concludes the narrative of his long and eventful wanderings:

"Having spent a cheerful evening in the company of the consul, I set out the following morning on my last march on the African soil, in order to enter the town of Tripoli; and although the impression made upon my mind by the rich vegetation of the gardens which surround the town, after the long journey through the desert waste, was very great, yet infinitely greater was the effect produced upon me by the wide expanse of the sea, which, in the bright sunshine of this intermediate zone, spread out with a tint of the darkest blue. I felt so grateful to Providence for having again reached in safety the border of this Mediterranean basin, the cradle of European civilization, which, from an early period, had formed the object of my earnest longings and most serious course of studies, that I would fain have alighted from my horse on the sea beach to offer up a prayer of thanksgiving to the Almighty, who, with the most conspicuous mercy, had led me through the many dangers which surrounded my path, both from fanatical men and an unhealthy climate."

* * * * *

"Thus I closed my long and exhausting career as an African explorer, of which this narrative endeavors to incorporate the result. Having previously gained a good deal of experience of African traveling during an extensive journey through Barbary, I had embarked on this undertaking as a volunteer, under the most unfavorable circumstances for myself. The scale and the means of the mission seemed to be extremely limited, and it was only in consequence of the success which accompanied our proceedings that a wider extent was given to the range and objects of the expedition; and after its original leader had succumbed in his arduous task, instead of giving way to despair, I had continued in my career amid great embarrassment, carrying on the explorations of extensive regions almost without any means. And when the leadership of the mission, in consequence of the confidence of her majesty's government, was intrusted to me, and I had been deprived of the only European companion who remained with me, I resolved upon undertaking, with a very limited supply of means, a journey to the far west, in order to endeavor to reach Timbuctoo, and to explore that part of the Niger which, through the untimely fate of Mungo Park, had remained unknown to the scientific world.

"In this enterprise I succeeded to my utmost expectation, and not only made known the whole of that vast region which, even to the Arab merchants in general, had remained more unknown than any other part of Africa, but I succeeded also in establishing friendly relations with all the most powerful chiefs along the river up to that mysterious city itself. The whole of this was achieved, including the payment of the debts left by the former expedition, and two hundred pounds which I contributed myself, with the sum of about sixteen hundred pounds. No doubt, even in the track which I myself pursued, I have left a good deal for my successors in this career to improve upon; but I have the satisfaction to feel that I have opened to the view of the scientific public of Europe a most extensive tract of the secluded African world, and not only made it tolerably known, but rendered the opening of a regular intercourse between Europeans and those regions possible."

After Dr. Barth's return to Europe, Dr. Vogel determined to complete the undertaking contemplated by Dr. Barth, and pass eastward through the countries lying between Lake Tsad and the Nile. After his return from Yakoba, which he succeeded in reaching, he prepared for an expedition to Adamowa, intending to visit the countries of Tibati and Baya, lying to the south-east of that kingdom, and then pursue his journey through Baghirmi, Waday and Dar-Fur to the White Nile. The whole of this plan was not carried out, but he appears to have reached Wara, the capital of Waday, in the early part of the year 1856, accompanied by Corporal Church, leaving McGuire in charge of his house at Kouka. For some time nothing more was heard from him;

ing career as an African
to incorporate the result.
ience of African traveling
I had embarked on this
unfavorable circumstances
the mission seemed to be
ence of the success which
extent was given to the
er its original leader had
ing way to despair, I had
assment, carrying on the
out any means. And when
e of the confidence of her
nd I had been deprived of
with me, I resolved upon
eans, a journey to the far
o, and to explore that part
fate of Mungo Park, had

most expectation, and not
on which, even to the Arab
known than any other part
friendly relations with all
that mysterious city itself.
e payment of the debts left
pounds which I contributed
ed pounds. No doubt, even
left a good deal for my suc-
I have the satisfaction to
cientific public of Europe a
world, and not only made
ng of a regular intercourse
le."

Vogel determined to com-
Barth, and pass eastward
Tsad and the Nile. After
d in reaching, he prepared
visit the countries of Tibati
ngdom, and then pursue his
Dar-Fur to the White Nile.
out, but he appears to have
the early part of the year
aving McGuire in charge of
g more was heard from him;

then came the melancholy news that the Sultan of Waday, exasperated by the rumor that some of the merchandise which he had sent to Ben-gazi had been seized by the foreign merchants, in consequence of some dispute, had put Dr. Vogel and his companion to death. A later account states that the traveler had ascended a sacred mountain near Wara, and was afterward beheaded for that offense. Since then nothing further has been heard of him, and his death, in some violent way, seems to be established.

When the news reached Kouka, Corporal McGuire at once started for Tripoli, taking with him all the notes and journals which Dr. Vogel had written, up to the moment of his departure for Waday. But the little caravan which he accompanied had not advanced many days' journey beyond the Bornou territory before it was attacked by the desert tribes at the well of Bedwaraw, and McGuire was killed. Every thing fell into the hands of the assailing party, and the rich results of Dr. Vogel's labors are, therefore, probably lost to the world. Out of six persons of whom this expedition has been composed, from first to last, but one remains.

II.

LIVINGSTONE'S

TRAVELS IN SOUTHERN AND CENTRAL AFRICA.

DAVID LIVINGSTONE is the son of a small tea-dealer near Glasgow. At the age of ten he was placed in a cotton factory. With the proceeds of his first week's wages he purchased a Latin grammar, and for ten years thereafter his days were devoted to labor and his nights to study. In this manner he became acquainted with the classics, besides a smattering of the natural sciences, especially botany. The works of Dr. Dick first turned his thoughts toward the missionary system, as a field for his future life. He made choice of China, and in order properly to qualify himself for his labors in that country, determined first to acquire a medical education. Having been admitted as a licentiate of the Faculty of Physicians and Surgeons, at Glasgow, he was induced to offer his services to the London Missionary Society, on account of its perfectly unsectarian character.

But, though now qualified for his original plan, the opium war was then raging, and it was deemed inexpedient for him to proceed to China. He had hoped to have gained access to that then closed empire by means of the healing art; but there being no prospect of an early peace with the Chinese, and as another inviting field was opening out through the labors of Mr. Moffat, he was induced to turn his thoughts to Africa; and after a more extended course of theological training in England than he had enjoyed in Glasgow, he embarked for Africa in 1840, and, after a voyage of three months, reached Cape Town. Spending but a short time there, he started for the interior by going round to Algoa Bay, proceeded inland, and spent the following sixteen years of his life, namely, from 1840 to 1856, in medical and missionary labors.

He proceeded first to Kuruman, where the Rev. Mr. Moffat (whose daughter afterwards became his wife) resided, and then established himself at a place called Lepelole, where he remained for six months cut off from all European society, in order to gain an insight into the habits, ways of thinking, laws and language of that section of the Bechuanas called Bakwains. During a journey northward into the Bamangwato

E'S

CENTRAL AFRICA.

l tea-dealer near Glasgow.
actory. With the proceeds
atin grammar, and for ten
or and his nights to study.
he classics, besides a smat-
y. The works of Dr. Dick
ry system, as a field for his
n order properly to qualify
med first to acquire a medi-
icentiate of the Faculty of
s induced to offer his serv-
ccount of its perfectly un-

al plan, the opium war was
for him to proceed to China.
hen closed empire by means
pect of an early peace with
as opening out through the
urn his thoughts to Africa;
eal training in England than
r Africa in 1840, and, after
own. Spending but a short
oing round to Algoa Bay,
g sixteen years of his life,
missionary labors.

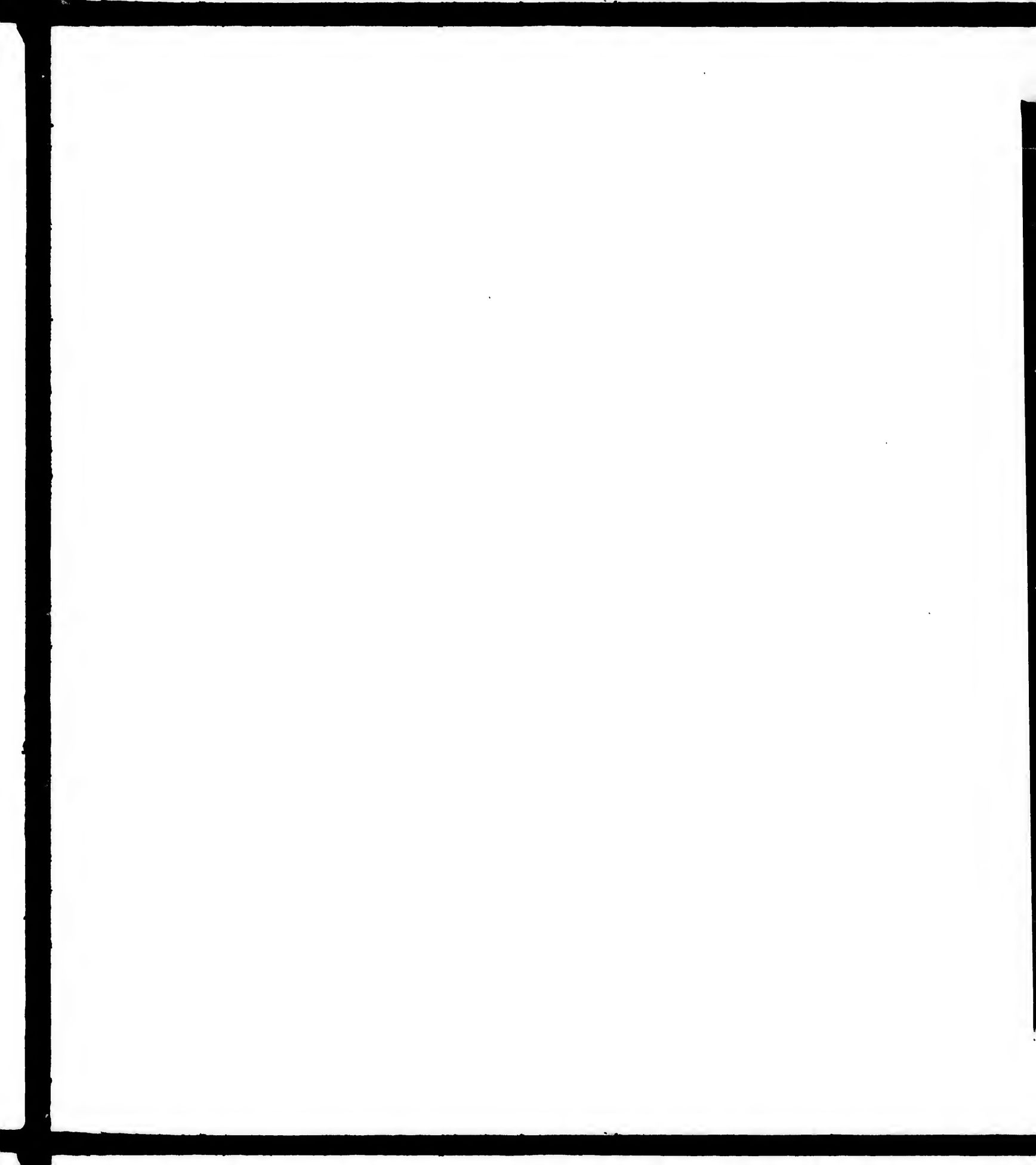
he Rev. Mr. Moffat (whose
d, and then established him-
ained for six months cut off
an insight into the habits,
at section of the Bechuanas
ward into the Bamangwato



LIVINGSTONE POUNCED UPON BY A LION. Page 1041.



LIVINGSTONE POUNCED UPON BY A LION. Page 301.



country, in 1842, he was only ten days distant from the lower part of the Songa river, which passed by the same name as Lake Ngami, and might then have discovered that lake, had discovery alone been his object. In 1843, he selected the valley of Mabotse, not far from Kolobeng, as the site of a missionary station. Here he had a remarkable adventure with a lion, the result of which he will feel all his life.

"It is well known," says he, "that if one of a troop of lions is killed, the others take the hint and leave that part of the country. So the next time the herds were attacked, I went with the people, in order to encourage them to rid themselves of the annoyance by destroying one of the marauders. We found the lions on a small hill about a quarter of a mile in length and covered with trees. A circle of men was formed round it, and they gradually closed up, ascending pretty near to each other. Being down below on the plain with a native schoolmaster, named Mebálwe, a most excellent man, I saw one of the lions sitting on a piece of rock within the now closed circle of men. Mebálwe fired at him before I could, and the ball struck the rock on which the animal was sitting. He bit at the spot struck, as a dog does at a stick or stone thrown at him, then, leaping away, broke through the opening circle and escaped unhurt. The men were afraid to attack him, perhaps on account of their belief in witchcraft. When the circle was re-formed, we saw two other lions in it; but we were afraid to fire, lest we should strike the men, and they allowed the beasts to burst through also. If the Bakatla had acted according to the custom of the country, they would have speared the lions in their attempt to get out. Seeing we could not get them to kill one of the lions, we bent our footsteps toward the village: in going round the end of the hill, however, I saw one of the beasts sitting on a piece of rock as before, but this time he had a little bush in front. Being about thirty yards off, I took a good aim at his body through the bush, and fired both barrels into it. The men then called out, 'He is shot! he is shot!' Others cried, 'He has been shot by another man too; let us go to him!'

"I did not see any one else shoot at him, but I saw the lion's tail erected in anger behind the bush, and, turning to the people, said, 'Stop a little, till I load again.' When in the act of ramming down the bullets, I heard a shout. Starting, and looking half round, I saw the lion just in the act of springing upon me. I was upon a little height; he caught my shoulder as he sprang, and we both came to the ground below together. Growling horribly, close to my ear, he shook me as a terrier dog does a rat. The shock produced a stupor similar to that which seems to be felt by a mouse after the first shake of the cat. It caused a sort of dreaminess, in which there was no sense of pain nor feeling of terror, though quite conscious of all that was happening. It was like what patients partially under the influence of chloroform describe, who see all the operation but feel not the knife. This singular condition was not the result of any mental process. The shake annihilated fear, and

allowed no sense of horror in looking round at the beast. This peculiar state is probably produced in all animals killed by the carnivora, and, if so, is a merciful provision by our benevolent Creator for lessening the pain of death. Turning round to relieve myself of the weight, as he had one paw on the back of my head, I saw his eyes directed to Mebálwe, who was trying to shoot him at a distance of ten or fifteen yards. His gun, a flint one, missed fire in both barrels; the lion immediately left me, and attacking Mebálwe, bit his thigh. Another man, whose life I had saved before, after he had been tossed by a buffalo, attempted to spear the lion while he was biting Mebálwe. He left Mebálwe and caught this man by the shoulder, but at that moment the bullets he had received took effect, and he fell down dead. The whole was the work of a few moments, and must have been his paroxysms of dying rage. In order to take out the charm from him, the Bakatla on the following day made a huge bonfire over the carcass, which was declared to be that of the largest lion they had ever seen. Besides crunching the bone into splinters, he left eleven teeth-wounds on the upper part of my arm.

"A wound from this animal's tooth resembles a gun-shot wound; it is generally followed by a great deal of sloughing and discharge, and pains are felt in the part periodically ever afterward. I had on a tartan jacket on the occasion, and I believe that it wiped off all the virus from the teeth that pierced the flesh, for my two companions in this affray have both suffered from the peculiar pains, while I have escaped with only the inconvenience of a false joint in my limb. The man whose shoulder was wounded showed me his wound actually burst forth afresh on the same month of the following year. This curious point deserves the attention of inquirers."

At Mabotse, he succeeded in effecting the conversion of a Bakwain chief named Sechele, who was afterwards of great assistance to him in his first attempts to penetrate northwards. Dr. Livingstone, however, suffered greatly from the hostility of the Boers, the descendants of the former Dutch colonists, who, having been proclaimed independent by the English governor, attacked the Bakwains, carried off hundreds of the children into slavery, and destroyed the houses and property of the missionaries at Kolobeng, where Dr. Livingstone was then living. Sechele, who was very obnoxious to the Boers, was now unable to accompany the missionary on his frequent journeys through the country. "Suppose we went north," said Dr. Livingstone, "would you come?" Sechele then related the story of Sebituane (chief of the Makololo, who live north of Lake Ngami,) having saved his life, and expatiated on the far-famed generosity of that really great man. This was the first time Dr. Livingstone conceived the idea of crossing the Desert to Lake Ngami.

"The exact position of the Lake Ngami had, for half a century at least, been correctly pointed out by the natives, who had visited it when rains were more copious in the Desert than in more recent times, and

at the beast. This peculiar
 d by the carnivora, and, if
 Creator for lessening the
 elf of the weight, as he had
 eyes directed to Mebálwe,
 ten or fifteen yards. His
 ; the lion immediately left
 Another man, whose life I
 by a buffalo, attempted to
 e. He left Mebálwe and
 moment the bullets he had
 The whole was the work
 roxysms of dying rage. In
 akatla on the following day
 was declared to be that of
 es crunching the bone into
 upper part of my arm.
 bles a gun-shot wound; it is
 ng and discharge, and pains
 d. I had on a tartan jacket
 d off all the virus from the
 npanions in this affray have
 I have escaped with only the
 The man whose shoulder was
 arst forth afresh on the same
 point deserves the attention

he conversion of a Bakwain
 of great assistance to him in
 Dr. Livingstone, however,
 loers, the descendants of the
 oclaimed independent by the
 carried off hundreds of the
 houses and property of the
 gstone was then living. Se-
 rs, was now unable to accom-
 arneys through the country.
 gstone, "would you come?"
 ane (chief of the Makololo,
 ved his life, and expatiated on
 eat man. This was the first
 f crossing the Desert to Lako

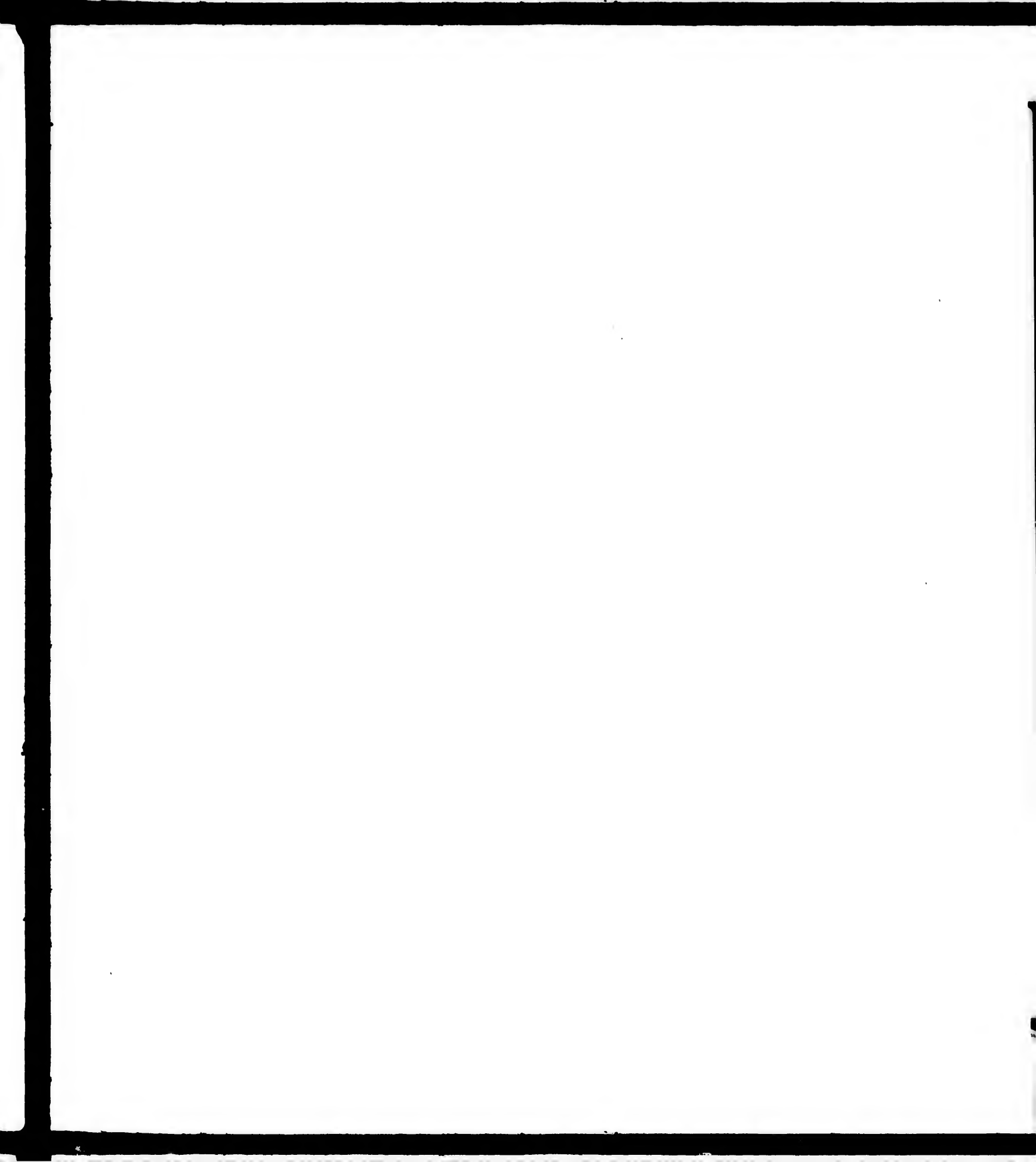
ami had, for half a century at
 tives, who had visited it when
 an in more recent times, and



LAKE NGAMI. DISCOVERED BY LIVINGSTONE AND COMPANIONS. Page 963.



LAKE NGAMI. DISCOVERED BY LIVINGSTONE AND COMPANIONS. Page 963.



many attempts had been made to reach it by passing through the Desert in the direction indicated; but it was found impossible, even for Griquas, who, having some Bushman blood in them, may be supposed more capable of enduring thirst than Europeans. It was clear, then, that our only chance of success was by going round, instead of through the Desert. The best time for the attempt would have been about the end of the rainy season, in March or April, for then we should have been likely to meet with pools of rain-water, which always dry up during the rainless winter."

On his determination being made known, Messrs. Oswell and Murray came from Cape Town to join him, the former generously offering to defray the principal expense of the expedition. At the same time an invitation arrived from the people of the lake, with such accounts of the immense elephants' tusks to be had there, that the native guides were quite as eager to set out as any one else. The expedition started on the 1st of June, 1849, and struck northward into the desert. Pools left by the rains supplied their oxen, as they journeyed for days over the plain and down the dry bed of the River Mokoko. At a place called Nohokotsa, they came upon the first of a great number of salt-pans, covered with an efflorescence of lime. A thick belt of mopane-trees hides this salt-pan, which is twenty miles in circumference, entirely from the view of a person coming from the south-east; and, at the time the pan burst upon their view, the setting sun was casting a beautiful blue haze over the white incrustations, making the whole look exactly like a lake. Mr. Oswell threw his hat up in the air at the sight, and shouted out a huzza which made the poor Bushwoman and the Bakwains think him mad. Dr. Livingstone was a little behind him, and was as completely deceived by it as he; but, as they had agreed to allow each other to behold the lake at the same instant, he felt a little chagrined that his companion had, unintentionally, got the first glance. They had no idea that the long-looked for lake was still more than three hundred miles distant.

Again and again they were deceived in the same manner, but finally, in the early part of July reached the Zonga river, which, the natives informed them, came from the lake. After following its course for ninety-six miles they left the oxen and wagons, to recruit, and pushed forwards through a tribe of native Quakers—who never fight—called the Bakoba. The narrative continues:

"Twelve days after our departure from the wagons at Ngabisane we came to the north-east end of Lake Ngami; and on the 1st of August, 1849, we went down together to the broad part, and, for the first time, this fine-looking sheet of water was beheld by Europeans. The direction of the lake seemed to be north north-east and south south-west by compass. The southern portion is said to bend round to the west, and to receive the Tsoughe from the north at its north-west extremity. We could detect no horizon where we stood looking south

south-west, nor could we form any idea of the extent of the lake, except from the reports of the inhabitants of the district; and, as they professed to go round it in three days, allowing twenty-five miles a day would make it seventy-five, or less than seventy geographical miles in circumference. Other guesses have been made since as to its circumference, ranging between seventy and one hundred miles. It is shallow, for I subsequently saw a native punting his canoe over seven or eight miles of the north-east end; it can never, therefore, be of much value as a commercial highway. In fact, during the months preceding the annual supply of water from the north, the lake is so shallow that it is with difficulty cattle can approach the water through the boggy, reedy banks. These are low on all sides, but on the west there is a space devoid of trees, showing that the waters have retired thence at no very ancient date. This is another of the proofs of desiccation met with so abundantly throughout the whole country."

The object of the travelers was to visit Sebituano, chief of the Makololos, who lives about two hundred miles northward of the lake, but they were prevented by the opposition of a young chief named Lechulatebe, and obliged to retrace their steps. Having returned to Kolobeng, Dr. Livingstone remained there till April, 1850, and then left in company with Mrs. Livingstone, their three children and the chief Sechele—who had now bought a wagon of his own—in order to go across the Zouga at its lower end, with the intention of proceeding up the northern bank till they gained the Temunak'le, and of then ascending that river to visit Sebituano in the north. On reaching the Zouga, he learned that a party of Englishmen, who had come to the lake in search of ivory, were all laid low with fever, and made a hasty journey of sixty miles to give them the benefit of his medical experience. This time Lechulatebe was induced, by the present of a gun, to furnish guides to the Makololo country, but when Dr. Livingstone was ready to set out, his children and servants were attacked with fever, and he was obliged to return a second time to Kolobeng.

Soon afterwards they received messages from Sebituano, who sent presents to all the intermediate chiefs, in order that they might permit the white men to pass freely. Early the next year, Dr. Livingstone again set out, accompanied by his wife and children, and Mr. Oswell. After much difficulty they succeeded in getting a Bushman to conduct them by the direct route from the Zouga to the Makololo country, leaving Lake Ngami some distance to the westward. Their sufferings, while crossing the intervening desert, were very severe. "It is impossible," says Dr. Livingstone, "to convey an idea of the dreary scene on which we entered after leaving this spot: the only vegetation was a low scrub in deep sand; not a bird or insect enlivened the landscape. It was, without exception, the most uninviting prospect I ever beheld; and, to make matters worse, our guide Shobo wandered on the second day. We coaxed him on at night, but he went to all points of the

extent of the lake, ex-
district; and, as they
twenty-five miles a day
geographical miles in
le since as to its circum-
red miles. It is shallow,
ance over seven or eight
efore, be of much value
no months preceding the
lake is so shallow that it is
through the boggy, reedy
the west there is a space
retired thence at no very
of desiccation met with so

Sebituane, chief of the Ma-
orthward of the lake, but
young chief named Lechul-
having returned to Kolo-
April, 1850, and then left in
children and the chief Se-
his own—in order to go
intention of proceeding up
mak'le, and of then ascend-
On reaching the Zonga,
had come to the lake in
and made a hasty journey
medical experience. This
t of a gun, to furnish guides
Livingstone was ready to set
ed with fever, and he was
g.
s from Sebituane, who sent
der that they might permit
next year, Dr. Livingstone
d children, and Mr. Oswell.
ting a Bushman to conduct
to the Makololo country,
westward. Their sufferings,
re very severe. "It is im-
an idea of the dreary scene
: the only vegetation was a
ect enlivened the landscape.
ing prospect I ever beheld;
obo wandered on the second
he went to all points of the

compass on the trails of elephants which had been here in the rainy season, and then would sit down in the path, and in his broken Sichuana say, 'No water, all country only; Shobo sleeps; he breaks down; country only,' and then coolly curl himself up and go to sleep. The oxen were terribly fatigued and thirsty; and, on the morning of the fourth day, Shobo, after professing ignorance of every thing, vanished altogether. We went on in the direction in which we last saw him, and about eleven o'clock began to see birds; then the trail of a rhinoceros. At this we unyoked the oxen, and they, apparently knowing the sign, rushed along to find the water in the river Mahábe, which comes from the Tamunak'le, and lay to the west of us. The supply of water in the wagons had been wasted by one of our servants, and by the afternoon only a small portion remained for the children. This was a bitterly anxious night; and next morning the less there was of water the more thirsty the little rogues became. The idea of their perishing before our eyes was terrible. It would almost have been a relief to me to have been reproached with being the entire cause of the catastrophe; but not one syllable of upbraiding was uttered by their mother, though the tearful eye told the agony within. In the afternoon of the fifth day, to our inexpressible relief, some of the men returned with a supply of that fluid of which we had never before felt the true value."

The next day they reached a village of the Banagoa tribe, and procured a guide to the Chobe river, which flows through the Makololo country. They now began to suffer greatly from the attacks of the *tsetse* fly, a remarkable insect, which Dr. Livingstone thus describes:

"It is not much larger than the common house fly, and is nearly of the same brown color as the common honey bee; the after part of the body has three or four yellow bars across it; the wings project beyond this part considerably, and it is remarkably alert, avoiding most dexterously all attempts to catch it with the hand at common temperatures; in the cool of the mornings and evenings it is less agile. Its peculiar buzz, when once heard, can never be forgotten by the traveler whose means of locomotion are domestic animals, for it is well known that the bite of this poisonous insect is certain death to the ox, horse and dog. In this journey, though we were not aware of any great number having at any time lighted on our cattle, we lost forty-three fine oxen by its bite. We watched the animals carefully, and believe that not a score of flies were ever upon them.

"A most remarkable feature in the bite of the *tsetse* is its perfect harmlessness in man and wild animals, and even calves, so long as they continue to suck the cow. We never experienced the slightest injury from them ourselves, personally, although we lived two months in their *habitat*, which was, in this case, as sharply defined as in many others, for the south bank of the Chobe was infested by them, and the northern bank, where our cattle were placed, only fifty yards distant, contained not a single specimen. This was the more remarkable as we often saw

natives carrying over raw meat to the opposite bank with many tsetse settled upon it.

"The poison does not seem to be injected by a sting, or by ova placed beneath the skin, for, when one is allowed to feed freely on the hand, it is seen to insert the middle prong of three portions, into which the proboscis divides, somewhat deeply into the true skin; it then draws it out a little way, and it assumes a crimson color as the mandibles come into brisk operation. The previously-shrunken belly swells out, and, if left undisturbed, the fly quietly departs when it is full. A slight itching irritation follows, but not more than in the bite of a mosquito. In the ox this same bite produces no more immediate effects than in man. It does not startle him as the gad-fly does; but a few days afterward the following symptoms supervene: the eye and nose begin to run, the coat stares as if the animal were cold, a swelling appears under the jaw and sometimes at the navel, and, though the animal continues to graze, emaciation commences, accompanied with a peculiar flaccidity of the muscles, and this proceeds unchecked until, perhaps months afterward, purging comes on, and the animal, no longer able to graze, perishes in a state of extreme exhaustion."

On reaching the Chobe, they found that the Makalolo chief, Sebituane, was on an island twenty miles down the river, and at once proceeded to his residence in canoes. They were received with the greatest kindness, but, unfortunately, he fell sick shortly after their arrival, and died in a few days. Dr. Livingstone was much grieved at the death of this native chieftain, for whom he had already contracted a strong friendship. "At Sebituane's death the chieftainship devolved, as her father intended, on a daughter named Ma-mochisane. He had promised to show us his country and to select a suitable locality for our residence. We had now to look to the daughter, who was living twelve days to the north, at Naliele. We were obliged, therefore, to remain until a message came from her, and, when it did, she gave us perfect liberty to visit any part of the country we chose. Mr. Oswell and I then proceeded one hundred and thirty miles to the north-east, to Sesheke, and, in the end of June, 1851, we were rewarded by the discovery of the Zambesi, in the center of the continent. This was a most important point, for that river was not previously known to exist there at all. The Portuguese maps all represent it as rising far to the east of where we now were; and, if ever any thing like a chain of trading-stations had existed across the country between the latitudes 12° and 18° south, this magnificent portion of the river must have been known before. We saw it at the end of the dry season, at the time when the river is about at its lowest, and yet there was a breadth of from three hundred to six hundred yards of deep, flowing water. Mr. Oswell said he had never seen such a fine river even in India. At the period of its annual inundation it rises fully twenty feet in perpendicular height, and floods fifteen or twenty miles of lands adjacent to its banks.

te bank with many tsetse

ted by a sting, or by ova
owed to feed freely on the
three portions, into which
e true skin; it then draws
olor as the mandibles come
en belly swells out, and, if
it is full. A slight itching
bite of a musquito. In the
e effects than in man. It
a few days afterward
nose begin to run, the coat
ppears under the jaw and
al continues to graze, ema-
nar flaccidity of the muscles,
months afterward, purging
graze, perishes in a state of

the Makalolo chief, Sebitu-
the river, and at once pro-
e received with the greatest
rtly after their arrival, and
uch grieved at the death of
y contracted a strong friend-
ship devolved, as her father
sane. He had promised to
e locality for our residence.
was living twelve days to
herefore, to remain until a
e gave us perfect liberty to
Oswell and I then proceeded
ast, to Seshcke, and, in the
e discovery of the Zambesi,
a most important point, for
ist there at all. The Portu-
o the east of where we now
trading-stations had existed
2° and 18° south, this mag-
known before. We saw it
en the river is about at its
m three hundred to six hun-
swell said he had never seen
riod of its annual inundation
height, and floods fifteen or

“As there was no hope of the Boers allowing the peaceable instruction of the natives at Kolobeng, I at once resolved to save my family from exposure to this unhealthy region by sending them to England, and to return alone, with a view to exploring the country in search of a healthy district that might prove a center of civilization, and open up the interior by a path to either the east or west coast. This resolution led me down to the Cape in April, 1852, being the first time during eleven years that I had visited the scenes of civilization.”

Having sent his family home from Cape Town, and qualified himself under the instructions of Mr. Maclear, royal astronomer at the Cape, to take the necessary observations, Dr. Livingstone started on his last and greatest journey into the interior in June, 1852. In passing through the Griqua territory he thus refers to the results of missionary labors among the natives: “Many hundreds of both Grikwas and Bechuanas have become Christians and partially civilized through the teachings of English missionaries. My first impressions of the progress made were that the accounts of the effects of the gospel among them had been too highly colored. I expected a higher degree of Christian simplicity and purity than exists either among them or among ourselves. I was not anxious for a deeper insight in detecting shams than others; but I expected character, such as we imagine the primitive disciples had, and was disappointed. When, however, I passed on to the true heathen in the countries beyond the sphere of missionary influence, and could compare the people there with the Christian natives, I came to the conclusion that, if the question were examined in the most rigidly severe or scientific way, the change effected by the missionary movement would be considered unquestionably great.

“During the period of my visit at Kuruman, Mr. Moffat, who has been a missionary in Africa during upward of forty years, and is well known by his interesting work, ‘Scenes and Labors in South Africa,’ was busily engaged in carrying through the press, with which his station is furnished, the Bible in the language of the Bechuanas, which is called Sihuana. This has been a work of immense labor; and as he was the first to reduce their speech to a written form, and has had his attention directed to the study for at least thirty years, he may be supposed to be better adapted for the task than any man living. Some idea of the copiousness of the language may be formed from the fact that even he never spends a week at his work without discovering new words; the phenomenon, therefore, of any man who, after a few months’ or years’ study of a native tongue, cackles forth a torrent of vocables, may well be wondered at, if it is meant to convey instruction. In my own case, though I have had as much intercourse with the purest idiom as most Englishmen, and have studied the language carefully, yet I can never utter an important statement without doing so very slowly, and repeating it too, lest the foreign accent, which is distinctly perceptible in all Europeans, should render the sense unintelligible. In this I follow the example of

the Bechuana orators, who, on important matters, always speak slowly, deliberately, and with reiteration. The capabilities of this language may be inferred from the fact that the Pentateuch is fully expressed in Mr. Moffat's translation in fewer words than in the Greek Septuagint, and in a very considerably smaller number than in our own English version."

After waiting some time, he found three servants willing to accompany him, and a black man, named George Fleming, who had been commissioned by a Cape merchant to establish a trade with the Makololos. The party left Kuruman on the 20th of November, and on the last day of the year reached the town of Sechele. The chief was in great distress for the loss of his children, who had been carried off by the Boers. The Bechuanas are universally much attached to children. A little child toddling near a party of men while they are eating is sure to get a handful of the food. This love of children may arise in a great measure from the patriarchal system under which they dwell. Every little stranger forms an increase of property to the whole community, and is duly reported to the chief—boys being more welcome than girls. The parents take the name of the child, and often address their children as Ma, (mother), or Ra, (father). Dr. Livingstone's eldest boy being named Robert, Mrs. Livingstone was, after his birth, always addressed as Ma-Robert, instead of Mary, her Christian name.

After visiting the Bamangwato chief, Sekomi, they continued their journey to the northward, as before, leaving Lake Ngami on the west. At a place called Letloche, they found a fine supply of water. This is a point of so much interest in that country that the first question asked of passers-by is, "Have you had water?" the first inquiry a native puts to a fellow-countryman is, "Where is the rain?" and, though they are by no means an untruthful nation, the answer generally is, "I don't know: there is none: we are killed with hunger and by the sun." If news is asked for, they commence with "There is no news; I heard some lies only," and then tell all they know.

The first four months of the year 1853 were spent in toiling slowly northward towards the Chobe river, which is an affluent of the Zambesi, being obliged, in order to avoid the tsetse, to make a new road through a country abounding with forests and marshes. On the 10th of March many of the party became ill with fever, which occasioned a halt of several days. The natives, most of whom were Bushmen, were inoffensive. Some of them are in the habit of hunting lions with poisoned arrows, using for that purpose the entrails of a species of caterpillar. They squeeze out these, and place them all around the bottom of the barb, and allow the poison to dry in the sun. They are very careful in cleaning their nails after working with it, as a small portion introduced into a scratch acts like morbid matter in dissection-wounds. The agony is so great that the person cuts himself, calls for his mother's breast as if he were returned in idea to his childhood again, or flies from human habitations a raging maniac. The effects on the lion are equally terrible.

matters, always speak slowly, capabilities of this language may such is fully expressed in Mr. in the Greek Septuagint, and in our own English version." e servants willing to accom- ge Fleming, who had been blish a trade with the Mak- h of November, and on the chele. The chief was in great had been carried off by the ch attached to children. A hile they are eating is sure to children may arise in a great der which they dwell. Every ty to the whole community, ing more welcome than girls. d often address their children ivingstone's eldest boy being er his birth, always addressed an name.

; Sekomi, they continued their ing Lake Ngami on the west. ine supply of water. This is a that the first question asked e the first inquiry a native puts e rain?" and, though they are answer generally is, "I don't h hunger and by the sun." If There is no news; I heard some

3 were spent in toiling slowly ch is an affluent of the Zambesi, se, to make a new road through marshes. On the 10th of March which occasioned a halt of sev- vere Bushmen, were inoffensive. ng lions with poisoned arrows, a species of caterpillar. They round the bottom of the barb, They are very careful in clean- a small portion introduced into ection-wounds. The agony is so for his mother's breast as if he again, or flies from human hab- on the lion are equally terrible.

He is heard moaning in distress, and becomes furious, biting the trees and ground in rage. The Bushmen have the reputation of curing the wounds of this poison, by administering the caterpillar itself in combination with fat; they also rub fat into the wound, saying that "the N'gwa wants fat, and, when it does not find it in the body, kills the man: we give it what it wants, and it is content;" a reason which will commend itself to the enlightened among ourselves.

Finally the party reached the river Sanshureb, a tributary of the Chobe, in latitude 18° 4' south, and longitude 26° 30' east. As it was impossible to cross, Dr. Livingstone set off alone with a native, carrying a pontoon, in order to find the Chobe. They walked twenty miles through a swamp before reaching the river, and after two days of incredible labor in forcing their way through the belt of tall reeds and water-plants, succeeded in launching the pontoon. At dusk on the third day they reached a Makololo village, to the great astonishment of the inhabitants, who, in their figurative way, exclaimed, "He has dropped among us from the clouds, yet came riding on the back of a hippopotamus! We Makololo thought no one could cross the Chobe without our knowledge, yet here he drops among us like a bird!" In a few days, with the assistance of the natives, all the wagons and oxen were safely brought across, and on the 23d of May the party reached Linyanti, the capital of the Makololo country.

"The whole population of Linyanti, numbering between six and seven thousand souls, turned out *en masse* to see the wagons in motion. They had never witnessed the phenomenon before, we having on the former occasion departed by night. Sekeletu, now in power, received us in what is considered royal style, setting before us a great number of pots of boyaloo, the beer of the country. These were brought by women, and each bearer takes a good draught of the beer when she sets it down, by way of 'tasting,' to show that there is no poison.

"The court herald, an old man who occupied the post also in Sebituane's time, stood up, and after some antics, such as leaping, and shouting at the top of his voice, roared out some adulatory sentences, as, 'Do n't I see the white man? Do n't I see the comrade of Sebituane? Do n't I see the father of Sekeletu?' 'We want sleep.' 'Give your son sleep, my lord,' etc., etc. The perquisites of this man are the heads of all the cattle slaughtered by the chief, and he even takes a share of the tribute before it is distributed and taken out of the kotla. He is expected to utter all the proclamations, call assemblies, keep the kotla clean, and the fire burning every evening, and when a person is executed in public he drags away the body. I found Sekeletu a young man of eighteen years of age, of that dark yellow or coffee-and-milk color of which the Makololo are so proud, because it distinguishes them considerably from the black tribes on the rivers. He is about five feet seven in height, and neither so good-looking nor of so much ability as his father was, but is equally friendly to the English."

Sekeletu refused to entertain any proposition to become acquainted with Christianity on hearing that it discountenanced polygamy. His father-in-law, however, finally consented to receive instruction in reading, but did not make much progress. Dr. Livingstone held religious services regularly, which were usually attended by five to seven hundred persons, who listened attentively, except when the native love of fun prevailed. For example, when all knelt down, many of those who had children, in following the example of the rest, bent over their little ones. The children, in terror of being crushed to death, set up a simultaneous yell, which so tickled the whole assembly there was often a subdued titter, to be turned into a hearty laugh as soon as they heard Amen.

"The Makololo," says the traveler, "had made a garden and planted maize for me, that, as they remarked when I was parting with them to proceed to the Cape, I might have food to eat when I returned, as well as other people. The maize was now pounded by the women into fine meal. This they do in large wooden mortars, the counterpart of which may be seen depicted on the Egyptian monuments. Sekeletu added to this good supply of meal ten or twelve jars of honey, each of which contained about two gallons. Liberal supplies of groundnuts were also furnished every time the tributary tribes brought their dues to Linyanti, and an ox was given for slaughter every week or two. Sekeletu also appropriated two cows to be milked for us every morning and evening."

After waiting a month at Linyanti to recover from an attack of fever, Dr. Livingstone departed on a journey of exploration up the Leeambye (Zambesi) through the Barotse country. He thus describes the mode of travel: "I went in company with Sekeletu and about one hundred and sixty attendants. We had most of the young men with us, and many of the under-chiefs besides. The country between Linyanti and Sesheke is perfectly flat, except patches elevated only a few feet above the surrounding level. There are also many mounds where the gigantic ant-hills of the country have been situated or still appear; these mounds are evidently the work of the termites. No one who has not seen their gigantic structures can fancy the industry of these little laborers; they seem to impart fertility to the soil which has once passed through their mouths, for the Makololo find the sides of ant-hills the choice spots for rearing early maize, tobacco, or any thing on which they wish to bestow especial care. We had the Chobe on our right, with its scores of miles of reed occupying the horizon there. It was pleasant to look back on the long extended line of our attendants, as it twisted and bent according to the curves of the footpath, or in and out behind the mounds, the ostrich feathers of the men waving in the wind. Some had the white ends of ox-tails on their heads, hussar fashion, and others great bunches of black ostrich feathers, or caps made of lions' manes. Some wore red tunics, or various-colored prints which the chief had bought from Fleming; the common men carried burdens, the gentlemen walked with a small club of rhinoceros horn in their hands, and had servants to carry their

tion to become acquainted
 ntenanced polygamy. His
 receive instruction in read-
 Livingstone held religious
 ed by five to seven hundred
 en the native love of sim-
 vn, many of those who had
 bent over their little ones.
 eath, set up a simultaneous
 here was often a subdued
 on as they heard Amen.
 made a garden and planted
 was parting with them to
 at when I returned, as well
 ed by the women into fine
 s, the counterpart of which
 ements. Sekeletu added to
 f honey, each of which con-
 s of groundnuts were also
 ught their dues to Linyanti,
 week or two. Sekeletu also
 very morning and evening."
 ver from an attack of fever,
 ploration up the Leeambye
 e thus describes the mode
 tu and about one hundred
 e young men with us, and
 ntry between Linyanti and
 vated only a few feet above
 mounds where the gigantic
 r still appear; these mounds
 o one who has not seen their
 f these little laborers; they
 s once passed through their
 ant-hills the choice spots for
 n which they wish to bestow
 ght, with its scores of miles
 s pleasant to look back on
 it twisted and bent accord-
 ont behind the mounds, the
 wind. Some had the white
 , and others great bunches of
 nances. Some wore red tunics,
 d bought from Fleming; the
 en walked with a small club
 had servants to carry their

shields, while the 'Machaka,' battle-ax men, carried their own, and were liable at any time to be sent off a hundred miles on an errand, and expected to run all the way.

"As the Makololo have great abundance of cattle, the chief is expected to feed all who accompany him. After the oxen are cut up, the different joints are placed before Sekeletu, and he apportions them among the gentlemen of the party. The whole is rapidly divided by their attendants, cut into long strips, and so many of these are thrown into the fires at once that they are nearly put out. Half broiled and burning hot, the meat is quickly handed around; every one gets a mouthful, but no one except the chief has time to masticate. It is not the enjoyment of eating they aim at, but to get as much of the food into the stomach as possible during the short time the others are cramming as well as themselves, for no one can eat more than a mouthful after the others have finished. They are eminently gregarious in their eating, and, as they despise any one who eats alone, I always poured out two cups of coffee at my own meals, so that the chief, or some one of the principal men, might partake along with me. They all soon became very fond of coffee, and, indeed, some of the tribes attribute greater fecundity to the daily use of this beverage. They were all well acquainted with the sugar-cane, as they cultivate it in the Barotse country, but knew nothing of the method of extracting the sugar from it. They use the cane only for chewing. Sekeletu, relishing the sweet coffee and biscuits, of which I then had a store, said 'he knew my heart loved him by finding his own heart warming to my food.' He had been visited during my absence at the Cape by some traders and Griquas, and 'their coffee did not taste half so nice as mine, because they loved his ivory and not himself.' This was certainly an original mode of discerning character.

"Sekeletu and I had each a little gipsy tent in which to sleep. The Makololo huts are generally clean, while those of the Makalaka are infested with vermin. The cleanliness of the former is owing to the habit of frequently smearing the floors with a plaster composed of cow dung and earth. If we slept in the tent in some villages, the mice ran over our faces and disturbed our sleep, or hungry prowling dogs would eat our shoes and leave only the soles. When they were guilty of this and other misdemeanors, we got the loan of a hut. The best sort of Makololo huts consist of three circular walls, with small holes as doors, each similar to that in a dog house, and it is necessary to bend down the body to get in, even when on all-fours. The roof is formed of reeds or straight sticks, in shape like a Chinaman's hat, bound firmly together with circular bands, which are lashed with the strong inner bark of the mimosa tree. When all prepared except the thatch, it is lifted on to the circular wall, the rim resting on a circle of poles, between each arch of which the third wall is built. The roof is thatched with fine grass, and sewed with the same material as the lashings; and, as it projects

far beyond the walls, and reaches within four feet of the ground, the shade is the best to be found in the country. These huts are very cool in the hottest day, but are close and deficient in ventilation by night."

After reaching the Lecambyc, they proceeded by water to Naliele, the capital of the Barotse country, in latitude $15^{\circ} 16'$ south. "Having at last procured a sufficient number of canoes, we began to ascend the river. I had the choice of the whole fleet, and selected the best, though not the largest; it was thirty-four feet long by twenty inches wide. I had six paddlers, and the larger canoe of Sekeletu had ten. They stand upright, and keep the stroke with great precision, though they change from side to side as the course demands. The men at the head and stern are selected from the strongest and most expert of the whole. The canoes, being flat-bottomed, can go into very shallow water, and whenever the men can feel the bottom they use the paddles, which are about eight feet long, as poles to punt with. Our fleet consisted of thirty-three canoes and about one hundred and sixty men. It was beautiful to see them skimming along so quickly and keeping time so well.

"We proceeded rapidly up the river, and I felt the pleasure of looking on lands which had never been seen by a European before. The river is, indeed, a magnificent one, often more than a mile broad, and adorned with many islands of from three to five miles in length. Both islands and banks are covered with forests, and most of the trees on the brink of the water send down roots from their branches like the banian, or *Ficus Indica*. The islands at a little distance seem great rounded masses of sylvan vegetation reclining on the bosom of the glorious stream. The beauty of the scenery of some of the islands is greatly increased by the date-palm, with its gracefully-curved fronds and refreshing light-green color, near the bottom of the picture, and the lofty palmyra towering far above, and casting its feathery foliage against a cloudless sky. It being winter, we had the strange coloring on the banks which many parts of African landscape assume."

Naliele, the capital of the Barotse, is built on an artificial mound which was constructed by Santuru, a former chief. On making inquiries to ascertain whether Santuru, or any of the former chiefs had ever been visited by white men, Dr. Livingstone could find no vestige of any such visit. "There is no evidence," he says, "of any of Santuru's people having ever seen a white man before the arrival of Mr. Oswell and myself in 1851. The people have, it is true, no written records; but any remarkable event here is commemorated in names, as was observed by Park to be the case in the countries he traversed. The year of our arrival is dignified by the name of the year when the white men came, or of Sebituane's death; but they prefer the former, as they avoid, if possible, any direct reference to the departed. After my wife's first visit, great numbers of children were named Ma-Robert, or mother of Robert, her eldest child; others were named Gunn, Horse, Wagon, Monare, Jesus, etc.; but though our names, and those of the

our feet of the ground, the
 These huts are very cool
 at in ventilation by night."
 proceeded by water to Naliele,
 le 15° 16' south. "Having
 es, we began to ascend the
 and selected the best, though
 g by twenty inches wide. I
 Sekeletu had ten. They stand
 ecision, though they change
 The men at the head and
 most expert of the whole.
 nto very shallow water, and
 use the paddles, which are
 ith. Our fleet consisted of
 and sixty men. It was beau-
 and keeping time so well.
 I felt the pleasure of looking
 European before. The river
 an a mile broad, and adorned
 iles in length. Both islands
 most of the trees on the brink
 branches like the banian, or
 istance seem great rounded
 the bosom of the glorious
 me of the islands is greatly
 efully-curved fronds and re-
 a of the picture, and the lofty
 its feathery foliage against a
 the strange coloring on the
 ape assume."

built on an artificial mound
 ormer chief. On making in-
 any of the former chiefs had
 ington could find no vestige
 he says, "of any of Santuru's
 ore the arrival of Mr. Oswell
 t is true, no written records;
 mtorated in names, as was ob-
 utries he traversed. The year
 the year when the white men
 y prefer the former, as they
 to the departed. After my
 en were named Ma-Robert, or
 ers were named Gun, Horse,
 our names, and those of the

native Portuguese who came in 1853, were adopted, there is not a trace of any thing of the sort having happened previously among the Barotse: the visit of a white man is such a remarkable event, that, had any taken place during the last three hundred years, there must have remained some tradition of it."

Leaving Sekeletu at Naliele, Dr. Livingstone determined to ascend the Lecambye to its confluence with another river called the Leebea. He was furnished with canoes, men and a herald, in order that he might enter the villages in a dignified manner. He was always received with a hearty welcome, as the messenger of peace, which the people term "sleep." The river presents an appearance of low banks without trees, until about thirty miles before reaching the confluence, which is in latitude 14° 11' south. There the Lecambye assumes the name Kabompo, and seems to be coming from the east. It is a fine large river, about three hundred yards wide, and the Leebea two hundred and fifty.

As Sekeletu was waiting for him, Dr. Livingstone did not prolong his stay, but rapidly returned down the river. The whole party then proceeded to Linyanti, where they arrived about the 1st of September. He had been, during a nine weeks' tour, in closer contact with heathenism than he had ever been before; and though all, including the chief, were as kind and attentive to him as possible, and there was no want of food, (oxen being slaughtered daily, sometimes ten at a time, more than sufficient for the wants of all,) yet to endure the dancing, roaring, and singing, the jesting, anecdotes, grumbling, quarreling, and murdering of these children of nature, seemed more like a severe penance than any thing he had before met with in the course of his missionary duties. He took thence a more intense disgust at heathenism than he had before, and formed a greatly-elevated opinion of the latent effects of missions in the south, among tribes which are reported to have been as savage as the Makololo.

He now determined to carry out his original plan of extending the sphere of exploration, and after collecting all the information to be had with regard to the routes to the coast, made choice of the Lecambye, and its tributary, the Leebea, from which river he considered it but a short distance to the Coanga, which flows into the Atlantic Ocean not far from St. Paul de Loanda. By representing to the Makololo the advantages which would result to them from a direct intercourse with the coast, he finally procured Sekeletu's consent to the undertaking, and an escort of twenty-seven men, which enabled him to send back the three servants he had brought with him from Kuruman. The following were his preparations for the journey:

"I had three muskets for my people, a rifle and a double-barreled smooth-bore for myself; and, having seen such great abundance of game in my visit to the Leebea, I imagined that I could easily supply the wants of my party. Wishing also to avoid the discouragement which would naturally be felt on meeting any obstacles if my companions were

obliged to carry heavy loads, I took only a few biscuits, a few pounds of tea and sugar, and about twenty of coffee, which, as the Arabs find, though used without either milk or sugar, is a most refreshing beverage after fatigue or exposure to the sun. We carried one small tin canister, about fifteen inches square, filled with spare shirting, trowsers, and shoes, to be used when we reached civilized life, and others in a bag, which were expected to wear out on the way; another of the same size for medicines; and a third for books, my stock being a Nautical Almanac, Thomson's Logarithm Tables, and a Bible; a fourth box contained a magic lantern, which we found of much use. The sextant and artificial horizon, thermometer and compasses were carried apart. My ammunition was distributed in portions through the whole luggage; so that, if an accident should befall one part, we could still have others to fall back upon. Our chief hopes for food were upon that; but, in case of failure, I took about twenty pounds of beads, worth forty shillings, which still remained in the stock I brought from Cape Town, a small gipsy tent, just sufficient to sleep in, a sheep-skin mantle as a blanket, and a horse-rug as a bed."

Thus equipped, he left Linyanti on the 11th of November, 1853. The party embarked on the Chobe, which they descended to its confluence with the Leeambye, and then ascended the latter river to the town of Seseke, which they reached on the 19th. While there, Dr. Livingstone frequently gave religious addresses to the people, who were always very attentive. Sometimes they asked sensible questions on the subjects brought before them; at others, they introduced the most frivolous nonsense immediately after hearing the most solemn truths. The progress of the expedition up the river was very slow, which was caused by waiting opposite different villages for supplies of food. The following is the account of their mode of travel:

"When under way our usual procedure is this:—We get up a little before five in the morning; it is then beginning to dawn. While I am dressing, coffee is made; and, having filled my pannikin, the remainder is handed to my companions, who eagerly partake of the refreshing beverage. The servants are busy loading the canoes, while the principal men are sipping the coffee, and, that being soon over, we embark. The next two hours are the most pleasant part of the day's sail. The men paddle away most vigorously: the Barotse, being a tribe of boatmen, have large, deeply-developed chests and shoulders, with indifferent lower extremities. They often engage in loud scolding of each other, in order to relieve the tedium of their work. About eleven we land, and eat any meat which may have remained from the previous evening meal, or a biscuit with honey, and drink water.

"After an hour's rest, we again embark and cover under an umbrella. The heat is oppressive, and, being weak from the last attack of fever, I can not land and keep the camp supplied with flesh. The men, being quite uncovered in the sun, perspire profusely, and in the after-

a few biscuits, a few pounds
e, which, as the Arabs find,
a most refreshing beverage
carried one small tin canister,
ware shirting, trowsers, and
d life, and others in a bag,
y; another of the same size
stock being a Nautical Al-
a Bible; a fourth box con-
much use. The sextant and
es were carried apart. My
ough the whole luggage; so
we could still have others to
were upon that; but, in case
beads, worth forty shillings,
et from Cape Town, a small
ep-skin mantle as a blanket,

th of November, 1853. The
descended to its confluence
e latter river to the town of
While there, Dr. Living-
s to the people, who were
ked sensible questions on the
t, they introduced the most
ng the most solemn truths.
er was very slow, which was
for supplies of food. The
ravel:

e is this:—We get up a little
ning to dawn. While I am
my pannikin, the remainder
partake of the refreshing bev-
e canoes, while the principal
soon over, we embark. The
of the day's sail. The men
e, being a tribe of boatmen,
alders, with indifferent lower
olding of each other, in order
t eleven we land, and eat any
previous evening meal, or a

ck and cower under an um-
weak from the last attack of
plied with flesh. The men,
re profusely, and in the after-

noon begin to stop, as if waiting for the canoes which have been left behind. Sometimes we reach a sleeping-place two hours before sunset, and all being troubled with languor, we gladly remain for the night. Coffee again, and a biscuit, or a piece of coarse bread made of maize-meal, or that of the native corn, make up the bill of fare for the evening, unless we be fortunate enough to kill something—when we boil a potful of flesh.

“The people of every village treated us most liberally, presenting, besides oxen, butter, milk and meal, more than we could stow away in our canoes. The cows in this valley are now yielding, as they frequently do, more milk than the people can use, and both men and women present butter in such quantity that I shall be able to refresh my men as we move along. Anointing the skin prevents the excessive evaporation of the fluids of the body, and acts as clothing in both sun and shade. They always made their presents gracefully. When an ox was given, the owner would say, ‘Here is a little bit of bread for you.’ This was pleasing, for I had been accustomed to the Bechuanas presenting a miserable goat, with the pompous exclamation, ‘Behold an ox!’ The women persisted in giving me copious supplies of shrill praises, or ‘lullilooing;’ but, though I frequently told them to modify their ‘great lords’ and ‘great lions’ to more humble expressions, they so evidently intended to do me honor that I could not help being pleased with the poor creatures’ wishes for our success.”

On the 27th of December the party reached the confluence of the Leeba and Lecambye. On leaving the latter river, which at this point comes from the eastward, Dr. Livingstone makes the following remarks: “From the confluence, where we now are, down to Mosioatunya, there are many long reaches, where a vessel equal to the Thames steamers plying between the bridges could run as freely as they do on the Thames. There are, however, many and serious obstacles to a continued navigation for hundreds of miles at a stretch. About ten miles below the confluence of the Loeti, for instance, there are many large sand-banks in the stream; then you have a hundred miles to the river Simáh, where a Thames steamer could ply at all times of the year; but, again, the space between Simáh and Katima-molelo has five or six rapids with cataracts, one of which—Gonye—could not be passed at any time without portage. Between these rapids there are reaches of still, deep water, of several miles in length. Beyond Katima-molelo to the confluence of the Chobe, you have nearly a hundred miles again of a river capable of being navigated in the same way as in the Barotse valley.

“Now, I do not say that this part of the river presents a very inviting prospect for extemporaneous European enterprise; but when we have a pathway which requires only the formation of portages to make it equal to our canals for hundreds of miles, where the philosophers supposed there was naught but an extensive sandy desert, we must confess that the future partakes at least of the elements of hope. My deliberate

conviction was and is that the part of the country indicated is as capable of supporting millions of inhabitants as it is of its thousands. The grass of the Barotse valley, for instance, is such a densely matted mass, that, when 'laid,' the stalks bear each other up, so that one feels as if walking on the sheaves of a hay-stack, and the leches nestle under it and bring forth their young. The soil which produces this, if placed under the plow, instead of being mere pasturage, would yield grain sufficient to feed vast multitudes."

His progress through the unknown country lying beyond, commenced under favorable auspices. He succeeded in obtaining from the Makololos a number of captives which had been taken by one of their chiefs from the tribes to the eastward. The restoration of these captives created a most favorable impression in the new countries he now entered. Proceeding up the Leeba they soon reached the village of Manenka, a female chief of the Balonda tribe, who regarded them with some suspicion, and they did not succeed in visiting her. On the 6th of January, 1854, however, they reached the village of another female chief, named Nyamoana, the sister of Shinte, the greatest Balonda chief in all that part of the country. Her husband was clothed in a kilt of green and red baize, and was armed with a spear and a broadsword of antique form. Beside him sat the chieftainess, a rather aged woman, having a bad outward squint in the eyes.

"By way of gaining their confidence," says Dr. Livingstone, "I showed them my hair, which is considered a curiosity in all this region. They said, 'Is that hair? It is the mane of a lion, and not hair at all.' Some thought that I had made a wig of a lion's mane, as they sometimes do with fibers of the 'ife,' and dye it black and twist it so as to resemble a mass of their own wool. I could not return the joke by telling them that theirs was not hair, but the wool of sheep, for they have none of these in the country; and even though they had, as Herodotus remarked, 'the African sheep are clothed with hair, and men's heads with wool.' So I had to be content with asserting that mine was the real original hair, such as theirs would have been had it not been scorched and frizzled by the sun. In proof of what the sun could do, I compared my own bronzed face and hands, then about the same in complexion as the lighter-colored Makololo, with the white skin of my chest. They readily believed that, as they go nearly naked and fully exposed to that influence, we might be of common origin after all. Here, as everywhere when heat and moisture are combined, the people are very dark, but not quite black. There is always a shade of brown in the most deeply colored. I showed my watch and pocket-compass, which are considered great curiosities; but, though the lady was called on by her husband to look, she would not be persuaded to approach near enough."

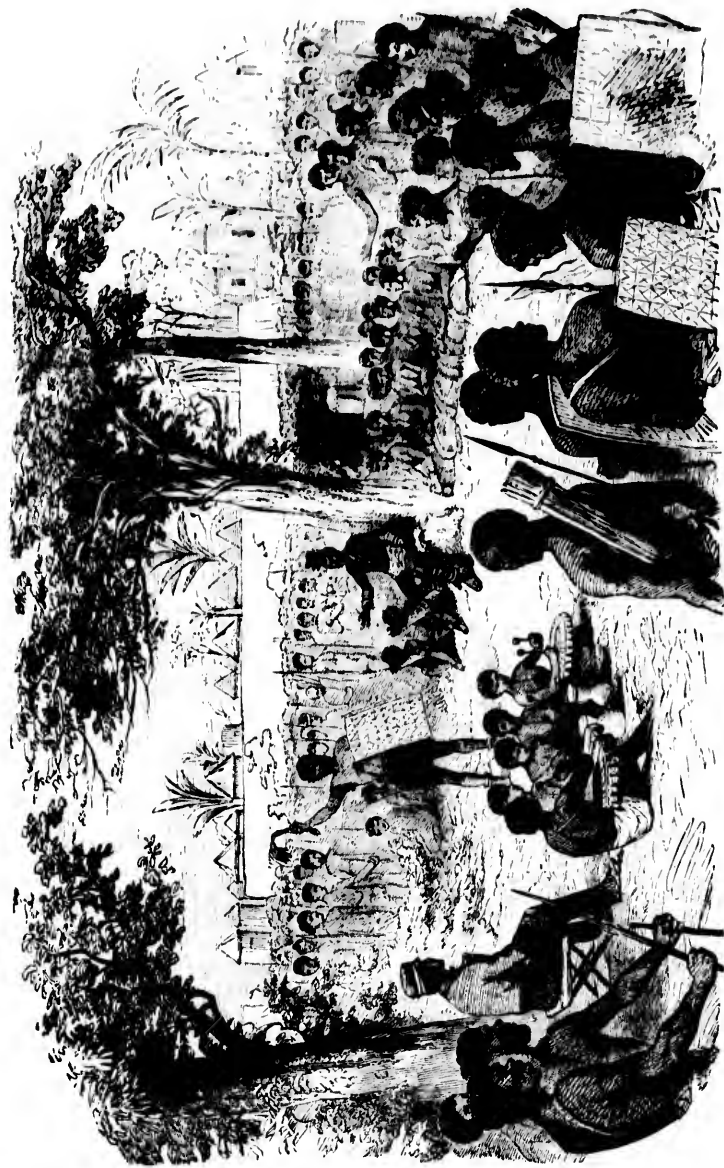
The same evening, Manenka, the other female chief, arrived, and, after a sufficiently long palaver, it was decided that the party should proceed to the residence of Shinte, the great Balonda chief. They set

country indicated is as capable
 its thousands. The grass
 densely matted mass, that,
 that one feels as if walking
 nestle under it and bring
 this, if placed under the
 and yield grain sufficient to

country lying beyond, com-
 ded in obtaining from the
 been taken by one of their
 restoration of these captives
 new countries he now en-
 reached the village of Man-
 regarded them with some
 g her. On the 6th of Jan-
 go of another female chief,
 greatest Balonda chief in all
 clothed in a kilt of green
 and a broadsword of antique
 her aged woman, having a

says Dr. Livingstone, "I
 a curiosity in all this region,
 f a lion, and not hair at all.
 n's mane, as they sometimes
 and twist it so as to resemble
 rn the joke by telling them
 eep, for they have none of
 hey had, as Herodotus re-
 a hair, and men's heads with
 ing that mine was the real
 en had it not been scorched
 he sun could do, I compared
 t the same in complexion as
 te skin of my chest. They
 ed and fully exposed to that
 ter all. Here, as everywhere
 e people are very dark, but
 f brown in the most deeply
 ompass, which are considered
 e called on by her husband to
 ach near enough."

er female chief, arrived, and,
 ecided that the party should
 eat Balonda chief. They set



RECEPTION OF THE MISSION BY SHINTE. Page 97a.



RECEPTION OF THE MISSION BY SHINTE. Page 97s.



out, on the 11th of January, through wild forests, delayed by the incessant rains. They traveled much more in the deep gloom of the forest than in open sunlight. No passage existed on either side of the narrow path made by the ax. Large climbing plants entwined themselves around the trunks and branches of gigantic trees like boa-constrictors, and they often do constrict the trees by which they rise, and, killing them, stand erect themselves.

The number of little villages seemed about equal to the number of valleys. At some they stopped and rested, the people becoming more liberal as they advanced. Others they found deserted, a sudden panic having seized the inhabitants, though the drum of Manenka was kept beaten pretty constantly, in order to give notice of the approach of great people. When they had decided to remain for the night at any village, the inhabitants lent them the roofs of their huts, which, in form, resemble those of the Makololo, or a Chinaman's hat, and can be taken off the walls at pleasure. They lifted them off, and brought them to the spot selected as a lodging, and when the men had propped them up with stakes, they were then safely housed for the night. Every one who came to salute either Manenka or the strangers, rubbed the upper parts of the arms and chest with ashes; those who wished to show profounder reverence, put some also on the face.

On the 15th, a message of welcome arrived from Shinte, together with a present of six baskets of manioc and two dried fishes. "Our friends," says Dr. Livingstone, "informed us that Shinte would be highly honored by the presence of three white men in his town at once. Two others had sent forward notice of their approach from another quarter (the west). Could it be Barth or Krapf? How pleasant to meet with Europeans in such an out-of-the-way region! The rush of thoughts made me almost forget my fever. Are they of the same color as I am? 'Yes, exactly so.' And have the same hair? 'Is that hair? we thought it was a wig; we never saw the like before. This white man must be of the sort that lives in the sea.' Henceforth my men took the hint, and always sounded my praises as a true specimen of the variety of white men who live in the sea. 'Only look at his hair. It is made quite straight by the sea water.'

"16th.—After a short march we came to a most lovely valley about a mile and a half wide, and stretching away eastward up to a low prolongation of Monakádzi. A small stream meanders down the center of this pleasant green glen, and, on a little rill which flows into it from the western side, stands the town of Kabompo, or, as he likes best to be called, Shinte. (Latitude $12^{\circ} 37' 35''$ south; longitude $22^{\circ} 47'$ east.) When Manenka thought the sun was high enough for us to make a lucky entrance, we found the town embowered in bananas and other tropical trees having great expansion of leaf; the streets are straight, and present a complete contrast to those of the Bechuanas, which are all very tortuous. Here, too, we first saw native huts with square walls

and round roofs. Goats were browsing about, and, when we made our appearance, a crowd of negroes, all fully armed, ran toward us as if they would eat us up. Some had guns, but the manner in which they were held showed that the owners were more accustomed to bows and arrows."

The other Europeans proved to be two half-caste Portuguese traders. All three of the strangers were received in the *kotta*, or place of audience, which was three hundred yards square. Shinte sat at one end, under a banyan tree, on a sort of throne covered with a leopard's skin. He had on a checked jacket and a kilt of scarlet baize edged with green. Many strings of large beads hung from his neck, and his limbs were covered with iron and copper armlets and bracelets; on his head he wore a helmet made of beads woven neatly together and crowned with a great bunch of goose feathers. Close to him sat three lads with large sheaves of arrows over their shoulders. Behind Shinte sat about a hundred women clothed in their best, which happened to be a profusion of red baize. The chief wife of Shinte, one of the Matebelo or Zulus, sat in front with a curious red cap on her head. During the intervals between the speeches, these ladies burst forth into a sort of plaintive ditty; but it was impossible to distinguish whether it was in praise of the speaker, of Shinte, or of themselves. This was the first time Dr. Livingstone had ever seen females present in a public assembly. When nine speakers had concluded their orations, Shinte stood up, and so did all the people. He had maintained true African dignity of manner all the while. About a thousand people were present, and three hundred soldiers. The sun had now become hot, and the scene ended by the Mambari discharging their guns.

Dr. Livingstone had a private reception the next day, at which he was received in a very friendly manner. A present of an ox increased the favorable impression produced on the chief, and he promised to furnish guides to the Portuguese settlements. The inevitable delay of a few days occurred, occasioned partly by heavy rains and partly by the natural tardiness of all African tribes. During the stay, an amusing incident took place: "Shinte was most anxious to see the pictures of the magic lantern, but fever had so weakening an effect, and I had such violent action of the heart, with buzzing in the ears, that I could not go for several days; when I did go for the purpose, he had his principal men and the same crowd of court beauties near him as at the reception. The first picture exhibited was Abraham about to slaughter his son Isaac. It was shown as large as life, and the uplifted knife was in the act of striking the lad; the Balonda men remarked that the picture was much more like a god than the things of wood and clay they worshipped. I explained that this man was the first of a race to whom God had given the Bible we now held, and that among his children our Saviour appeared. The ladies listened with silent awe; but, when I moved the slide, the uplifted dagger moving toward them, they thought

out, and, when we made our
ned, ran toward us as if they
manner in which they were
o accenstomed to bows and

half-caste Portuguese traders.
n the *kotta*, or place of audi
nare. Shinte sat at one end,
covered with a leopard's skin.
pearlet baize edged with green.
neck, and his limbs were cov-
ecelebs; on his head he wore a
er and crowned with a great
three lads with largo sheaves
Shinte sat about a hundred
ened to be a profusion of red
f the Matebele or Zulus, sat
head. During the intervals
forth into a sort of plaintive
whether it was in praise of
This was the first time Dr.
in a public assembly. When
s, Shinte stood up, and so did
African dignity of manner all
re present, and three hundred
, and the scene ended by the

ion the next day, at which he
A present of an ox increased
chief, and he promised to fur-
nts. The inevitable delay of a
heavy rains and partly by the
During the stay, an amusing
anxious to see the pictures of
ening an effect, and I had such
in the ears, that I could not go
e purpose, he had his principal
es near him as at the reception.
am about to slaughter his son
d the uplited knife was in the
n remarked that the picture was
ys of wood and clay they wor-
s the first of a race to whom
and that among his children our
with silent awe; but, when I
wing toward them, they thought

it was to be sheathed in their bodies instead of Isaac's. 'Mother! mother!' all shouted at once, and off they rushed, helter-skelter, tumbling pell-mell over each other, and over the little idol huts and tobacco bushes. We could not get one of them back again. Shinte, however, sat bravely through the whole, and afterward examined the instrument with interest. An explanation was always added after each time of showing its powers, so that no one should imagine there was aught supernatural in it."

Leaving Shinte on the 26th of January with eight of his men to assist in carrying the luggage, the party proceeded in a northerly direction through a rich, undulating country. The chief guide, Intemese, sent orders to all the villages that Shinte's friends must have abundance of provisions, and the time required for carrying these orders into effect impeded their progress considerably. Crossing the Leeba in latitude 12°, they left the Balonda territory, and entered on an extensive plain, twenty miles broad, and covered with water. The route, for several days, was through the territories of a chief named Katema, who had returned a favorable answer to Dr. Livingstone's application. The head men of the villages, who were relations of the former, suffered the party to pass without molestation. Their progress was slow, however, on account of the many streams which it was necessary to cross, and the overflowed condition of the country.

On the 13th of February, they reached the town of Katema, in latitude 11° 35' south. It was a large collection of detached villages rather than a town. "Next morning we had a formal presentation, and found Katema seated on a sort of a throne, with about three hundred men on the ground around, and thirty women, who were said to be his wives, close behind him. The main body of the people were seated in a semicircle, at a distance of fifty yards. Each party had its own head-man stationed at a little distance in front, and, when beckoned by the chief, came near him as counselors. Intemese gave our history, and Katema placed sixteen large baskets of meal before us, half a dozen fowls, and a dozen eggs, and expressed regret that we had slept hungry: he did not like any stranger to suffer want in his town; and added, 'Go home and cook and eat, and you will then be in a fit state to speak to me at an audience I will give you to-morrow.'

"Returning next morning, Katema addressed me thus: 'I am the great Moene (lord) Katema, the fellow of Matiamvo. There is no one in the country equal to Matiamvo and me. I have always lived here, and my forefathers too. There is the house in which my father lived. You found no human skulls near the place where you are encamped. I never killed any of the traders: they all come to me. I am the great Moene Katema, of whom you have heard.' He looked as if he had fallen asleep tipsy and dreamed of his greatness. On explaining my objects to him, he promptly pointed out three men who would be our guides, and explained that the north-west path was the most direct,

and that by which all traders came, but that the water at present standing on the plains would reach up to the loins: he would therefore send us by a more northerly route, which no trader had yet traversed. This was more suited to our wishes, for we never found a path safe that had been trodden by slave-traders."

After a week's rest they started again, passing the small town of Dilolo, out of which flows one branch of the Leeba. After this, they entered upon an immense uninhabited plain, covered deep with water. While crossing this region, Dr. Livingstone noticed a wonderful instance of animal instinct, which he thus describes: "Ants surely are wiser than some men, for they learn by experience. They have established themselves even on these plains, where water stands so long annually as to allow the lotus, and other aqueous plants, to come to maturity. When all the ant-horizon is submerged a foot deep they manage to exist by ascending to little houses built of black tenacious loam on stalks of grass and placed higher than the line of inundation. This must have been the result of experience; for, if they had waited till the water actually invaded their terrestrial habitations, they would not have been able to procure materials for their aerial quarters unless they dived down to the bottom for every mouthful of clay. Some of these upper chambers are about the size of a bean, and others as large as a man's thumb. They must have built in anticipation; and if so, let us humbly hope that the sufferers by the late inundations in France may be possessed of as much common sense as the little black ants of the Dilolo plains."

On reaching unflooded lands beyond the plain, they found the villages there acknowledged the authority of a chief named Katénde, and discovered, also, to their surprise, that the almost level plain they had passed forms the watershed between the southern and northern rivers, for they had now entered a district in which the rivers flowed in a northerly direction into the Kasai or Loké, near to which they then were, while the rivers they had hitherto crossed were all running southward. This cheering discovery was counterbalanced by the fact, which soon became evident, that the party had left behind them the friendly tribes, and entered a region inhabited by petty chiefs, all of whom were alike in their insolence and rapacity. For several weeks, there was no end to the difficulties which they encountered. Every chief demanded payment for their passage through his territory; and as the object coveted was an ox or one of the faithful Makololos, it required the utmost prudence and firmness to refuse, and yet avoid a bloody conflict. At every crossing of the Kasai, its tributary, the Loagima, and their many smaller affluents, all of which were swollen by the rains, an exorbitant sum was demanded, so that the means of the party diminished rapidly, while they advanced but slowly. At Ngambi, the residence of the Chiboque, or chief of that name, every preparation was made for an attack, and the party was only saved by the firmness of Dr. Livingstone,

the water at present stand-
: he would therefore send
er had yet traversed. This
found a path safe that had

passing the small town of
e Leeba. After this, they
covered deep with water.
e noticed a wonderful in-
escribes: "Ants surely are
erience. They have estab-
re water stands so long an-
ous plants, to come to matu-
ed a foot deep they manage
of black tenacious loam on
e line of inundation. This
for, if they had waited till
habitations, they would not
r aerial quarters unless they
ful of clay. Some of these
an, and others as large as a
icipation; and if so, let us
inundations in France may
the little black ants of the

the plain, they found the vil-
a chief named Katénde, and
almost level plain they had
outhern and northern rivers,
which the rivers flowed in a
ké, near to which they then
ossed were all running south-
erbalanced by the fact, which
eft behind them the friendly
etty chiefs, all of whom were
several weeks, there was no
red. Every chief demanded
territory; and as the object
l Makololos, it required the
d yet avoid a bloody conflict.
ary, the Loagima, and their
swollen by the rains, an ex-
eans of the party diminished
At Ngambi, the residence of
y preparation was made for an
e firmness of Dr. Livingstone,

who, threatening to shoot the first man that advanced, solemnly warned the Chiboque of the enormity of the act he was about to commit, and induced him to pause in time.

"The reason," says he, "why the people have imbibed the idea so strongly that they have a right to demand payment for leave to pass through the country is probably this. They have seen no traders except those either engaged in purchasing slaves or who have slaves in their employment. These slave-traders have always been very much at the mercy of the chiefs through whose country they have passed; for, if they afforded a ready asylum for runaway slaves, the traders might be deserted at any moment, and stripped of their property altogether. They are thus obliged to curry favor with the chiefs, so as to get a safe-conduct from them. The same system is adopted to induce the chiefs to part with their people, whom all feel to be the real source of their importance in the country. On the return of the traders from the interior with chains of slaves, it is so easy for a chief who may be so disposed to take away a chain of eight or ten unresisting slaves, that the merchant is fain to give any amount of presents in order to secure the good-will of the rulers. The independent chiefs, not knowing why their favor is so eagerly sought, become excessively proud and supercilious in their demands, and look upon white men with the greatest contempt. To such lengths did the Bangála, a tribe near to which we had now approached, proceed a few years ago, that they compelled the Portuguese traders to pay for water, wood, and even grass, and every possible pretext was invented for levying fines; and these were patiently submitted to so long as the slave-trade continued to flourish. We had unconsciously come in contact with a system which was quite unknown in the country from which my men had set out. An English trader may there hear a demand for payment of guides, but never, so far as I am aware, is he asked to pay for leave to traverse a country. The idea does not seem to have entered the native mind, except through slave-traders; for the aborigines all acknowledge that the untilled land, not needed for pasturage, belongs to God alone, and that no harm is done by people passing through it."

The numerous rivers flowing northwards were divided by hills, covered with forests, which were traversed only by a narrow path. In passing through these, Dr. Livingstone had an opportunity of observing the peculiarities of his ox, Sinbad. "He had a softer back than the others, but a much more intractable temper. His horns were bent downward and hung loosely, so he could do no harm with them; but, as we wended our way slowly along the narrow path, he would suddenly dart aside. A string tied to a stick put through the cartilage of the nose serves instead of a bridle: if you jerk this back, it makes him run faster on; if you pull it to one side, he allows the nose and head to go, but keeps the opposite eye directed to the forbidden spot and goes in spite of you. The only way he can be brought to a stand is by a stroke

with a wand across the nose. When Sinbad ran in below a climber stretched over the path so low that I could not stoop under it, I was dragged off and came down on the crown of my head; and he never allowed an opportunity of the kind to pass without trying to inflict a kick, as if I neither had nor deserved his love." He relates another amusing circumstance concerning his oxen: "One of those we offered to the Chibouque had been rejected because he had lost part of his tail, as they thought that it had been cut off and witchcraft-medicine inserted; and some mirth was excited by my proposing to raise a similar objection to all the oxen we still had in our possession. The remaining four soon presented a singular shortness of their caudal extremities, and, though no one ever asked whether they had medicine in the stumps or no, we were no more troubled by the demand for an ox."

* * * * *

"The amount of population in the central parts of the country may be called large only as compared with the Cape Colony or the Bechnana country. The cultivated land is as nothing compared with what might be brought under the plow. There are flowing streams in abundance, which, were it necessary, could be turned to the purpose of irrigation with but little labor. Miles of fruitful country are now lying absolutely waste, for there is not even game to eat off the fine pasturage, and to recline under the ever-green, shady groves which we are ever passing in our progress. The people who inhabit the central region are not all quite black in color. Many incline to that of bronze, and others are as light in hue as the Bushmen, who, it may be remembered, afford a proof that heat alone does not cause blackness, but that heat and moisture combined do very materially deepen the color."

On the 26th of March the party crossed the Quilo, and, four days afterward, came to a sudden descent in the high table-land. Far below them lay the superb valley of the Quango, which Dr. Livingstone thus describes: "If you sit on the spot where Mary, Queen of Scots, viewed the battle of Langside, and look down on the vale of Clyde, you may see, in miniature, the glorious sight which a much greater and richer valley presented to our view. It is about a hundred miles broad, clothed with dark forest, except where the light-green grass covers meadow lands on the Quango, which here and there glances out in the sun as it wends its way to the north. The opposite side of this great valley appears like a range of lofty mountains, and the descent into it about a mile, which, measured perpendicularly, may be from a thousand to twelve hundred feet. Emerging from the gloomy forests of Londa, this magnificent prospect made us all feel as if a weight had been lifted off our eyelids. A cloud was passing across the middle of the valley, from which rolling thunder pealed, while above, all was glorious sunlight; and, when we went down to the part where we saw it passing, we found that a very heavy thunder shower had fallen under the path of the cloud, and the bottom of the valley, which, from above, seemed

I ran in below a climber not stoop under it, I was of my head; and he never without trying to inflict a blow." He relates another "One of those we offered he had lost part of his tail, and witchcraft-medicine in- proposing to raise a similar possession. The remaining of their caudal extremities, they had medicine in the demand for an ox."

* *
parts of the country may be e Colony or the Bechuana mpared with what might be ng streams in abundance, o the purpose of irrigation ry are now lying absolutely f the fine pasturage, and to hich we are ever passing in e central region are not all f bronze, and others are as remembered, afford a proof but that heat and moisture or."

d the Quilo, and, four days high table-land. Far below hich Dr. Livingstone thus ary, Queen of Scots, viewed the vale of Clyde, you may a much greater and richer out a hundred miles broad, he light-green grass covers and there glances out in the e opposite side of this great ins, and the descent into it rly, may be from a thousand e gloomy forests of Londa, s if a weight had been lifted oss the middle of the valley, above, all was glorious sun- part where we saw it passing, er had fallen under the path y, which, from above, seemed

quite smooth, we discovered to be intersected by great numbers of deep-ent streams."

On reaching the river, they were met by a chief who endeavored to prevent their passage unless a man was given up to him. The following is an account of the last of their many difficulties of the same kind: "As I was trying to persuade my men to move on to the bank in spite of these people, a young half-caste Portuguese serjeant of militia, Cypriano di Abreu, made his appearance and gave the same advice. He had come across the Quango in search of beeswax. When we moved off from the chief who had been plaguing us, his people opened a fire from our sheds, and continued to blaze away some time in the direction we were going; but none of the bullets reached us. It is probable that they expected a demonstration of the abundance of ammunition they possessed would make us run; but, when we continued to move quietly to the ford, they proceeded no further than our sleeping place. Cypriano assisted us in making a more satisfactory arrangement with the ferryman than parting with my blanket, and as soon as we reached the opposite bank we were in the territory of the Bangala, who are subjects of the Portuguese, and often spoken of as the Cassanges or Cassantse; and, happily, all our difficulties with the border tribes were at an end."

Cypriano treated the weary explorer with the utmost kindness, stripping his garden of all its vegetables in order to entertain him properly. "We were detained by rains and a desire to ascertain our geographical position till Monday, the 10th, and only got the latitude 9° 50' south, and, after three days' pretty hard traveling through the long grass, reached Cassange, the farthest inland station of the Portuguese in Western Africa. I made my entrance in a somewhat forlorn state as to clothing among our Portuguese allies. The first gentleman I met in the village asked if I had a passport, and said it was necessary to take me before the authorities. As I was in the same state of mind in which individuals are who commit a petty depredation in order to obtain the shelter and food of a prison, I gladly accompanied him to the house of the commandant or chefe, Senhor de Silva Rego. Having shown my passport to this gentleman, he politely asked me to supper, and, as we had eaten nothing except the farina of Cypriano from the Quango to this, I suspect I appeared particularly ravenous to the other gentlemen around the table. They seemed, however, to understand my position pretty well, from having all traveled extensively themselves. Had they not been present, I might have put some in my pocket to eat by night, for, after fever, the appetite is excessively keen, and manioc is one of the most unsatisfying kinds of food. Captain Antonio Rodrigues Neves then kindly invited me to take up my abode in his house. Next morning this generous man arrayed me in decent clothing, and continued, during the whole period of my stay, to treat me as if I had been his brother.

"As the traders of Cassange were the first white men we had come

to, we sold the tusks belonging to Sekeletu, which had been brought to test the difference of prices in the Makololo and white men's country. The result was highly satisfactory to my companions, as the Portuguese give much larger prices for ivory than traders from the Cape can possibly give who labor under the disadvantage of considerable overland expenses and ruinous restrictions. Two muskets, three small barrels of gunpowder, and English calico and baize sufficient to clothe my whole party, with large bunches of beads, all for one tusk, were quite delightful for those who had been accustomed to give two tusks for one gun. With another tusk we procured calico, which here is the chief currency, to pay our way down to the coast. The remaining two were sold for money to purchase a horse for Sekeletu at Loanda."

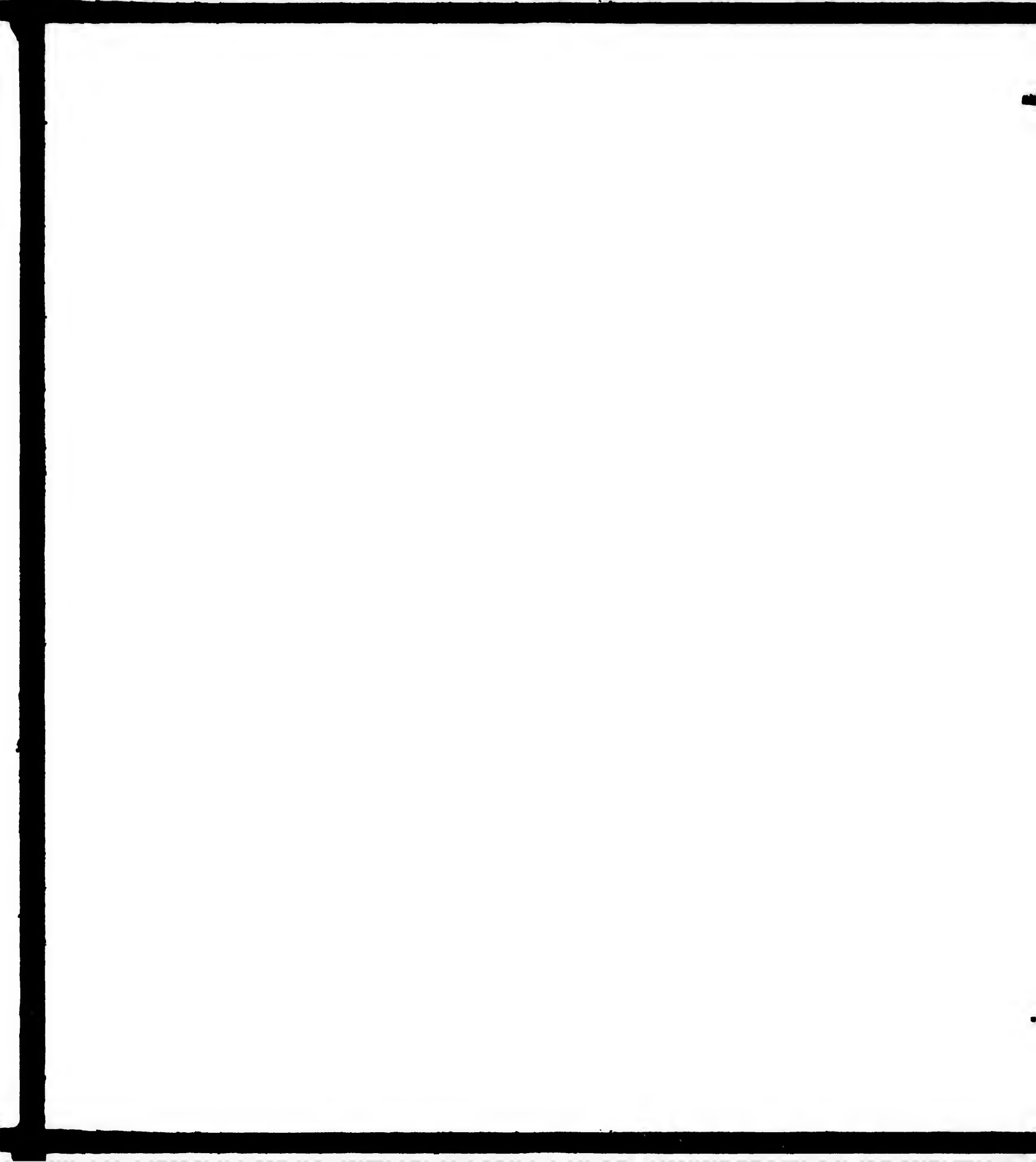
After a stay of eight days at Cassange, the party set out for the coast, having still three hundred miles to traverse. Passing through Ambaca and over the highlands of Golungo Alte, where Dr. Livingstone was obliged to rest some days, in order to recover from another attack of fever, he continued his journey, accompanied by all of his men, whose confidence in him was so great that notwithstanding their fears of being devoured by the whites (who, they had been told, were cannibals) or sold as slaves, they promised to remain with him. He thus describes the conclusion of this extraordinary journey: "As we were now drawing near to the sea, my companions were looking at every thing in a serious light. One of them asked me if we should all have an opportunity of watching each other at Loanda. 'Suppose one went for water; would the others see if he were kidnapped?' I replied, 'I see what you are driving at; and if you suspect me you may return, for I am as ignorant of Loanda as you are; but nothing will happen to you but what happens to myself. We have stood by each other hitherto, and will do so to the last.' The plains adjacent to Loanda are somewhat elevated and comparatively sterile. On coming across these we first beheld the sea: my companions looked upon the boundless ocean with awe. On describing their feelings afterward, they remarked that 'we marched along with our father, believing that what the ancients had always told us was true, that the world has no end; but all at once the world said to us, "I am finished: there is no more of me!"' They had always imagined that the world was one extended plain without limit.

"They were now somewhat apprehensive of suffering want, and I was unable to allay their fears with any promise of supply, for my own mind was depressed by disease and care. The fever had induced a state of chronic dysentery so troublesome that I could not remain on the ox more than ten minutes at a time; and as we came down the declivity above the city of Loanda on the 31st of May, I was laboring under great depression of spirits, as I understood that, in a population of twelve thousand souls, there was but one genuine English gentleman. I naturally felt anxious to know whether he were possessed of good nature, or was one of those crusty mortals one would rather not meet at all.

VELS IN

which had been brought to
 and white men's country.
 companions, as the Portuguese
 from the Cape can possi-
 e of considerable overland
 baskets, three small barrels of
 efficient to clothe my whole
 me tusk, were quite delight-
 give two tusks for one gun.
 h here is the chief currency,
 remaining two were sold for
 Loanda."

e, the party set out for the
 traverse. Passing through
 go Alte, where Dr. Living-
 ler to recover from another
 , accompanied by all of his
 t that notwithstanding their
 o, they had been told, were
 l to remain with him. He
 ordinary journey: "As we
 companions were looking at
 m asked me if we should all
 r at Loanda. "Suppose one
 he were kidnapped?" I re-
 d if you suspect me you may
 ou are; but nothing will hap-
 We have stood by each other
 plains adjacent to Loanda are
 ile. On coming across these
 ked upon the boundless ocean
 afterward, they remarked that
 ng that what the ancients had
 s no end; but all at once the
 no more of me!" They had
 xtended plain without limit.
 ssive of suffering want, and I
 romise of supply, for my own
 The fever had induced a state
 I could not remain on the ox
 we came down the declivity
 f May, I was laboring under
 ood that, in a population of
 genuine English gentleman. I
 were possessed of good nature,
 uld rather not meet at all.





BOAT CAPSIZED BY A HAI POPOYAN'S BOHEED OF THE YONG.



"This gentleman, Mr. Gabriel, our commissioner for the suppression of the slave trade, had kindly forwarded an invitation to meet me on the way from Cassange, but, unfortunately, it crossed me on the road. When we entered his porch, I was delighted to see a number of flowers cultivated carefully, and inferred from this circumstance that he was, what I soon discovered him to be, a real whole-hearted Englishman. Seeing me ill, he benevolently offered me his bed. Never shall I forget the luxurious pleasure I enjoyed in feeling myself again on a good English couch, after six months' sleeping on the ground. I was soon asleep; and Mr. Gabriel, coming in almost immediately, rejoiced at the soundness of my repose.

"Some of her majesty's cruisers soon came into the port, and, seeing the emaciated condition to which I was reduced, offered to convey me to St. Helena or homeward; but, though I had reached the coast, I had found that, in consequence of the great amount of forest, rivers, and marsh, there was no possibility of a highway for wagons, and I had brought a party of Sekeletu's people with me, and found the tribes near the Portuguese settlement so very unfriendly that it would be altogether impossible for my men to return alone. I therefore resolved to decline the tempting offers of my naval friends, and take back my Makololo companions to their chief, with a view of trying to make a path from his country to the east coast by means of the great river Zambesi or Lecambe.

"I, however, gladly availed myself of the medical assistance of Mr. Cockin, the surgeon of the *Polyphemus*, at the suggestion of his commander, Captain Phillips. Mr. Cockin's treatment, aided by the exhilarating presence of the warm-hearted naval officers, and Mr. Gabriel's unwearied hospitality and care, soon brought me round again. On the 14th I was so far well as to call on the bishop, in company with my party, who were arrayed in new robes of striped cotton cloth and red caps, all presented to them by Mr. Gabriel. He received us, as head of the provisional government, in the grand hall of the palace. He put many intelligent questions respecting the Makololo, and then gave them free permission to come to Loanda as often as they pleased. This interview pleased the Makololo extremely.

"Every one remarked the serious deportment of the Makololo. They viewed the large stone houses and churches in the vicinity of the great ocean with awe. A house with two stories was, until now, beyond their comprehension. In explanation of this strange thing, I had always been obliged to use the word for hut; and, as huts are constructed by the poles being let into the earth, they never could comprehend how the poles of one hut could be founded upon the roof of another, or how men could live in the upper story, with the conical roof of the lower one in the middle. Some Makololo, who had visited my little house at Kolobeng, in trying to describe it to their countrymen at Linyanti, said, 'It is not a hut: it is a mountain with several caves in it.'

"Commander Bedingfeld and Captain Skene invited them to visit their vessels, the *Pluto* and *Philomel*. Knowing their fears, I told them that no one need go if he entertained the least suspicion of foul play. Nearly the whole party went; and, when on deck, I pointed to the sailors, and said, 'Now, these are all my countrymen, sent by our queen for the purpose of putting down the trade of those that buy and sell black men.' They replied, 'Truly! they are just like you!' and all their fears seemed to vanish at once, for they went forward among the men, and the jolly tars, acting much as the Makololo would have done in similar circumstances, handed them a share of the bread and beef which they had for dinner. The commander allowed them to fire off a cannon; and, having the most exalted ideas of its power, they were greatly pleased when I told them, 'That is what they put down the slave trade with.' The size of the brig-of-war amazed them. 'It is not a canoe at all: it is a town!' The sailors' deck they named 'the kotla'; and then, as a climax to their description of this great ark, added, 'And what sort of a town is it that you must climb up into with a rope?'

"The effect of the politeness of the officers and men on their minds was most beneficial. They had behaved with the greatest kindness to me all the way from Linyanti, and I now rose rapidly in their estimation; for, whatever they may have surmised before, they now saw that I was respected among my own countrymen, and always afterward treated me with the greatest deference.

* * * * *

"The objects which I had in view in opening up the country, as stated in a few notes of my journey published in the newspapers of Angola, so commended themselves to the general government and merchants of Loanda, that, at the instance of his excellency the bishop, a handsome present for Sekeletu was granted by the Board of Public Works (*Junta da Fazenda Publica*). It consisted of a colonel's complete uniform and a horse for the chief, and suits of clothing for all the men who accompanied me. The merchants also made a present, by public subscription, of handsome specimens of all their articles of trade, and two donkeys, for the purpose of introducing the breed into his country, as tsetso can not kill this beast of burden. These presents were accompanied by letters from the bishop and merchants; and I was kindly favored with letters of recommendation to the Portuguese authorities in Eastern Africa.

"I took with me a good stock of cotton cloth, fresh supplies of ammunition and beads, and gave each of my men a musket. As my companions had amassed considerable quantities of goods, they were unable to carry mine; but the bishop furnished me with twenty carriers, and sent forward orders to all the commandants of the districts through which we were to pass to render me every assistance in their power. Being now supplied with a good new tent made by my friends on board the *Philomel*, we left Loanda on the 20th of September, 1854, and passed round by sea to the mouth of the river Bengo."

e invited them to visit
ing their fears, I told
least suspicion of foul
en on deck, I pointed
countrymen, sent by our
e of those that buy and
just like you?' and all
ent forward among the
cololo would have done
of the bread and beef
owed them to fire off a
f its power, they were
what they put down the
mazed them. 'It is not
they named 'the kotla;'
great ark, added, 'And
p into with a rope?'
and men on their minds
the greatest kindness to
rapidly in their estima-
before, they now saw that
a, and always afterward

* *
g up the country, as stated
newspapers of Angola, so
nment and merchants of
y the bishop, a handsome
d of Public Works (Junta
el's complete uniform and
all the men who accom-
nt, by public subscription,
rade, and two donkeys, for
country, as tsetse can not
re accompanied by letters
kindly favored with letters
ties in Eastern Africa.
cloth, fresh supplies of am-
en a musket. As my com-
of goods, they were unable
with twenty carriers, and
s of the districts through
assistance in their power.
ade by my friends on board
September, 1854, and passed
to."

After spending some time in the hills of Golungo Alto, and making excursions into the adjacent districts, Dr. Livingstone visited the singular rocks of Pungo Andongo, where he remained for some time as the guest of Colonel Pires, commandant of the fort at that place. While enjoying the hospitality of this merchant-prince in his commodious residence, which is outside the rocks and commands a beautiful view of all the adjacent country, the traveler learned that all his dispatches, maps and journal had gone to the bottom of the sea in the mail-packet *Fore-runner*. He availed himself of the kindness of Colonel Pires, and remained till the end of the year reproducing his lost papers.

Leaving Pungo Andongo on the 1st of January, 1855, he reached Cassange in a fortnight, and there remained until the 20th of February. He then set out for Cabango, the residence of the powerful chief, Matianvo, which was at a considerable distance to the north-east of his upward route. He was accompanied by a *pombeiro*, or native trader, called Senhor Pascoal. After crossing the Quango, they ascended the eastern acclivity which bounds the great valley, and found the top of it to be five thousand feet above the sea. Those of the chiefs whom they had previously seen were less troublesome than the first time, and during the whole of the trip to Cabango, which occupied more than two months, they had but one serious difficulty. The head-man of one of the villages had been struck by one of Dr. Livingstone's men, while bargaining for a piece of meat. "My principal men paid five pieces of cloth and a gun as an atonement; but the more they yielded the more exorbitant he became, and he sent word to all the surrounding villages to aid him in avenging the affront of a blow on the beard. As their courage usually rises with success, I resolved to yield no more, and departed. In passing through a forest in the country beyond, we were startled by a body of men rushing after us. They began by knocking down the burdens of the hindermost of my men, and several shots were fired, each party spreading out on both sides of the path. I fortunately had a six-barreled revolver, which my friend Captain Henry Need, of her majesty's brig *Linnet*, had considerably sent to Golungo Alto after my departure from Loanda. Taking this in my hand, and forgetting fever, I staggered quickly along the path with two or three of my men, and fortunately encountered the chief. The sight of the six barrels gaping into his stomach, with my own ghastly visage looking daggers at his face, seemed to produce an instant revolution in his martial feelings; for he cried out, 'Oh, I have only come to speak to you, and wish peace only.'" The chief was completely cowed, and allowed them to depart without further molestation. This event gave great courage to the Makololos, who boasted of their prowess for a long time.

Dr. Livingstone thus describes their progress towards Cabango: "The country was generally covered with forest, and we slept every night at some village. I was so weak, and had become so deaf from the effects of the fever, that I was glad to avail myself of the company of

Senhor Pascoal and the other native traders. Our rate of traveling was only two geographical miles per hour, and the average number of hours three and a half per day, or seven miles. Two thirds of the month were spent in stoppages, there being only ten traveling days in each month. The stoppages were caused by sickness, and the necessity of remaining in different parts to purchase food; and also because when one carrier was sick the rest refused to carry his load."

The expedition reached Cabango on the 7th of May, and remained there two weeks. This place (latitude $9^{\circ} 31'$ south, longitude $20^{\circ} 31'$ or $32'$ east) is the dwelling-place of Muanzanza, one of Matiamvo's subordinate chiefs. His village consists of about two hundred huts and ten or twelve square houses, constructed of poles with grass interwoven. The latter are occupied by half-caste Portuguese from Ambaca, agents for the Cassange traders. Dr. Livingstone now determined to proceed in a south-easterly course to the Balonda country, and was furnished by Muanzanza with a guide, who, however, left them the second day.

In eighteen days they crossed the swampy watershed, and came upon their former trail at the Lake Dilolo. The only difficulty they had in this journey was at the Kasai river, where a chief named Kawawa attempted to prevent them from crossing without paying a heavy tribute. They, however, circumvented the scamp by appropriating one of his canoes at night, and quietly transferring every thing to the opposite bank. "When ready to depart in the morning, Kawawa's people appeared on the opposite heights, and could scarcely believe their eyes when they saw us prepared to start away to the south. At last one of them called out, 'Ah! ye are bad;' to which Pitsane and his companions retorted, 'Ah! ye are good, and we thank you for the loan of your canoe.' We were careful to explain the whole of the circumstances to Katema and the other chiefs, and they all agreed that we were perfectly justifiable under the circumstances, and that Matiamvo would approve our conduct."

The rest of the journey to the Makololo country was pleasant and prosperous. On the 21st of June they reached the residence of Shinte, by whom they were received in the most friendly manner. Borrowing five canoes from his sister, they proceeded rapidly down the Leeba and the Leeambye, and, on the 27th of July, reached the town of Libonta in the Barotse country, "where," says Dr. Livingstone, "we were received with demonstrations of joy such as I had never witnessed before. The women came forth to meet us, making their curious dancing gestures and loud lulluloos. Some carried a mat and stick, in imitation of a spear and shield. Others rushed forward and kissed the hands and cheeks of the different persons of their acquaintance among us, raising such a dust that it was quite a relief to get to the men assembled and sitting with proper African decorum in the kotla. We were looked upon as men risen from the dead, for the most skillful of their diviners had pronounced us to have perished long ago. After many expressions of joy

Our rate of traveling was average number of hours thirds of the month were long days in each month. The necessity of remaining because when one carrier

th of May, and remained south, longitude 20° 31' 4, one of Matiamvo's sub- two hundred huts and ten s with grass interwoven. ese from Ambaca, agents w determined to proceed try, and was furnished by them the second day. py watershed, and came he only difficulty they had a chief named Kawawa hout paying a heavy trib- p by appropriating one of every thing to the opposite ning, Kawawa's people ap- scarcely believe their eyes the south. At last one of a Pitsane and his compan- nk you for the loan of your ble of the circumstances to eed that we were perfectly Matiamvo would approve

o country was pleasant and ed the residence of Shinte, endly manner. Borrowing apidly down the Leeba and ched the town of Libonta in ngstone, "we were received ever witnessed before. The ir curious dancing gestures stick, in imitation of a spear ed the hands and cheeks of among us, raising such a dust assembled and sitting with e were looked upon as men of their diviners had pro- ter many expressions of joy

at meeting, I arose, and, thanking them, explained the causes of our long delay, but left the report to be made by their own countrymen. Formerly I had been the chief speaker, now I would leave the task of speaking to them. Pitsane then delivered a speech of upward of an hour in length, giving a highly-flattering picture of the whole journey, of the kindness of the white men in general, and of Mr. Gabriel in particular. He concluded by saying that I had done more for them than they expected; that I had not only opened a path for them to the other white men, but conciliated all the chiefs along the route.

"Our progress down the Barotse valley was just like this. Every village gave us an ox, and sometimes two. The people were wonderfully kind. I felt, and still feel, most deeply grateful, and tried to benefit them in the only way I could, by imparting the knowledge of that Saviour who can comfort and supply them in the time of need; and my prayer is that he may send his good Spirit to instruct them and lead them into his kingdom. Even now I earnestly long to return and make some recompense to them for their kindness. In passing them on our way to the north, their liberality might have been supposed to be influenced by the hope of repayment on our return, for the white man's land is imagined to be the source of every ornament they prize most. But, though we set out from Loanda with a considerable quantity of goods, hoping both to pay our way through the stingy Chiboque and to make presents to the kind Balonda and still more generous Makololo, the many delays caused by sickness made us expend all my stock, and all the goods my men procured by their own labor at Loanda, and we returned to the Makololo as poor as when we set out. Yet no distrust was shown, and my poverty did not lessen my influence. They saw that I had been exerting myself for their benefit alone, and even my men remarked, 'Though we return as poor as we went, we have not gone in vain.' They began immediately to collect tusks of hippopotami and other ivory for a second journey."

On the 1st of August they reached Naliele, where they remained two weeks. On starting for Linyanti, they met with the following curious adventure: "When proceeding along the shore at midday, a hippopotamus struck the canoe with her forehead, lifting one half of it quite out of the water, so as nearly to overturn it. The force of the butt she gave tilted Mashuana out into the river; the rest of us sprang to the shore, which was only about ten yards off. Glancing back, I saw her come to the surface a short way off and look to the canoe, as if to see if she had done much mischief. It was a female, whose young one had been speared the day before. No damage was done, except wetting person and goods. This is so unusual an occurrence, when the precaution is taken to coast along the shore, that my men exclaimed, 'Is the beast mad?' There were eight of us in the canoe at the time, and the shake it received shows the immense power of this animal in the water."

Nothing of importance occurred on the journey to Linyanti. During Dr. Livingstone's absence, some packages of goods and letters had arrived for him, and the Makololos, not daring to touch them, had left them on an island in the Zambesi, building a hut over them to protect them from the weather. "On arriving at Linyanti, a grand meeting of all the people was called to receive our report and the articles which had been sent by the governor and merchants of Loanda. I explained that none of these were my property, but that they were sent to show the friendly feelings of the white men, and their eagerness to enter into commercial relations with the Makololo. I then requested my companions to give a true account of what they had seen. The wonderful things lost nothing in the telling, the climax always being that they had finished the whole world, and had turned only when there was no more land. The presents were received with expressions of great satisfaction and delight, and, on Sunday, when Sekeletu made his appearance at church in his uniform, it attracted more attention than the sermon; and the kind expressions they made use of respecting myself were so very flattering that I felt inclined to shut my eyes. Their private opinion must have tallied with their public report, for I very soon received offers from volunteers to accompany me to the east coast. They said they wished to be able to return and relate strange things like my recent companions; and Sekeletu immediately made arrangements with the Arab Ben Habid to conduct a fresh party with a load of ivory to Loanda.

"Sekeletu at last stood up, and, addressing me, said, 'I am perfectly satisfied as to the great advantages for trade of the path which you have opened, and think that we ought to go to the Barotse, in order to make the way from us to Loanda shorter; but with whom am I to live there? If you were coming with us, I would remove to-morrow; but now you are going to the white man's country to bring Ma Robert, and when you return you will find me near to the spot on which you wish to dwell.' I had then no idea that any healthy spot existed in the country, and thought only of a convenient central situation, adapted for intercourse with the adjacent tribes and with the coast, such as that near to the confluence of the Leeba and Leeambye.

* * * * *

"During the whole of my stay with the Makololo, Sekeletu supplied my wants abundantly, appointing some cows to furnish me with milk, and, when he went out to hunt, sent home orders for slaughtered oxen to be given. That the food was not given in a niggardly spirit, may be inferred from the fact that, when I proposed to depart on the 20th of October, he protested against my going off in such a hot sun. 'Only wait,' said he, 'for the first shower, and then I will let you go.' This was reasonable, for a thermometer, placed upon a deal box in the sun, rose to 138°. It stood at 108° in the shade by day, and 96° at sunset.

"Although the Makololo were so confiding, the reader must not

imagine that they would be so to every individual who might visit them. Much of my influence depended upon the good name given me by the Bakwains, and that I secured only through a long course of tolerably good conduct. No one ever gains much influence in this country without purity and uprightness. The acts of a stranger are keenly scrutinized by both young and old; and seldom is the judgment pronounced, even by the heathen, unfair or uncharitable. I have heard women speaking in admiration of a white man because he was pure and never was guilty of any secret immorality. Had he been, they would have known it, and, untutored heathen though they be, would have despised him in consequence. Secret vice becomes known throughout the tribe; and, while one unacquainted with the language may imagine a peccadillo to be hidden, it is as patent to all as it would be in London had he a placard on his back."

On the 3d of November, 1855, Dr. Livingstone bade adieu to Linyanti, and set out on his journey to the eastern coast of Africa, accompanied by Sekeletu and two hundred followers. The friendly chief supplied him with twelve oxen—three of which were accustomed to being ridden upon—hoes, and beads to purchase a canoe when he should strike the Leeambyc beyond the falls. He likewise presented abundance of good fresh butter and honey, and did every thing in his power to make him comfortable for the journey.

After a visit to Seshcke, the whole party proceeded down the Zambezi to visit the celebrated falls of Mosioatunya ("smoke-sounding"), to which Dr. Livingstone gave the name of Victoria. The description of this remarkable cataract is too graphic and picturesque to be omitted: "After twenty minutes' sail from Kalai, we came in sight, for the first time, of the columns of vapor appropriately called 'smoke,' rising at a distance of five or six miles, exactly as when large tracts of grass are burned in Africa. Five columns now arose, and, bending in the direction of the wind, they seemed placed against a low ridge covered with trees; the tops of the columns at this distance appeared to mingle with the clouds. They were white below, and higher up became dark, so as to simulate smoke very closely. The whole scene was extremely beautiful. The banks and the islands dotted over the river are adorned with sylvan vegetation of great variety of color and form. At the period of our visit several trees were spangled over with blossoms. Trees have each their own physiognomy. There, towering over all, stands the great burly baobab, each of whose enormous arms would form the trunk of a large tree, besides groups of graceful palms, which, with their feathery-shaped leaves depicted on the sky, lend their beauty to the scene. As a hieroglyphic they always mean 'far from home,' for one can never get over their foreign air in a picture or landscape. The silvery mohonono—which in the tropics is in form like the cedar of Lebanon—stands in pleasing contrast with the dark color of the motsouri, whose cypress form is dotted over at present with its pleasant scarlet

yanti. During
ad letters had
them, had left
them to protect
and meeting of
articles which
a: I explained
o sent to show
ss to enter into
ed my compan-
onderful things
they had finished
no more land.
satisfaction and
arance at church
ermon; and the
ere so very flat-
te opinion must
received offers
They said they
s like my recent
ements with the
oad of ivory to

, 'I am perfectly
path which you
otse, in order to
nom am I to live
to-morrow; but
Ma Robert, and
which you wish to
ed in the country,
ed for intercourse
that near to the

*
Sekeletu supplied
sh me with milk,
slaughtered oxen
dly spirit, may be
rt on the 20th of
a hot sun. 'Only
let you go.' This
al box in the sun,
nd 98° at sunset.
e reader must not

fruit. Some trees resemble the great spreading oak; others assume the character of our own elms and chestnuts; but no one can imagine the beauty of the view from any thing witnessed in England. It had never been seen before by European eyes; but scenes so lovely must have been gazed upon by angels in their flight. The only want felt is that of mountains in the background. The falls are bounded on three sides by ridges three or four hundred feet in height, which are covered with forest, with the red soil appearing among the trees.

"When about half a mile from the falls, I left the canoe by which we had come down thus far, and embarked in a lighter one, with men well acquainted with the rapids, who, by passing down the center of the stream in the eddies and still places caused by many jutting rocks, brought me to an island situated in the middle of the river and on the edge of the lip over which the water rolls. In coming hither there was danger of being swept down by the streams which rushed along on each side of the island; but the river was now low, and we sailed where it is totally impossible to go when the water is high. But, though we had reached the island, and were within a few yards of the spot a view from which would solve the whole problem, I believe that no one could perceive where the vast body of water went: it seemed to lose itself in the earth, the opposite lip of the fissure into which it disappeared being only eighty feet distant. At least I did not comprehend it until, ereeping with awe to the verge, I peered down into a large rent which had been made from bank to bank of the broad Zambesi, and saw that a stream of a thousand yards broad leaped down a hundred feet and then became suddenly compressed into a space of fifteen or twenty yards. The entire falls are simply a crack made in a hard basaltic rock from the right to the left bank of the Zambesi, and then prolonged from the left bank away through thirty or forty miles of hills.

"I have mentioned that we saw five columns of vapor ascending from this strange abyss. They are evidently formed by the compression suffered by the force of the water's own fall into an unyielding wedge-shaped space. Of the five columns, two on the right and one on the left of the island were the largest, and the streams which formed them seemed each to exceed in size the falls of the Clyde at Stonebyres when that river is in flood. This was the period of low water in the Lecambe; but, as far as I could guess, there was a flow of five or six hundred yards of water, which, at the edge of the fall, seemed at least three feet deep."

On the 20th of November, Sekeletu and his attendants took their leave, returning to Linyanti, while Dr. Livingstone continued his journey with one hundred and fourteen men, who were to accompany him to the coast. For three weeks he traveled through the country of the Batoka tribes, some of whom are subject to the Makololo chief. The people are more brutal and barbarous than the latter, but Dr. Living-

; others assume
one can imagine
England. It had
so lovely must
only want felt is
ounded on three
hich are covered

canoe by which
er one, with men
wn the center of
ny jutting rocks,
river and on the
hither there was
rushed along on
t we sailed where

But, though we
f the spot a view
eve that no one
it seemed to lose
nto which it dis-
did not compre-
ered down into a
f the broad Zam-
d leaped down a
into a space of fif-
crack made in a
the Zambesi, and
irty or forty miles

f vapor ascending
l by the compres-
ato an unyielding
e right and one on
ms which formed
yde at Stonebyres
f low water in the
flow of five or six
ill, seemed at least

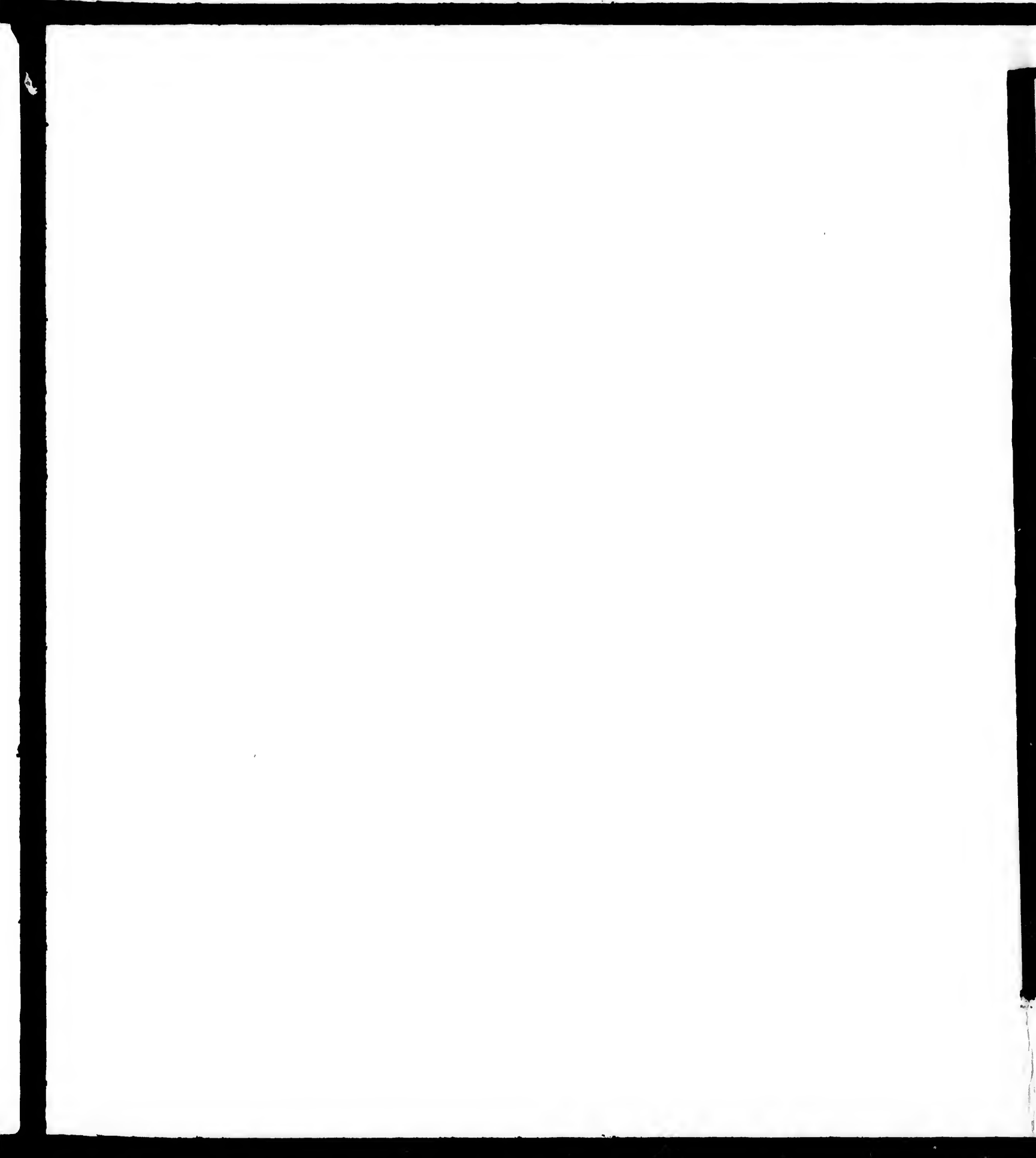
endants took their
continued his jour-
to accompany him
the country of the
kololo chief. The
r, but Dr. Living-



ADVENTURE WITH AN EREPHIANE. 1898. 1898.



ADVENTURE WITH AN ELEPHANT. 1898-1899.



stone was so well protected that only one open attempt was made to impede his progress. Sekeletu had ordered the tribes to furnish their tribute of provisions to the party, instead of sending it to Linyanti, so that they were abundantly provided. Their course was some distance to the northward of the Zambesi, passing over a high, rolling country. By protecting himself carefully from the frequent heavy rains, Dr. Livingstone remained in excellent health.

On the 4th of December, they reached the Batoka tribes who are considered rebels by the Makololos. At the second village they reached, the people began to show signs of hostility. "They began by trying to spear a young man who had gone for water. Then they approached us, and one came forward howling at the top of his voice in the most hideous manner: his eyes were shot out, his lips covered with foam, and every muscle of his frame quivered. He came near to me, and, having a small battle-ax in his hand, alarmed my men lest he might do violence; but they were afraid to disobey my previous orders and to follow their own inclination by knocking him on the head. I felt a little alarmed too, but would not show fear before my own people or strangers, and kept a sharp look-out on the little battle-ax. It seemed to me a case of ecstasy or prophetic frenzy voluntarily produced. I felt it would be a sorry way to leave the world to get my head chopped by a mad savage, though that, perhaps, would be preferable to hydrophobia or delirium tremens. Sekwebu took a spear in his right hand, as if to pierce a bit of leather, but in reality to plunge it into the man if he offered violence to me. After my courage had been sufficiently tested, I beckoned with the head to the civil head-man to remove him; and he did so by drawing him aside. This man pretended not to know what he was doing. The batch of visitors took no pains to conceal their contempt for our small party, saying to each other, in a tone of triumph, 'They are quite a god-send!'—literally, 'God has apportioned them to us.' 'They are lost among the tribes!' 'They have wandered in order to be destroyed, and what can they do without shields among so many?' Some of them asked if there were no other parties.

"The further we advanced the more we found the country swarming with inhabitants. Great numbers came to see the white man—a sight they had never beheld before. They always brought presents of maize and masuka. Their mode of salutation is quite singular. They throw themselves on their backs on the ground, and, rolling from side to side, slap the outside of their thighs as expressions of thankfulness and welcome, uttering the words 'Kina bomba.' This method of salutation was to me very disagreeable, and I never could get reconciled to it. I called out, 'Stop, stop! I don't want that;' but they, imagining I was dissatisfied, only tumbled about more furiously and slapped their thighs with greater vigor. The men being totally unclothed, this performance imparted to my mind a painful sense of their extreme degradation."

On the 18th they reached the Kafue, a large tributary which enters

the Zambesi from the north. On the bank of the river resided a powerful chief, named Semalembue, whose favor was very important to the success of their further journey. Fortunately he received them very kindly, presenting them with twenty-six baskets of meal. Nevertheless, they saw some reason to be mistrustful, and were on their guard against treachery as they approached the tribes who have intercourse with the Portuguese traders.

"As we approached nearer the Zambesi, the country became covered with broad-leaved bushes, pretty thickly planted, and we had several times to shout to elephants to get out of our way. At an open space, a herd of buffaloes came trotting up to look at our oxen; and it was only by shooting one that I made them retreat. The meat is very much like that of an ox, and this one was very fine. The only danger we actually encountered was from a female elephant, with three young ones of different sizes. Charging through the center of our extended line, and causing the men to throw down their burdens in a great hurry, she received a spear for her temerity. I never saw an elephant with more than one calf before. We knew that we were near our Zambesi again, even before the great river burst upon our sight, by the numbers of waterfowl we met. I killed four geese with two shots, and, had I followed the wishes of my men, could have secured a meal of waterfowl for the whole party. I never saw a river with so much animal life around and in it, and, as the Barotse say, 'its fish and fowl are always fat.' When our eyes were gladdened by a view of its goodly broad waters, we found it very much larger than it is even above the falls. One might try to make his voice heard across it in vain. Its flow was more rapid than near Sesheke, being often four and a half miles an hour."

Here they were obliged to cross to the south bank—an undertaking which required many days, on account of the delays caused by the incessant rains. They then pushed onward towards the confluence of the Loango with the Zambesi. Each village they passed furnished them with a couple of men to take them on to the next. When they came near a village, they saw men, women and children employed in weeding their gardens, they being great agriculturists. Most of the men were muscular, and had large plowman-hands. Though all had thick lips and flat noses, only the more degraded of the population possessed the ugly negro physiognomy.

On the 14th of January, 1856, the party reached the confluence of the Loango and the Zambesi. This was the site of a deserted Portuguese trading-post, named Zumbo. From this place they took the trail to Tete, the first Portuguese settlement, some two hundred miles off. This was the most difficult and dangerous portion of the journey, as the tribes living on the frontiers of the foreign settlements are always disposed to be hostile. Their concern was increased on learning that the Portuguese had for two years been carrying on a war with the natives. By avoiding the villages as much as possible, and using the greatest

S IN

river resided a power-
very important to the
received them very
of meal. Nevertheless,
on their guard against
intercourse with the

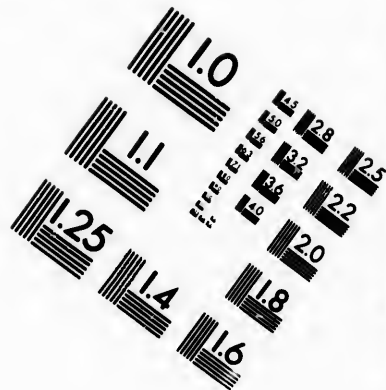
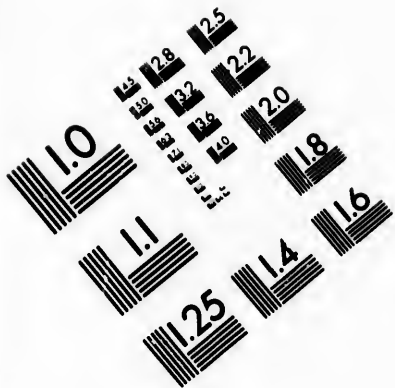
country became covered
and we had several

At an open space, a
oxen; and it was only
meat is very much like
ly danger we actually
ee young ones of dif-
our extended line, and
a great hurry, she re-
a elephant with more
ear our Zambesi again,
t, by the numbers of
o shots, and, had I fol-
l a meal of waterfowl
uch animal life around
fowl are always fat.
goodly broad waters,
e the falls. One might
is flow was more rapid
les an hour."

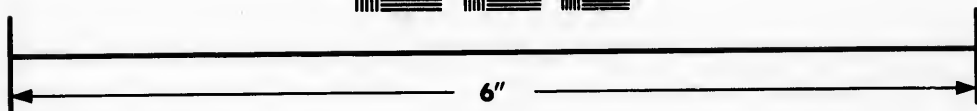
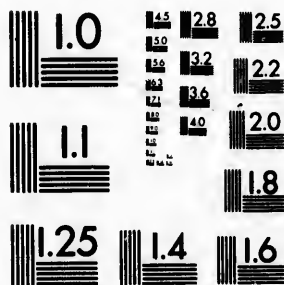
bank—an undertaking
ys caused by the neces-
the confluence of the
passed furnished them
ext. When they came
n employed in weeding
most of the men were
h all had thick lips and
tion possessed the ugly

hed the confluence of
e of a deserted Portu-
laco they took the trail
two hundred miles off.
n of the journey, as the
ements are always dis-
d on learning that the
a war with the natives.
and using the greatest





**IMAGE EVALUATION
TEST TARGET (MT-3)**



**Photographic
Sciences
Corporation**

23 WEST MAIN STREET
WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580
(716) 872-4503

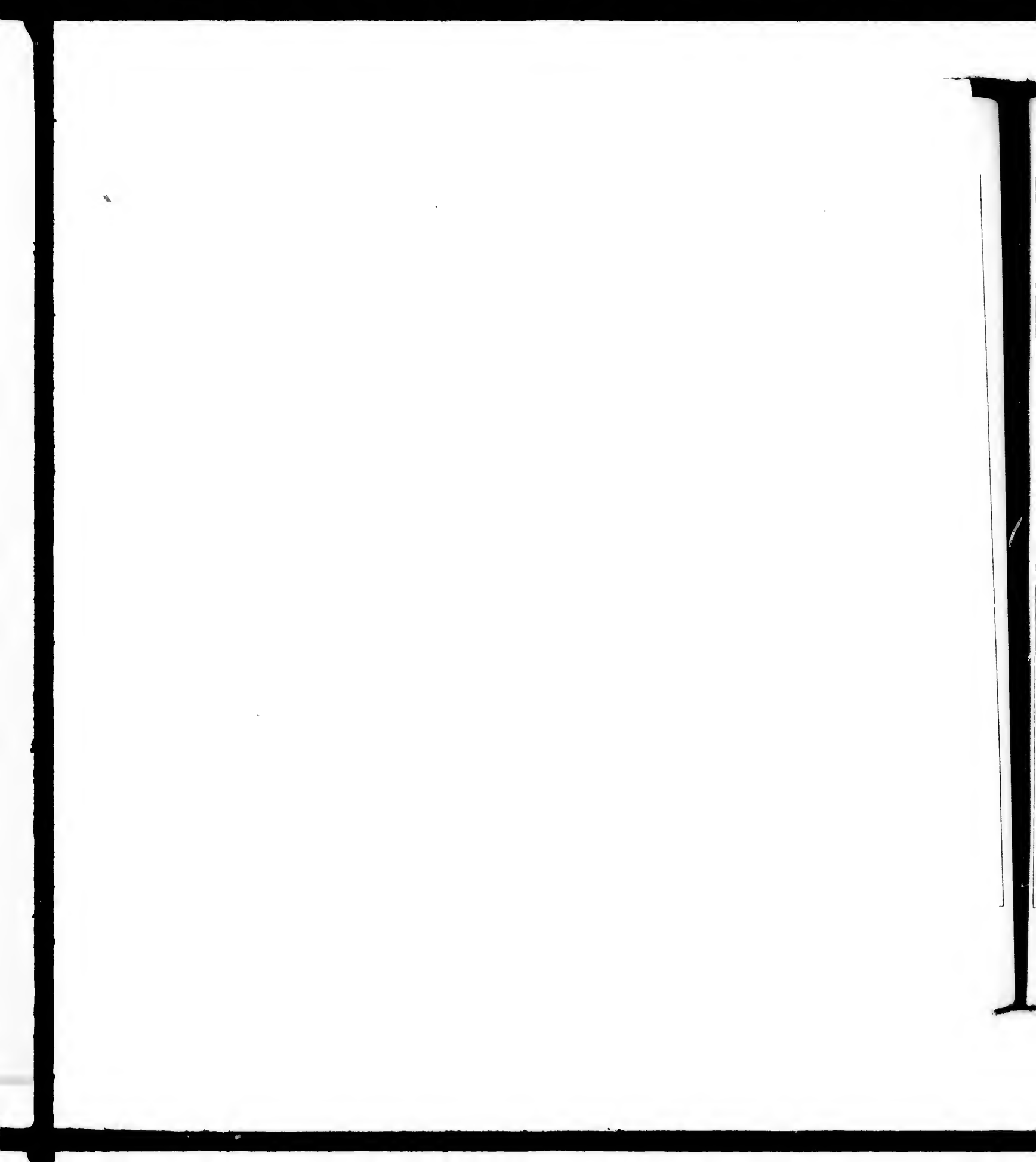
**CIHM/ICMH
Microfiche
Series.**

**CIHM/ICMH
Collection de
microfiches.**



Canadian Institute for Historical Microreproductions / Institut canadien de microreproductions historiques

© 1983



taet and caution with the chiefs they met, they succeeded in avoiding an open conflict. The heat was so intense and the forests so dense, that they could only advance at the rate of ten miles a day. Owing to this circumstance, and to the frequent delays, it was not until the 2d of March that they reached a small village, eight miles from Tete, and felt themselves to be in comparative security.

"My men asked me to go on," says Dr. Livingstone: "I felt too fatigued to proceed, but sent forward to the commandant the letters of recommendation with which I had been favored in Angola by the bishop and others, and lay down to rest. Our food having been exhausted, my men had been subsisting for some time on roots and honey. About two o'clock in the morning of the 3d we were aroused by two officers and a company of soldiers, who had been sent with the materials for a civilized breakfast and a 'masheela' to bring me to Tete. (Commandant's house, latitude, 16° 9' 3" south, longitude, 33° 28' east.) My companions thought that we were captured by the armed men, and called me in alarm. When I understood the errand on which they had come, and had partaken of a good breakfast, though I had just been too tired to sleep, all my fatigue vanished. It was the most refreshing breakfast I ever partook of; and I walked the last eight miles without the least feeling of weariness, although the path was so rough that one of the officers remarked to me, 'This is enough to tear a man's life out of him.' The pleasure experienced in partaking of that breakfast was only equaled by the enjoyment of Mr. Gabriel's bed on my arrival at Loanda. It was also enhanced by the news that Sebastopol had fallen and the war was finished."

Dr. Livingstone remained in Tete until the 22d of April to rest and recruit thoroughly before proceeding to the coast. While there, he discovered the existence of veins of coal on the Zambesi. Taking but a few of his men, he descended the river to the town of Senna, and thence proceeded to Killimane, the capital of Mozambique, which he reached on the 20th of May, being a few days less than four years since he had started from Cape Town in 1852. After waiting six weeks, the English brig-of-war *Frolic*, arrived. "I received," says he, "so hearty an English welcome from Captain Peyton and all on board that I felt myself at once at home in every thing except my own mother-tongue. I seemed to know the language perfectly, but the words I wanted would not come at my call. When I left England I had no intention of returning, and directed my attention earnestly to the languages of Africa, paying none to English composition. With the exception of a short interval in Angola, I had been three and a half years without speaking English, and this, with thirteen years of previous partial disuse of my native tongue, made me feel sadly at a loss on board the *Frolic*."

On the 12th of August he reached Mauritius, and, after a stay of three months, which was rendered necessary by his state of health, proceeded to England by way of the Red Sea, reaching London on the

12th of December, 1856. In his plan of opening the Zambesi to steamboat navigation and establishing missions in the healthy regions among the Makololo, he received the hearty support both of the English and Portuguese governments. An expedition under his command proceeded up the Zambesi as far as Tete, in the steamer *Ma Robert*, in 1858, and is probably now (1859) among his old friends, the Makololos. His four years' journey of exploration is more important in its results than any which has ever been accomplished by the unaided efforts of a single individual.

ELS.

g the Zambesi to steam-
e healthy regions among
both of the English and
his command proceeded.
Ma Robert, in 1853, and
the Makololos. His four
t in its results than any
ed efforts of a single indi-

III.

ATKINSON'S

TRAVELS IN SIBERIA AND CHINESE TARTARY.

THOMAS WITLAM ATKINSON, an English landscape painter, published in December, 1857, a large volume entitled, "Oriental and Western Siberia: a Narrative of Seven Years' Explorations and Adventures in Siberia, Mongolia, the Kirghiz Steppes, Chinese Tartary and Part of Central Asia." In his preface to this work he says, "Mine has been a tolerably wide field, extending from Kokhan, on the west, to the eastern end of the Baikal, and as far south as the Chinese town of Tchih-si, including that immense chain Syanshan, never before seen by any European, as well as a large portion of the western part of the Gobi, over which Genghis Khan marched his wild hordes toward the west—scenes on which no pencil has previously been employed—comprising a distance traversed of about thirty-two thousand versts in carriages, seven thousand one hundred in boats, and twenty thousand three hundred on horseback—in all, fifty-nine thousand four hundred versts (about thirty-nine thousand five hundred miles) in the course of seven years. Neither the old Venetian nor the Jesuit priests could have visited these regions, their travels having been far to the south; nor am I aware that they brought back any pictorial representations of the scenes through which they wandered. Even the recent travelers, Huc and Gabet, who visited 'the land of grass' (the plains to the south of the great desert of Gobi) did not penetrate into the country of the Kalkas, and the illustrations to their works were evidently fabricated in Paris.

"Mine is a simple narrative of facts taken from journals kept with scrupulous care during the whole journey, often under the influence of great fatigue and amid the pressure of numerous difficulties. I suffered much both from hunger and thirst, have run many risks, and, on several occasions, have been placed in most critical situations with the tribes of Central Asia, more particularly when among the convicts escaped from the Chinese penal settlements—desperate characters, who hold the lives of men cheap. I have several times looked upon what appeared inevitable death, and have had a fair allowance of hair-breadth escapes when

riding and sketching on the brinks of precipices with a perpendicular depth of fifteen hundred feet below me. With these accompaniments I traversed much of the hitherto unexplored regions of Central Asia, and produced five hundred and sixty sketches of the scenery."

Mr. Atkinson's narrative, although written in a very graphic and animated style, is, nevertheless, so carelessly constructed that the reader has great difficulty in following the course of his travels. No dates are given, and the various excursions, especially those among the Altai mountains, in southern Siberia, are thrown together in such a manner that they must be taken only as a series of detached sketches, rather than a connected narrative. The book terminates abruptly with his arrival at Irkutsk.

He left Moscow on the 6th of March (but in what year he does not state) for Ekaterineburg, the capital of the mining district in the Oural mountains. Traveling post, by way of Kezan and Penin, he reached his destination in ten days, and there remained until the spring opened. After visiting the iron mines, he embarked on a voyage down the Tchoussowaia river, and spent several weeks in sketching its wonderful scenery. Thence, proceeding northward along the main ridge of the Oural, he made the ascent of the Katch Kanar and Pavindsk Kaman, the highest peak of the range. Returning, he passed some time at the towns of Tagilsk and Neviansk in the region belonging to the Demidoff family, which is so rich in gold, jasper, malachite and jewels, and then completed his Ouralian tour by a visit to the southern mines as far as Maïas and Troitzk, on the borders of the Steppe of Ishim.

After having thoroughly explored the Oural, he left Ekaterineburg, and, traveling night and day by post by way of Omsk and Tomsk, reached Barnaoul, the capital of the mining district of the Altai, in twelve days. Here, however, he remained but for a day or two, and pushed on into the Altai range. A few days brought him to Riddensk, at the foot of the Cholsoun, a branch of the Altai, beyond which the journey must be made entirely on horseback. Twenty horses were engaged to accompany him, and fifteen men, and, as five of the latter carried rifles, and the other ten, axes, they had the appearance of a party of bandits. A rough journey of eight days through forests, wild, rocky ravines, and along barren summits where they narrowly escaped destruction from a terrific hurricane, brought them at last to the summit of the Cholsoun, the view from which Mr. Atkinson thus describes:

"To the south-east stands Bielonka, proudly rearing his lofty double head, adorned with eternal snows and glaciers, and far overtopping all the other chains, although many mountains around him are covered with the same everlasting garment of snow. Beneath these were many other summits tipped with white, showing that they have also passed the line of congelation. Still lower was one vast sea of mountain crests, surrounding those giants of the Altai—some so distant that they looked like ethereal vapor dissolving on the horizon; others, with their peaks

and crags a little more distinct, sparkled brightly in the sun. Nearer was a lower range, extending far, with many a dark purple peak and ridge, inclosing valleys and ravines, into which the precious metal has been washed ages ago. Still nearer are the brown, gray, and green ridges of the Cholsoun, with their jagged rocks, and cascades streaming down their rugged sides; these, with a foreground of gigantic granite peaks heaved far up toward heaven, rich in many a mossy color, with dwarf cedars creeping over their curious forms, with mossy turf around their bases, and small clumps of a deep red *Primula* scattered among the grass, form the principal features of one of the grandest panoramas in nature."

Descending on the southern side into the valley of the Bouchtarma, a tributary of the Irtisch, he spent a few days in the mining region of Zirianovsky, sailed down the Irtisch to Oust-Kamenogorsk, and started on an excursion over the Chinese frontier. Although it was late in the season, he succeeded in reaching the Lake Zaizon Nor, which lies in Chinese Tartary, and afterwards spent several weeks among the Kirghiz on the steppes. The journey was exceedingly toilsome and dangerous, the *acouls*, or encampments of the Kirghiz being continually attacked by bands of robbers from the Chinese penal settlements. More than one narrow escape had the traveler, not only from them, but from storm, cold and the slippery precipices of those terrible mountains; but he was amply repaid by beholding some of the grandest scenery in the world. This region, with its mountains of jasper and porphyry, its basaltic towers and pyramids, and its vast plains and lakes, furnished an inexhaustible store-house for his pencil.

Reaching Barnaoul in a storm of snow and sleet, on the 1st of November, he remained there through the winter. He gives the following description of life in this remote place: "Since my first winter in Barnaoul I have visited nearly every town in Siberia; have remained long enough to become acquainted with the inhabitants, and have entered into their recreations and pleasures, but in no town have I found the society so agreeable as in Barnaoul. They have an excellent band, trained by one of the under-officers, a very good musician and respectable performer on the violin, who received his musical education in St. Petersburg: under his direction they executed most of the operas beautifully, and with great effect. There are three ladies in Barnaoul who play the piano-forte well, and during the winter three or four amateur concerts are given which would not disgrace any European town. They have also several balls in December and January, when many young officers return from the mountains, where they have been banished from their friends for eight or nine months."

He spent the following summer in sporting excursions which led him through the wildest and most interesting portions of the Altai range, and through the valleys inhabited by the Kalmuoks. Late in the season he spent many days in endeavoring to reach the top of the Bielouka,

the highest peak of the Altai. Having, after a series of the most exciting adventures, and with incredible exertions, succeeded in getting to the central ridge, or comb, from which the higher summits shoot up, he at last reached the great glacier of the Bielouka, from the foot of which the little river Katounaia—the valley of which he had ascended—bursts forth.

“So far,” he says, “one object of my journey was gained; but the mighty precipices of the Bielouka reared their rugged faces several hundred feet above us, and to ascend up the edge of the glacier was impossible. We sat down on some rocks, and while making our midday meal I scanned the towering crags with an anxious wish to plant my foot upon them. Presently we turned to the west, and entered a fearful-looking gorge, that appeared to lead up into the mountain; in this we found vast rocks and ice which had fallen from above. Over these we scrambled, often at considerable risk; at length a gleam of hope shot down upon us. The ravine terminated in a series of shelving rocks, forming almost an inclined plane, at the top of which one of the peaks of the Bielouka reared its lofty head. This gave us fresh vigor for the toil, and our cry was now ‘Excelsior!’ Step after step was climbed up a vast stair of nature’s own constructing, which at last landed us on the frozen snow. Over this we walked with much difficulty for about three hundred paces, when we stood at the base of the two high peaks of Bielouka, overlooking every summit of the Altai. To the west the vast steppes of the Kirghis stretched till lost in hazy distance. To the south were some high peaks, and many ridges descending toward the steppes on the east of Nor-Zaisan, and to the Desert of Gobi. Several lakes were visible in the mountains and on the distant steppes. Innumerable rivers were winding their courses in the deep valleys like a network of silver threads. It was a splendid vista, so many snowy peaks starting up from the purple ridges and green valleys around them.

“While examining with intense interest the sea of mountains, and endeavoring to trace some of the routes by which I had traveled among them, the piercing blast intimated that it was time to move. Going about a hundred paces further, we found ourselves at the head of another glacier, which descends by a deep ravine toward the west. Beyond this lay the great hollow between the two peaks. This we might reach, but to ascend either was impossible. They are cones from eight hundred to a thousand feet high, covered with hard frozen snow, with a few points of the green slate jutting through.”

The return to Barnaoul was accomplished in the face of continued and most violent storms. Here Mr. Atkinson appears to have passed a second winter. Up to this time he had merely visited and illustrated scenes which, though rarely visited by travelers, are still familiar to many of the Russian officials, and correctly located on the government maps. Now, however, he entered upon a journey of exploration, during which he visited a great portion of the unknown region lying between

series of the most exciting
 succeeded in getting to the
 r summits shoot up, he at
 a, from the foot of which
 h he had ascended—bursts

urney was gained; but the
 r rugged faces several hun-
 e of the glacier was impos-
 le making our midday meal
 wish to plant my foot upon
 I entered a fearful-looking
 ountain; in this we found
 ove. Over these we scram-
 gleam of hope shot down
 of shelving rocks, forming
 h one of the peaks of the
 us fresh vigor for the toil,
 ter step was climbed up a
 hich at last landed us on the
 ch difficulty for about three
 f the two high peaks of Bie-
 ltaï. To the west the vast
 razy distance. To the south
 scending toward the steppes
 ert of Gobi. Several lakes
 stant steppes. Innumerable
 ep valleys like a network of
 many snowy peaks starting
 s around them.

st the sea of mountains, and
 which I had traveled among
 was time to move. Going
 rselves at the head of another
 ward the west. Beyond this
 ts. This we might reach, but
 e cones from eight hundred
 ard frozen snow, with a few

hed in the face of continued
 nson appears to have passed a
 merely visited and illustrated
 travelers, are still familiar to
 tly located on the government
 journey of exploration, during
 nknown region lying between

the Siberian frontier and the country described by Hue in his travels through Mongolia.

"My wanderings," he writes, "now led me to the Gobi, whose vast steppes, sandy deserts and high mountain chains give a peculiar character to this region. The traveler who attempts to force his way into a land abounding with such striking scenery must be prepared for many difficulties and some risks. Perhaps before my visit these scenes were never looked upon by European eye, nor ever sketched by pencil. He who follows in my track will find that his rifle will be required for more purposes than obtaining a dinner. His courage and determination will be tested by men who seldom show fear, and are ever on the alert. It is only by a steady hand, a quick eye, and skill with his weapon, that he can remain safe from acts of violence. Plunder is the common trade; and, what is still worse, the traveler, if not murdered, is carried off into certain slavery.

"My party consisted of three Cossacks—brave and honest fellows, who would have dared any danger. Long may they live and be happy on their land near Kourt Choum. To these were added seven Kalmucks, four of them strong, sturdy hunters, and all accustomed to a hard mountain life. Powder and lead I had a sufficient store, and we mustered eight rifles. These Kalmucks had their hair cut close, except a tuft growing on the top of the head, plaited into a long tail, which hung far down their back, and gave them a Chinese appearance. They may, in fact, be considered Chinese subjects; but, unfortunately for them, Russia compels them to pay a tax also. The chief of my little band of Kalmucks was named Teknuck-a-boi, and was a very strong and powerful fellow, with a beautiful manly countenance, a fine massive forehead, and large black eyes. He was dressed in a horse-skin cloak, fastened round his waist with a broad red scarf. When the weather was warm his arms were drawn from the sleeves, which were then tucked into his girdle, and the cloak hung round him in beautiful folds. This gave full effect to his herculean figure, while his manly bearing and graceful movements made him a fine study. He was born to be a chief, and his perfect good nature rendered him a most agreeable companion. He was my faithful fellow-traveler through many a day of toil and hardship, and suffered hunger and thirst without a murmur.

"We commenced our wanderings beyond the river Naryn, and crossed the Kourt Choum mountains toward what has been called the Great Altai. But this chain can only be found on our maps; in nature it does not exist. Numerous offshoots from the Altai run down to the desert of Oulan-Koum, in which direction we turned our steps, riding over many a rugged ridge and crossing numbers of picturesque valleys, threading our way eastward toward Oubsa-Noor. I had two objects in this journey—to visit the Tangnou mountains, which I had seen from the Bielouka, and the large lake that receives so many streams and has no outlets. There are many peaks in the Tangnou chain rising far

above the line of eternal snow, some more than eleven thousand feet in height. Our route was eastward, crossing the heads of several streams which run from the Tagnou mountains into the Oubsa. The names of these rivers I could not ascertain, as none of my people had ever been in this region before, nor did we meet a single native to inform us."

After riding for twelve days eastward along the southern side of the Tagnou mountains, he crossed the ridge at a great elevation, and discovered a small lake called "Zabata Nor," on the northern side. Returning again, he ascended one of the peaks of the range, whence he had a view for two hundred miles southward, over a region never before beheld by a European. Continuing his journey due east, in eleven days more he crossed the head-waters of the river Tess, whence, to the lake of San-ghin-dalai, in the country of the Kalkas, was eight days further. Soon afterwards they reached an encampment of this tribe, whose appearance and mode of living are thus described:

"Arabdan, the chief of the *aoul*, received me, and prepared to be hospitable by handing me a bowl of tea taken out of a large iron kettle. It was brick-tea mixed with milk, butter, salt, and flour, which gave it the appearance of thick soup, but was not bad. The Cossacks and Kal-mucks were also supplied with this beverage. While drinking mine I had time to examine my host. He was a tall, thin man, somewhere between fifty and sixty years of age, of a dark complexion, with high cheek-bones and small black eyes, a prominent nose, and a scanty beard. He was dressed in a long dark blue silk kalat, buttoned across his chest, with a leather girdle round his waist fastened with a silver buckle, in which hung his knife, flint, and steel. His cap was helmet-shaped, made of black velvet, and had two broad red ribbons hanging down his back. A pair of high-heeled madder-colored boots completed his costume. One woman had a red and green silk kalat, the other a black velvet robe, and both were tied round the waist with broad red sashes. They also had similar caps; their hair was braided, and hung over their shoulders in a hundred small plaits, some of them ornamented with coral beads, which are highly valued by the Mongolian beauties. They wore very short, high-heeled boots of red leather, which prevent their walking with ease and comfort. The children were not overloaded with clothing, but to compensate for this deficiency they had been rolling on the bank of a muddy pool, that had covered them with reddish ochre, which contrasted well with their locks of jet-black hair.

"The *yourts* (tents) of these people were constructed like those of the Kirghis and covered with felt, but the internal arrangements were different. Opposite the doorway a small low table is placed, on which stand the copper idols and several small metal *vascus*. In some were grains of millet; in others, butter, milk, and *koumis* (fermented mare's milk). On the left side of the altar-table stood the boxes containing the valuables, and near them the *koumis* bag and the other domestic

utensils. Opposite were several piles of *voilock*, on which the family slept.

"A sheep had been killed soon after our arrival, and was already cooking in the iron caldron in another *yourt*. This seemed to be the great attraction to every person in the *acoul*, and from where I sat I could see them busy with their preparations for the feast. The Cossacks were also engaged broiling a portion for me, and taking care to have enough for breakfast. The supper was not eaten in the chief's *yourt*, men, women, and children assembling in the adjoining one to eat the fatted sheep."

The Kalkas readily furnished guides and horses for the journey to the river Tess, which was now a considerable distance to the north. The intervening country was an alternation of dry, sandy plains and grassy hills, interspersed with small lakes. After visiting the great chief of the Kalkas, Darma Tsyren, they entered a hilly region, from the summit ridge of which Mr. Atkinson obtained a remarkable view. "About midday," says he, "while we began to ascend a high ridge, the view over the Oulan-Koum Desert spread to the westward as far as the eye could reach; many small lakes were also seen glittering in the sun. At one time I fancied I could perceive the Ilka Aral-Nor shining in the distant haze; but, on ascending higher, it proved to be a gleam of light stretching across the horizon. As we neared the top we had a charming prospect, extending throughout the country we had crossed, and the mountain chains to the south-east. The blue and purple haze now spread over them, declaring that we had left them far away in the distance. After gazing at this part of the landscape for a short time, I turned my horse and rode to the summit; then the Oubsa-Noor lay before me, with the river Tess winding in the valley beneath. The Tangnou mountains were seen in all their grandeur, while the vast steppes stretched away to the west, till plain and sky seemed united in a misty tint. I hastened to sketch this scene, so peculiar, with its lakes, mountains, and undulating plains. These latter have a character unlike all European scenery, and must have presented a grand spectacle when the vast host of that barbarian conqueror, Genghis Khan, were marching over them. They were now a solitude, possessing neither man nor his dwelling."

After visiting the lake Oubsa-Noor, which is sixty miles in length by twenty-five in breadth, he turned southward, crossing again the desert of Oulan-Koum to the Kara Nor. Here he bade good-bye to the Kalkas, who had been very kind and friendly, and his little party proceeded alone, without guides, towards the great Desert of Gobi. After two days over vast, dry plains, some of which were so covered with high, seeded grass as to resemble grain-fields, and much suffering for want of water, they reached a large river called the Djabakan, flowing westward into the salt lake of Ilka Aral. They now prepared for a ride over a very dreary plain towards the region where the great Altai is

represented on our maps—but where, in reality, no such mountain chain exists.

“We were now on a heavy sandy steppe—part of the Sarkha desert, which extends into the Gobi—and vegetation was so very scant that even the steppe grass had disappeared. The *salsolo* was growing in a broad belt around the small salt lakes, its color varying from orange to the deepest crimson. These lakes have a most singular appearance when seen at a distance. The sparkling of the crystallized salt, which often reflected the deepest crimson around, gave them the appearance of diamonds and rubies set in a gorgeous framework. I rode around several times, admiring their beauty, and regretting that it was impossible to stay and visit a large lake which I observed ten or fifteen versts distant, surrounded with green, orange and crimson. I directed our course nearly due west, still riding over sand and gravel, and again I found many agates lying on the surface. The summits of the Tagnou mountains were just visible to the north, but no high chain could be seen to the south.”

Traveling southward for four days, Mr. Atkinson satisfied himself of the fictitious character of the Great Altai range, but determined to continue in the same direction until he should strike the great chain of the Syanshan, the Alps of Central Asia. He had fully considered the risk before starting, and had determined that neither toil, nor hardship, nor the fear of banditti should deter him from sketching scenes which no European eye had ever beheld. On the following day he reached the crest of a low ridge separating the affluents of the Ilka Aral-Nor from the Gobi—that vast desert more than two thousand miles in length, and from three to seven hundred in width. From this ridge he saw the snowy summits of the Syanshan, with the tremendous mass of the Bogda Oöla rising far above all the rest.

He was now in Chinese Tartary, in the country of the ancient Scythians previous to their being conquered by the Chinese emperor, Kien Long. There was evidence, in the distant smokes they now descried, that they were approaching the pasture grounds of the Kirghiz, some of whom were met with the next day. He thus describes the interview and his subsequent reception: “A short ride further brought us to the top of a ridge, beyond which we looked down upon the *aoul* lying on the bank of a small stream in the valley. About a verst distant from the *yourts* lay a lake probably four or five versts long and one and a half in breadth. On one side was a thick bed of reeds, and on the other a grassy shore, upon which sheep and goats were scattered about in great numbers. We now observed several men spring on their horses and ride to meet us. This was certainly a mission of peace. When we met, one of the men rode up to me, placed his hand upon my chest, saying, ‘*Aman.*’ I followed his example, and we rode on. As we approached, there seemed to be a great commotion in the *aoul*; two Kirghiz had mounted their horses and gone off at full gallop. Others

were busy collecting bushes, and all seemed occupied. Our escort guided us to a large *yourt* with a long spear stuck into the ground at the door, and a long tuft of black horse hair was hanging from beneath its glittering head. A fine tall man met us at the door. He caught the reins of my bridle, and gave me his hand to enable me to dismount, and led me into the *yourt*.

"This was Sultan Baspasihan, who welcomed me into his dwelling. He was a strong, ruddy-faced man, dressed in a black velvet kalat edged with sable, and wore a deep crimson shawl around his waist; on his head was a red cloth conical cap, trimmed with fox skin, with an owl's feather hanging from the top, showing his descent from Genghis Khan. A Bokharian carpet had been spread, on which he seated me, and then sat down opposite. I invited him to a seat beside me, which evidently gave satisfaction. In a few minutes two boys entered, bringing in tea and fruit. They were dressed in striped silk kalats, with fox-skin caps on their heads, and green shawls around their waists. They were his two sons. The sultana was out on a visit to the *aul* of another sultan, two days' journey distant.

"The *yourt* was a large one, with silk curtains hanging on one side, covering the sleeping place—bed it was not. Near to this stood a 'bearcoote' (a large black eagle) and a falcon chained to their perches, and I perceived that every person entering the *yourt* kept at a respectful distance from the feathered monarch.

* * * * *

"When all were seated, two men came into the inner circle, each having a cast iron vessel shaped something like a coffee pot. One approached the sultan, the other myself, and poured warm water upon our hands; but each person must provide his own towel. This ceremony was performed for every man, from the sultan to the herdsman. The women and the girls were left to do it for themselves. The ablutions having been performed, the cooks brought in the smoking vessels, long wooden trays, similar to those used by butchers in London, piled up with heaps of boiled mutton. One was placed between the sultan and myself, filled with mutton and boiled rice. Each man drew his knife from its sheath, dispensing entirely with plates. My host seized a fine piece of mutton from the reeking mass, placed it in my hand, and then began on his own account. This was the signal to fall to, and many hands were soon dipped in the other trays. The Kirghiz who sat nearest the trays selected the things he liked best, and, after eating a part, handed it to the man sitting behind; when again diminished, this was passed to a third, then to the boys, and, having run the gaurtlet of all these hands and mouths, the bone reaches the women and girls divested of nearly every particle of food. Finally, when these poor creatures have gnawed till nothing is left on the bone, it is tossed to the dogs."

After spending two or three days with Sultan Baspasihan, and shar-

ing in a hunt after wild boars, Mr. Atkinson and his party went onward in a south-eastern direction toward the *aoul* of Sultan Sabeck, which was several days' journey further. They carried with them a fine young stallion—a present from Baspasihan to Sabeck—and this circumstance contributed greatly to secure them a friendly reception from the other chiefs. The country over which they passed was an alternation of steppe and wild porphyry hills, and the great range of the Syanshan was frequently in view. The following is one of the singular scenes among which their road lay :

“The guide continued a route toward the south-east, which I knew was taking us away from the mountains, but this was necessary to find the *aoul* of Oui-jass. A ride of little more than an hour brought us to the ridges which had appeared so small as we approached. On examination, they proved to be red granite, and some rose seven or eight hundred feet from the ground. They were broken into very rugged and picturesque shapes, and many had a singular appearance as they stood out on these vast steppes, like ruined castles of colossal dimensions. No wonder the tribes of Central Asia fear to pass many of these places, and invest them with superstitious horrors. To-day we passed a ridge more like the ruins of some vast city than a mountain; there were isolated pillars—huge masses like the broken shafts of columns; walls rising up to a great elevation, pierced with large circular apertures, and enormous blocks heaped around, forming a complete chaos. I proposed to stop and explore this wonderful scene, but the Kirghiz stood aghast, and when they saw me sketch it, they looked as if they expected to see Shaitan and his legions threaten us from the mighty walls.”

After visiting the Sultan Oui-jass, who also forwarded a present to Sabeck, the party was obliged to pass by the *aoul* of a noted robber, called Koubaldos, who was upon their road, two days' journey distant. On reaching the encampment, Mr. Atkinson was conducted at once to the tent of Koubaldos, who received him at the door, and conducted him to a seat inside. “I was now,” says he, “sitting face to face with the robber-chief Koubaldos, of whom I had heard so much, and whose fame has spread far throughout Central Asia. When standing, I thought him tall; I now observed, when sitting, that he was reduced to about my own stature—five feet eleven inches. The heels of his boots were two inches high, and this had deceived me. Having placed me on the carpet, he seated himself opposite, and ten or twelve of his people sat beyond him. I could see that my face, figure, and dress were being scanned by these men with a most rigid scrutiny; nor was I less interested in the group before me. At this moment tea was brought into the *yourt* by two boys, a small low table was placed before us, and I invited my host to sit beside me. We were now equals in honor, and his people had a full view of both chiefs, for they looked upon me as the head of my band. The tea was served in small china cups, and sugar-candy and several sorts of dried fruits were placed on

the table on china plates. My host selected fruit for me, was very attentive, at the same time partaking of it largely himself, and I followed his example."

When they arose next morning, the Cossacks reported that Kou baldos had gone off with several of his men before daybreak. This, in combination with several other suspicious circumstances, induced them to hasten their departure. Rejecting the offer of a guide, they pushed forward at random, until they fortunately fell in with an old woman, who gave them landmarks by which they could find their way to Sultan Sabeck. The greatest vigilance was exercised, and they managed to avoid Kou baldos until the evening of the second day, when they saw the smoke of his fires near a lake where they were obliged to encamp. As these fires were on the opposite side of the lake, and it was very evident they had been seen, they made an encampment on the shore, but, as soon as it was dark removed to the end of a narrow rocky tongue which stretched several hundred yards into the lake, where their enemies could only approach singly. The camp-fire was kept burning, in order to deceive Kou baldos, and two Kalmucks placed as sentinels in a secure place on the shore.

"Before the first watch was over, the two men from our advanced post had come in, announcing that the villains were at our encampment. Bushes had been thrown on the fire, and the flames springing up enabled our sentinels to see men on horseback. I now ordered that three men only should fire at a time; this would give us three volleys, and my gun would do good service in defending the narrow pass. Two Cossacks and myself would fire first, then Tehuck-a-boi and his Kalmucks; lastly, the others. This being thoroughly understood, we waited patiently for the approach of the enemy. Presently we heard the tramp of horses on the shore, but it was too dark to distinguish any object. The robbers were riding slowly along, and shortly stopped at the neck of land; many were talking fast, but the Kirghis could not hear what was said. A party presently advanced along the ledge, and we could hear them coming nearer, and they soon reached the narrow part where not more than three could ride abreast. This brought them to a stand; on our side every rifle was ready, but we could not see a man; they stood and spoke, but no one attempted to ride over.

"Every word they uttered could now be distinctly heard, and we presently recognized the voice of Kou baldos. The band remained talking on this spot for about ten minutes, then returned to the shore, going off at a trot to the northward. The Kirghis explained what they had heard. Kou baldos was very angry that we had escaped, calling us cowards, and he told his band that we could be easily taken. He was certain that we had gone to the north end of the lake, and by following quickly he would be up with us at daylight, and have us fast in the morasses. Even if we succeeded in passing these he was equally confident of being able to drive us on the steppe, from whence we could not

reach Sultan Sabeck's *aoul* in less than three days, before which we could easily be cut off when our horses were exhausted for want of water.

"The Kirghis wished to leave as soon as possible, and ride to the southward; but to this plan none of my men would consent. It was finally arranged that we should leave the moment day dawned, without stopping to feed our horses or ourselves; for when it was daylight, Koubaldos would discover his mistake, and probably be forty versts away from us with tired horses. A vigilant watch was kept up, but we were not disturbed again till the horses were brought to be saddled. This was done in the dark, and when the first faint gleam of light was seen in the east the animals were led over the rocky ledge. We now turned to the south, following the shore of the lake, and it was soon light enough for us to see the track on the sand. The Kirghis thought that there were forty or fifty men with Koubaldos, who doubtless felt certain that with this band we should be easily scoured. Having reached the end of the lake, we followed their track and forded a narrow part. This placed us on the east side; and we rode toward the mountain, where our enemies had been lurking, and skirted along its base."

After riding several hours, they caught sight of a pointed mountain, which, from the description given to them, must be near the camp of Sabeck, and the same evening reached some herds belonging to his tribe. The next day they reached his *aoul*, after a ride of eight hours. "As we drew near the *yourts*, I was guided towards one of considerable size, standing alone on the edge of the lake, where a group of Kirghis were waiting in their richly-colored kalats. When we reached them, a tall man stepped forward, took hold of the reins, and gave me his hand to dismount. To refuse such assistance would be a mark of disrespect, and I had by this time reconciled myself to the custom. This was Sultan Sabeck, who saluted me in the usual manner, and then led me into his dwelling, the floor of which was covered with *voilock* and with two Bokharian carpets. On these he placed me, and sat down on the *voilock* in front, giving me all the honors; but these, I, as usual, insisted should be divided. The place was shortly filled by Kirghis, taking their seats in circles, according to their grade, before us. One of the Cossacks, who spoke Kirghis well, and Tehuck-a-boi, were always my attendants on these state ceremonies, and places were always given to them in the first circle near me. Several of the Kirghis from Baspasihan and Oujass were seated near, as they were also distinguished guests.

"In a short time dinner was brought to me—a large platter heaped up with broiled mutton and boiled rice, which I found very good. A sheep was served in the other *yourt*, on which they feasted joyfully. After dinner my host paid me another visit, when I announced my wish to depart in the morning; but he proposed that I should remain till noon the next day, as he wished to send presents to his friends; moreover, that he would give me horses and Kirghis to guide me to another

days, before which we
 rusted for want of water.
 possible, and ride to the
 would consent. It was
 nt day dawned, without
 en it was daylight, Kou-
 ly be forty versts away
 as kept up, but we were
 ht to be saddled. This
 eam of light was seen in
 edge. We now turned
 , and it was soon light
 ho Kirghis thought that
 ho doubtless felt certain

Having reached the end
 ed a narrow part. This
 rd the mountain, where
 g its base."

t of a pointed mountain,
 ust be near the camp of
 herds belonging to his
 er a ride of eight hours.
 towards one of consider-
 lake, where a group of
 lats. When we reached
 the reins, and gave me
 nce would be a mark of
 yself to the custom. This
 al manner, and then led
 covered with *voilock* and
 ced me, and sat down on
 s; but these, I, as usual,
 shortly filled by Kirghis,
 r grade, before us. One
 ehuck-a-boi, were always
 places were always given
 of the Kirghis from Bas-
 y were also distinguished

e—a large platter heaped
 h I found very good. A
 ich they feasted joyfully.
 hen I announced my wish
 that I should remain till
 ents to his friends; more-
 is to guide me to another

aoul of his, eight hours distant, where we must sleep, whence three of his own Kirghis and several others of the tribe, with fresh horses, should accompany me two days' journey across the desert, as without such assistance we should not be able to find either water or pasture. To this arrangement I willingly assented. The sultan said it would be dangerous to approach near the foot of the Syanshan mountains, as we should be sure to meet with large bands of Chinese robbers, who often committed great depredations, and murdered the Kirghis. His own guide was to accompany us, who knew the country, and would point out the mountains over which we must pass on our route to the *aoul* of Oui-jass, which he supposed we should reach in eight days. Beyond the pastures of Sultan Sabeck to the south and east there are no more Kirghis: the country is a sandy desert, destitute of water for many hundred versts.

"In the evening it was a busy scene round the *aoul*; the plains were covered with camels, horses, oxen, sheep and goats; and great numbers of the latter were being milked. My host estimated the number of his horses at eight thousand, and his camels at six hundred: these are sold to the Chinese; but he had no idea how many oxen, sheep and goats belonged to him. Here we had no thought of robbers; we therefore determined to take in a store of rest, and, like good Kirghis, lay down to sleep at dark."

After another day's enjoyment of the hospitality of the sultan, they started westward, along the northern base of the Syanshan, the magnificent scenery of which Mr. Atkinson thus describes: "A bright sun was rising behind us, but his rays had not yet touched the snowy peaks in our front. As we rode on I watched for the first bright gleam that lighted up the ice and snow on Bogda Oöla, which one of the men had pointed out to me. Presently his crest was tipped with a crimson glow, gradually descending and changing into yellow, and then to a silvery white. The sun shone upon his head for many minutes before any of the lower peaks were touched by his rays. After this new peaks were shooting into light every few seconds, till at last the whole chain was a mass of dazzling white, while all the lower ranges were clothed in hazy gloom. There is something marvelously grand in these effects, and in the changes which pass over such stupendous mountain masses."

They passed within three hours' ride of the Chinese town of Tchinsi, which they saw at a distance. After a journey of eight days, during which they came in contact with a small band of Chinese robbers, they reached Oui-jass, and were received by him in the most friendly manner. During the journey they were constantly in sight of the Syanshan, whose highest peak, Bogda Oöla, rises to the height of sixteen thousand feet above the sea. Oui-jass forwarded them to Baspasihan, who gave them guides for the journey westward. In two days they reached the Kezsil Bach-Nor, a lake seventy miles long, and were hospitably received by Sultan Dulembie, another Kirghis chieftain.

"The time had now arrived when I must part with my brave Kalmucks, who had been my faithful companions through many a day of hard toil, and in some dangers. Their route was north to their homes in the Altai, which they would reach in eight or ten days, while mine was south-west, through the country of the ancient Sungarians. Having supplied them with a good store of ammunition, I had no fear for their safety; and in the morning, after shaking hands and expressing mutual regret, we turned our horses and rode in opposite directions. My route was over low hills covered with grass, that extended about twenty versts; then we descended to the plain, which we found a sandy desert, over which the Kirghis proposed to ride fast. Sultan Dulembie had sent, to accompany me, eight of his men, well mounted and armed with battle-axes; therefore, with the three Cossacks and myself, we still formed a strong party. The new-comers were wild-looking fellows, evidently ready either for fight or plunder.

* * * * *

"After a rapid gallop over the dreary waste, late in the afternoon of the fifth day, after having suffered much for water, we reached the *aoul* of Sultan Ishonac Khan, who gave me a friendly reception. He was stout, with strongly-marked Kalmuck features, and as he claimed his descent from Genghis Khan, the owl's feather hung from the top of his cap: his costume was of Chinese silk, richly embroidered. About fifty versts to the southward of this *aoul* rise the Barluck mountains, lying between the Tarbo-gatai and the Alatou mountains, and eastward of the Ala-kool, a small rocky chain extending about sixty versts from east to west; its breadth is about twenty-five versts, and the highest summit is three thousand feet above the plain. On the lower slopes there is pasturage, but the upper parts are bare rocks. From this *aoul* my route was westward, over a sandy steppe. I obtained horses from the sultan, and eight of his Kirghis to be my companions to the Tarbo-gatai—a four, or perhaps six days' journey."

Reaching the Tarbo-gatai safely, but after a very difficult journey, during which they suffered greatly from thirst, they spent many days among the Kirghis sultans of those steppes, by all of whom they were well received. Thence, turning gradually southward and passing the great lake of the Ala-Kool, they reached the wild and broken Actou mountains, in the neighborhood of which Mr. Atkinson found some curious remains of ancient civilization:

"During a ride of ten days I made many sketches of the sublime scenery in these mountain regions, each view possessing some remarkable feature. I had now reached the western end of the Alatou, and turned toward the south, exploring several valleys. On the Terric-sou I found a large tribe of Kirghiz in their summer pastures. The valley is broad and rich in grass, and was now covered with herds of horses, camels and other cattle. Here there are many tumuli, some of them large, which are held in great veneration by the inhabitants. From their

part with my brave Kal-
through many a day of
as north to their homes
or ten days, while mine
ent Sungarians. Having
n, I had no fear for their
s and expressing mutual
ite directions. My route
extended about twenty
we found a sandy desert,
Sultan Dulembie had
mounted and armed with
oks and myself, we still
ere wild-looking fellows,

* *
aste, late in the afternoon
or water, we reached
a friendly reception. He
atnes, and as he claimed
er hung from the top of
hly embroidered. About
e Barluck mountains,
mountains, and eastward
g about sixty versts from
e versts, and the highest
On the lower slopes there
cks. From this *aoul* my
obtained horses from the
panions to the Tarbo-gatai

er a very difficult journey,
rst, they spent many days
by all of whom they were
outhward and passing the
e wild and broken Actou
Mr. Atkinson found some

my sketches of the sublime
possessing some remarka-
rn end of the Alatou, and
alleys. On the Terric-sou
mer pastures. The valley is
l with herds of horses, cam-
umuli, some of them large,
o inhabitants. From their

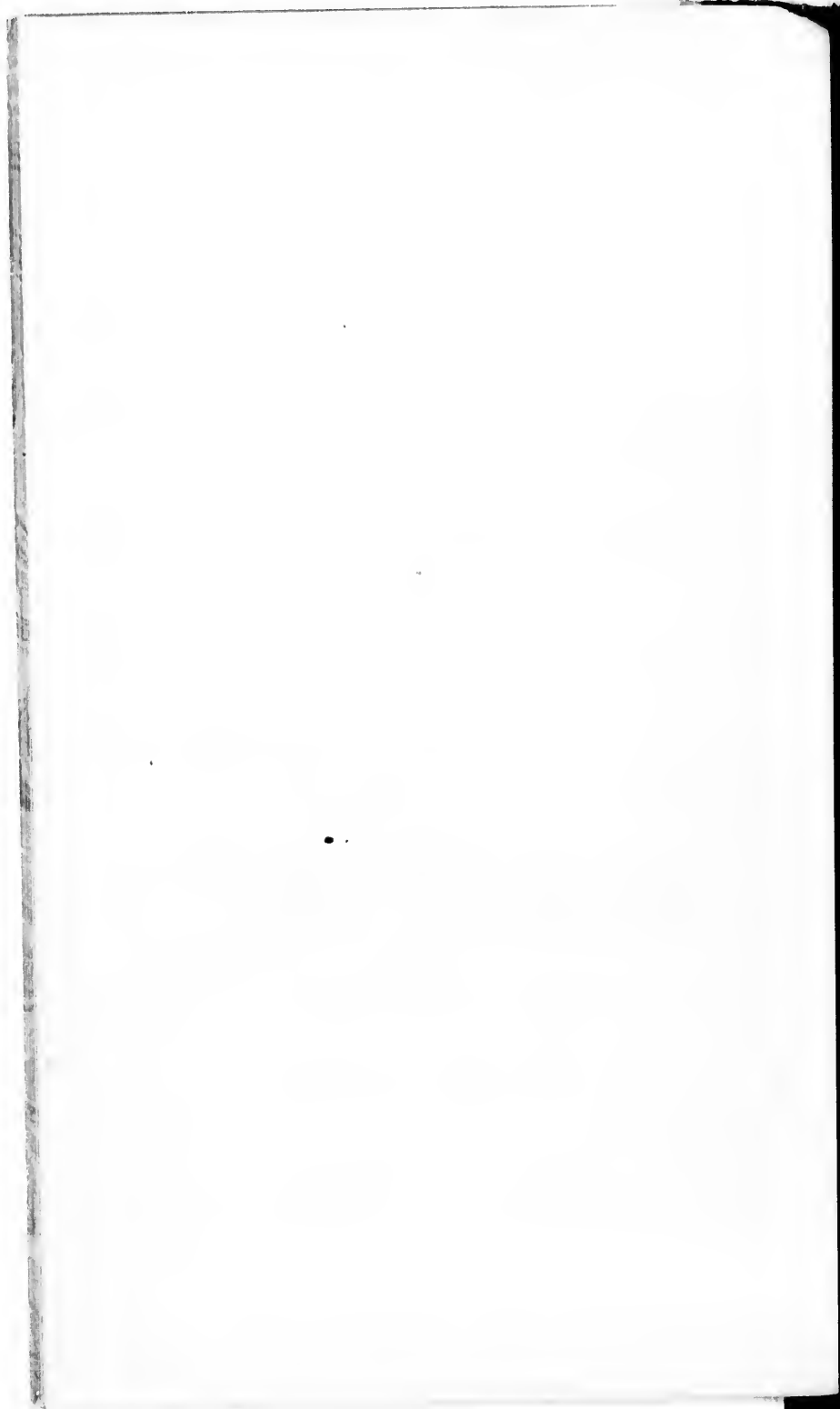
numbers, I am induced to believe that, at one period, this country has been densely populated. I also met with numerous canals, which had been formed by these ancient people to convey water from the mountains to irrigate the land; and some display considerable engineering skill. They have not been executed by a pastoral people like the present race. There are also several large earth-works, which have formed their fortified camps or settlements. The Kirghiz look upon them with dread, under the belief that they have been constructed by Shaitan and his legions."

He concludes his narrative of this excursion as follows: "I shall take my leave of the Alatou and Mustou mountains, among which I wandered for one hundred and twenty-three days, visiting scenery of the most striking character, which contributed one hundred and nine sketches to my folio. In these regions I encountered many dangers. Providence, however, preserved me. Once a Kirghiz sent a ball from my own rifle, which struck the rocks three inches above my head. Though this was accidental, he immediately threw down the rifle, sprang into his saddle, galloped away, and we saw him no more. I often experienced hunger, and when I departed from the neighborhood it was almost without clothing and without a serviceable pair of boots; notwithstanding which, as I rode away, I looked back with regret upon the purple summits and snowy peaks, remembering only the happy days I had spent among their wonderful scenery.

"After leaving the eastern end of the Alatou, a ride of seventeen days over hill and steppe brought me to the Russian frontier, and a post road at Semipolatsk, when I appeared once more among my Siberian friends, who had given me up, believing that I was killed."

Mr. Atkinson afterward made a journey of some length to examine the extinct volcanoes of the Saionsk mountains, lying north-east of the Altai, and crossed the main ridge to the streams flowing into Lake Baikal. His narrative closes abruptly with his arrival at Irkutsk. Very few works of travel in modern times equal it in intrinsic interest and in the power and fidelity of its descriptions.

THE END.



I N D E X.

- Aaron, tomb of, 207.
 Ababdehs, character of, 211.
 — Arab tribe of, 208.
 Abkougui, village and gold-washings of, 276.
 Abokko, kindness of, 537.
 — his fidelity, 551.
 Abou-Sumbel, opening of, 236. Bayard Taylor's description of, 236.
 — attempted excavation of, 233.
 — temple of, 211.
 Abu-Nocta, description of, 449.
 Abyssinian roads, 674—Life, 674—Superstitions, 675, 681, 682—Government, 676—Climate, 677—Butchery, 678—Habits, 679—Dress, 680.
 Acapulco, 72.
 Adam (Canadian), sufferings of, 311.
 Adamowa, country of Central Africa, 895—Dr Barth's visit to, 895, 897.
 Addy Abo, province of, 673.
 Adoua, appearance of, 669—Return to, 673.
 Africaner, 563, 564, 567, 568.
 African war-song, 498.
 — Association, 116, 117.
 Agady, battle of, 271.
 Agadez, the capital of Air, 890—Description of, 891.
 Agaro, battle of, 275.
 Aggeri Water, 888.
 Ailat, village of, 667.
 Air, or Asben, a kingdom of Central Africa, 885—Account of Richardson and Barth's expedition to, 885 to 892.
 Aisou, or the seven wells, 888.
 Akaba, Gulf of, 912.
 Akaitcho (Esquimaux chief), 293, 296.
 — 320.
 Akuru, well of, 888.
 Alantika, highest mountain of Adamowa, 897.
 Alexandria, Ida Pfeiffer's voyage to, 833.
 — plague at, 230.
 Alexei (the Kurile), 412, 415, 426, 435, 437.
 Ali (Hadji), his dishonesty, 490.
 — Sultan of Ludamar, 101.
 Allen (Captain Bird), commands the *Soudan* on an expedition to the Niger, 553—Dangerous illness, 558—Death, 558.
 — (Captain Wm), accompanies Dr. Oldfield, 550—Completes a survey of the Niger, 551—Commands the *Wilberforce* on a second expedition, 553—Arrival at Eboe, 554—Treaty with King Obie, 555.
 — Reaches Damuggoo, 556—Model farm at the junction of the Niger and the Chadda, 557—Ravages of the fever, 557—Return to the sea, 557—Visit to the Bights of Benin and Biafra, 559—Model farm abandoned, 559—Return to England, 560.
 Altai Mountains, 81—Silver ore of, 81
 Amazon, the, 856, 858, 859, 869.
 — Valley of the, 69.
 American exploration of the island of Loo-Choo, 915—Escort furnished to the Americans by the authorities, 916—Description of the roads to Sheudi, 916—The *Cung-qua*, or resting-place for travelers, 917—Suspicious demeanor of the natives, 917—Character of the environs of Sheudi, 918—Scenery near Pino, 918—Thorough cultivation of, 919—Precautions of the authorities to prevent intercourse with the Americans, 919—A superb landscape, 921—An ancient fortress in, 922—Two curious stones, supposed to be an emblem of the Phallic worship, 924—Scenery about Barrow's Bay, 925—Scarcity of birds in the island, 927—A delightful *Cung-qua*, 928—Curiosity of the natives, 929—A fine view, 930—Character of the coast scenery, 931—Neatness of the villages, 932—A Chinese remedy, 933—Mistaken suspicions of the natives, 933—A vast forest, 934—The party come in sight of the squadron, 936—Arrival at the starting-point, 937.
 Ancient rock-temple, 209.
 Anderson (Alexander), 118.
 — " death of, 123.
 Anderson's Falls, 604.
 Angostura, 58.
 Ankober, view of, 658, 661.
 Antelopes, 326.
 Antioch, 201.
 Apure River, 42, 43.
 Apurimac River, 860—Bridge, 861.
 Arab guides, singular custom of, 209.
 — salutation, 623.
 — boats on the Red Sea, 665.
 — guide, superstition of, 206.

- Ararat, encampment of the Moslem pilgrims at, 222—View from the summit, 223—sermon upon, 224.
- Aral Sea, 328.
- Archilote, murder at, 722.
- Arctic Sound, 297.
- Argali (Mount), view from, 368.
- Argo, Island of, 257—Vegetation, 258—Colossi upon, 258.
- "*Asie Centrale*," 87.
- Assal Lako, 651.
- Assyrian records, discovery of, 821.—throne, 819.
- Astrachan, 85.
- Atabapo River, 51.
- Atarupe, cavern of, 55.
- Atbara River, 216.
- Atmospheric Rarefaction, effect of, 694.
- Attah, king of, 545.
- " (king), treaty with, 566.
- Atta, town of, 536.
- Atures, Rapids of, 48.
- Indians, fate of, 56.
- Australian Bight, 774.
- scenery, 787.
- tribes, 780, 783, 784, 790, 791, 793.
- Axum, description of, 673.
- Babylon, ruins of, 822, 823, 824.
- Back (George), 289.
- his winter journey, 295.
- (Captain), commands an expedition in search of Captain Ross, 597—Sails to New York, 598—Proceeds to Lake Winnipeg, 598—Ascends the Saskatchewan, 599—Reaches Great Slave Lake, 600—Ascends Hoar Frost River, 601—Arrives at the sources of the Thlew-ee-choh, 602—Winter quarters, 603—Starving Indians, 605—Sufferings of the party, 606—Death of two ravens, 607—Departure for the north—Embarks on the Thlew-ee-choh, 608—Descends the rapids, 609—Meets with Esquimaux, 610—Sketches the natives, 610—Arrives at the Polar Sea, 611—Lands on Montreal Island, 612—Gains Point Ogle, 612—Returns to England, 613.
- Badagry, 506, 520, 523—Extortion of the king of, 524.
- Baghdad, 822, 824.
- Baghzen Mountain, the, ascended by Dr. Overweg, 891.
- Bagimi, country of, 901.
- Baikio, Dr. W. B., appointed to take charge of an expedition to the Niger, 905—Enters the Niger in the steamer *Pleid* and attains the highest point yet reached, 906—Gets tidings of the death of Dr. Barth, 906—Enters the kingdom of Kororofa, 906—Sickness among the crew, 906—Well received by the Sultan of Hamarawa, 907—Difficulties with the natives higher up the river, 907—Return without losing a man, 908.
- Bakones, tribe of, 577.
- Baloune River, 778.
- Bambarra, kingdom of, 107.
- Bamboo, description of, 767, 768.
- Bammakoo, 113.
- Banks (Sir Joseph), 93.
- " " 108.
- "Banner Rock," 921.
- Baobab-tree, 633.
- Basrabinski, Steppe of, 80.
- Barca Gana, 472—His march to Mandara, 470—Interview with the Sultan, 481—Defeated by the Felatahs, 483—Disgraced and restored to favor, 489—Wounded, 496—Marches around Lake Tchad, 503.
- Baris, land of the, 638—People of, 639, 647.
- Barket, 888.
- Barnaul, 81.
- Barrow's Bay, 921.
- Barth, Dr., accompanies Mr. Richardson to Central Africa, 885—Narrow escape in the desert, 886—Harassed by the Tuaricks, 888—Enters the kingdom of Air, 889—Visit the sultan En-noor, 890—Visits Agadez, the capital, 890—Leaves Air, 891—Separates from his associates on the frontiers of Bornou, 892—Proceeds to the frontiers of the Felatah country, 894—Arrives at Kano in Soudan, 894—On the death of Mr. Richardson, proceeds to secure and send home his papers, 894—Prepares to explore Lake Tchad, 894—Journey to Adamowa, 895, 897—Joins a hostile expedition into the Waday country, 900—Accompanies another army into Mandara and Musgo, 901—Travels toward the Nile, 901—Meets much opposition, and is finally turned back in Bagirmi, 901—Rejoins Dr. Overweg, who died soon after, 903—Visits Sackatoo and Timbuctoo, and explores the middle course of the Niger, 904—Meets Dr. Vogel, 904—Returns to Europe, 904.
- Batn el-Hadjar, 256.
- Battakers, tribe of the, 845, 846.
- Baouangketsi, country of, 574.
- Bear (Captain Lewis's adventure with), 148.
- Bears, tenacity of life of, 143.
- Bechuannas, 569, 570—Interment, 371—Rain-maker, 572, 573—Abandonment of wounded, 575—Conversion, 576.
- Beerof (Governor), his reception of Lander, 542.
- (Governor), relieves the *Albert*, 558.
- Bedouin woman, compassion of a, 254.
- honor, anecdote of, 441.
- intrigues of, 443, 444—order of march, 444.
- hospitality of the, 445.
- religion of the, 450.
- alliance of the Syrian tribes, 450.
- habit of cooking on the march, 451.
- ceremony of reconciliation, 453—Their mardouffs, or war-dromedaries, 453—Declaration of war, 454—Custom of the hatfi, 454.

over, 778.
 kingdom of, 107.
 description of, 767, 768.
 Joseph), 93.
 108.
 "Rock," 921.
 ce, 633.
 ci, Steppe of, 80.
 na, 472—His march to Mandara,
 interview with the Sultan, 481—
 led by the Felatahs, 483—Disgraced
 restored to favor, 489—Wounded,
 marches around Lake Tchad, 503.
 of the, 638—People of, 639, 647.
 88.
 11.
 Bay, 921.
 , accompanies Mr. Richardson to
 Africa, 885—Narrow escape in
 ert, 886—Harassed by the Tuna-
 88—Enters the kingdom of Air,
 visit the sultan En-noor, 890—
 Agadez, the capital, 890—Leaves
 1—Separates from his associates
 frontiers of Bornou, 892—Proceeds
 frontiers of the Felatah country,
 arrives at Kano in Soudan, 894—
 death of Mr. Richardson, proceeds
 re and send home his papers, 894
 y to Adamowa, 895, 897—Joins a
 expedition into the Waday coun-
 0—Accompanies another army into
 ra and Musgo, 901—Travels to-
 che Nile, 901—Meets much oppo-
 and is finally turned back in Ba-
 901—Rejoins Dr. Overweg, who
 soon after, 903—Visits Sackatoo
 mbuctoo, and explores the middle
 of the Niger, 904—Meets Dr.
 904—Returns to Europe, 904.
 hadjar, 256.
 s, tribe of the, 845, 846.
 ketsi, country of, 574.
 ptain Lewis's adventure with), 148.
 nacy of life of, 143.
 as, 569, 570—Interment, 371—
 akker, 572, 573—Abandonment of
 ed, 575—Conversion, 576.
 (Governor), his reception of Lan-
 12.
 (Governor), relieves the *Albert*, 558.
 woman, compassion of a, 254.
 honor, anecdote of, 441.
 intrigues of, 443, 444—order of
 444.
 ospitality of the, 445.
 religion of the, 450.
 alliance of the Syrian tribes, 450.
 nbit of cooking on the march, 451.
 ceremony of reconciliation, 453—
 mardoubs, or war-dromedaries, 453
 laration of war, 454—Custom of the
 454.

Bedouins, character of, 623.
 Bee's Creek, 119.
 Beer Springs, 708.
 Begharmis, battle with the, 495.
 Belanger, perilous adventure in a rapid,
 302.
 Bell (Mr.), his visit to Abyssinia, 667.
 Belle, Sultan of Houssa, 501.
 (Sultan), camp of, 513.
 Belzoni, birth and education, 229—Visit to
 England, 229—Goes to Egypt, 230—
 Wounded by a Turkish soldier, 230—Ar-
 rival at Thebes, 231—Adventure in a
 tomb, 232—Excursion to Nubia, 233—
 Return to Thebes, 233—Explorations of
 the tombs at Thebes and Karnak, 234—
 Opens the temple of Abou Simbel, 236—
 Opens the second pyramid, 238—Journey
 to the ruins of Bernice, 238, 239—To the
 Oasis, 239—Return to Europe, 241—
 Death, 241.
 Bonuè, river, 896—Joins the Niger, 896.
 Beni-Abou-All, tribe of, 617, 618, 619.
 Beni-Abou-Hassan, tribe of, 617.
 Beni Geneba Bedouins, 718.
 Beni-Khaled, shepherd tribe of, 616.
 Bonown, camp at, 100.
 Berber, country of, 214.
 king of, 261.
 Bernice, ruins of, 239—Mistake of Cal-
 laud concerning them, 238.
 Berkel (Jabel), ruins at, 259.
 (Mount), 282—Ruins at its base,
 282, 283.
 Bertat, people of, 277.
 Bettelheim, Dr. missionary at Loo-Choo, 915.
 Beyrout, 829, 832.
 Bible, confirmation of the, 818.
 Bigwhite, the chief, 193.
 Bilma, 468.
 Bird Rock, 534.
 Birnia, town of, 475—Court of, 475.
 (old), ruins of, 487.
 Birs Nimroud, 823.
 Black Waters, valley of the, 728.
 Blacksmith (negro), 79.
 Block, Dr., accompanies an expedition to
 the Niger, 805.
 Blue Lake, 746.
 Blue Town, the, 736—hotel at, 736.
 Bogoslowak, copper mines of, 79.
 Bohea Mountains, scenery of, 770—Tea dis-
 trict of, 771.
 Bohrs, tribe of the, 637.
 Bokhara, Russian intercourse with, 323.
 dangers of the route to, 324.
 appearance of, 341—Houses, 341—
 Inhabitants, 342—Jews of, 342—Palace
 of the Khan, 343—Markets, 343—Decay
 of, 343.
 women of, 345.
 Bokhara, scenery of, 334.
 khan of, 335.
 the territory of, 338—Face of the
 country, 339—Climate, 336—Cities, 340.

Bokhara, population of, 344—Slavo popula-
 tion of, 344.
 Boo-Khaloom, 465—His illness, 466—Re-
 ception in Bornou, 472—Departs for Mau-
 dara, 478—Fights at Musfeia, 482—Death,
 485.
 Bonny, messenger from, 537, 538.
 Bonplaud, Association with Humboldt, 22.
 appointed superintendent of the gar-
 dens at Malmaison, 75—Journey to Para-
 guay, 75—Imprisonment, 75—Death, 76.
 Borgoo Hunter, 509.
 Bornouese Troops, evolutions of, 472.
 Bornou, approach to, 469.
 body-guard of Sheikh, 472—Shekh
 of, 474—Sultan of, 475—Curiosity of the
 people, 478—Anecdote of a Bornou lady,
 476.
 rainy season in, 499.
 Sheikh of, receives presents, 495—
 Security of the country, 503.
 Defeat of the shekh of, 514.
 Botta, (M.), his discoveries at Khorsabad,
 810.
 Bottle-tree of Australia, 779.
 Bourhad-Bota, ascent of the, 747.
 Boussa, 510—Sultan of, 510—His statement
 of Park's fate, 511—His kindness to Clap-
 porton, 511.
 kindness of the inhabitants, 529.
 Boy (King), 540, 541, 542.
 Brazil, Ida Pfeiffer's adventures in, 838, 839
 —Indians of, 840, 841.
 Brick Tea, 354.
 Broussa, ride to, 828.
 Bubaker, encampment at, 103.
 Buddha, Moral Code of, 356.
 Buddhist prayer, 353.
 priest, 356.
 priest, 772.
 laws concerning corpses, 369.
 Buffaloes, 144.
 Bukhau, mountain and wells of, 333.
 Bulgar, ruins of, 78.
 Burckhardt (John Lewis), birth of, 197—
 Education, 197—Visit to England, 198—
 Employed by the African Association,
 198—Departs for the east, 198—Arrives
 at Aleppo, 201—Proceeds to Damascus,
 202—Excursion to the Hauran, 202—To
 the Dead Sea, 203—205—Discovers Petra,
 205—Arrival at Cairo, 207—Ascent of
 the Nile, 208—Reception in Nubia, 208
 —Arrives in the territory of Sukkot, 210
 —Reception in El Mahass, 210—Decides
 to return, 210—Reaches Assouan, 211—
 Joins a caravan for Berber, 211—Arrival
 at El Mekheyref, 214—Proceeds to Damer,
 214—Adventure at Damer, 215—
 Arrives at Shendy, 215—Travels through
 Takka to Souakin, 217—Attempted extor-
 tion of the governor, 217—Arrival at Jid-
 da, 218—Visit to Mohammed Ali, 219—
 Residence at Mecca, 221—Journey to Me-
 dina, 254—Attacked by Bedouins, 224—

- Proceeds with a caravan to Yembo, 225
—Sails for Cossior and arrives at Cairo, 226—Visits Mount Sinai, 226—Death, 226.
- Burdekin River, 780.
- Burton, Lieutenant R. F., makes a pilgrimage to Mecca, 909—Assumes the oriental costume, 909—Disguises himself as a wandering dervish, 910—Proceeds to Suez, 911—Scene on an Arab boat, 911—Enters the harbor of Yembo, 912—Accompanies a caravan to Mecca, 912—Attacked by Bedouins, 912—Enters Medina, 913—His residence at, 913—Prevented from proceeding to Muscat, 914—Returns to Suez, 914.
- Cabal, 683.
- Caillaud (Frederic), early travels, 245—Embarks for Egypt, 245—Sets out for the Oasis of Jupiter Ammon, 246—Arrives at Sivalh, 247—Visits the ruins of Om Beydah, 250—Arrives at the Little Oasis, 251—Accused of magical arts, 251—Proceeds to Farafroh, 252—To Daklel, 253—Visits El-Khargeh, 254—Arrives in Siout, 254—Visits to Cairo, 254, 255—Returns to Thebes, 256—Proceeds to Assouan, 256—Arrives in Nubia, 256—Examines the temple of Solob, 256—Enters Dongola, 257—Visits the ruins at Merawo, 259—Received by Ismail Pasha, 260—Accompanies him to Berber, 261—Proceeds to Shendy, 262—Discovers the ruins of Meroë, 263—Sails up the Blue Nile, 266—Arrives at Senaar, 267—Mortality among the troops, 267—Visit to Ibrahim Pasha, 269—Accompanies Ismail Pasha into the negro country, 271—Narrow escape, 272—Arrival at Fazagl, 274—Escape from a conflagration, 276—Reaches the country of Gamamy, 276—Examines the gold-washings, 277—Defeat at Singué and return, 278—Embarks at Adassy and return to Senaar, 279—Visit to the ruins of Naga, 280—Of Mesowurat, 281—Return to Shendy, 282—Visit to the ruins of Mount Berkel, 282—To the Oasis of Solimch, 283—Return to Cairo, 284—Arrival in France, 285.
- Cairo, 834.
- Calabozo, 40.
- Calcutta, Ida Pfeiffer's residence at, 842.
- Callirhoë, hot springs of, 803.
- Calumucks, description of, 388.
- Calpi, village of, 67.
- Calumet Bluff, 133.
- Cameahwait (Shoshonee chief), 153, 154.
- Camels, as draught animals, 796.
- Camping in the snow, 394.
- Canning (Sir Stratford), 810, 814.
- Canton, approach to, 761.
- Ida Pfeiffer's adventures in, 841, 842.
- Cape Disappointment, 170.
- Caracas, 84—(Silla do), 34, 35.
- Carib Indians, 58.
- Carlehana, mission of, 47.
- Carpe, mission of, 30.
- Carpentaria, Gulf of, 791.
- Carson (Kit), 697, 702, 706, 709, 722, 723.
- Carthage, 61.
- Cashghar, city of, 337.
- Caska, negotiation by means of, 413.
- Caspian Sea, 86.
- Cassiquiare River, 53, 54.
- Cavigha, (Captain), exploration of the Pyramid, 234.
- Caxamarca, valley of, 69.
- Cerro Pasco, 854.
- Ceylon, 842.
- Chaboneu, adventure of, 149.
- Chadda, discovery of the, 534.
—Exploration of, 550.
- Chafaré River, 864, 865.
- Chasuta, 856.
- Chicha, a drink of the South American Indians, 860.
- Chilluckitequaw Indians, 166.
- Chimborazo, Ascent of, 65, 66.
- China, death of the Emperor of, 358.
—scenery of, 371.
—great wall of, 372.
—army of, 375—a soldier of do., 375.
- Chinese officers, Humboldt's interview with, 82.
—festival of the new year, 376.
—frontier, 389.
—costume, 756—Physiology, 759.
—tea-carriers, 770.
- Chlobnikoff, 416, 421—Makes a compass, 429—Falls into a pit, 432—Poisoned, 437.
- Chuga (Mount), frightful passage of, 748.
- Chupo, a Peruvian national dish, 860.
- Chwostoff (Lieutenant), attack on the Japanese Kuriles, 411, 414, 435.
- Clapperton (Captain Hugh), joins Major Denham at Tripoli, 463—Separates from him at Kouka, 491—Proceeds with Dr. Oudney to Katagum, 497—Death of Dr. Oudney, 498—Clapperton enters the kingdom of Houssa, 498—Arrival at Kano, 499—Procures an exhibition of boxers, 500—Reaches Sackatoo, 500—Interview with the sultan, 501—Suspensions of the sultan, 501—Return to Kouka, 502—Arrival in Europe, 504—Departure on his second expedition, 505—Proceeds to the interior, 506—Death of several of the party, 506—Reception at Katunga, 507—Detention, 508—Arrival at Wawa, 510—Proposal of marriage, 510—Reaches the Niger, and arrives at Houssa, 510—Place of Park's death, 511—Returns to Wawa, 511—Detention at Koolfu, 512—Enters Kano, 513—Arrives at the camp of Bello, Sultan of Houssa, 513—Sojourn at Sackatoo, 513—Last illness, 514—Death, 516—Burial by Lander, 517.
- Clarke's adventure in an Indian lodge, 163.

- Clark's River, 159.
 — Point of View, 174.
 Clatsop Indians, 173.
 Cocca, effects of, 864.
 Cochabamba, 864.
 Cochrane (Captain John Dundas), determines to travel round the globe on foot, 383—Sets out for Russia, 383—Leaves St. Petersburg, 384—Plundered by robbers, 384—Arrives at Novgorod, 385—Reaches Moscow, 386—Crosses the Ural Mountains, 387—Arrives at Tobolsk, 387—His passports stolen, 387—Arrives at Omsk, 388—Visits the Chinese frontier, 389—Proceeds to Barnaul, 389—Interview with the Governor-general, 390—Reaches Irkutsk, 390—Descends the Lena in a canoe, 391—Arrives at Yakutsk, 392—A winter journey, 393—Reaches Zashiversk, on the Indigirka, 396—Suffers from the cold, 397—Becomes a priest, 397—Reaches the Kolyma, 397—Travels with dogs, 398—Meets with Baron Wrangel at Lower Kolyma, 399—Attends a fair of the Tehuktchi, 401—Returns to Kolymsk, 402—Ascends the Kolyma, 403—A perilous situation, 404—Reaches the Omekon, 406—Swims the Okota, 407—Dangerous passage, 408—Arrives at Okotsk, 409—Proceeds to Kamtehatka, 410—Marries a Kamtehatdale, 410—Returns to St. Petersburg, 410.
 Cold, in British America, 290.
 Columbia River, head-waters of the, 152.
 — Great Falls of the, 164.
 — Lower Falls of the, 167.
 — Mouth of the, 170.
 Constantinople, 827.
 Coppermine River, 293.
 — Narrows of the, 295—Mouth of the, 296.
 — River, crossing of, 305, 306.
 Cordilleras, scenery of, 862.
 Cosnipata River, 862.
 Cotopaxi, volcano of, 64.
 Cossacks, of Ural, 85—Religious worship, 85.
 Cow-tree, 36.
 Cracroft's River, mishap at, 800.
 Cumana, city of, 28—Customs of the inhabitants, 29—Earthquake at, 33.
 Cumberland House, 289.
 Cung-quas, the, of Loo-Choo, 917.
 Curare poison, 54.
 Cuzeo, 861, 862.
 Dakhel, Oasis of, 253—Antiquities of, 253.
 Dale (Lieutenant), death of, 805.
 Dalles, the, 712.
 Damara-land, 565, 566.
 Damer, selling goods at, 215.
 Damergou, country of, 892.
 Damuggoo, 537.
 Danakil, country of, 653—Danakil barber, 654.
 Dark Water, king of the, 530.
 Darkhan (Mount), 367.
 Darkisch, city of, 456—Its inhabitants, 457.
 D'Arnaud, 629.
 Dar-Fur, anecdote of pilgrim from, 633.
 Darling River, discovery of, 584—Exploration of, 585, 586—Junction with the Murray, 591.
 Dead Sea, Entrance into, 798—Sounding of, 799—Southern extremity of, 800—Temperature of, 801—Depression of, 804.
 Debeni Arabs, chief of the, 653.
 Deuba (Park's black boy), 103.
 Demons' Palace, 878, 881.
 Denham (Major Dixon), appointed to command an expedition in Central Africa, 463—Joins Captain Clapperton and Dr. Oudney at Tripoli, 463—Arrival at Mourzuk, 464—Delay at Mourzuk and return to Marselles, 465—Return to Mourzuk, 466—The expedition sets out, 466—March across the desert, 467—Approach to Bornou, 469—Arrival at Lake Tchad, 469—Approach to Kouka, 471—Reception, 472—Visit to the Sultan of Bornou, 475—Curiosities exhibited to the natives, 476—Excursion to Lake Tchad, 477—Death of his horse, 478—Journey to Mandara, 479—Arrival at Mora, 480—Visit to the Sultan of Mandara, 480—Battle with the Felatahs, 483—Retreat, 484—Stripped and plundered by the Felatahs, 484—Narrow escape from death, 485—Desperate condition, 485—Retreat to Mandara, 486—Arrival at Kouka, 487—Expedition into the Munga territory, 487, 488—Denham separates from Clapperton and Oudney, 491—Proceeds with Mr. Toole to Loggun, 492—Reception by the Sultan, 493—Death of Mr. Toole, 495—Of Dr. Oudney, 495—Expedition to Lake Tchad, 495—Returns to Kouka, 497—Meets with Clapperton, 497—Excursion on the eastern side of Lake Tchad, 503—Return to Europe, 504.
 Derr, capital of Nubia, 208.
 Derwazeh, description of, 338.
 Dickson (Dr.), journey into Africa, 505, 506.
 Diet of the Nubian caravans, 213.
 Dinkas, tribe of, 631, 644.
 Distress for want of water, 213.
 Djebel Akhdar, 621, 622.
 Dogs, as an article of food, 178.
 Dongola, scenery of, 257.
 — (old), 259—Ruins of a Coptic convent, 258.
 Drayhy (the), 444, 445—March into Mesopotamia, 447—Becomes chief of the Bedouins in Syria, 453—Defeats the Wahabees, 455—Visits their king, 456.
 Drowyer, his adventure with the Indians, 157.
 Drinking a Fetish, 620.
 Drovotti, his hostility to Belzoni, 234.

- Dulti, opposition to Dr Blaikie at, 907.
 Dunrora, Lauder's description of, 519.
 Dyaks, tribe of, 844.
- Eboe people, war canoes of, 539.
 — town, 539.
- Eotoorop, island of, 411.
- Egga, town of, 532—Lauder's visit to, 532.
- Ehrenberg, 77.
- Electrical Eel, 40, 41.
- Elephant-hunting on Lako Tchad, 477.
- El Ais, 630.
- El-Garah, village of, 247.
- El Hammar, wells of, —.
- El-Hammar, skeletons at, 467.
- El-Kerr, cataract of, 279.
- El Khargeh, Oasis of, 253.
- El Mekheyref, 214.
- El Tih, desert of, 207.
- Encounter Bay, 593.
- Eneeshur village, 179.
- Engaddi, fountain of, 799.
- English, Tartar description of the, 732.
 — Chinese idea of the, 741.
- En-Noor, Sultan of Air, 889—Makes treaty with Mr. Richardson, 890.
- Esmeraldi, mission of, 54.
- Esne, expenses of living at, 211.
- Esquimaux, 295.
 — Back's intercourse with, 610.
 — Franklin's intercourse with, 321.
- Expedition Range, 783.
- Eyra (Edward John), commands an expedition into the interior of Australia, 773
 —Encamps at the head of Spencer's Gulf and proceeds to Lako Torrens, 773—Progress toward the interior arrested, 774—Proceeds westward from Spencer's Gulf, 774—Visits Port Lincoln, 774—Reaches the Great Bight, 774—Reduction of the party, 775—Great privations, 775—Robbery and murder, 775, 776—Arrival at Albany, 776.
- Fallesses, Wady and Well of, 883.
- Falls of the Missouri, 146, 147.
- Farafroh (Oasis of), 252—Inhabitants of, 252, 253.
- Farm (the model), 557, 559.
- Fatouma (Amadi), journal of, 121, 125, 126.
- Fatallah Sayeghir, joins M. de Lascais, 440—Escape from freezing, 444—Travels in disguise, 446—Interview with the Drayby, 447—Captured by Shekh Abai, 451—Suffering from thirst, 452—Falls down a precipice, 454.
 — Interview with the King of the Wahabees, 457—Conversation upon Christianity, 458—Disastrous termination of his travels, 459.
- Fatteconda, town of, 95.
- Fayoum, district of, 239.
- Fazogl, country of, 271.
 — mountain of, 273—Submission to the king, 274.
- Felatah, empire of, 894.
- Fezzan, sultan of, 465.
 — Wady of, 886.
- Fika, town of, 902.
- Fire in an African Forest, 270.
- Fitzpatrick, his crossing of the Sierra Nevada, 718.
- Floyd (Sergeant), death of, 132.
- Forlay (King), 540.
- Fort Chipewyan, 291.
- Fort Chatsop, 175.
- Fort Enterprise, 293—Winter temperature at, 294—Occupation at, 294.
 — Franklin's return to, 310.
- Fort Mandan, 139.
- Fort Providence, 292.
- Fortune (Robert), appointed to visit the tea-countries of China, 763—Reaches Hong-Kong and proceeds to Shanghai, 763—Prepares to visit the hill of Sung-lo, 763—Passes through Haug-chow-foo, 764—Discovers new trees, 764, 765—Enters the district of Hwuy-chow, 766—Visits the Sung-lo district, 766, 767—Returns to Shanghai and ships tea-plants to India, 767—Departs on a journey to the Bohea Mountains, 767—Arrives at Fou-chow-foo, 767—Sails up the Min, 767—Describes the bamboo, 767, 768—Sails from Ning-po up the Green River, 769—Sails down the Kin-kiang to Hokow, 769—Describes the tea-carriers, 770—Arrives at the gates of Fokien and enters the mountains, 770—Visits the hills of Woo-e, 771—Tea-farms, 772—Returns to Shanghai, 772.
- Foulah Robbers, 113.
- Franklin (Sir John), appointed to explore the northern coast of America, 289—Residence at Cumberland House, 290—Organization of the expedition, 291—Arrival at Great Slave Lake, 292—Winter quarters at Fort Enterprise, 293—Descent of the Coppermine, 296—Embarkation in canoes on the Polar Sea, 296—Land on Hood's River, 297—Continue their journey by land, 298—Sufferings from cold, 300—Failure of provisions, 300—A musk-ox shot, 301—Diet of *tripe de roche*, 301—Perilous situation of one of the party, 302—Perplexity of the party, 305—Difficulty in crossing the Coppermine, 306—Some of the party left behind, 308—Arrival at Fort Enterprise, 310—Sufferings at the fort, 311—Remainder of the party arrive, 313—Good example of Hepburn, 313—Murder of Mr. Hood, 315—The murderer shot, 317—The party reduced to four, 318—Relieved by the Indians, 319—Returns to Montreal, 320—Second expedition, 320—Winter on Mackenzie's River, 320—Exploration of the coast, 321—Return to England, 321.
- Fray, Juan Gonzalez, 60.
- Fremont, (Col. John C.), ordered to explore the Rocky Mountains, 697—Departure of

ro of, 894.
 of, 465.
 of, 886.
 902.
 ricant Forest, 270.
 is crossing of the Sierra Ne-
 ant), death of, 132.
), 540.
 yan, 291.
 175.
 rise, 293—Winter temperature
 Occupation at, 294.
 kin's return to, 310.
 4, 139.
 nce, 202.
 bert), appointed to visit the tea-
 of China, 763—Reaches Hong-
 proceeds to Shanghai, 763—
 to visit the hill of Sung-lo, 763
 through Hang-chow-foo, 764—
 new trees, 764, 765—Enters the
 Hwy-chow, 766—Visits the
 district, 766, 767—Returns to
 and ships tea-plants to India,
 starts on a journey to the Bohoa
 s, 767—Arrives at Fou-chow-foo,
 is up the Min, 767—Describes
 oo, 767, 768—Sails from Ning-
 e Green River, 769—Sails down
 e Green River, 769—Describes
 iang to Hokow, 769—Describes
 rriers, 770—Arrives at the gates
 and enters the mountains, 770
 the hills of Woo-e, 771—Tea-
 2—Returns to Shanghai, 772.
 bers, 113.
 Sir John), appointed to explore
 ern coast of America, 289—Res-
 at Cumberland House, 290—Or-
 of the expedition, 291—Arriv-
 Great Slave Lake, 292—Winter
 at Fort Enterprise, 293—Descent
 Coppermine, 295—Embarkation in
 on the Polar Sea, 296—Land on
 River, 297—Continue their jour-
 land, 298—Sufferings from cold,
 allure of provisions, 300—A musk-
 301—Diet of *tripe de roche*, 301
 pus situation of one of the party,
 complexity of the party, 305—Diffi-
 crossing the Coppermine, 306—
 of the party left behind, 308—Ar-
 Fort Enterprise, 310—Sufferings
 ort, 311—Remainder of the party
 313—Good example of Hephurn,
 murder of Mr. Hood, 315—The
 er shot, 317—The party reduced
 318—Relieved by the Indians,
 returns to Montreal, 320—Second
 tion, 320—Winter on Mackenzie's
 320—Exploration of the coast, 321
 ra to England, 321.
 n Gonzalez, 60.
 (Col. John C.), ordered to explore
 cky Mountains, 697—Departure of

the expedition, 697—Arrival at Fort Lara-
 mie, 698—Discouraging picture of the
 country, 698—Determines to proceed, 699
 —Reaches the South Pass, 699—Tribu-
 taries of the Colorado, 700—Ascents the
 Wind River Mountains, 700—Illness, 702
 —Reaches the summit, 703—Returns
 homeward, 704—Descent of the Platte,
 704—Descent of the rapids, 704, 705—Re-
 turn to St. Louis, 706—Commands an ex-
 pedition to Oregon and California, 706—
 Arrives at St. Vrain's Fort, 706—Crosses
 the Rocky Mountains, 707—Enters Bear
 River Valley, 707—Encamps at the Bear
 Springs, 709—Descends the river, 709—
 Arrives at the Salt Lake, 710—Proceeds
 to Fort Hall, 711—Descends the Snake
 River, 711—Reaches the Wallahwallah
 and descends to the Columbia, 712—Ar-
 rives at the Dalles, 712—Projects a new
 route to the south, 713—Arrives at
 Tlamath Lake, 714—Discovers Summer
 Lake, 715—Pyramid Lake, 716—Difficult
 passage of the Sierra Nevada, 717, 718—
 Descent into California, 719—Arrival at
 Sutter's Fort, 720—Journov eastward,
 720—Reaches the Spanish Trail, 721—
 Encounters a plundered party, 721—De-
 feat of the robbers, 722—Tabeau shot by
 the Indians, 723—Arrival at Utah Lake,
 723—Return of the expedition, 723.
 Fulo, account of the, 907.

Galleo, sea of, 796.
 Gallatin's River, 150
 Gamaryl, country of, 270
 Gambarou, ruins of, 288.
 Gandiko, town of, 906.
 Gay Lussac, 74.
 Gazelle Lake, 844.
 Geysers, the, Ida Pfeiffer's visit to, 836, 837.
 Ghadames, Richardson's residence at, 873,
 875—Inhabitants of, 876.
 Gharian Pass, 885.
 Ghat, Oudnoy and Clapperton's visit to, 466.
 —Richardson's residence at, 870, 881
 —People of, 880—Women of, 880, 881.
 —885.
 Ghor, valley of, 205.
 Gibbon, (Lieut. Lardner), joins Lieutenant
 Herndon at Lima, 861—Assists in prepar-
 ing for the expedition to the Amazon, 851
 —Separates from Herndon at Tarma, 853
 —Leaves Tarma, 860—Enters the province
 of Ayacucho, 860—Meets with a Yankeo
 showman, 860—Crosses the Apurimac,
 861—Arrives at Cuzco, 861—Excursion
 to the Madre de Dios, 861—A night on
 the Coanipata, 862—Returns to Cuzco,
 862—Approaches Lake Titicaca, 862—
 Reaches La Paz, 863—Arrives at Cocha-
 bamba, 864—Interview with the Presi-
 dent, 864—The coca-plant, 864—Embarks
 on the Chapars, 865—Night traveling,
 865—Arrival at Trinidad, 865—Unpleas-

ant delay, 866—Reception at Fort Prin-
 cipe da Beira, in Brazil, 866—Reaches
 the falls of the Madeira, 866—Trenchery
 of the boatmen, 867—Passage of the falls,
 867, 868—Arrival at the Amazon, 869
 —Commercial advantages of the route,
 869, 870.

Gilbert, murder of, 790.
 Gobi, desert of, 869, 880.
 Godoy, adventure of, 722.
 Goethe, 19, 87.
 Golownin (Captain Wassili), directed to
 survey the Kurile Islands and the coast
 of Tartary, 411—Reaches the Island of
 Ectoocrop, 411—Fired upon by the Ja-
 panese, 412—Holds a conference with
 them, 413—Invited on shore, 414—Taken
 prisoner, 415—Severe treatment, 416—
 Conducted to Hakodadi, 418, 419—Im-
 prisonment, 420, 423—Removal to Mats-
 ma, 423—Tortured by Japanese curiosity,
 424, 426—Hope of liberation, 427—Re-
 moved from their cages into a house, 428
 —Escape, 429—Fearful adventure, 430—
 Night upon the mountains, 431—Recap-
 tured and imprisoned, 433—Hears of the
 arrival of a Russian vessel, 434—Second
 winter in Japan, 434—Removal to Hako-
 dadi, 435—Liberation, 436—Return to
 Russia, 437.

Goornoh, sepulchral excavations at, 232.
 Gordon, (Captain), his journey and death,
 284.
 Goz Rajob, ruins near, 216.
 Great Basin, exploration of, 713—First view
 of, 715.
 Great Bend (of the Missouri), 134
 Great Slave Lake, 292.
 Green River, 707.
 —of China, 769.
 Guacharo Cavern, 31.
 Guanaquato, 72.
 Guayaquil, 72.
 Gujeba, agriculture of the region about, 901.
 Guntoo (Mount), 358.

Hadondoa Bedouins, 217.
 Hakodadi, 419—Prison of, 420, 421.
 —speech of the governor of, 436.
 Halfay, country of, 265.
 Hall (Fort), 711.
 Hama, 440.
 Hamada, desert, description of, 885.
 Hamaruwa, reception of Dr. Blaikie at, 906
 Hang-chow River, 764.
 Hang-chow-foo, 764.
 Harris (Major W. C.), appointed by the
 East India Company to command an ex-
 pedition to Shoa, 649—Proceeds from
 Bombay to Tajura, 649—Receives a visit
 from the sultan, 650—Sets out for the
 interior, 650—Fearful sufferings of the
 party, 651—Reaches the country of the
 Debeni, 653—Interview with the chief,
 653—Detention at the Wady Killuloo, 655

- Insolence of the natives, 655—Crosses the oasis of Sultáli, 656—Arrives at the Háwash, 656—Reception in the kingdom of Shoa, 657—Ascends the mountains toward Ankóber, 657, 658—A thief-catcher, 658—Reception by the king Sáhela Scássie, 659—Entrance into the capital, 661—Residence at Ankóber, 661—Religion of the Ethiopians, 661, 662—Habits of the people, 663—Commercial treaty with the king, 664.
- Harris (Mount), 582, 586.
- Hateeta, a Tuarik chief, 886.
- Hauran, the, 202.
- Havana, 60.
- Hawaha River, 656.
- Hecla, Mount, Ida Pfeiffer's ascent of, 837, 838.
- Heine (Mr.), appointed to the Loo-Choo expedition, 915—Astonishes the natives with his rifle, 918, 929, 935—Sketches a grand central panorama of the island, 930.
- Hemp palm, 764.
- Hepburn (John), conduct of, 807.
- effect of his example, 313.
- Herndon, (Lieutenant Wm. Lewis), receives orders to explore the valley of the Amazon, 851—Preparations for the expedition, 851—Departure from Lima, 852—Crosses the Cordilloras, 852—Visits the Puy-puy Mountain, 853—Arrives at Tarma, 853—The party separates, 853—Visits the mining town of Cerro Pasco, 854—Embarks on the Huallago, 854—"The lost soul," 855—A fellow-countryman, 855—Reaches the Amazon, 856—Ascends the Ucayali, 857—Arrives at the frontiers of Brazil, 857—Reception at the fort of Tabatinga, 857—Reaches the mouth of the Rio Negro, 858—Halts at Barra, 858—Passes the Madeira, 859—Reaches the mouth of the Amazon, 859—Returns to the United States, 859.
- Hillman (William), engaged by Major Denham, 463—Illness, 489—Makes a gun-carriage, 490—Makes a cart, 502—Returns to London, 504.
- Hippopotami, 531.
- Hoar-frost River, 601.
- Homs, 440.
- Hood (Robert), 289.
- murder of, 315.
- Hood's River, 297.
- Hornemann, 198.
- Horse-racing among the Mongols, 364.
- Horza, pass of, 482.
- Hottentots, 562—method of building, 134.
- Houghton (Major), 93.
- Houssa, boxers of, 500.
- Houtson, joins Captain Clapperton, 506—Returns to Badagry, 508.
- Huallago River, 854, 856.
- Hue and Gabet, sent out to re-establish the French Catholic Mission at Pekin, 728—Commanded to proceed into the interior, 728—Enter Mongolia, 728—Cross the kingdom of Gehekten, 730—Arrive at Tolon-Noor, 731—The town described, 731—Meets with the Queen of the Khal-kaa, 732—Tartar mode of greeting, 732—Pass through the country of Telakar, 733—Lost horses restored by Tartars, 733, 734—Ruined city, 734—Burial of the kings, 735—Reach the Blue Town, 735—Cross the Yellow River and enter the Land of Grass, 737—Desolate country, 737—Pilgrims going to witness a lama miracle, 738—Arrive too late, 739—Pass the Dobsoon-Noor, or Salt Lake, 739—Recross the Yellow River, 740—Enter the province of Kan-Sow, 741—Dangerous road, 741—Arrive at the frontiers of Thibet, 742—Study the language, 742—Enter the Buddhist monastery of Kounboun, 743—Proceed to the Blue Sea, 746—Join a Thibetan embassy to Lha-Ssa, 747—Ascent of Mount Chuga, 748—Arrival at Lha-Ssa, 749—Lodgings, 750—Palace of the Talé Lama, 751—Presentation to the authorities, 752—Detention and examination, 752—Projected mission at Lha-Ssa, 753—Jealousy of the Chinese minister, 753—Departure from Lha-Ssa, 754—Reach the Chinese frontier, 755—Difficulties concerning dress, 755—Chinese odor, 755—Arrival at Tching-tou-fou, 756—Reach the Blue River, 756—Disputes with the Mandarins, 757—Lodgings in a theater, 757—Chinese curiosity, 757—Descend the Blue River, 758—Chinese physiology, 758, 759—Cross Lake Pou-Yang, 759, 760—Arrival at Canton, 761—Grotesque costumes, 761—Arrival at Pekin, 762—Return to Europe, 762.
- Hudson's Bay Company, 587.
- Human-headed bull, discovery of, 812.
- Humboldt (Alexander von), his birth, 19—Education, 20—Enters the university of Frankfort-on-the-Oder, 20—First scientific journey, 20—Visits Switzerland and Silesia, 21—Desire of travel, 21—Preparations for his American journey, 21—Meeting with Boupland, 22—Journey to Spain, 22—Voyage to America, 23—Arrival at Tenerife, 24—Ascent of the peak, 25—Arrival at Cumana, 28—Excursion to Araya, 29—Attacked by a Zambo, 32—Departure from Cumana, 33—Arrival at Laguayra, 34—Ascent of the Silla of Caracas, 34—Departure for the interior, 36—Experiment with electrical eels, 40—Voyage on the Apura, 42—On the Orinoco, 44—50—On the Atabapo, 51—On the Rio Negro, 52, 53—On the Cassiquiare, 53, 54—Visits the cavern of Atarupo, 55, 56—Arrival at Angostura, 57—Return to Cumana, 59—Visit to Cuba, 59, 60—Sends his collections to Europe, 60—Voyage to Carthagena, 61—

ater Mongolia, 728—Cross the
of Gochekten, 730—Arrive at
oor, 731—The town described,
ects with the Queen of the Khal-
—Tartar mode of greeting, 732
through the country of Tehakar,
ost horses restored by Tartars
—Ruined city, 734—Burial of the
35—Reach the Blue Town, 735
the Yellow River and enter the
f Grass, 737—Desolate country,
ilgrims going to witness a lama
738—Arrive too late, 739—Pass
osoon-Noor, or Salt Lake, 739—
the Yellow River, 740—Enter
vince of Kan-Sow, 741—Dang-
d, 741—Arrive at the frontiers of
742—Study the language, 742—
the Buddhist monastery of Kou-
743—Proceed to the Blue Sea, 746
a Thibetan embassy to Lha-Ssa,
ascent of Mount Chuga, 748—Ar-
Lha-Ssa, 749—Lodgings, 750—
of the Talé Lama, 751—Presenta-
the authorities, 752—Detention
amination, 752—Projected mission
Ssa, 753—Jealousy of the Chinese
er, 753—Departure from Lha-Ssa,
Reach the Chinese frontier, 755—
ilities concerning dress, 755—Chi-
odor, 756—Arrival at Teling-tou-
56—Reach the Blue River, 756
outes with the Mandarins, 757—
ngs in a theater, 757—Chinese en-
Illimani Mountain, 863.
Imerachiam, 400.
Inca Legend, 70.
Incas, ancient road of the, 68.
Indian Conjurer outwitted, 290.
Indian vapor-baths, 161.
Indus River, survey of, 683.
Irby and Mangles, 235.
Irkutsk, city of, 390.
Iro River, crossing of, 354.
Isaaco (Park's guide), adventure with a
crocodile, 120.
—Journey in search of Park, 124.
Iaitza, village of, 927.
Ismail Pasha, his expedition against Don-
gola, 255—Camp at Assouan, 255—Vic-
tory over the Shyghheas, 256.
—His reception of Caillaud—Diplo-
matic trick, 260—March to Berber, 260.
—Arrival at Sennaâr, 267—Plans of
African conquest, 270—March to Fazogl,
271.
—His search for gold, 277—Repulse
at Singuè, 276.
—His fate, 285.
Jannah, Clapperton's visit to, 506.
Japanese, treachery of the, 415—Manner
of binding prisoners, 416.
—Fear of suicide, 419—Desire for
specimens of writing, 421—Bathing, 422
—Extraordinary curiosity of, 424, 425.

Reaches Bogota, 62—Arrival at Quito,
63—Ascent of Pichincha, 64—Ascent of
Chimborazo, 65—67—Proceeds to the Am-
azon, 68—Ascends its upper valley, 69—
Visits the silver mines of Gualgoyoc, 69
—Arrival at Caxamarca, 69—At Trux-
illo, 71—At Lima, 71—Visit to Mexico,
72—To the United States, 73—Return
to Europe, 73—Publication of his works,
74—Plans a journey to India, 75—Resi-
dence in Paris, 76—Sets out for Russia
and Siberia, 77—Arrival at Tobolsk, 80
—At the Chinese frontier, 81—At As-
trachan, 85—Return to Berlin, 86—Mis-
sion to Paris, 87—Residence in Berlin, 88
—Publication of "Kosmos," 88—Later
years, 88, 89—Personal appearance, 88,
89.
Humboldt (Wilhelm von), education, 20.
— " " Residence at Alba-
no, 74.
Hunger, sufferings of Franklin's party from,
304.
Hungry Creek, 186.
Hurricane in the desert, 217.
Hwuy-chow district, 763.
Ibrah, town of, 619.
Ibrahim Pasha, arrival at Sennaâr, 269.
Iceland, 834—838—Habitations of, 835—In-
habitants of, 836—Traveling in, 836.
Ilek River, 325.
Ilezk, Salt works of, 83.
Illimani Mountain, 863.
Imerachiam, 400.
Inca Legend, 70.
Incas, ancient road of the, 68.
Indian Conjurer outwitted, 290.
Indian vapor-baths, 161.
Indus River, survey of, 683.
Irby and Mangles, 235.
Irkutsk, city of, 390.
Iro River, crossing of, 354.
Isaaco (Park's guide), adventure with a
crocodile, 120.
—Journey in search of Park, 124.
Iaitza, village of, 927.
Ismail Pasha, his expedition against Don-
gola, 255—Camp at Assouan, 255—Vic-
tory over the Shyghheas, 256.
—His reception of Caillaud—Diplo-
matic trick, 260—March to Berber, 260.
—Arrival at Sennaâr, 267—Plans of
African conquest, 270—March to Fazogl,
271.
—His search for gold, 277—Repulse
at Singuè, 276.
—His fate, 285.
Jannah, Clapperton's visit to, 506.
Japanese, treachery of the, 415—Manner
of binding prisoners, 416.
—Fear of suicide, 419—Desire for
specimens of writing, 421—Bathing, 422
—Extraordinary curiosity of, 424, 425.

Jarra, 100, 103.
Jabel Kora, scenery of, 220.
Jefferson River, 150.
Jern, town of, 687—Inhabitants of, 687.
Jerusalem, 804.
— 830.
Jesso, coast of, 417.
Jidda, 218.
Jimba, 786.
Johnson (Park's negro), 108.
Jones (Rev. George), appointed on the party
to explore Leo-Choo, 915—Recognized
by the natives as the chief of the party,
917—Makes a plan of an old fortress, 923
—Reception of, at Isitza, 927—Return to
the squadron, 937.
Jordan, rapids of the, 797—Pilgrims' bath-
ing-place, 797.
Jordan, valley of the, 203.
Jorullo, volcano of, 73.
Journal, singular method of keeping, 422.
Kaaba, description of the, 221.
Kaarta, Kingdom of, 99.
Kaenda, 532.
— Lander's second visit to, 550.
Kajanga, kingdom of, 96.
Kalali Shergat, mounds of, 816.
Kamalia, 114, 115.
Kamtchatka, 410.
Kanem, country of, 900—Military expedi-
tion into, 900.
Kano, Clapperton's description of, 499.
— Clapperton's second visit to, 513.
— Town of, 894.
Kansas River, valley of, 706.
Kara-kum, desert of, 328.
Karfa, the slave-merchant, 115.
Kasan, 78.
"Kasr Bint Faraoun" (Petra), 206.
Kasr Janoon, or Palace of the Demons, a
range of hills, 886.
Katsha, capital of a Felatah prince, 894.
Katunga, city of, 507—Description of, 508.
— Entry of the Brothers Lander, 524.
Katagum, Clapperton's reception at, 497.
Kee-ming, ancient temple of, 379.
Keks, land of the, 635—Chief of, 636—Vil-
lage of, 637.
Kerak, visit to, 802—Chief of, 803.
Kerck, treachery of the shekh of, 204.
Khabour River, 820.
Khalgan, city of, 371.
Khalkhas Tartars, caravan of, 745.
Khata, ceremony of the, 743.
Khartoum, 643.
Khingis caravans, 332.
Khingis, songs of, 329—Habits of life, 330
—Government, 330.
—village of, 325—Punishment of a
criminal, 325—Tent of, 326.
—Middle Horde of, 83.
—Sports of the, 84.
Khinkhan Mountains, 370.
Khoja-Kul, lake of, 327.

- Khorsabd, discoveries at, 810.
 Khung-ming, legend of, 366.
 Khütükhtü (grand lama), festival of the, 362.
 Kiakhta, 349.
 ——— 381.
 Kiama, town of, 509.
 Kilgou, fight at, 271, 272.
 Kirrec, Lander's adventure at, 538.
 Kizil-kum, desert of, 332.
 Kloneko, Description of Humboldt, 88.
 Kucea, protection of the, 397.
 Knoblecher (Dr. Ignatius), education, 643—
 Joins the Catholic mission at Khartoum,
 643—Accompanies the annual trading
 expedition up the White Nile, 643—In-
 tercourse established with the Dinkas and
 Shillooks, 644—Received with kindness
 by the king of Kyks, 645—Friendly in-
 tercourse with the Elliäbs, 645—Passes
 the country of the Khirs, 645—Reaches
 the rapids of the White Nile and arrives
 at the Bari village of Tokinan, 646—As-
 cends the peak of Logwek, 646—Bari de-
 scribed, 647—Return to Khartoum, 647.
 Kolyvansk, porphyry works of, 81.
 Koolfu, 512.
 Koondoos, description of, 684—Chief of, 685
 —Horses, 685.
 Koomiakary, 98.
 Kooskooskee River, 159.
 Koroom (Shekh), accompanies Cailliaud, 246
 —Enters a remarkable well, 246—Super-
 stition of, 247.
 "Kosmos," 88.
 Kouka, 472, 489, 495, 497.
 Kounboum, Lamascry of, 743, 744—Mirac-
 ulous tree of, 765—Rules of, 745.
 Kourdkeyleh, Forest of, 267.
 Konyunjik, excavations at, 817, 818, 821.
 Krapf (Dr.), 657.
 Kuba, mosque of, 913.
 Kumaddschero, Japanese interpreter, 423.
 Kunashir, harbor of, 412.
 Kuruman Mission, 569.
 Kussery, 492.
 Kurites, chief of the, 412.
 Kyks, tribe of, 645.
 La Charette, 130.
 ——— 194.
 Laird (Macgregor), joins Richard Lander in
 a mercantile expedition to the African
 coast, 543—Enters the Niger, 543—At-
 tack of the Eboes, 543, 544—Interview
 with king Obie, 544—Mortality on board,
 545—Ceremonies to prevent the boats
 from passing up the river, 545—Reaches
 the Kong Mountains, 546—Sickness of
 the party, 547—Ascent of the Chadda,
 547—Visit to Funda, 548—Descends the
 river, 549—Returns to England, 550.
 ——— Fits out an expedition to explore
 the course of the Niger, 905—Obtains
 the co-operation of the British govern-
 ment, 905.
 Lajouesse, adventure of, 705.
 Lake (Captain), conduct of, 641, 642.
 Lakono (king), 639, 640—His wife, 640.
 Lama costume, 728.
 Lamartine, purchases the journal of Fatahah
 Sayeghir, 440.
 Land of Grass, 737.
 Lander (John), joins his brother Richard,
 523—Dangerous illness of, 525—Plun-
 dered and almost drowned, 538—Release,
 541.
 Lander (Richard), enters Captain Clapper-
 ton's service, 505—Detained at Kano
 with sickness, 512—Account of Clapper-
 ton's last illness, 515—517—Left at Sacka-
 too, 518—Journey southward to Dunrora,
 519—Recalled by the king of Zegzeg, 519
 —Reception at Wawa, 520—Arrival at
 Badagry, 520—Return to England, 521—
 Embarks with his brother on an expedi-
 tion to the Niger, 523—Difficulties at
 Badagry, 524—Arrival at Katunga, 524—
 Reaches Boussa, 525—Embarks on the
 Niger, 526—Detention at Yaouri, 527—
 Return to Boussa, 528—Proceeds down
 the Niger, 529—Danger from hippopota-
 mi, 531—Arrival at Kacunda, 532—Voy-
 age by night, 534—Threatened attack,
 535—Reception at Damuggoo, 537—Ar-
 rested and plundered by natives, 538—
 Proceed down the river with their cap-
 tors, 539, 540—Arrival at the sea, 540—
 Received by an English captain, 541—
 Return to England, 542—Accompanies
 Mr. Laird, 543—Joins Dr. Oldfield, 550—
 Proceeds to Cape Coast, 551—Plundered
 and wounded by the Eboes, 552—Death,
 553.
 La Paz, 863.
 Laramie Fort, 698.
 Lari, description of, 470.
 Lascaris (M. de), becomes the secret agent of
 Napolcon, 439—Settles in Aleppo, 439—
 Employs Fatahah Sayeghir, 440—Jour-
 ney to Homs and Palmyra, 440—Meets
 with Shokh Salim at Corietain, 441—
 Attacked by Bedouins, 441—Meets with
 the Emir Nasser, 442—Reception by Me-
 hanna El Fadel, 442—Residence among
 the Bedouins, 443—Escape from freezing,
 444—Sends Fatahah to the Drayhy, 446
 —Conducted to him by Fatahah, 447—
 Calumniated by a peddler, 448—Battle
 between the Drayhy and the Wahabees,
 449—Accomplishes an alliance of the
 tribes, 450—Journey into Persia, 451—
 Battle with the Wahabees, 453—Dis-
 patches Fatahah to the king of the Wa-
 habees, 455—Returns to Syria, 459—
 Death, 459.
 Layard (Henry Austen), first visits the
 east, 809—Sets out to explore the ruins
 of Nineveh, 810—Arrives at Nimroud,
 811—First discoveries, 811—The Pasha
 interfere, 811—Excavations continued,

venture of, 705.
conduct of, 541, 542.
639, 640—His wife, 640.
728.
chases the journal of Fatallah
0.
737.
joins his brother Richard,
illness of, 525—Plun-
most drowned, 538—Release,
ard), enters Captain Clapper-
ce, 505—Detained at Kano
ness, 612—Account of Clapper-
ness, 515-517—Left at Sacka-
Journey southward to Dunrora,
killed by the king of Zegzeg, 519
on at Wawa, 520—Arrival at
20—Return to England, 521—
with his brother on an expedi-
the Niger, 523—Difficulties at
524—Arrival at Katunga, 524—
Boussa, 525—Embarks on the
6—Detention at Yaouri, 527—
o Boussa, 528—Proceeds down
529—Danger from hippopota-
Arrival at Kacunda, 532—Voy-
night, 534—Threatened attack,
ception at Dummuggoo, 537—Ar-
and plundered by natives, 538—
down the river with their cap-
540—Arrival at the sea, 540—
l by an English captain, 541—
to England, 542—Accompanies
d, 543—Joins Dr. Oldfield, 550—
s to Cape Coast, 561—Plundered
nded by the Eboes, 552—Death,
53.
Port, 698.
ription of, 470.
M. do), becomes the secret agent of
on, 439—Settles in Aleppo, 439—
Fatallah Sayeghir, 440—Jour-
Homs and Palmyra, 440—Meets
Shakh Salim at Corietain, 441—
ed by Bedouins, 441—Meets with
Nasser, 442—Reception by Me-
El Fadel, 442—Residence among
douins, 443—Escape from freezing,
Sends Fatallah to the Drayhy, 446
ducted to him by Fatallah, 447—
niated by a peddler, 448—Battle
en the Drayhy and the Wahabees,
Accomplishes an alliance of the
450—Journey into Persia, 451—
with the Wahabees, 453—Dis-
Fatallah to the king of the Wa-
455—Returns to Syria, 459—
459.
(Henry Austen), first visits the
809—Sets out to explore the ruins
neveh, 810—Arrives at Nimroud,
First discoveries, 811—The Fasha
ree, 811—Excavations continued,

812—Discovery of colossal statues, 812,
813—Suspends operations, 813, 814—Re-
sumes the work, 814—Excursion to the
Tiyari Mountains, 814—Aided by gov-
ernment, 814—Discovers an inscribed
obelisk, 815—Relics transported to Bagh-
dad, 815—Palace uncovered, 816, 816—
Further excavations, 816—Returns to
Europe, 816—Second journey, 816—Pro-
ceeds to Mosul and arrives at Nimroud,
817—Continues the excavations, 817—
Discovery of Assyrian relics, 818, 819—
Colossal lions, 820—Historical tablets,
821—Party dispersed by fever, 821—Pro-
ceeds to Baghdad, 822—Arrives at Baby-
lon, 822—Appearance of the place, 823—
Palace of Nimroud, 823—Journey to Nif-
fer and Wurka, 824—Excavations, 824—
Return to Baghdad and Mosul, 824—
Further excavations, 824—Departure
from Mosul, 824.
Lebanon, plague on, 833.
Leichhardt (Dr.), sets out on an expedition
from Sydney to Port Essington, 786—
Discovers Mackenzie's River, 788—Fol-
lows the Burdekin, 789—The Mitchell,
789—Attacked by natives, 790—Mr. Gil-
bert killed, 790—Arrives at the Gulf of
Carpentaria, 791—A native strays into
camp, 791—Passage around the head of
the gulf, 792—Ascends Roper River, 792—
Descends the South Alligator, 793—
Kindness of the natives, 793—Reaches
the sea-shore, 793—Arrives at Port Es-
sington, 794—Returns to Sydney, 794.
Lewis and Clarke appointed to explore a
route to the Pacific, 129—Departure of
the expedition, 130—Intercourse with the
Ottoways, 131—Council with the Sioux,
135—Arrival among the Mandans, 138—
Winter at Fort Maudan, 139, 141—Depart-
ure, 142—Adventure with a bear, 142—
With a buffalo, 144—Dangerous navigation,
144, 145—Arrival at the Falls of the Mis-
souri, 146—Ascent of the Jefferson River,
150—Arrival among the Snake Indians,
151—Cross the dividing ridge of the
Rocky Mountains, 152—Purchase of horses
156—Departure from the Shoshonees,
158—Descent of Lewis's River, 161—Ar-
rival at the Falls of the Columbia, 164—
First view of the Pacific, 167—Encamp
for the winter, 171—Terrible rains, 172—
Set out on their return, 176—Meet
with friendly Indians, 181—Recross the
mountains, 186—The party separates, 187—
Encounter with the Minnetarees 188—
Captain Lewis shot, 190—Clarke reaches
the Yellowstone, 190—Horses stolen by
the Indians, 192—The two parties unite,
192—Arrival at St. Louis, 194.
Lewis's River, 161.
Lena River, 391.
Letorzoc, joins M. Caillaud, 245.
—illness of, 268.
Lha-Ssa, approach to, 749—description of,
750—Dwellings of, 750—Women of, 751—
Police of, 752—Catholic mission at, 653.
Limmen Bight River, 792.
Lingam, a supposed emblem of the Phallic
worship, discovered in Loo-Choo, 924.
Loo-Choo, island of, visited by Commodore
Perry, 915—Description of, 915-937.
Loggun, town of, 493—Sultan of, 493—
Country of, 493.
Logwek, 646, 647.
Long's Ponk, 697.
Lotus, description of the, 632.
Louisiana, acquisition of, 129.
Ludamar, kingdom of, 100.
Lynah (Dr.), accompanies the Loo-Choo ex-
ploring party, 915.
Lynch, (Lieutenant W. F.), authorized to ex-
plore the Dead Sea, 795—Proceeds to
Smyrna, 795—Arrives at Acro, 796—
Marches across the desert, 796—Embarks
on the Sea of Galilee, 796—Descends
the Jordan, 797—Difficult navigation,
797—Reaches the bathing-place of the
pilgrims, 797—Arrival of pilgrims, 798—
Enters the Dead Sea, 798—Encamps at
the fountain of Engaddi, 799—Pillar of
Salt, 800—Arrives at the southern ex-
tremity, 800—Desolate scenery, 800—
Sufferings from heat, 801—Excursion to
Kerak, 802—Return to the Dead Sea, 803—
Journey to Jerusalem, 804—Arrival at
the Mediterranean, 804—Excursion to
the sources of the Jordan, 804—Death of
Lieutenant Dale, 805—Return to the
United States, 805.
Macao, 762.
Mackenzie's River, 321.
Macquarie River, 681, 682.
Madeira River, 866, 867—Falls of, 867, 868.
Magdalena River, 61.
Mahasa, territory of, 210.
Mahmals (holy camels), 224.
Maiya, 669.
Mai Meogamy, his kindness, 486.
Makaroff, his rescue of Captain Golownin,
431.
Mallen Mansin, Dr. Barth is visited by, 897.
Malta, 199.
Mamoré River, 865, 866.
Mandan Indians, 138, 139, 140.
Mandara, country of, 480—Sultan of, 481—
His horror of Christians, 481.
—country of, 901.
Manga, or Minyo, prince of Bornou, 893.
Manna, 205.
Mansong, King of Bambarra, 108, 109.
—122.
Mantchoo language, 374.
Maranóa River, 781.
Maraymy, his care of Major Denham, 485.
Margh, description of the tribe, 895.
Maria's River, 146.
—Exploration of, 187, 188.

- Maseña, town of, 901—Dr. Barth detained at, 901.
 Martyr (Lieutenant), 118.
 Massawa, town of, and its climate, 666.
 Matiuskin, 401.
 Matsmai, city of, 422—Prison of, 424.
 ——— governor of, 427.
 Maypures, rapids of, 49.
 McLeod (A. R.), 699.
 ——— adventure of, 175.
 ——— adventure with a bear, 187.
 McWilliam (Dr.), his journal of voyage down the Niger, 653.
 Mecca, Burkhardt's first view of, 219—Ceremonies of the Pilgrimage, 222.—city of, 914.
 Medinet-Abou, temple of, 284.
 Medical practice, Captain Clarke's, 181.
 Medina, 224.
 ——— (the Holy City), approach to, 913—Lieutenant Burton's visit to, 913—Fight among the Bedouins of, 913.
 Melville, Port, 921.
 Memnon, colossal head of, 231—Removal of do., 232.
 Merawe, 258—Night adventure at, 259.
 Moriwether's Bay, 121.
 Merod, discovery of, 263—Description of the ruins, 263, 264.
 Mesowrat, ruins of, 281.
 Meta River, 47.
 Mexico, valley of, 72.
 Meyendorff (Baron), attached to a Russian mission to Bokhara, 323—Departure from Orenbourg, 324—Arrival in the Kirghiz country, 325—Night search for water, 327—Arrival at the Aral Sea, 328—Traverse the desert of Kara-kum, 328—Cross the Sir-deria, 331—Cross the desert of Kizil-cum, 332—Entrance into Bokhara, 333—Arrived at the capital, 335—Reception, 336—Winter at Bokhara, 339—Visit to Ourghonjé, 340—Return to Russia, 346.
 Michel, conduct of, 314—Shoots Mr. Hood, 315—Shot by Dr. Richardson, 317.
 Milk, human, a remedial agent, 868.
 Minnetareo Indians, 142.
 Mislah, the wells of, 877.
 Missikyá, village of, 926.
 Missouri, north fork of, 145.
 ——— Head-waters of the, 151.
 Mitchell (Col. T. L.), proposes to explore a route from Sydney to the Gulf of Carpentaria, 776—Departure of the expedition, 777—Crosses the Darling and ascends the Narran, 777—Ascends the Balonne, 778—Meets with the natives, 778—Describes the bottle-tree, 779, 780—Suspicious movements of the natives, 780—Discovers the Marañón, 780—Ascends the river, 781—Finds a running stream, 782—Enters the tropics, 783—Natives threaten an attack, 783—Recrosses the tropical line and proceeds westward, 784—Discovers the Victoria River and follows it westward, 784—Returns to the Marañón, 785—Returns to Sydney, 786.
 Moffat (Rev. Robert), sent as a missionary to South Africa, 561—Describes Great Namaqua-land, 561—Proceeds to Byson-dormeid, 563—Arrives at Africaner's village, 564—Interview with Africaner, 564, 565—Excursion to Damara-land, 565—A woman exposed to death by her children, 566—Journey to the Griqua country, 567—Visits Cape Town with Africaner, 567—Astonishment of the colonists, 567, 568—Interview with the governor, 568—Joins the mission at the Kuruman, 569—Ignorance of the natives, 569—Their indifference and perversity, 570—Thievish propensity, 571—Funeral ceremonies, 571—Rain-maker, 572, 573—Visits Cape Town with natives, 573—Their impressions of a ship, 574—Visit to Makaba, chief of the Bauangkotsi, 574—Description of the country, 574—Attacked by the Barolongs, 574—Visit to the Barolongs, 575—Customs of the Bechuanas, 575—Visit to the Matabole tribe, 577—Villages in the trees, 577—Reception by King Moselekatsé, 578—Results of missionary labors, 578.
 Moghrebins, or Arabs of Morocco, violent conduct of, 911.
 Mohammedan prayers, 912, 913.
 Mohammed Ali, visit to Mecca, 222.
 Mohammed, tomb of, 225.
 Mongol salutation, 352—Horses, 352.—superstition, 353—Manner of preparing tea, 354.—songs, 357.—noblemen, 359.
 Mongolia, scenery of, 356.—scenery of, 740.—interview with the governors of, 361.—Christians of, 728.
 Mongolian ruins, 367.—city, ruins of, 734.
 Montreal Island, 611, 612.
 Montufar, Carlos de, 65.
 Moor, 416, 421—Determination to remain in Japan, 428—Treachery of, 433—Suicide of, 437.
 Moorish robbers, 104.
 Mora, in Mandara, 480.
 Morrison (Dr.), death of, 507.
 Morunabidgoe River, 588—Enters the Murray, 589—Voyage up the, 594.
 Mount St. Helens, 163.
 Mountain of Little People, 133.
 Mourgevan, queen of, 732.
 Mourzuk, coldness of the nights at, 503.—Richardson's residence at, 881.
 Mudaraj, description of the 912.
 Mugodjar Mountains, 327.
 Multnomah River, 177.
 Mummies, in the tombs of Thebes, 235.
 Munga, country of, 493.

Murza
 Murra
 592
 Musca
 of I
 Muson
 Musfel
 Musgo
 Musgo
 Musie
 nou
 Musk-

Naga,
 Nanao
 Nan-cl
 Napha
 Napole
 Narrara
 Nazara
 Nedjid
 Negri
 —R
 Negro,
 Negro
 Nembr
 New E
 Nichol
 Niffer,
 Niger,

Nile, a

army

267.

Nunrou

811,

Nishue

Norwa

Novgor

Nubia,

Nubian

Ny-kon

Oasis of

habit

of the

Obi Riv

Obie (K

Obri, 62

Odors, r

Ohod (M

Okota E

Okotak

Oldfield

—Ar

- Murzouk, town of, 886.
 Murray River, discovery of, 589—Mouth of, 592.
 Muscat, city of, 616—Imam of, 616—Letter of Imam, 617—Wellsted's return to, 617.
 Masoum (British), 814, 816.
 Musfa, battle of, 483.
 Musgo, country of, 901.
 Musgow, people of, 482.
 Music-box, effect of, on the shekh of Bornou, 477.
 Musk-oxen, 301.
 Naga, ruins of, 280—Great temple, 281.
 Namaqua-land, description of, 561, 562.
 Nan-cho, town of, 769.
 Napia (Napa-Kiang), harbor of, 915.
 Napoleon, plan of oriental empire, 439.
 Narran River, 777.
 Nazareth, 832.
 Nedjid, country of the, 456—Capital of, 456.
 Negri (M. de), arrival in Bokhara, 331, 335—Reception by the Khan, 336.
 Negro, Rio, 858.
 Negroes, night-attack of, 273.
 Nemr (Mek), Visit to Ismail Pasha, 261.
 New Barcelona, 59.
 Nicholas, Emperor of Russia, 77.
 Niffer, mounds of, 821.
 Niger, Park's first view of, 107.
 —scenery of the, 530.
 —perilous night-voyage on the, 533.
 —scenery and inhabitants of, 546.
 Nile, approach to, 254.
 —Forks of the, 265.
 —(White), passage of, by the Egyptian army, 266.
 —(Blue), 266—Scenery of the banks, 267.
 —(Blue), 279.
 Nimroud, mound of, 809—Excavations at, 811, 815, 817, 820, 821.
 Nishney Kolymak, 398, 399.
 Norway House, 598.
 Novgorod, 385.
 Nubia, reception of the traveler in, 209.
 Nubian Desert, 213.
 —intense heat of the, 233.
 Ny-komma, village of, 331.
 Oasis of Jupiter Ammon, 239.
 —(the Little), 240—Scenery and inhabitants of, 240—Fountain of, 240.
 —(the Little), map of, 251—Jealousy of the inhabitants, 251.
 Obi River, 80, 81.
 Obie (King), 539, 540, 544, 545.
 —reception by Captain Allen, 554.
 Obri, 625—Inhabitants of, 625.
 Odors, national, 765.
 Ohod (Mount), 913.
 Okota River, fording of the, 407.
 Okotsk, 409.
 Oldfield (Dr.), ascends the Chadda, 550—Arrives at Rabba, 550—Returns to the sea, 551—Ascends the Niger to Id-dah, 551—Trado with the natives, 551—Sickness of the men, 552—Attacked by the natives, 552—Return to England, 553.
 Om Beydah, ruins of, 243, 249, 250.
 Omani, Oasis of, 619—Shores of, 626.
 Omekon, district of the, 406.
 Omsk, 388.
 Ootlashoot Indians, 159.
 Orenbourg, 323.
 —88.
 Oregon, rainy season in, 163.
 Orinoco River, 44—Fisheries of turtle's eggs, 45—Rapids of the, 43.
 —bifurcation of the, 50, 51.
 Orizaba, peak of, 73.
 Orsk, 83.
 Otonac Indians, 57.
 Ottoways, 131.
 Oubi, camp of, 671—Interview with, 672.
 Oudney (Dr.), associated with Denham and Clapperton, 483—Illness, 489—Leaves for Sackatoo, 491—Death, 495—Burial, 493.
 Oulou (Mount), 381.
 Ourga, the, 359—Ceremonies at, 359, 360, 361.
 —Description of, 366.
 Ourghenje, fortress of, 340.
 Overweg (Dr.), accompanies Mr. Richardson to Central Africa, 885—Visits the Kasr Janoon or Palace of the Demous, 886—Ascends the Baghsen Mountain, 891—Separates from his companions, and travels through Guber and Mariadi, 892—Rejoins Dr. Barth at Kouka, 895—Commences alone the exploration of Lake Tsad, 897—Builds a boat and embarks at Miduari, 898—Description of Lake Tsad and its numerous islands, 898, 899—In company with Dr. Barth, visit the country of the Waday, 899—Join the army of the Arab tribe, Uelad Soliman, 891—Being defeated, escape with difficulty, and return to Kouka, 890—Accompany a Bornouse army into Mandara and Musgo, 901—After its return, proceeds alone toward the Niger, 901—Reaches Gujeba, 901—Arrives at Fika, 902—Compelled to leave the place, 902—Returns to Kouka in poor health, 903—Excursion along the river Yeou, 903—Dies at Maduari, 903.
 Oxus River, 691—Head-waters of, 692.
 Pacific Ocean, view of, 70.
 Palyrma, ruins of, 202.
 —" " 442.
 Pampou, plains of, 749.
 Park (Mungo), birth, 93—Early years, 93—Departure for Africa, 93—Residence at Pisania, 94—Departure for the interior, 95—Arrival at the Senegal, 97—Reaches the Moorish kingdom of Ludamar, 100—Imprisoned by Sultan Ali, 101—Escape from Benawin, 103—Adventure with robbers,

- 104—Arrival at the Niger, 108—Kindly treated by a native woman, 188, 189—Adventure with a lion, 110—Decides to return, 111—Encounter with robbers, 113—Residence at Kamalia, 113—Return to England, 116—Departure on the second journey, 118—Arrival at Pisanía, 118—Mortality among his men, 121—Reaches the Niger, 122—Trade with the natives, 122—Last letter to England, 123—Uncertainty respecting him, 124—Amadi Fatouma's journal, 125, 126—His probable fate, 127—Character and personal appearance, 127.
- Parks, the, 723.
- Parkyns (Mansfield), travels in the East and determines to visit Abyssinia, 665—Sails from Suez to Djidda, 665—Lands at Massawa, 666—Excessive heat, 666—Adopts the dress and customs of the people, 666—Proceeds on foot into the interior, 667—Reaches a camp of wandering Shohos, 668—Invalid Englishmen, 667-669—Arrival at Adoua, 669—Visits Prince Oubi, at Howazayn, 670—Description of the camp, 671—Reception, 672—Proceeds to Axum, 673—Privations and enjoyments of the traveler, 674—Reaches Addaro, 675—Superstition of the people, 675—Sojourn at Rohabeita, 675—Plan of government, 676—Life among the people, 676—Sleeping between fires, 677—Health, 677, 678—Life at Adoua, 678—Habits of the Abyssinians, 679—Abyssinian women, 680—Hair-dressing, 681—Arrival at Khartoum, 682.
- Parwan, pass of, 684.
- Pascoe, knavery of, 514.
- Pearce (Captain), death of, 506.
- Pekin, approach to, 372—Timkovaki's entrance into, 373—Dwellings, 373—Shops of the merchants, 374—Great bell of, 376—Elephants, 377—Portuguese mission, 377—Climate, 378—Streets of, 379.—Catholic mission at, 727.
- Peltier and Samandré, death of, 313.
- Perry (Commodore), sends an exploring party into Loo-Choo, 915.
- Perrault, kindness of, 302.
- Petra, ruins of, 205—Burckhardt's discovery of, 206.
- Pfeiffer (Ida), early desire of travel, 827—Departure for the Holy Land, 827—Sojourn in Constantinople, 827—Excursion to Broussa, 828—First ride on horseback, 828—Embarks at Constantinople, 828—Arrives at Joppa, 829—Oriental hospitality, 829—Sufferings on the journey, 829—Arrival at Jerusalem, 830—Excursion to the Dead Sea, 830—Adventure at the convent of St. Saba, 831—Visits Nazareth, 832—Arrival at Beyrout, 832—Journey to Damascus, 832—A victim of the plague, 833—Embarks for Alexandria, 833—Oriental communism, 833—
- Arrives at Cairo, 834—Ascends the Pyramid of Cheops, 834—Visits Malta, Palermo, Naples, and Rome, 834—Audience with the Pope, 834—Returns to Vienna, 834—Goes to Iceland, 834—Describes the dwellings, 835—Sojourn at Reykjavik, 836—Discomforts of travel, 836—Visits the Geysers, 837—Ascent of Mt. Hecla, 837, 838—Return to Vienna, 838—Embarks for Rio Janeiro, 838—A narrow escape, 838, 839—Visits the Indians, 840—Indian hospitality, 840, 841—Arrives at Valparaiso, 841—Embarks for Chius, 841—Visits Tahiti, 841—Ventures through the streets of Canton, 842—Visits Singapore, Ceylon, and Calcutta, 842—Proceeds to Benares, 842—Visits Allahabad, Cawnpore, and Agra, and proceeds to Delhi, 842—Encounter with a tiger, 843—Arrives at Bombay, and proceeds to Baghdad, 853—Excursions to the ruins of Ctesiphon and Babylon, 843—Journey through Russia, Armenia, Georgia, and Mingrelia, to Odessa, 843—Description of Sebastopol, 844—Returns to Vienna, 844—Proceeds to London, 844—Embarks for Cape Town, 844—Arrives at Singapore, 844—Visits Sarawak, 844—Travels among the Dyaks, 844—Visits Java and Sumatra, 845—Adventure among the cannibal Battakers, 845, 846—Visits Celebes and the Molucca Islands, 846—Arrives at San Francisco, 847—Visits South America, 847—United States, 847—Winter in the Azore Islands, 847—Return to London, 847—Personal appearance, 847.
- Phila, island of, 233.
- Philadelphia, ruins of, 204.
- Pichincha, volcano of, 64.
- Pilgrim's Ford, 738.
- Pilgrims to Mecca, appearance of, 222.
- Pimichiu, portage of, 52.
- Ping-Keou, mountain of, 741.
- Pino, village of, 918.
- Pisanía, 94.
- Plains of the Orinoco, 38.
- Point William, 170.
- Point Lako, encampment on, 295.
- Polar Sea, Franklin's exploration of, 321.—storm upon, 296.
- Port Essington, 794.
- Pou-yang Lake, 760.
- Preuss, adventure of, 719.
- Principe da Beira, fort, in Brazil, 866.
- Puy-Puy Mountain, 853.
- Pyramid Lake, 716.
- Pyramids, view from, 230.
- Quamash Flats, 185.
- Quindiu, pass of, 63.
- Quito, 63, 64.
- Querra (Steamer), sickness on board of, 545.
- Rabba, messenger from, 528—Lauders' Detention at, 531.

Rabba,
Rache-C
Rab Ees
Rains (I
Reikjavi

Rolando
Ricasas
Richard

the Co

317.

poditi

Oasis
Repai
Leave

Visits
872—
Ghad

Entra
the go
874—

Doctr
land,"
Joins

in the
877—
—Arr

native
journ
lemis

icate
Ghat,
881—

Barth
tral
poli, 8
886—

Wady
turos
Arriva

888—
hajit,
889—

tion 1
Treaty
dez, 8
of Mo

separa
Arrive

Rikord
434—
scripti

Rio de l
Rio de G
Rio Jane

841.
Rio Neg
Robins

lacion
Rock su

- Rabba, description of, 550.
 Rache-Churin, convent of, 738, 739.
 Rab Eesah, pass of, 651.
 Rains (Tropical), northern limit of, 469.
 Reikjävich, 835.
 ——— 834.
 Reliance (Fort), 603, 605, 606.
 Ricaras Indians, 137.
 Richardson (Dr.), 289.
 ——— (Dr.), hazards his life in swimming the Coppermine, 306.
 ——— (Dr.), left behind with Hood, 308.
 ——— his narrative, 315—Shoots Michel, 317.
 ——— accompanies Franklin's second expedition, 320.
 ——— (James), proposes to explore the Oasis of Ghadames, in the Sahara, 871—Repairs to Tunis and Tripoli, 871—Leaves Tripoli, 871—Equipment, 871—Visits the mountain district of Rujiban, 872—Acclimation, 872—Approach to Ghadames, 872—Native curiosity, 873—Entrance into the city, 873—Reception by the governor, 874—Becomes a physician, 874—Hospitality of the natives, 874—Doctrinal controversy, 875—The "sea on land," 875—Character of the people, 876—Joins a caravan for Ghat, 876—Flowers in the desert, 877—The wells of Mislah, 877—Adventure with a robber-chief, 878—Arrival at Ghat, 878—Curiosity of the natives, 879—Cool reception, 879—Sojourn at Ghat, 880—Invitations to Moslemism, 880—Female visitors, 880—A delicate question, 880, 881—Departure from Ghat, 881—The Palace of the Demons, 881—Arrival at Tripoli, 881—Joins Drs. Barth and Overweg on a mission to Central Africa, 885—Departure from Tripoli, 885—Proceeds by Murzouk to Ghat, 886—Discovers rock-sculptures in the Wady Telissareh, 886—Serious adventures at the Palace of the Demons, 887—Arrival at Ghat, 887—Fatiguing journey, 888—Enter the kingdom of Air at Taghajt, 888—Harassed by wandering tribes, 889—Arrival at Tin-Tellust, 889—Reception by the sultan of En-Noor, 890—Treaty with En-Noor, 890—Visit to Agadez, 890—Account of Air, 891—Ascent of Mount Baghzen, 891—The travelers separate, 892—Arrival at Zinde, 892—Arrives at Gurai, 893—Death, 893.
 Rikord (Lieutenant), returns to Kunashir, 434—Reaches Hakodadi, 436—His description of Golownin's liberation, 437.
 Rio de los Americanos, 720.
 Rio de Guancabamba, 68.
 Rio Janeiro, Ida Pfeiffer's residence at, 838, 841.
 Rio Negro, 52, 53.
 Robinson Crusoe, Burckhardt's Arabic translation of, 201.
 Rock sculptures, 886.
 Rocky Mountains, highest peak of the, 703.
 ——— Gates of the, 149.
 ——— Lewis's first view of, 143.
 Rohabaita, life at, 675.
 Roof of the world, 692, 693.
 Rose, Gustav, 77.
 Ross (Sir John), 597.
 Russia, treaty with China, 350.
 Russian prisoners in Bokhara, 334, 345.
 ——— mission at Pekin, 350.
 ——— robbers, 384.
 Sabatier, 629.
 Sacujawoa, meeting with her relatives, 155.
 Sackatoo, Clapperton's entrance into, 501—Description of the city, 502.
 ——— 513.
 Sáhela Scússio (king), 659, 661—Treaty with, 664.
 Singú, fight at, 278—View from the mountain of, 279.
 Sain-oula, robbers of, 729.
 Salt, manufacture of, by Lewis and Clarke, 173.
 ——— plain of, 247.
 Salt Lako (Great), 709—Voyage upon, 710, 711.
 Salvator River, valley of, 782.
 Samdadchiemba, his appearance, 729—Advico of, 730-737—Leaves Huc and Gabet, 754.
 San Carlos, mission of, 53.
 San Fernando de Atabapo, Mission of, 51.
 San Joaquin, country of, 721.
 San Saba, convent of, 831.
 Sandara, the bearded, 742.
 Sansanding, 109.
 Sarayacu, 857.
 Sarcophagus, found at Thebes, 237.
 Sardanapalus, tomb of, 819.
 Sargasso Sea, 26.
 Sarsfield, his employment of rockets, 547, 548.
 Schkajeff, learns to read and write, 433.
 Scott (Sir Walter), 117.
 Sebastopol, 844.
 Second Pyramid, opening of, 238.
 Sego, city of, 108.
 ——— 122.
 Selimeh, Oasis of, 283.
 Sempolatinsk, 83.
 Semmed, Oasis of, 620.
 Senegal River, 97.
 Senaar, king of, 268—Fatal epidemic at, 268.
 Sennacherib, palace of, 818.
 Shammar, Arab tribe of, 814.
 Shannon (George), lost, 134.
 ——— his adventure with the Indians, 169.
 Shary River, description of, 492.
 Shedy, 215.
 Sheudi, capital city of Loo-Choo, 916.
 Shillocks, tribe of, 632, 644.
 Shirazi, village of, 622.

- Shoa, scenery of, 657—Detective police of, 658—King of, 659—Religion of, 662—People of, 662—Manners and customs, 663.
- Shoshone Indians, 151, 152.
— Captain Lewis's adventure with, 151.
— Fremont's interview with, 708.
- Shohos, tribe of, 668.
- Shoma Arabs, 496—Manners of the women, 496.
- Slygheans, curious custom of, 278.
- Siberia, charms of, 410.
- Siberian pestilence, 80.
— hospitality, 391.
- Sierra Nevada, 717, 718, 719.
- Silla, on the Niger, 111.
- Simanoff, allowed to visit a Russian vessel, 435.
- Siueo River, 61.
- Sir-i-kol, valley of, 691—Lake of, 692, 693.
- Sir River, crossing of, 331.
- Sioux, interview with the, 699.
- Sioux Indians, 134, 135.
- Sivay, Cailliand's approach to, 247—Scenery of, 248—Inhabitants of, 249.
- Slave River, 292.
- Slave Lake (great), 600.
- Smeljovskaja Gora, 81.
- Snow-storms in the Arctic regions, 299.
- Sobah, ruins of, 266.
- Sobat River, 641, 642.
- Sockna, women of, 464.
- Sokulk Indians, 162.
- Soleb, temple of, 256.
- Sonakin, 217.
- Soudan, 885, *et seq.*
- Soumè (Mount), 368.
- South Pass, 699, 700.
- Southern Cross, 26.
- Spanish Trail, the, 721.
- Speranski (General), 390.
- See-Tehouen, province of, 755.
- Stone Idol Creek, 137.
- Sturt (Captain Charles), commands an expedition into Australia, 581—Descends the Macquarie, 581—Discovers the Darling, 584—Descends the river, 585—Returns to Mt. Harris, 586—Explores the region of the Castlereagh, 586—Returns to Wellington Valley, 587—Second expedition, 587—Descent of the Morumbidgee, 588—Reaches the Murray, 589—Hostility of the natives, 590—Discovers the mouth of the Darling, 590—Friendliness of the natives, 591—Arrives at the mouth of the Murray, 592—Reaches the sea-coast, 593—Ascends the Murray, 593—Suspicious movements of the natives, 594—Sufferings of the party, 595—Return to Sydney, 595.
- Sukhne, shekh and people of, 203.
- Sukkot, territory of, 210.
- Sumatra, Ida Pfeiffer's travels in, 845, 846.
- Summer Lake, 715.
- Sung-lo, hill of, 766.
- Sutter (Captain), 720.
- Suweik, 624.
- Sweet Water River, rapids of the, 704, 705.
- Szalt, 204.
- Taboniah, Well of, 885.
- Tagama, a tribe of Tuareks, 892.
- Tajura, town of, 649—Sultan of, 650.
- Takka, country of, 217.
- Talé Lama, palace of, 751.
- Tang-Keou-Eul, town of, 742.
- Tarma, 853, 800.
- Tarsus, 200.
- Tartar manners, 732—Encampment, 733—Burials, 734, 735—Butcher, 740.
- Tayf, 224.
- Taylor (Bayard), accompanies the American exploring party through Loo-Choo, 915—Enters a native dwelling, 924—Is overcome by fatigue, 934.
— visit to Dr. Knoblecher, 643.
- Tchad (Lake), first view of, 469.
— eastern shore of, 496.
- Tchakar, country of, 733.
- Tching-tou-fou, town of, 756.
- Tchogortan, Lannery of, 745, 746.
- Tchuktchi, baptism of the 401—Camp of the, 402—Jealousy of the, 402.
- Tegerry, wells of, 466.
- Tehama, terrible desert of, 652.
- Tekut, Mount, 885.
- Telissarch, Wady, rock sculptures discovered in, 886.
- Tequendama, Cascade of, 62.
- Terke, Japanese interpreter, 428.
- Terra del Fuego, appearance of, 841.
- Thakar, kingdom of, 730.
- Thebes, Belzoni's description of, 231.
- Thebes, Necropolis of, 234.
- Thibetan Embassy, 746, 747.
- Thirst, Mungo Park's sufferings from, 105.
- Thlew-oc-choh River, 601, 602, 608, 609, 613.
- Tibboos, Sultan of the, 467—Country of the, 468—Dances of the women, 468—Astonishment on seeing engravings, 468.
- Tiberias, 796.
- Tiger hunting, 843.
- Tigris River, 760.
- Timbuctoo, Dr. Barth's visit to the city of, 904.
- Timkovski, appointed to conduct the Russian mission to China, 350—Departure from Kiakhta, 351—Approach to the desert of Gobi, 352—Arrival at the Ourga, 359—Official reception, 360—Departure from the Ourga, 366—Visit to Mount Darchan, 367—To ancient Mongolian ruins, 367—To a Thibetan temple, 368—Crosses the desert of Gobi, 369—Arrives at the Great Wall, 371—Enters Khalgan, 371—Examines the Great Wall, 372—Arrival at Pekin, 373—Visits the city, 374—The temples, 376—The Portuguese mission,

ids of the, 704, 705.
icks, 892.
Sultan of, 650.
51.
of, 742.
Encampment, 733—
utcher, 740.
panies the American
ugh Loo-Choo, 915—
telling, 924—Is over-
k.
oblocher, 643.
w of, 469.
of, 496.
33.
of, 756.
of, 745, 746.
f the 401—Camp of
of the, 402.
rt of, 652.
ck sculptures discov-
e of, 62.
preter, 423.
entrance of, 841.
730.
cription of, 231.
f, 234.
46, 747.
s sufferings from, 105.
r, 601, 602, 608, 609,
e, 487—Country of the,
e women, 468—Aston-
engravings, 468.

h's visit to the city of,
d to conduct the Russian
350—Departure from
pproach to the desert of
al at the Ourga, 359—
360—Departure from
Visit to Mount Darchan,
Mongolian ruins, 367—
ample, 368—Crosses the
9—Arrives at the Great
rs Khalgan, 371—Ex-
t Wall, 372—Arrival at
its the city, 374—The
he Portuguese mission,

- 377—Departure from Pekin, 379—Visit
to an ancient Mongolese temple, 379—
Re-enters the desert of Gobi, 380—Re-
turns to Kiakhta, 381.
Tin-Tellust, valley and town of, 889.
Titicaca Lake, 862, 863.
Tlamath Lake, 714.
Tobacco, eagerness of Lewis and Clark's
men for, 190.
Tobolsk, city of, 80.
Tolon-Noor, town of, 731.
Tougoussi, Captain Cochrane's intercourse
with, 406.
Toole (Mr.), arrival at Kouka, 491—Illness,
492—Death, 494.
Torrens Lake, 773, 774.
Toukoulan Mountains, 393.
Toumat River, 275.
Toumet, country of, 735.
Translation through four languages, 182.
Trinidad (in Bolivia), Herndon's residence
at, 865, 866.
Tripe de roche, 300, 301.
Tropical vegetation, 30.
Truxillo, 71.
Tsad Lake, 897—Explored by Dr. Overweg,
897—Description of its islands and their
inhabitants, 898, 899.
Teanker Island, 641.
Turbaco, air-volcanoes of, 61.
Turkistan (Chinese), 236.
Twisted hair, 160.
—181, 182.
Tyrrhit, arrival at Bornou, 495.
Tzarsko, Solo, conflagration of, 384.

Ucayali River, 856, 857.
Uelad Soliman, tribe of the, 900.
Unguruta, town of, 893.
Uñ-ña, 932.
Ural Mountains, inhabitants of, 387.
—78.
Uralsk, 84.
Uruana, mission of, 46.
Urdum, salt mountain of, 800.
Ustkamenogorsk, 81.

Valparaiso, customs at, 841.
Vapor Bath, experiment with, 184—Cure
of an Indian chief, 185.
Veta, the sickness caused by rarity of the
atmosphere, 852, 853.
Victoria River, discovery of, 784.
Vogel (Dr. Edward), volunteers to join Dr.
Barth in Central Africa, 904—Joins Dr.
Barth, 904—Accompanies the army of
Bornou on its annual foray, 905—His
proposed explorations, 905.
Volga River, 85.

Wahabees, Ebn Sihoud, king of the, 455
—His appearance, 456—Treatment of
the Drayhy, 456—His remarks on the
Christian religion, 458—Treaty with the
Drayhy, 458.

Wahelollah Indians, 178.
Waddington and Handbury, meeting with
Cailliaud, 257.
Wady Killuloo, scene at, 655.
Waled Ali, tribe of, 445.
Wallahwallah River, 712.
Wandering Dervish, privileges of a, 910.
Wappatoo root, 173.
Warrington, Mr., son of the English consul
at Tripoli, accompanies Dr. Vogel to
Kouka, 904—His death, 904.
Wawa, country of, 510.
—Dishonesty of the king of, 529.
Wellsted (Lieutenant), employed by the
East India Company in the survey of the
Arabian coasts, 615—Lands at Muscat,
616—Proceeds to Sur, 616—Reception
by the Bedouins, 616, 617—Accompa-
nies the shekh of the Genelas into the
desert, 618—Proceeds by the oasis to
Semmed, 619, 620—An Arab's attach-
ment to his camel tested, 620—Sojourn
at Neswah, 621—Excursion to Djebel
Akhdar, 621, 622—Illness of the party,
623—Proceeds to Sib, on the coast, 623
—Hospitably entertained at Suweik, 624
—Travels inland to Obri, 624—Hostility
of the Wahabees, 625, 626—Reaches Su-
weik, 626—Returns to Muscat, 627.
Werno (Dr. Ferdinand), enters the Egyp-
tian service and proceeds from Cairo to
Khartoum, 629—Joins the expedition
up the White Nile, 630—Describes the
scenery, 630, 631—Reaches the country
of the Shillooks, 631—The Dinkas, 631
—Describes the lotus, 632—Enters the
land of the Nuehra, 633—Crosses the
Gazelle Lake, 634—Enters the land of
the Keka, 635—Describes a sunrise, 635
—Describes the inhabitants, 636, 637—
Attack of fever, 637—Natives fired upon,
638—Enters the land of the Baria, 638—
Inhabitants described, 639—Visited by
king Lākono, 639, 640—The expedition
returns, 641—Explores the river Sobat,
641—Encounter with a lion, 642—Re-
turn to Khartoum, 642.
Whale, skeleton of, 174.
Whang-szu, temples of, 376.
White Nile, scenery of, 630, 631, 634—Sun-
rise on, 635, 638, 644—Source of, 647.
White-bear Island, camp at, 187.
Whitelock (Lieutenant), 621.
Wilberforce Falls, 299.
Wild animals of the Tropics, 43, 44.
Wild Boars, hunting with fire, 331.
Wind River Mountains, 700-703.
Windsor, adventure of, 145.
Winter Ridge, 715.
Wood (Lieutenant John), attached to a com-
mercial mission to Afghanistan, 683—
Surveys the Indus, 683—Arrives at Ca-
bul, 683—Sets out with Murad Ali for
Koordooz, 684—Obligated to return from
the Pass of Parwan, 684—Proceeds by

- the Bamian route to Koondooz, 684—
Account of Koondooz, 684—Of the Uz-
becks and their horses, 685—Determines
to explore the Oxus, 685—Departure,
686—An Uzbek's three best friends, 686
—Arrival at Jerm, 686—Detention by
winter, 687—Proceeds up the Oxus, 689—
The Yak described, 689—Ascends the
mountains, 691—Reaches the head-waters
of the Oxus, 692—Arrives at the Roof of
the World, 692—Effects of great altitude,
694—Return, 695.
- Winter traveling in British America, 291.
- Wissokaja Gora, 79.
- Woo-e-shan, hills of, 771.
- Wood River, 129, 130.
- Woodie, 471.
- Wooll, kingdom of, 95—Mediaa, capital of,
95.
- Wou-chang-fou, town of, 759.
- Wrangel (Barou), 399.
- Wrestling among the Mongols, 364, 365.
- Wurka, mound of, 824.
- Wylie (Australian), 775, 776.
- Yakutsk, city of, 392—Society at, 392—
Hospitality, 393.
- Yakut blessing, 398.
- Yakuts, endurance of the, 391.
- voracity of the, 395, 396.
- Yak, the, 689—Its habits, 690.
- Yama-Cocha, Lake of, 65.
- Yankton Indians, 134.
- Yang-tse-Kiang River, 756—Rapids of, 758.
- Yaouri, city of, 526—Sultan of, 527—Lau-
ders' detention at, 527.
- Yarkand, description of, 688.
- Yarkend, city of, 337.
- Yao-Tchang, theater of, 757.
- Yellept, Wallahwallah chief, 179.
- Yellow-knife River, 292.
- Yellow River, the, 736.
- Yellowstone River, 142.
- Yembo, plague at, 225.
- Yembo, or Djidda, town of, 912.
- Yeou River, 471.
- 503.
- 903.
- Yezidis, or Devil-worshippers, 814.
- Yimmaha, 547.
- Yola, capital of Adamoua, 896.
- Yoriba, scenery of, 507—King of, 507.
- Yorke (Captain Clarke's servant), 137.
- Zaria, city of, 512.
- Zashiversk, town of, 396.
- Zegzeg, king of, 519.
- Zlader, description of the town of, 892.
- Zuma, the widow, 510—Her persevering
attentions, 511.
- the widow, her fate, 525.
- Zyzauka, scenery of the, 403.

THE END.

INDEX TO APPENDIX.

Abu-Bakr, governor of Say, 941.
 Ala-Kool, lake of, 1010.
 Alatau Mountains, 1010.
 Aliyu, Sultan of Houssa, entertains Dr. Barth, 939.
 Altai, great chain, exist only on maps, not in nature, 1001.
 ——— mountains, 998.
 Ants, remarkable instance of instinct of, 980.
 Arabdan, Kalka chief, entertains Mr. Atkinson, 1002.
 Asbenawa salt-traders, 939.
 Atkinson, Thomas Witlam, 997—Extent of his travels, 997—Departure from Moscow, 998—Explores the Oural, 998—Arrives at Barnaoul, 998—View from the summit of the Cholsoun, 998—Starts for the Chinese frontier, 999—Agreeably entertained at Barnaoul, 999—Makes excursions among the Altai range, 999—Ascends the Bielouka, 1000—Return to Barnaoul, 1000—Expedition to the Gobi, 1001—Preparations, 1001—Crosses the Kourt Choum mountains, 1001—Discovers Lake of Zabata Nor, 1002—Entertained by a chief of the Kalkas, 1002—View of the Oulan-Koum desert, 1003—Visits Lake Oubsa-Noor, 1003—Proceeds to Great Desert of Gobi, 1003—Singular appearance of the salt lakes, 1004—In the Sarkha Desert, 1004—Enters Chinese Tartary, 1004—Welcome among the Kirghiz, 1004—Entertained by Sultan Baspasihan, 1005—Singular scenes in the mountains, 1006—Visits Sultan Oul-jass, 1006—Interview with Koubaldos, the robber chief, 1006—Treachery of Koubaldos, 1007—Escape from him, 1008—Visit to Sultan Sabeck, 1008—Estimate of his flock, 1009—Magnificent scenery of the Syanshan, 1009—Hospitably received by Sultan Dujembia, 1009—Visits Ishonac Khan, 1010—Curious remains of ancient civilization, 1010—Kirghiz superstition, 1010—Preservation from danger, 1011—Return to his Siberian friends, 1011—Closes his narrative at Irkutsk, 1011.

Bakoba, tribe of native Quakers, 963.
 Balonda tribe, visited by Dr. Livingstone, 976.
 Barnaoul, 998—Society of, 999.

Barth, Dr., departure from Kouka, 938—Experiences the greatest degree of cold, 938—Arrival at Zinder, 988—Receives supply of money, 939—Asbenawa salt-traders, 939—Crosses wilderness of Gumdumi, 939—Reception by Aliyu, Sultan of Houssa, 939—Visits Soccatoo, 940—Detained at Gando, 940—Reaches the Niger, 940—Is well received at Say, 941—Meets Woled Ammer Walati, 941—Assumes the character of a Mussulman, 942—Adventure with the natives, 942—Enters encampment of Tawarcks, 943—Looked upon as a rain-maker, 943—Embarks at Saragamo for Timbuctoo, 944—Interview with Sidi Alawate, 944—Approach to Timbuctoo, 946—Enters the city, 946—Attacked by fever, 947—Inhospitable treatment, 947—Appearance of the town from terrace of his house, 947—Visits El Bakay, 948—Rival parties concerning him, 949—Retires to camp of El Bakay, 949—Allowed to depart, 952—Arrives at Gogo, 953—Commences the home journey, 953—Takes leave of El Bakay, 954—Narrow escape from armed natives, 954—Reaches Say on his return, 954—Takes leave of the Niger, 955—Sick at Wurno, 955—Destitute of means, 955—Intelligence of Dr. Vogel's and Dr. Baikie's expeditions, 955—Property seized by the Sultan of Bornou, 955—Encounters Dr. Vogel, 955—Return to Kouka, 957—Starts for home, 957—Arrival at Tripoli, 957—Results of his explorations, 958.

Baspasihan, Sultan of the Kirghiz, welcomes Mr. Atkinson, 1005.
 Batoka tribes, danger of Dr. Livingstone among, 993.
 Bechuanas, character of converts among, 967—Bible translated for, 967—Copiousness of the language, 967—Love for their children, 968—Parents take the name of their children, 968.
 Bielouka, highest peak of the Altai described, 999.
 Boers, their hostility to missionaries, 962, 997.
 Bogda Oöla, highest peak of the Syanshan, 1009.
 Bornou, Sultan of, seizes Dr. Barth's property, 955.

- Cabango, 988.
 Cassange, Portuguese station, 983.
 Chinese Tartary visited by Mr. Atkinson, 1004.
 Chobe River, its banks infested by the tsetse fly, 965—Affluent of the Zambesi, 968.
 Cholsoun, view from summit of, 998.
 Church (Corporal), accompanies Dr. Vogel, 957—Report of his death, 959.
 Cocklin, (Mr.), renders Dr. Livingstone medical assistance, 985.
 Cold, greatest degree of, experienced by Dr. Barth, 938.
 Cypriano di Abreu, kind treatment of Dr. Livingstone, 983.
- Darma Tsayren, chief of the Kalkas, 1003.
 Dore, city of, 942.
 Dulembi, Kirghiz chief, 1009.
- Ekaterineburg, 998.
 El Bakay (Kmir), 944—Befriends Dr. Barth, 948—Protection from enemies, 949—Aids his departure from Timbuctoo, 953—Dr. Barth's esteem for, 954.
 Elephant, female, Dr. Livingstone's adventure with, 994.
- Fleming (George), engages as servant to Dr. Livingstone, 968.
Forerunner, mail-ship, lost, with Dr. Livingstone's dispatches and journal, 987.
- Gabriel (Mr.), kindness to Dr. Livingstone, 985—Clothes his native companions, 985.
 Gobi, Desert of, 1001, 1003.
 ————steppes of, 1004.
 Gogo, ancient town of, 953.
 Griquas, results of missionary labors among, 967.
 Gundumi, wilderness of, 939.
- Hammadi, hostility of, to Dr. Barth, 949.
 Hippopotamus, adventure with, 989.
- Ishonac Khan, claims descent from Genghis Khan, 1010.
- Kabara, the port of Timbuctoo, 944.
 Kalompo, or Shinte, town of, 977.
 Kallu, Sultan of Gando, 940.
 Kalkas, dress of, 1002.
 ————tents of, 1002.
 Kalmucks, head-dress of, 1001.
 Katema (chief), visited by Dr. Livingstone, 979—His address, 979.
 Kieu-Long, Chinese conqueror, 1004.
 Kirghiz tribes, Atkinson visits, 999—Their *cauls* or encampments, 999—Mode of eating, 1005.
 Kolobeng, Dr. Livingstone's station, 964.
 Koubaldos the robber chief, interview with Mr. Atkinson, 1006.
- Koubaldos, suspicious conduct of, 1007—Attempts to entrap Mr. Atkinson's party, 1007—Their escape, 1008.
 Kouka, city of, Dr. Barth sets out from, 938.—return to, 957.
 Kourt Choum mountains, 1001.
 Kuruman, residence of Mr. Moffat, 960.
- Lechulatebe, opposes Dr. Livingstone's progress, 964—Furnishes him guides on second journey, 964.
 Leeambye, name of Zambesi river, which *see*.
 Leeba river, branch of the Zambesi, 975.
 Lions, Dr. Livingstone's adventures with, 961.
 ————description of the sensation of being shaken by, 961—Effects of their bite, 962.
 Livingstone, David, early life, 960—Determines to be a missionary, 960—Embarks for Cape Town, 960—Visits Mr. Moffat at Kuruman, 960—Marries his daughter, 960—Preparation for missionary duties, 960—Adventure with a lion, 961—Converts Sechele, 962—Hostility of the Boers, 962—Conceives the idea of visiting Lake Ngami, 962—Joined by Messrs. Oswell and Murray, 963—Sets out to visit Sebituane, 963—Takes a number of salt-pans for the lake, 963—Reaches the Zougga River, 963—Native Quakers, 963—Arrival at Lake Ngami, 963—Compelled to return, 964—Sets out on a second expedition with his wife and children, 964—Reaches the Zougga, 964—Obliged by sickness of his family to return, 964—Third expedition, 964—Suffering in the desert, 984—Annoyed by the tsetse fly, 965—Meets Sebituane just before his death, 966—Discovers the river Zambesi, 966—Returns to Cape Town and sends his family to England, 967—Opinion of results of missionary labor among the Griquas, 967—Engages servants for another expedition, 968—Reach Sechele, 968—Anxiety of the natives about supply of water, 968—Four months' tedious travel, 968—Hospitable reception at Linyanti, capital of the Makololo country, 969—Missionary labors, 969—Explores the course of the Zambesi or Leeambye, 970—Proceed by water to Nallelo, 972—Return to Linyanti, 973—Extends the sphere of his explorations, 973—Preparations, 973—Manner of traveling, 974—Well treated by the people, 975—Feasibility of navigating the rivers with steamboats, 975—Visit Nyamoana, a female chief, 976—Native opinion of Dr. Livingstone's hair, 976—Journey to visit Shinte, 977—Arrival at Kabompo, 977—Meets Portuguese traders, 978—Magic lantern exhibited to the natives, 979—Reach the town of Katema,

979—
 plain,
 of pet
 trader
 travel
 982—
 985—
 —Set
 comp
 984—
 tien
 men,
 sea,
 ships
 Succ
 Euro
 self
 pape
 to re
 turn
 chief
 from
 Circ
 988—
 —R
 990—
 los,
 991—
 tility
 of I
 Dan
 Reu
 at
 Zam
 offic
 peri
 995
 995
 tan
 fre
 —
 pec
 in
 bor
 Loan
 Ma
 up
 Mab
 Dr
 Mak
 96
 m
 97
 hu
 cv
 Li
 P
 by
 m
 E
 th
 st

duct of, 1007—
Atkinson's party,
98.

1001.
Moffat, 960.

Dr. Livingstone's
his guides on
Zambesi river, which

Zambesi, 975.
adventures with,

sensation of being
of their bite, 982.
life, 960—Determi-
ry, 960—Embark-
Visits Mr. Moffat
ries his daughter,
missionary duties,
a lion, 961—Con-
-Hostility of the
the idea of visiting
Joined by Messrs.

963—Sets out to
Takes a number of
983—Reaches the
ative Quakers, 963
Ngami, 963—Com-
964—Sets out on
with his wife and
as the Zougga, 964—
of his family to re-
-dition, 964—Suffer-
—Annoyed by the
Sebitunne just be-
Discovers the riv-
to Cape Town
to England, 967—
f missionary labor
967—Engages serv-
-dition, 968—Reach
ty of the natives
968—Four months'
-Hospitalable recep-
-pital of the Mnk--Missionary labors,
course of the Zam-

970—Proceed by
2—Return to Lin-
the sphere of his
preparations, 973—
4—Well treated by
ability of navigating
nbeats, 975—Visit
chief, 976—Native
stone's hair, 976—
e, 977—Arrival at
s Portuguese trad-
-rn exhibited to the
the town of Katema,

979—Address of Katema, 979—Immense
plain, covered with water, 980—Rapacity
of petty chiefs, 980—Caused by slave-
traders, 981—Population of the country
traversed, 982—The valley of the Quango,
982—Arrive in the territories of the Portu-
guese, 983—Well received by them, 983
—Set out for the coast, 984—His native
companions' first impressions of the sea,
984—Reach Loanda, 984—Kind recep-
tion by Portuguese and his own country-
men, 985—Declines offers to return by
sea, 985—Astonishment of natives at the
ships, 986—Object of the journey, 986—
Successful in opening the interior to
European commerce, 986—Provides him-
self with European goods, 986—Loses his
papers in *Eberwanner* mail-slip, and forced
to replace them, 987—Sets out on the re-
turn to Makololo country, 987—Native
chief cowed down, 987—Slow progress
from sickness, 988—Reach Cabaungo, 988—
Circumvent a chief, 988—Arrive at Shinto,
988—Adventure with a hippopotamus, 989
—Reception by Sokeletu on their return,
990—Cause of his influence among Makolo-
los, 991—Visit to the Falls of Mosioatunya,
991—Take leave of Sokeletu, 992—Hostil-
ity of the Batoka tribes, 993—Curiosity
of natives to see a white man, 993—
Danger from a female elephant, 994—
Reach Portuguese outpost, 994—Arrival
at Tete, 995—Discovers coal on the
Zambesi, 995—Welcome at Killmane by
officers of English brig-of-war, 995—Ex-
periences difficulty in talking English,
995—Detained at Mauritius by ill-health,
995—Arrival in England, 995—Import-
ant results of his explorations, 997—A
fresh expedition to the Makololos, 997.

—(Mrs.) daughter of Mr. Moffat, 960
—Accompanies her husband on two ex-
peditions, 964—Anxiety for her children
in the desert, 965—Goes to England with
her children, 967.
Loanda, city of, 984—First visited by the
Makololo, 984—Impressions produced
upon them, 985.

Mabotse, valley of, selected as a station by
Dr. Livingstone, 961.

Makololo, the, visited by Dr. Livingstone,
969—Friendly behaviour, 969—Depart-
ment in receiving missionary instruction,
970—Manner of eating, 971—Their
huts, 971—Mode of commemorating
events, 972—Furnish an escort to Dr.
Livingstone, 973—First trade with the
Portuguese, 984—Impressions produced
by a view of the sea, 984—Their astonish-
ment at European houses, 985—Visit to
English ships of war, 986—Return to
their homes, 988—Secret of Dr. Living-
stone's influence among, 991.

Manenka, female chief of the Balonda tribe,
976.

Ma-mochisane, daughter of Sebitunne, al-
lows Dr. Livingstone's party to reside in
her country, 966.

Mauritius, 995.

McGulra (Corporal), accompanies Dr. Vogel,
957—Left at Kouka, 958—Killed on his
return home, 959.

Mebaiwe, accompanies Dr. Livingstone on a
lion-hunt, 961—Narrow escape, 962.

Moffat (Mr.), missionary in South Africa,
960—Translates the Bible into the Bechu-
anna language, 967.

Mosioatunya, falls of, 991.

Murray (Mr.), sets out with Dr. Livingstone
for Lake Ngami, 963.

Nallele, town of, 972.

Nehokotaa, salt-pans of, 963.

Ngami, Lake, difficulty of reaching, 963—
First seen by Europeans, 963—Its extent
and peculiarities, 964.

Niger, River, at Say, description of, 940—
Its character near Timbuctoo, 944.

Nyamoana and her husband, 976.

Oswell (Mr.), accompanies Dr. Livingstone
to Lake Ngami, 963—Joins the third ex-
pedition, 964—Visit to the Zambesi River,
967.

Oubsa-Noor, Lake, size of, 1003.

Oui-jass, a Sultan of the Kirghiz, 1006.

Oulan-Koum Desert, 1003.

Oural Mountains, 998.

Oxen, Dr. Livingstone's ox, Sinbad, 981—
Short tails sometimes an advantage, 982.

Poisoned arrows of the Bushmen made from
caterpillars, 968—Terrible effects of, 968.

Portuguese in Africa, 983—Visited by Dr.
Livingstone, 983—Purchase Ivory from
his native companions, 984—Favor his
plans for commercial intercourse with in-
terior tribes, 986—Send present to Soko-
letu, 986.

Pungo Andongo, rocks of, 987.

Quango, valley of, description of, 982.

Rain-maker, Dr. Barth taken for, 943.

Sabeck, Kirghiz chief, entertains Mr. Atkin-
son, 1008—Estimate of number of his
cattle, 1009.

Saronsk Mountains, extinct volcanoes of,
1011.

Salt-pan, deceptive appearance of, 963.

Sanshureb River, 969.

Say, town of, 940.

Sebba, capital of the province of Yagha,
941.

Sebitunne, chief of the Makololos, 962, 964
—Invites Dr. Livingstone to visit him, 964

- Friendly reception of him, 966—Dies soon after, 966.
- Sechele, converted by Dr. Livingstone, 962
- Excites his desire to visit Lake Ngami, 962—Accompanies the second expedition, 964.
- Sekoletu welcomes Dr. Livingstone, 969—In favor of polygamy, 970—Accompanies Dr. Livingstone on a journey of exploration, 970—Aids him in an expedition to the Atlantic Ocean, 973—Present sent him by Portuguese, 986—Welcomes Dr. Livingstone's party on their return, 990—Accompanies him on his home journey, 991—Takes final leave of him, 992.
- Seshoke, town of, 974.
- Shinte, great chief of the Balonda tribe, 976
- Description of his town, 977—Formal reception of Dr. Livingstone, 978—Laughable effects of an exhibition of the magic lantern, 979.
- Sidi Alawate, interview with Dr. Barth, 945.
- Slave-traders, 981.
- Soccatoo, Fellatah capital, 940.
- Syanshan mountains, 1004, 1006.
- magnificent scenery of, 1009.
- Tagnou Mountains, 1002.
- Tawareks, encampments of, visited by Dr. Barth, 943—Their agility and strength, 943.
- Tokuk-a-boi, Kalmuck chief, 1001.
- Tete, Portuguese settlement, 995.
- Timbuctoo, approach to, 946.
- Timbuctoo, architecture of, 947—Described by Dr. Barth, 949—Mosques, 950—Population and manufactures, 951—Foreign commerce, 952.
- Tripoli, Dr. Barth's arrival at, on his home journey, 957.
- Tactse fly described, 965—Effects of its bite, 965.
- Tumuli, in the country of the Kirghiz, 1010.
- Vogel (Dr.), meets Dr. Barth, 955—Starts for Yakoba, 957—Proposed route, 958—Reaches Wara, 958—Report of his death, 959—His papers lost, 959.
- Wara, capital of Waday, 958.
- sacred mountain near, 959—Supposed place of Dr. Vogel's death, 959.
- Watershed, great, of Southern Africa, discovered by Dr. Livingstone, 980.
- Weled Ammer Walati meets Dr. Barth, 941
- Accompanies Dr. Barth, 942—Renders an important service, 942—His treachery, 943—Arrives at Timbuctoo, 946.
- Well Salah, superstitions in regard to, 946.
- Zabata-Nor, Lake, 1002.
- Zambesi River discovered by Dr. Livingstone, 966—The extent of its inundations, 966.
- scenery of, 972—Capabilities for navigation, 975.
- Zinder, city of, 938.
- Zouga River, 963.



of, 947—Described
Mosques, 950—Pop-
tures, 951—Foreign

val at, on his home

965—Effects of its

of the Kirghiz, 1010.

. Barth, 955—Starts
proposed route, 958—
—Report of his death,
959.

, 958.

ain near, 959—Sup-
ogel's death, 959.

Southern Africa, dis-
ngstone, 980.

meets Dr. Barth, 941

Barth, 942—Renders

, 942—His treachery,

abuctoo, 946.

us in regard to, 946.

02.

vered by Dr. Living-
tent of its inundations,

972—Capabilities for

No. 25 WEST FOURTH STREET,
Cincinnati, March, 1859. }

Moore, Wilstach, Keys & Co.'s

DESCRIPTIVE CATALOGUE

Of their own Publications.

[M., W., K. & Co. will send any of the Works named in this Catalogue, by Mail, postage pre-paid (to any part of the United States less than three thousand miles distant), on receipt of the advertised price,—excepting only "*Bayard Taylor's Cyclo-
pedia of Modern Travel.*"]

Publications of Moore, Wiltach, Keys & Co.

BAYARD TAYLOR'S CYCLOPEDIA OF MODERN TRAVEL.

A Record of Adventure, Exploration and Discovery for the past fifty years. Comprising Narratives of the most distinguished Travelers since the beginning of this Century. Prepared and arranged by Bayard Taylor. 2 vols. royal 8vo. 1050 pages. Embellished with fine engravings on steel by Buttre, and illustrated by over forty wood engravings by Orr, and thirteen authentic Maps by Schonberg.

A magnificent octavo volume, which for general interest and value, is worthy of the distinguished compiler, and equally worthy of universal patronage. The volume really contains the value of a whole library, reliable as a book of reference, and as interesting as a book of romance.—[Springfield (Mass.) Republican.]

The popular lectures and writings of Bayard Taylor, have awakened in the United States a thirst for information respecting foreign countries and nations. A striking proof of this is given in the fact that a publishing house in Cincinnati, have issued under the auspices of Bayard Taylor, a volume of nearly one thousand pp., devoted exclusively to records of travel. These Reports are perfectly reliable; the matters of fact of each explorer, often in his own language, are condensed into a consecutive narrative, by the most competent living author in the same department.—[N. Y. Independent.]

The reading public owes to Bayard Taylor many a debt for rare and valuable instruction, most agreeably conveyed; but we doubt if he ever performed a more useful service than in compiling this massive, varied and most valuable volume. The entire circle of books of which he has given the spirit and juice, would form a library; and many of them are now almost inaccessible. Mr. Taylor's part has been conscientiously done. It is not merely a work of selection and grouping; much of it is his own statement of the results more voluminously given, and written in a clear and elegant style. We can not but regard it as a very useful as well as entertaining work, well adapted to communicate accurate and comprehensive views of the world, and supplying for families an almost inexhaustible fund of pleasant reading. The large size of the volume, and its elegant execution make it quite imposing; but its value bears a much better proportion to its bulk than large books usually do.—[N. Y. Evangelist.]

No writer of the present age can be found so admirably qualified for such an undertaking. He is one of the greatest travelers of the age, having visited in person almost every country under the sun, and withal a most sprightly, amusing, and fascinating writer, whose publications have been eagerly sought, and read with infinite pleasure by the whole literary world.—[Louisville Journal.]

Such is the full title-page of a magnificent octavo volume of 956 pages, just issued. * * * We said "a magnificent octavo." It is so whether we consider its contents, or the superb style in which the publishers have gotten it up. It is just the book for the family library; all classes will be interested in its perusal.—[Ladies Repository.]

The conception of this work is admirable; and its execution is what might be expected from one of the most accomplished and intelligent travelers of the age. * * * It is remarkable for compactness, condensation, and symmetry; and whoever will take the time to read it through, will possess himself of an amount of information, in respect to the physical, intellectual, and moral condition of almost every portion of the globe, which he can scarcely expect to find elsewhere. The work is illustrated with a large number of maps and engravings, which are executed with great skill and care, and add much to the interest of the narratives to which they are prefixed.—[Puritan Recorder.]

Apart from the confidence inspired by the name of the writer, it needs but a brief explanation of its contents to show that it forms a highly important addition to the family library. Its pages are crowded with interesting information, arranged in a lucid and attractive order, a panoramic view of the chief points of physical geography is placed before the reader; the curious features of ethnological discovery are presented in a rapid survey, and the actual achievements of the most distinguished travelers are clearly and effectively described to the mass of readers.—[N. Y. Tribune.]

From Professor C. C. Felton, of Harvard University.

A scholar, traveler, and writer, having a reputation so deservedly high in this three-fold relation as Bayard Taylor, may be presumed to give his name only to works worthy of it. I shall have no doubt, a priori of the worth of any literary work bearing his name. The present volume I have examined carefully, and have read a considerable part of it; and I have found it prepared and arranged with excellent judgment, and filled with matter of the highest interest and value. Both the plan and execution are in my judgment marked by ability, extensive knowledge, good taste, and good sense.

From Oliver Wendell Holmes, M. D., Author of "The Autocrat of the Breakfast Table," etc.

An experienced traveler like Mr. Bayard Taylor, is as safe a guide in the literature of adventure and discovery, as he would be in a journey. He has done the reading public a great favor in bringing together the most essential and interesting portions of so many narratives within a very moderate compass, and in such a form as to be accessible to multitudes whose libraries must take little room and cost but moderate expenditure. One who has approved himself so well in the field, the forest, and the desert, as Mr. Bayard Taylor, need not fear the work of compilation in the study will interfere with his harder won reputation; and it is safe to say that no man's selection would be accepted so unhesitatingly in America as those of our own favorite travel story-teller.

From Hon. Robert C. Winthrop, of Boston, formerly Speaker of the House of Representatives, U. S.

I have examined it with great interest. It contains a large amount of entertaining and instructive matter, very conveniently and carefully arranged; and I shall value it as a work both for present reading and future reference.

There are two classes of people who ought to have this work, which is as beautiful as it is useful. The first consists of all who travel in order that they may know what other travelers have done, and how they have proceeded; and the second, of all who do not travel, so that they may learn from the experience of others, which is the best way of learning any thing, though it is not apt to make so strong an impression on the mind as that experience which is called "dear bought," because it is our own. Mr. Bayard Taylor is himself a great traveler—the very Ulysses of modern tourists, and Emperor Adrian of living ramblers—and so is qualified to edit, or compile from the works of other travelers. * * * It is but the merest justice to say, that Mr. Taylor has done all that even an unceasingly satisfied reader could expect, to produce a capital book.—[Boston Chronicle.]

Co.

R'S TRAVEL.

years. Comprising
of this Century.
pages. Embellished
wood engravings by

the distinguished com-
pilation of a whole library,
old (Mass.) Republican.
United States a thirst for
given in the fact that a
a volume of nearly one
ly reliable; the matters
ative narrative, by the
struction, most agreeably
ing this massive, varied
spirit and juice, would
part has been conscien-
s own statement of the
not but regard it as a
nd comprehensive views
reading. The large size
ars a much better pro-

dertaking. He is one of
nder the sun, and withal
en eagerly sought, and

ued. * * * We said
style in which the pub-
will be interested in its

pected from one of the
le for compactness, con-
will possess himself of an
condition of almost every
s illustrated with a large
e, and add much to the

brief explanation of its
r. Its pages are crowded
namic view of the chief
thological discovery are
shed travelers are clearly

is three-fold relation as
t shall have no doubt, a
e I have examined care-
arranged with excellent
and execution are in my

akfast Table," etc.

dis-
ure of adventure and
vor in bringing together
moderate compass, and in
m and cost but moderate
he desert, as Mr. Bayard
harder won reputation;
America as those of our

representations, U. S.

retaining and instructive
both for present reading

tiful as it is useful. The
have done, and how they
n from the experience of
so strong an impression
our own. Mr. Bayard
nperor Adrian of living
ers. * * * It is but
y satisfied reader could

Publications of Moore, Wilstach, Keys & Co.

Pulte's Domestic Physician.

Homeopathic Domestic Physician, containing the Treatment of Diseases, with popular explanations of Anatomy, Physiology, Hygiene and Hydropathy; also an abridged Materia Medica. By J. H. PULTE, M. D. Seventh Edition. Revised and greatly enlarged, with illustrations. Twenty-fourth Thousand. One volume royal 12 mo., 700 Pages, half morocco. Price \$2 00.

For home practice this work is recommended as superior to all others, by Dr. Vanderburgh, of New York, Dr. Hull and Dr. Rossman, of Brooklyn, Dr. Granger, of St. Louis, and others of equal celebrity in different portions of the country.

It is very comprehensive and very explicit.—N. Y. Evangelist.

A very lucid and useful hand-book. Its popular language and exclusion of difficult terminology, are decided recommendations. Its success is good evidence of the value of the work.—N. Y. Times.

This appears to be a very successful publication. It has now reached its seventh edition, which is a revised and enlarged one; and we learn from the title page, that twenty-four thousand copies have been published. Various additions have been made to the Homeopathic directions, and the anatomical part of the work has been illustrated with engravings. The work has received the approbation of several of our most eminent practitioners.—Evening Post.

Pulte's Woman's Guide.

Woman's Medical Guide; containing Essays on the Physical, Moral and Educational development of Females, and the Homeopathic Treatment of their Diseases in all periods of Life, together with directions for the remedial use of Water and Gymnastics. By J. H. PULTE, Professor of Obstetrics and Diseases of Women and Children, Emeritus Professor of Clinical Medicine in the Western College of Homeopathy, author of "Homeopathic Domestic Physician," etc. One volume 12mo., muslin. Price, \$1 00.

From Dr. Joslin, one of the most distinguished Homeopathic physicians in the country:

New York, May 26, 1856.

Messrs. Moore, Wilstach, Keys & Co.:

GENTLEMEN:—Woman's Guide, by Dr. Pulte, beautifully and correctly depicts her physical and moral development in the different stages and relations of life, and is replete with excellent directions for the management of herself and offspring. The book is highly creditable to its author, as a scholar, a philosopher and a Christian, and is better calculated than any other, on the same subjects and within the same compass, to remove many false notions and pernicious practices which prevail in society. Respectfully yours,
B. F. JOSLIN.

The style is beautiful and simple, the language appropriate, and the subject, intricate and delicate though it is, made clear to the comprehension, carrying conviction to the reader of the truthfulness of the author's remarks, and the necessity of living according to his advice. We have never met with anything of the kind so complete, and so admirably arranged.—Daily Times.

As a contribution to popular hygiene, it may be ranked among the most judicious and instructive works on the subject that have yet been given to the public. The delicate topics of which it treats are discussed with great propriety of sentiment and language, while the copious information with which it abounds is adapted to lead to the formation of correct and salutary habits.—N. Y. Tribune.

It is a careful and judicious work, worthy of explicit attention, and mothers, whether of the Homeopathic faith or not, will find it to their advantage to acquaint themselves with Dr. Pulte's hints.—Columbian.

Publications of Moore, Wilestach, Keys & Co.

Life of Dr. Chalmers.

Life of THOMAS CHALMERS, D. D., LL. D., edited by the Rev. JAMES C. MOFFAT, M. A., Professor of Latin, and Lecturer on History in the College of New Jersey, Princeton With a Portrait. Second Edition. One volume 12mo., muslin. Price, \$1 25.

Professor Moffat has, in this handsome volume, with great tact and taste, managed to condense the history of the interesting, exciting, and useful career of Dr. Chalmers. It is a book for all to read who would trace not only the blazing track of a great genius, but who would see genius, talent and power all combined for the good of man. Dr. Chalmers combined the great and the useful in a large measure, and was at home both with the distinguished ones of the earth, and with the humblest of his fellow men, and was admired and loved by all.—Cincinnati Gazette.

As an orator, a philosopher, a professor, a philanthropist, a successful parish minister, and a learned divine, Dr. Chalmers stood foremost, not only among the great men of Scotland, but of Christendom.—Commercial.

The memoirs of such a man as Dr. Chalmers should be in the hands of every one. His life is a grand moral lesson—a golden example—a gospel of the 19th century. His splendid talents, his intense application, his strenuous zeal, his glowing faith, and his humble spirit, might each have illuminated a distinct individual, and made him famous;—united, they dazzled, enlightened and warmed the world.—Times.

Chalmers moves before us—Chalmers speaks to us—we pass from chapter to chapter, and page to page with the man we venerate, and catch the inspiration of his genius and his goodness. The author's idea of the work he attempted to make is ours of that which he has accomplished. We like the plan of letting such men as Chalmers speak for themselves in their biographies.—Christian Herald.

Prof. Moffat has succeeded, and we can not but believe his labor will be widely appreciated.—Presbyterian.

There is not much writing about the man. He is rather brought upon the stage to speak and act for himself.—Christian Press.

Thousands will heartily thank Professor Moffat for inviting them to so rare an intellectual feast.—Daily Ancient Metropolis.

Moffat's *Æsthetics*.

An Introduction to the Study of Æsthetics. By JAMES C. MOFFAT, D. D., Professor of Greek in the College of New Jersey, Princeton. One volume 12mo., muslin. Price, \$1.

The title of this book may frighten some worthy people, with whom *Æsthetics* is something mysterious, and, therefore, fearful. But the volume is a pleasantly written and quite attractive treatise upon the beautiful in art—art of all kinds and of every branch. Prof. Moffat seems to us a sound and clever writer. He does not assume to be original, but is systematic and clear, and very readable. The arguments are illustrated by anecdotes and quotations.—Boston Post.

Prof. Moffat has succeeded in making his definitions accurate, and his distinctions clear and tangible. He has brought the aid of strong *common sense* to his task, and while far from making up a volume of dry detail, has presented the subject in such a light as to make it intelligible to all minds of ordinary strength.—Western Christian Advocates.

The work of Dr. Moffat of Princeton, is simply what it proposes to be. In simplicity of arrangement, and in the transparent beauty of its style, it is, we think, far better adapted for a text book, than many another treatise of more pretensions and fame.—Cin. Gazette.

It is a profoundly elaborate treatise, evinces a highly philosophical mind, and can scarcely fail to secure to its author a recognized place among the lights in the department of which he has treated.—Puritan Recorder.

Publications of Moore, Wilstach, Keys & Co.

We recommend all the Boys in the land to get these Books and read them.
Pittsburg Gazette.

Man-of-War Life,

A Boy's Experience in the United States Navy. Sixth Edition. One volume, 16mo., illustrated. Muslin, 75 cents. Muslin, gilt, \$1.

The Merchant Vessel,

A Sailor Boy's Voyages to See the World. Sixth Edition. One volume, 16mo., illustrated. Muslin, 75 cents. Muslin, gilt, \$1.

Whaling and Fishing,

By CHARLES NORDHOFF, Author of "Man-of-War Life," "The Merchant Vessel," etc. One volume, 16mo., illustrated. Muslin, 75 cents.

A writer who is destined to cheer the family circle in many thousand houses on many a winter night. He writes well — admirably; that is, simply and truthfully, and in a very interesting way indeed. He tells the story of the vicissitudes, as well as the pleasures, of the life of the boy or man before the mast, so that no youth who longs to be on the "deep blue sea" may hereafter say that it was out of his power to learn precisely what he would have to encounter on becoming a sailor. The moral of the work is excellent, and its style pithy and descriptive.—Washington Star.

Full of variety, and adapted to awaken the interest of young people in traveling adventure, while it must greatly extend their geographical knowledge.—N. Y. Times.

Very striking and graphic Pictures of the life at sea, evidently authentic and very instructive. Has adventure enough to please, yet truth enough to dissipate the charm of a sailor's life.—N. Y. Evangelist.

There is in them a vast amount of information respecting the commerce of the world.—Presbyterian Witness.

These books are not for mere children, but for lads of some years and discretion. They are remarkably well written.—N. Y. Independent.

One of the best and truest descriptions of seamen and of a seaman's life ever given to the public, and the reader is only left to wonder why one who can write so remarkably well, had ever any thing to do with the rigging. He describes the various countries which he visited so far only, be it remembered, as they fell under his own observation—and this careful restriction and regard to the truth forms one of the principal charms of the works.—Boston Traveller.

Has a fine eye for observation and excellent descriptive powers.—Louisville Courier.

Multitudes of young readers will delight in these books.—Presbyterian Banner.

Since Dana's "Two Years Before the Mast," we do not call to mind any more admirable descriptions of a sailor's life at sea than are contained in these graphic volumes. Herman Melville's nautical narratives are more highly spiced with piquant descriptive scenes, it is true, but for quiet, absorbing and, as far as a landsman can judge, faithful accounts of life on shipboard, commend us to this anonymous author. He somewhat resembles Capt. Basil Hall in his lively pictures of the routine of sea-service, but he is not so rambling nor so flippant as that celebrated "old salt."—N. Y. Tribune.

It (Man-of-War Life) is excellently well written, is characterized by a high moral tone, and impresses the reader with the truthfulness of its sketches, while it has all the fascination of a romance. It is by far the best book for boys that we have ever seen. It both instructs and amuses them. Indeed, there are few men who will commence this book and lay it down unfinished.—Lexington, Ky., Statesman.

Co.

MOFFAT, M. A.,
Jersey, Princeton
125.

and taste, man-
ful career of Dr.
blazing track of
ed for the good of
measure, and was
humblest of his

ful parish min-
ong the great men

nds of every one.
be 19th century.
glowing faith, and
al, and made him
—Times.

chapter to chap-
inspiration of his
work he attempted
o We like the
their biographies.—

t believe his labor

is rather brought

t for inviting then

D. D., Professor of
muslin. Price, \$1.

whom Aesthetics is
s a pleasantly writ-
of all kinds and of
writer. He does not
readable. The argu-

and his distinctions
sense to his task, and
the subject in such a
—Western Christian

es to be. o o o o
of its style, it is, we
treatise of more pre-

phical mind, and can
e lights in the depart-

Renouard's History of Medicine.

A History of Medicine, from its Origin to the Nineteenth Century, with an Appendix, containing a series of Philosophic and Historic Letters on Medicine of the present Century, by Dr. Renouard, Paris. Translated from the French, by C. G. Comegys, Prof. Inst. Med. in Miami Medical College. One volume octavo, muslin, \$3 00. Sheep, Price, \$3 50.

SYNOPTIC TABLE OF CONTENTS:

- I. AGE OF FOUNDATION.
1. PRIMITIVE PERIOD: From the Origin of Society to the Destruction of Troy, 1184, B. C.
 2. SACRED or MYSTIC PERIOD: Ending with the Dispersion of the Pythago reans, 600, B. C.
 3. PHILOSOPHIC PERIOD: Ending at the Foundation of the Alexandrian Library, 320, B. C.
 4. ANATOMICAL PERIOD: Ending at the Death of Galen, A. D., 200.
- II. AGE OF TRANSITION.
5. GREEK PERIOD: Ending at the Burning of the Alexandrian Library, A. D., 640.
 6. ARABIC PERIOD: Ending at the Revival of Letters in Europe, A. D., 1400.
- III. AGE OF RENOVATION.
7. ERUDITE PERIOD: Comprising the Fifteenth and Sixteenth Centuries.
 8. REFORM PERIOD: Comprising the Seventeenth and Eighteenth Centuries.

From Professor Jackson, of the University of Pennsylvania.

PHILADELPHIA, May 1.
My Dear Sir—The work you have translated, "Histoire de la Medecine," by Dr. P. V. Renouard, is a compendious, well-arranged treatise on the subject. Every physician and student of medicine should be acquainted with the history of his science. It is not only interesting, but of advantage to know the views and the interpretations of the same pathological condition investigated at the present day, in past ages. They were handled then with as much force and skill as now, but without the scientific light that assists so powerfully modern research. Notwithstanding great and truthful ideas, our valued facts and observations drawn from a study of nature, are to be found in every era of our science, and in all the systems and doctrines that have prevailed. They are available at this time, and should not be neglected. Truth, like the diamond, does not lose its brightness or its value from being imbedded in a worthless matrix; it requires merely new setting to display its beauty and its worth.
Very truly yours,
SAMUEL JACKSON.

The best history of medicine extant, and one that will find a place in the library of every physician who aims at an acquaintance with the past history of his profession. There are many items in it we should like to offer for the instruction and amusement of our readers.—American Journal of Pharmacy.

From the pages of Dr. Renouard, a very accurate acquaintance may be obtained with the history of medicine—its relation to civilization, its progress compared with other sciences and arts, its more distinguished cultivators, with the several theories and systems proposed by them; and its relationship to the reigning philosophical dogmas of the several periods. His historical narrative is clear and concise—tracing the progress of medicine through its three ages or epochs—that of foundation or origin, that of tradition, and that of renovation.—Am. Journal of Medical Science.

Is a work of profound and curious research, and will fill a place in our English literature which has heretofore been vacant. It presents a compact view of the progress of medicine in the different ages; a lucid exposition of the theories of rival sects; a clear delineation of the changes of different systems; together with the bearings of the whole on the progress of civilization. The work also abounds in amusing and instructive incidents relating to the medical profession. The biographical pictures of the great cultivators of the science, such as Hippocrates, Galen, Avicenna, Haller, Harvey, Jenner, and others, are skillfully drawn. Dr. Comegys deserves the thanks of not only the members of the medical profession, but also of every American scholar, for the fidelity and success with which his task has been performed.—Harper's Magazine.

Co.

icine.

entury, with an
letters on Medi-
Translated from
ni Medical Col-
\$3 50.

struction of Troy,
n of the Pythago
xandrian Library,
200.

Library, A. D. 640.
e. A. D., 1400.

Centuries.
nth Centuries.

nia.
ADELPHIA, May 1.
"Medicine," by Dr. P
et.

with the history of
the views and the
the present day, in
is now, but without
withstanding great
a study of nature,
and doctrines that
neglected. Truth,
ing imbedded in a
auty and its worth.
SUEL JACKSON.

face in the library
story of his profes-
like to offer for the
Pharmacy.

ay be obtained with
ompared with other
veral theories and
philosophical dogmas
oneise—tracing the
undation or origin,
al Science.

ur English literature
gress of medicine in
ar delineation of the
he progress of civili-
nts relating to the
ators of the science,
d others, are skill-
of the medical pro-
with which his task has

Publications of Moore, Wiltach, Keys & Co.

Farr's Ancient History.

Containing the History of the Egyptians, Assyrians, Chaldeans, Moles, Lybians, Carthaginians, Persians, Macedonians, the Seleucids in Syria, and the Parthians. From authentic sources, both Ancient and Modern. By EDWARD FARR. Four vols., 12mo., muslin. Price, \$3. In Sheep, price, \$3 50.

THIS WORK IS MUCH SUPERIOR TO ROLLIN, HAVING BEEN RECENTLY COMPILED FROM THE LATEST AND BEST AUTHORITIES. IT HAS BEEN ORDERED FOR ALL THE TOWNSHIP LIBRARIES OF INDIANA, AND MUST TAKE RANK AS ALTOGETHER THE BEST WORK OF THE KIND FOR FAMILY, SCHOOL AND OTHER LIBRARIES.

As a comprehensive ancient history, adapted to the use of families and schools, it is probably the best extant, and will soon supersede all others. The style is terse and vigorous, and at the same time easy and agreeable. The author has availed himself of all the modern, as well as the ancient sources of information, and carefully separating the chaff from the wheat, gives us only reliable facts.—Marietta Intelligencer.

We consider these volumes valuable, both to the youth and the more advanced student of Ancient History, presenting as they do, in closer connection than we usually find them in works of a general nature, the two sources from which all ancient history is derived—sacred and profane history—and moreover, everywhere giving its due importance to sacred history. The arrangement of the work we think highly favorable to an easy and thorough understanding of the matter. In some particulars, we judge it to be a decided improvement upon other works of the kind.—Western Christian Advocate.

The compend of ancient history, by Mr. Rollin, has kept its seat in the library for the want of a better to supply its place. Its author was distinguished for his industry, and almost equally so for his credulity; and his work is a mixture of fact and fable, nearly as unreliable as it is entertaining. The volumes before us are based upon the history of Rollin, but executed with a view to avoid his most conspicuous fault. An attempt has been made to embody the truth and exclude the error, by a re-appeal to the authorities, and the use of such new resources as have been made available since the other was produced. The author appears to have executed his task faithfully, and the work gives fair promise of usefulness. The style is clear and perspicuous, and it will, we doubt not, be a valuable addition to the library.—Cincinnati Commercial.

Moffat's Southern Africa.

Missionary Labors and Scenes in Southern Africa. By ROBERT MOFFAT, Twenty-three Years an Agent of the London Missionary Society in that country. Twelfth Edition. One volume, 12mo., muslin. Price, \$1 00.

The writer offers these pages to the churches of his country as an humble contribution to their stock of knowledge relative to heathen lands. It contains a faithful record of events which have occurred within the range of his experience and observation, and supplies much that may serve to illustrate the peculiar attributes of African society. It may, he ventures to hope, tend materially to promote the study of the philosophy of missions. It will furnish both the sage and the divine with facts for which, perhaps, they were not prepared, and exhibit phases of humanity which they have not hitherto observed. It will further show that, amid circumstantial differences, there is a radical identity in the operations of human depravity, in Asia, in Polynesia, and in Africa; and that while the Gospel is the only, it is also the uniform remedy for the distress of a world convulsed by sin, and writhing with anguish. It will present striking examples of the complete subjugation of some of the fiercest spirits that ever trod the burning sands of Africa, or shed the blood of her sable offspring. He bequeaths his book as a legacy of grateful affection to the multitudes of all classes, from whom he has received tokens of personal kindness which, while life lasts, he will ever remember; and as an expression of a deep solicitude to promote the diffusion of the Gospel in that land to which his labors have been more particularly directed.

Publications of Moore, Wilstach, Keys & Co.

LEARN THAT TRUTH IS IN ALL, is as omnipresent in human knowledge as the great God of Truth is in his creation. Thus would the student be trained to be a true Eclectic, and seek for the truth in every system, and every theory. He would find it in Allopathic, Homoeopathic, or Hydropathic systems, in bio-chemical, dynamical or histological theories.—*Forbes' British and Foreign Medical Review.*

**NEW MEDICAL BOOKS—NOW READY.
THE AMERICAN DISPENSATORY,**

BY JOHN KING, M. D.,

Professor of Obstetrics, and Diseases of Women and Children, in "The Eclectic College of Medicine," Cincinnati. Author of "American Eclectic Obstetrics," "Women, their Diseases and Treatment," etc.

FIFTH EDITION,

Revised and enlarged from "The American Eclectic Dispensatory."

Although many valuable Dispensatories have been presented to the physicians and pharmacologists of this country and Europe, they have all, except the former editions of this work, been confined to an account of those remedies only which have been recognized and employed by that class of physicians termed "Old School," or "Allopathic;" ignoring all the recent discoveries and improvements of Medical Reformers, and have, therefore, only partially answered the purposes of the large number of progressive medical men found in these countries. In the present Dispensatory, not only are all the known medicinal plants described, as well as their numerous pharmaceutical compounds, alkalies, resinoids, oleo-resins, etc., but likewise, all those poisonous mineral agents so strongly objected to by the new-school physicians; thus forming a volume full and complete in itself. There is no other work, in Europe or America, containing such completeness of information. To render the work practically useful to the physician and pharmacist, and to bring it up to the discoveries and improvements in medical science of the present day, neither pains nor expense have been spared.

NOTICES OF FORMER EDITIONS.

GOOD OLD-SCHOOL AUTHORITY.—The "American Journal of Pharmacy" speaks of the work as follows: "We have taken some pains to give it a careful examination, although pressed for time. The numerous plants which are brought forward as Eclectic Remedies, embrace many of undoubted value. The work embodies a large number of facts of a Therapeutical character, which deserve to be studied. Many of these are capable of being adopted by physicians, especially by country physicians who have the advantage of more easily getting the plants. The attention which is now being given by the Eclectics, in classifying and arranging facts and observations relative to American plants, will certainly be attended with excellent results."

"It would afford us much pleasure to extract a number of the articles from the *Eclectic Dispensatory*, but the length of this article admonishes to stop; yet we can not close without adjoining to Dr. King the merit of giving perspicuity and order to the vast mass of material collected under the name of Botanical Medicine, and for his determination to oppose the wholesale quackery of Eclectic Chemical Institutes. The Eclectics have opened a wide field for the rational therapeutist, and the organic chemist; and we hope that physicians and apothecaries will not be repelled from reaping the harvest which will accrue to observation and experiment."

The examination we have been able to give it, has convinced us that a great deal of labor has been bestowed upon the production, and that it contains an account of a larger number of the medical plants indigenous to our country, than any other work with which we are acquainted.—*Michigan Journal of Medicine.*

Lengthy reports, commendatory of the work, have been made, and several Medical Colleges have adopted it as a text-book. Thousands of copies have been eagerly purchased by parties residing in nearly or quite every State of the Union. At no former time has the demand been so urgent, or the orders on hand half so large as at present. Price \$6.

KING'S AMERICAN ECLECTIC OBSTETRICS,

By JOHN KING, M. D. 1 vol. royal 8vo., sheep, 800 pages. Price \$4.00.

We have carefully examined Dr. King's work, and can honestly recommend it as a safe and judicious guide both to the student and to the practitioner of midwifery. In the treatment of the different subjects it differs but little, if at all, from the standard works on Obstetrics in the English Language, except that the employment of a number of articles of the materia medica, not much in vogue among regular practitioners, is much insisted on in the medical treatment of women in the puerperal state.—*Boston Medical and Surgical Journal (Old School).*

We consider it as the best practical work on Obstetrics extant.—*Middle States Medical Reformer.* Probably no man has done more than Prof. KING to elevate the literary character of the particular class of the medical profession to which he belongs. In this age of light and intelligence, no class of medical men can sustain themselves, and commend their particular systems to an intelligent public, without giving evidence of high attainments in literature as well as science. Prof. King, if he stands not at the head, is certainly not surpassed by any of his colleagues. His work on Obstetrics bears evident marks of the same master-mind shown so conspicuously in his Dispensatory. It is elaborate, thorough in all its details, and so far as we have been able to examine, fully equal to the works of any other class of physicians on that subject.—*Worcester Journal of Medicine.*

KING'S (JOHN, M. D.) CHART OF URINARY DEPOSITS.

EXTRACTS FROM NOTICES.

Table of Urinary Deposits, with their Microscopical and Chemical Tests for Clinical Examinations. By John King, M. D., Cincinnati. This is a very valuable chart, giving, at a glance, the essential facts in regard to the various forms of urinary deposits, their chemical constituents, and their remedies. There are thirteen well-executed drawings, and several tables. This chart can be framed and hung up in the physician's office, and thus easily referred to. We heartily commend it to the attention of our readers.—*New Jersey Medical Reporter.*

The result of much labor and close observation. It will be useful for reference, and particularly

Publications of Moore, Wilstach, Keys & Co.

can not materially affect its popularity. It is used as a text-book in almost all our Colleges, and doubtless will continue to be so used for many years.

After criticizing the work, as naturally becomes a high-priest of the regular practice, the editor of the *American Journal of Pharmacy* says: "On the other hand, there are many things in the volume of Dr. Keast which merit the attention of the regular physician, especially the Therapeutics of Eclecticism. Practice and experience have materially modified the standing and quality of the body called Eclectics; much they have gained by observation, much by hearsay from inferior sources, of the use and quality of many indigenous plants, unknown or but slightly understood by regular practitioners. These they are verifying by trial, and undoubtedly are developing many valuable facts."

Syme's Principles and Practice of Surgery.

By JAMES SYME, Professor of Clinical Surgery, University of Edinburgh, etc., and edited, with illustrations, by ROBERT S. NEWTON, M. D. 1 vol., 8vo., 300 pp. Price \$5.

Renouard's (Dr. P. V., of Paris) History of Medicine.

Translated from the French by CORNELIUS G. COMEYNS, M. D., of the Ohio Medical College. 1 vol., 8vo., 719 pages, sheep. Price \$3.50.

A PRACTICAL TREATISE ON THE DISEASES OF WOMEN.

By JOHN M. SCUDDER, M. D. 1 vol., 8vo., Philadelphia sheep. Price \$3.50.

A TREATISE ON THE PRINCIPLES AND PRACTICE OF PHYSIO-MEDICAL SURGERY.

For the use of students and practitioners. By Wm. H. Cook, M. D., Professor of Therapeutics and Materia Medica in the Physio-Medical College of Ohio; late Professor of Surgery in the same Institution. Illustrated by numerous engravings. 1 vol., 8vo., Philadelphia sheep. 714 pages. Price \$4.50.

THEORY AND PRACTICE OF MEDICINE.

A Synopsis of Lectures on Medical Science. Embracing the Principles of Medicine, or Physiology, Pathology and Therapeutics, as discovered in Nature; and the Practice according to those Principles, as applied by Art. By ALVA CURTIS, A. M., M. D., Author of "Lectures on Obstetrics," and of "Criticism on all the Different Systems of Medicine in vogue," and for twenty years Editor of the "Physio-Medical Recorder." 1 vol., 8 vo., cloth. Price \$3.00.

We have arranged to publish the following works of that

**PATRIARCH AMONG REFORMERS,
WOOSTER BEACH, M. D.**

I. THE AMERICAN PRACTICE OF MEDICINE. 3 vols., royal 8vo., nearly 300 engravings, colored to life. Price \$20. Now ready.

II. THE AMERICAN PRACTICE, CONDENSED. 1 vol., 8vo., 800 pages. Ready.

III. BEACH'S FAMILY PHYSICIAN, or HOME GUIDE. (Sold to Subscribers only.) 1 vol., 8vo. 1,000 pages.

IV. THEORY AND PRACTICE OF MEDICINE, on Reform, or Eclectic Principles. 1 vol., 8vo., 720 pages.

V. THEORY AND PRACTICE OF SURGERY, on Reform, or Eclectic Principles. 1 vol., 8 vo., 585 pages.

VI. MATERIA MEDICA, THERAPEUTICS AND PHARMACY. 1 vol., 8vo., 600 pages.

VII. AN IMPROVED SYSTEM OF MIDWIFERY. 1 vol., large quarto. New and revised edition. Just published.

MOORE, WILSTACH, KEYS & CO, Publishers.

CINCINNATI, Sept., 1852.

No.

as the great God of
and seek for the truth
or Hydropathic sys-
tem Medical Review.

**ADY.
ATORY,**

College of Medicine,"
and Treatment," etc.

ensatory."

and pharmacologists of
been confined to an ac-
cess of physicians termed
elements of Medical Re-
number of progressive
all the known medi-
alkalies, resinoids, oleo-
d to by the new-school
er work, in Europe or
tactically useful to the
ents in medical science

TS.

of the work as follows:
for time.
sacred many of undoubted
tical character, which
s, especially by country
The attention
and observations relative

the *Eclectic Dispensary*,
adjudging to Dr. King
under the name of Bo-
ry of Eclectic Chemical
t, and the organic chem-
apping the harvest which

at deal of labor has been
ber of the medical plants
ated.—*Michigan Journal*

l Medical Colleges have
ed by parties residing in
id been so urgent, or the

ETRICS,

es. Price \$4.00.

It is as a safe and judicious
ment of the different sub-
English Language, except
h in vogue among regular
e purperal state.—*Boston*

tes *Medical Reformer*.

character of the particular
and intelligence, no class of
to an intelligent public,
Prof. King, if he stands
rk on Obstetrics bears evi-
ensatory. It is elaborate,
y equal to the works of any

RY DEPOSITS.

Clinical Examinations. By
lence, the essential facts in
and their remedies. Those
framed and hung up in the
he attention of our readers.

reference, and particularly

Publications of Moore, Wiltach, Keys & Co.

valuable to the student. Dr. King, of Cincinnati, is the author, and deserves much credit for this valuable contribution to Medical Science.—*Iowa Medical Journal.*

TABLE OF URINARY DEPOSITS, ETC.—This is a valuable aid to any one who makes examinations of urinary deposits, containing thirteen figures of these deposits, as they appear under the microscope.—*New Hampshire Journal of Medicine.*

A very useful and valuable chart. We congratulate Dr. King on the manner in which he has condensed this difficult but important subject, so as to present a bird's-eye and clear view of the matter, in the form of a chart.—*Philadelphia Medical and Surgical Journal.*

Carefully arranged, and will prove useful as a reference to the practitioner, to refresh his memory, and materially aid the student in getting a clear idea of the subject.—*American Journal of Pharmacy, Philadelphia.*

Will be sent by mail (post-paid) for FIFTY CENTS, or may be had through booksellers.

AMERICAN ECLECTIC PRACTICE OF MEDICINE.

By I. G. JONES, M. D. Late Professor of Theory and Practice of Medicine, in the Eclectic Medical Institute, Cincinnati. New edition; extended and revised, at request of the author, by Wm. Sizemore, M. D., Professor of Medical Practice and Pathology, in the Eclectic College of Medicine, Cincinnati. Complete in two volumes, octavo, 1,500 pages. Price \$7.

EXTRACTS FROM NOTICES.

The views maintained by the authors are stated with clearness and precision: the style is flowing and lively, and the whole book is remarkably free from the verbiage which is such a general feature of medical treatises.—*N. Y. Tribune.*

It was the earnest advice of Dr. Rush to his students, to thoroughly investigate the indigenous medicines of this country; and one great merit of this work is that it contains descriptions of many recent remedial agents that are not contained in any other work on practice. It is ably and lucidly written, and will highly interest and instruct all who read it.—*Galesburg Journal.*

Coming from the source it does, and with the able revisions and important additions which it has received, this edition of the work can not fail to be regarded as a complete and reliable text-book of practical medicine, suited to the wants and convenience of such students and practitioners as would desire to gain the most useful and important information which the profession possesses at the present day, together with a correct knowledge of the remedies and treatment, in the most desirable form, peculiar to what is known as the Eclectic System of Medicine. It is not a book of recipes, adapted to routine practice, but is filled with practical directions and suggestions, intended for the intelligent practitioner, accompanied by rational explanations of, and reasons for every procedure recommended in the treatment of diseases; and every important paragraph in the work is rendered at once accessible by means of a complete table of contents, and a very copious index. The spirit of the work is liberal and eclectic in the true sense of those terms, so that no medical man, of any school, can take offense at its contents; while all, it is believed, will derive much practical advantage from a careful perusal of its pages.—*Western Christian Advocate.*

We have received from the publishers a copy of the above work, and after giving it such a cursory examination as the pressure of other engagements would permit, are prepared to say that for Eclectics it is, perhaps, the best work published. The language is clear, and generally forcible, and being in the form of Lectures to his class, it has the merit of freedom and liveliness of style, so necessary in such works to keep up the interest of the reader. In regard to the practical part, it is due to the varied research of the authors to say, that it contains many excellent suggestions, as well as prescriptions.—*Southern Medical Reformer.*

Four years ago, at the earnest request of his former colleagues and friends, the late Prof. I. G. Jones had published the work of which we are now presented with a revised and extended edition; and since then his practice has been received by the liberal portion of the profession, throughout the country, as the practice, and far superior to all others.

But as a new edition was called for, it has been very carefully revised at the request of the author, now deceased, by his former associate, and is presented to the profession with many additions, corrections of errors and oversights.

The various additions, and *Notes on Treatment*, as well as the new articles by the present editor, have been so arranged as to preserve the former scope and design of the work; and while it is rendered more perfect and complete, the original arrangement of the author is not interfered with. The mechanical execution of the book is admirable.—*College Journal, 1858.*

Elements of Materia Medica and Therapeutics.

Adapted to the American Eclectic, or Reformed Practice, with numerous Illustrations. By J. KOST, M. D., Professor of Materia Medica, Therapeutics and Botany, in the American Medical College, Cincinnati, etc., etc. One volume, octavo, 829 pages. Price \$4.50.

EXTRACTS FROM NOTICES.

Decidedly the best work ever presented to those concerned in the Reform system of Practice. We therefore recommend it to the consideration of every practitioner, being well convinced that he must arise from its perusal a more thorough and skillful physician. Without this work, no physician's library is complete.

CALVIN NEWTON, J. M. COMBS, J. JACKSON, Committee appointed by the Trustees of the Worcester (Mass.) Medical Institution, to report on the merits of the above-named work.

Dr. Kost possesses pre-eminent qualifications for the preparation of such a work. The plan on which it is got up is in some respects original. It certainly ought to be in the hands of every physician.—*Newton's Med. and Surg. Journal.*

FROM PROF. JOH. D. FRIEND, M. D.

Metropolitan Medical College, New York City, 29th Jan., 1858.

DEAR SIR:—Please accept my thanks for an early copy of the Revised Edition of your work on *Materia Medica*. Medical men of all classes are under great obligations to you, for the care, fidelity, and discrimination which are exhibited upon almost every page in the book. Your work has so long been regarded as a standard in the department of Medicine to which it is devoted, that criticism, good or ill,

Co.

much credit for this
akes examinations of
ler the microscope.—
in which he has con-
vlew of the matter, in
fresh his memory, and
Journal of Pharmacy,
sellers.

EDICINE.
the Eclectic Medical
author, by Wm. Sus-
lege of Medicine, Cin-
the style is flowing and
h a general feature of
to the indigenous medi-
criptions of many recent
ly and lucidly written,
additions which it has
table text-book of prac-
tioners as would desire to
at the present day, to-
drable form, peculiar to
adapted to routine prac-
intelligent practitioner,
ommented in the treat-
e accessible by means of
is liberal and eclectic in
offense at its contents;
usual of its pages.—West-
giving it such a currency
o say that for Eclectics it
reliable, and being in the
yle, so necessary in such
actical part, it is due to
ggestions, as well as pre-
the late Prof. I. G. Jones
d edition; and since then
hout the country, as the
he request of the author,
many additions, correc-
the present editor, have
while it is rendered more
d with. The mechanical

Therapeutics.
strations. By J. Koser, M.
Medical College, Cin-
system of Practice. We
d convinced that he meets
his work, no physician's
y the Trustees of the Wor-
e above-named work.
work. The plan on which
ands of every physician.—
City, 29th Jan., 1858.
dition of your work on Ma-
s, for the care, fidelity, and
our work has so long been
that criticism, good or ill,

Publications of Moore, Wiltach, Keys & Co.

Will prove more generally useful than any other work yet published on
Geology."

The Course of Creation.

By JOHN ANDERSON, D. D., of Newburgh, Scotland. With a Glossary of
Scientific Terms. One volume 12mo., illustrated, muslin. Price, \$1 25.

It is thoroughly scientific, but popular in its style, and exceedingly entertaining.—
Zion's Herald.

The author's style is clear and engaging, and his graphic descriptions seem to con-
vey the reader at once into the fields of geological research to observe for himself.—
Ohio Observer.

Another valuable contribution to the cause of truth and sound science. Its value
is very much enhanced by the Glossary of Scientific Terms appended to it by the pub-
lishers; for scarcely any one of the sciences has a larger number of terms with which
ordinary readers are unacquainted than geology.—Presbyterian of the West.

We commend the volume to all who would be instructed in the wonderful works of
God. Chapters such as that on the "Economic History of Coal," and those on "Organic
Life" and "Physical and Moral Progression," have a special value for the student of
Divine Providence.—N. Y. Independent.

Dr. Anderson is evidently well skilled in geology, and writes with a freedom and
vividly rivaled by no writer on the subject—except Hugh Miller.—Methodist Quar-
terly Review.

This book is intended for general readers—and such readers will be entertained by
it—but it is none the less thorough, and enters boldly into geological inquiry.—Boston
Advertiser.

One of the most interesting and valuable works on Geology that we have ever met
with. The author is a thoroughly scientific man; but his scientific accuracy does not
prevent the work from being understood by unscientific readers; it is a very readable
book.—Louisville Journal.

Poetry of the Vegetable World.

A popular Exposition of the Science of Botany, and its relations to Man. By M. J.
SCHLEIDEN, M. D., Professor of Botany in the University of Jena. Illustrated with En-
gravings. Second American, from the London Edition of Hensley. Edited by ALPHONSO
WOOD, M. A., author of "The Class Book of Botany," etc. One volume, 12mo., muslin.
Price, \$1 25.

Schleiden is one of the most distinguished and most accomplished botanists of the
present day. The exhaustless beauties of the vegetable world, its spiritual aspect,
lies beyond the reach of mere science. Herein lies the charm of this work. While its
author has everywhere exhibited the principles of science in the most attractive and
perspicuous style, he has also contrived to blend with them the imaginative and the
spiritual, and thus to render his work the exponent of the relations of the plant to
the human soul. He has shown that the multiform vegetables of the material
world are all ministering spirits. In a word, science and poetry are beautifully and
harmoniously blended together.—Merchant's Magazine.

The originality of its views, the poetic charm of its illustrations, and the large
amount of positive instruction which it imparts, will recommend it to every reader
of taste and intelligence.—Harper's Magazine.

Prof. Schleiden's capital treatise on the teachings of the vegetable world would pass
muster with the most rigid utilitarian that ever existed. It is as
interesting as the most attractive romance, as beautiful as nature, and as pleasing as
the finest poem.—Boston Atlas.

It is an interesting, amusing and instructive work.—Philadelphia Pennsylvanian.

Publications of Moore, Wilstach, Keys & Co.

Scenes and Legends

Of the North of Scotland. By HUGH MILLER, author of "Footprints of the Creator." One volume, 12mo., muslin. Price, \$1

A delightful book by one of the most delightful of living authors.—N. Y. Courier and Enquirer.

In this book, Hugh Miller appears as the simple dramatist, reproducing home stories and legends in their native costume, and in full life. The volume is rich in entertainment for all lovers of the genuine Scotch character.—N. Y. Independent.

Fascinating portraits of quaint original characters, and charming tales of the old faded superstitions of Scotland, make up the "Scenes and Legends." Purity of diction and thoughtful earnestness, with a vein of easy, half-concealed humor pervading it, are the characteristics of the author's style. Added to these, in the present volume, are frequent touches of the most elegantly-wrought fancy; passages of sorrowful tenderness that change the opening smile into a tear, and exalted sentiment that brings reflection to the heart.—Citizen.

This is a book which will be read by those who have read the other works of this distinguished author. His beautiful style, his powers of description, his pathos, his quiet humor and manly good sense, would give interest to any subject. There is no part of the book that is not interesting.—Louisville Journal.

This is one of the most unique and original books that has been written for many years, uniting in a singularly happy manner all the charms of fiction to the more substantial and enduring graces of truth. The author is a capital story teller, pre-facing what he has to say with no learned circumlocutions. We can not now call to mind any other style that so admirably combines every requisite for this kind of writing, with the exception of that of his more illustrious countryman, Scott, as the one Hugh Miller possesses.—Columbian.

The contents of the book will be as instructive and entertaining, as the exterior is elegant and attractive. Hugh Miller writes like a living man, who has eyes, and ears, and intellect, and a heart of his own, and not like a galvanized skeleton, who inflicts his dull repetitions of what other men have seen and felt in stately stupidity upon their unfortunate readers. His observation is keen, and his powers of description unrivaled. His style is like a mountain-stream, that flows on in beauty and freshness, imparting enlivening influences all around. His reflections, when he indulges in them, are just and impressive.—Christian Herald.

Tales so romantic, yet so natural, and told in a vein of unaffected simplicity and graphic delineation, rivaling Hogg and Scott, of the same land, will command a vast number of admiring readers.—N. Y. Christ. Intel.

The interest of its facts far exceeds romance.—N. Y. Evan.

This book is worthy of a place by the side of the world-renowned volumes which have already proceeded from the same pen.—Phil. Chronicle.

Roving Adventures.

By GEORGE BORROW, author of "The Gipsies in Spain," "The Bible in Spain," etc. With fine Portrait. One volume, octavo, muslin. Price, \$1 50.

He colors like Rembrandt, and draws like Spagnoletti.—Edinburgh Review.

The pictures are so new that those best acquainted with England will find it hard to recognize the land they may have traveled over.—National Intel.

We could hardly sleep at night for thinking of it.—Blackwood.

Co.
Footprints of
c, \$1
rs.—N. Y. Courier
roducing home sto-
ne is rich in enter-
pendent.
g tales of the old
s." Purity of dic-
l humor pervading
n the present vol-
-ag s of sorrow-
ed sentiment that
ther works of this
ion, his pathos, his
ect. ° ° There
n written for many
fiction to the more
al story teller,
can not now call to
for this kind of writ-
in, Scott, as the one
g, as the exterior is
, who has eyes, and
nized skeleton, who
in stately stupidity
s powers of descrip-
s on in beauty and
reflections, when he
ected simplicity and
will command a vast
owned volumes which
," "The Bible in
muslin. Price, \$1 50.
burgh Review.
land will find it hard
intel.
ed.

Publications of Moore, Wilstach, Keys & Co.

Three Great Temptations.

The Three Great Temptations of Young Men. With several Lectures addressed to Business and Professional Men. By REV. SAMUEL W. FISHER, D. D. Fifth Edition. One volume 12mo., muslin. Price, \$1.

CONTENTS.

THE SIRENS,	THE SLAYER OF THE STRONG,
THE WINE-CUP,	THE PLAY-HOUSE,
THE CARD-TABLE,	THE WEB OF VICE,
THE CHRISTIAN LAWYER,	THE PATH OF INFIDELITY,
THE MOSAIC LAW OF USURY,	COMMERCIAL MORALITY.

A work of unusual attraction. We know not where we have seen these subjects so impressively, yet so properly and guardedly examined. Far above common-place specimens. They expose dangers of terrible imminence, and urge persuasions of incomparable importance, in a way that offends not the taste, yet reaches the heart and engages the thoughts.—N. Y. Evangelist.

Able and often eloquent. ° ° ° A work which may well be put into the hands of youth just entering upon life.—N. Y. Observer.

We shall put the book by upon one of the choice shelves of our private library.—Boston Congregationalist.

The author's style is not less clear and forcible than ornate and eloquent.—Detroit Herald.

Characterized by earnestness, eloquence and adaptation to the end had in view.—N. Y. Recorder.

Paints in vigorous language the horrible consequences of vice.—Boston Post.
We would that every young man in the land could be persuaded to read it carefully.—Louisville Recorder.

The Christian Profession.

A series of Letters to a Friend, on the Nature, Duties, Necessity, Trials and Supports of the Christian Profession. By JOSEPH CLAYBAUGH, D. D. Second Edition. One volume 16mo., Muslin. Price, 75 cents.

Extract from a letter to the Publishers, from Rev Dr. Allen, of Lane Theological Seminary:

Messrs. Moore, Wilstach, Keys & Co.:

Dr. Claybaugh's new work on the Christian Profession I have examined with considerable care and much gratification. The practical truths connected with the subject are presented with so much clearness and force that the book can not fail, it seems to me, to be of great value to all Christians, and especially to those who are just entering upon a religious life. The sentiments are so Catholic that all Christians will be able to use the work with like satisfaction and profit.

Yours truly,

D. H. ALLEN.

All that is necessary to instruct the inquiring in respect to the nature, duties, importance and necessity, peculiar trials, supports and consolations of the Christian profession, is here presented in a series of fourteen letters, written in an easy, familiar and graceful style, and with an unction suitable to the subject. It is just such a book as pastors need to put into the hands of youth of their congregations. It should be in every family and every congregational library in our church.—The Preacher and Presbyterian.

The book is most appropriate to the times. ° ° ° We should be glad to see these letters extensively circulated.—Christian Herald.

Publications of Moore, Wiltach, Keys & Co.

Teste on Diseases of Children.

A Homeopathic Treatise on the Diseases of Children. By ALL. TESTE, Doctor in Medicine, Member of several learned Societies, etc. Translated from the French, by EMMA H. COZE, Second Edition. Revised By J. H. PULTE, M. D. One vol., 12mo., muslin. Price, \$1 25.

It is the only treatise on the Homeopathic plan expressly devoted to the diseases of children. With great completeness of detail, it describes the principal diseases to which that age is subject, together with their appropriate remedies. As a manual of domestic practice, it must be welcome to the receivers of Hahnemann's system.—N. Y. Tribune.

This is an excellent work. It is distinguished by clearness of statement, practicalness of direction, and by originality of observation. What renders it particularly valuable to families is the simplicity of its directions, obviating the doubt and uncertainty which attend the attempt to administer medicines according to most Homeopathic works.—Cleveland Leader.

Croserio's Obstetrics.

A Homeopathic Manual of Obstetrics: or a Treatise on the Art of Midwifery may derive from Homeopathy. By DR. C. CROSERIO, M. D. de l'Embassade de Sardaigne, Membre de La Société Hahnemannienne de Paris, etc., etc. Translated from the French, by M. COZE, M. D. Second Edition. One volume, 12mo., muslin. Price, 75 cents.

It is only necessary to have it known that Dr. Croserio is the author of the above work, to induce each practitioner of our school to seek a copy of it without delay. It is one of those few practical works which will aid practitioners at the bedside of the sick.

The volume may seem insignificant, because it contains only 153 pages; but our readers can hardly conceive of the amount of information which the author has contrived, in the clearest manner, to express in a few words. The practice is purely Homeopathic.—Am. Jour. of Hom.

Shows what Homeopathy has done, and can do. We take pleasure in recommending it to Homeopaths.—North West. Journal of Hom.

Having read the original, we can pronounce this a good translation. We think it a very excellent work; such a book as has long been needed in Homeopathic practice, one manifesting in itself a great deal of close and patient study and research.—Philadelphia Journal of Hom.

Rapou on Fever.

Typhoid Fever and its Homeopathic Treatment. By AVO. RAPOU, Docteur en Médecine de Faculté de Paris. Translated by M. COZE, M. D. One volume, 12mo., muslin. Price, 50 cents.

The original work, of which this volume is a translation, is understood by the students of Homeopathy to be one of the most valuable treatises on the subject that exists in medical literature. It contains many original and striking views on the characteristics of fever in general, while its practical directions in regard to the specific disease of which it treats, can not fail to suggest important hints to the intelligent practitioner of every school. An interesting feature of this volume is a spirited discussion of the use of blood-letting, and of water in the cure of typhoid fever. The translation, which is from the pen of an eminent Homeopathic physician in Pittsburg, presents the views of the writer in neat and compact English. In the prevailing uncertainty of the profession with regard to the fatal scourge, to which this work is devoted, its lucid reasonings, must prove acceptable to a wide circle of medical readers.—New York Tribune.

& Co.

Children.

Doctor in Medicine,
h, by EMMA H. COTE,
muslin. Price, \$1 25.

ed to the diseases of
principal diseases to
es. As a manual of
ain's system.—N. Y

shed by clearness of
evation. What res
directions, obviati
er medicines accord

Art of Midwifery may
Assasade De Sardaigne,
ted from the French, by
ice, 75 cents.

author of the above
it without delay. It
at the bedside of the
it contains only 153
formation which the
v words.

o o We take
ournal of Hom. o o
ation. o o
en needed in Homeo-
nd patient study and

Docteur en Medecine De
, 12mo., muslin. Price,

nderstood by the stu-
s on the subject that
striking views on the
in regard to the spe-
t hints to the intelli-
is volume is a spirited
cure of typhoid fever.
eopathic physician in
English. In the pre-
scourge, to which this
a wide circle of med-

W

A B

A S

By

A
man,
and
as th
long
learn
the v

For
adve

Ye
instr
to di

Th
work

The
O

to th
ably
desc
fell
form

H
M

S
rab
Her

tive
fait
son
vic

Tri
I

ton
the
see
me

We recommend all the Boys in the land to get these Books and read them.
Pittsburg Gazette.

Man-of-War Life,

A Boy's Experience in the United States Navy. Sixth Edition. One volume, 16mo., illustrated. Muslin, 75 cents. Muslin, gilt, \$1.

The Merchant Vessel,

A Sailor Boy's Voyages to See the World. Sixth Edition. One volume, 16mo., illustrated. Muslin, 75 cents. Muslin, gilt, \$1.

Ready in September. Whaling and Fishing,

By CHARLES NORDHOFF, Author of "Man-of-War Life," "The Merchant Vessel," etc. One volume, 16mo., illustrated. Muslin, 75 cents.

A writer who is destined to cheer the family circle in many thousand houses on many a winter night. He writes well — admirably; that is, simply and truthfully, and in a very interesting way indeed. He tells the story of the vicissitudes, as well as the pleasures, of the life of the boy or man before the mast, so that no youth who longs to be on the "deep blue sea" may hereafter say that it was out of his power to learn precisely what he would have to encounter on becoming a sailor. The moral of the work is excellent, and its style pithy and descriptive.—Washington Star.

Full of variety, and adapted to awaken the interest of young people in traveling adventure, while it must greatly extend their geographical knowledge.—N. Y. Times.

Very striking and graphic Pictures of the life at sea, evidently authentic and very instructive. Has adventure enough to please, yet truth enough to dissipate the charm of a sailor's life.—N. Y. Evangelist.

There is in them a vast amount of information respecting the commerce of the world.—Presbyterian Witness.

These books are not for mere children, but for lads of some years and discretion. They are remarkably well written.—N. Y. Independent.

One of the best and truest descriptions of seamen and of a seaman's life ever given to the public, and the reader is only left to wonder why one who can write so remarkably well, had ever any thing to do with the rigging. He describes the various countries which he visited so far only, be it remembered, as they fell under his own observation—and this careful restriction and regard to the truth forms one of the principal charms of the works.—Boston Traveller.

Has a fine eye for observation and excellent descriptive powers.—Louisville Courier.
Multitudes of young readers will delight in these books.—Presbyterian Banner.

Since Dana's "Two Years Before the Mast," we do not call to mind any more admirable descriptions of a sailor's life at sea than are contained in these graphic volumes. Herman Melville's nautical narratives are more highly spiced with piquant descriptive scenes, it is true, but for quiet, absorbing and, as far as a landsman can judge, faithful accounts of life on shipboard, commend us to this anonymous author. He somewhat resembles Capt. Basil Hall in his lively pictures of the routine of sea service, but he is not so rambling nor so flippant as that celebrated "old salt."—N. Y. Tribune.

It (Man-of-War Life) is excellently well written, is characterized by a high moral tone, and impresses the reader with the truthfulness of its sketches, while it has all the fascination of a romance. It is by far the best book for boys that we have ever seen. It both instructs and amuses them. Indeed, there are few men who will commence this book and lay it down unfinished.—Lexington, Ky., Statesman.

MOORE, WILSTACH, KEYS & Co., *Publishers,*
25 West Fourth Street, Cincinnati.

The Russian Empire.

Its Resources, Government and Policy. By "A Looker-on" from America. One volume, 12mo., muslin. Price, \$1 25.

Presents many new and important facts, touching the internal resources of Russia, the immense extent of her territory, the growth and character of her population, the development and strength of her government, army and navy, her civilization, religion and social life.—Vincennes Gazette.

In it we are permitted for the first time to view the realms and subjects of the Czar through the medium of thoroughly AMERICAN SPECTACLES.—Washington Daily Organ.

Russia has the power, vigor and vitality in herself to complete her plans, and work out her own will, be that for good or evil. All her schemes of policy, whether they relate to the training of armies, the encouragement of agriculture and the arts, or education, are conceived on a scale of magnificence in proportion to the vastness of the Empire itself.—Xenia News.

Russia, in the opinion of the author, possesses a vigorous national life embodied in a true organic unity, and is destined to exert an incalculable influence on the progress of modern civilization. His volume presents an abundance of impressive considerations in support of this opinion, derived mainly from a careful examination of Russian resources, but sustained by a variety of profound theoretical deductions. It is written from ample knowledge, and with signal ability, and at the present juncture of European politics, challenges the attention of thinking minds in both hemispheres.—Harpers' Magazine.

A Great Book by Great Authors.

The Teachers' Miscellany.

A selection of Articles from the Proceedings of the College of Professional Teachers. By J. L. CAMPBELL, and A. M. HADLEY, of Wabash College. One volume, 12mo., muslin. Price, \$1 25.

CONTENTS.

- I. Introductory. Albert Picket, LL. D.
- II. Domestic education. T. J. Biggs, D. D.
- III. Primary Education. George R. Hand.
- IV. Duties of Teachers and Parents. Wm. H. McGuffey, LL. D.
- V. Discipline. Daniel Drake, M. D.
- VI. Moral Influence of Rewards. S. W. Lynd, D. D.
- VII. Physical Education. Wm. Wood, M. D.
- VIII. The Bible as a means of Moral and Intellectual Improvement. C. E. Stowe, D. D.
- IX. The Formation of Society; the propriety of including the elementary principles of our Government in popular instruction. By Hon. Judge McLean.
- X. Classification of Human knowledge. Roswell Park, A. M.
- XI. Importance of Moral Education keeping pace with the progress of the Mechanic Arts. Rev. Benjamin Huntoon.
- XII. The Classics. Prof. T. M. Post.
- XIII. American Education. T. S. Grimke, LL. D.
- XIV. Mathematics. E. D. Mansfield, LL. D.
- XV. Modern Languages. J. F. Meline.
- XVI. The English Language and Literature. By B. P. Aydelott, D. D.

It consists of Elaborate essays on miscellaneous topics connected with education, from the pens of some of the most distinguished men in the country. The essays embrace a great variety of topics, covering nearly the whole field of education. We need scarcely vouch for the real sterling value of this volume.—Michigan Journal of Education.

It presents articles upon various themes of interest, by some of the truest thinkers in the West. Such a compilation as the Miscellany presents has been much desired. Every teacher should be provided with a copy for instruction and entertainment.—Hamilton Intelligencer.

MOORE, WILSTACH, KEYS & CO., Publishers,
25 West Fourth Street, Cincinnati.

Farr's Ancient History.

Containing the History of the Egyptians, Assyrians, Chaldeans, Medes, Lydians, Carthaginians, Persians, Macedonians, the Seleucids in Syria, and the Parthians. From authentic sources, both Ancient and Modern. By EDWARD FARR. Four vols., 12mo., muslin. Price, \$3. In Sheep, price, \$3 50.

THIS WORK IS MUCH SUPERIOR TO ROLLIN, HAVING BEEN RECENTLY COMPILED FROM THE LATEST AND BEST AUTHORITIES. IT HAS BEEN ORDERED FOR ALL THE TOWNSHIP LIBRARIES OF INDIANA, AND MUST TAKE RANK AS ALTOGETHER THE BEST WORK OF THE KIND FOR FAMILY, SCHOOL AND OTHER LIBRARIES.

As a comprehensive ancient history, adapted to the use of families and schools, it is probably the best extant, and will soon supersede all others. The style is terse and vigorous, and at the same time easy and agreeable. The author has availed himself of all the modern, as well as the ancient sources of information, and carefully separating the chaff from the wheat, gives us only reliable facts.—*Marietta Intelligencer.*

We consider these volumes valuable, both to the youth and the more advanced student of Ancient History, presenting as they do, in closer connection than we usually find them in works of a general nature, the two sources from which all ancient history is derived—sacred and profane history—and moreover, everywhere giving its due importance to sacred history. The arrangement of the work we think highly favorable to an easy and thorough understanding of the matter. In some particulars, we judge it to be a decided improvement upon other works of the kind.—*Western Christian Advocate.*

The compend of ancient history, by Mr. Rollin, has kept its seat in the library for the want of a better to supply its place. Its author was distinguished for his industry, and almost equally so for his credulity; and his work is a mixture of fact and fable, nearly as unreliable as it is entertaining. The volumes before us are based upon the history of Rollin, but executed with a view to avoid his most conspicuous fault. An attempt has been made to embody the truth and exclude the error, by a re-appeal to the authorities, and the use of such new resources as have been made available since the other was produced. The author appears to have executed his task faithfully, and the work gives fair promise of usefulness. The style is clear and perspicuous, and it will, we doubt not, be a valuable addition to the library.—*Cincinnati Commercial.*

Moffat's Southern Africa.

Missionary Labors and Scenes in Southern Africa. By ROBERT MOFFAT, Twenty-three Years an Agent of the London Missionary Society in that country. Twelfth Edition. One volume, 12mo., muslin. Price, \$1 00.

The writer offers these pages to the churches of his country as an humble contribution to their stock of knowledge relative to heathen lands. It contains a faithful record of events which have occurred within the range of his experience and observation, and supplies much that may serve to illustrate the peculiar attributes of African society. It may, he ventures to hope, tend materially to promote the study of the philosophy of missions. It will furnish both the sage and the divine with facts for which, perhaps, they were not prepared, and exhibit phases of humanity which they have not hitherto observed. It will further show that, amid circumstantial differences, there is a radical identity in the operations of human depravity, in Asia, in Polynesia, and in Africa; and that while the Gospel is the only, it is also the uniform remedy for the distress of a world convulsed by sin, and writhing with anguish. It will present striking examples of the complete subjugation of some of the fiercest spirits that ever trod the burning sands of Africa, or shed the blood of her sable offspring. He bequeaths his book as a legacy of grateful affection to the multitudes of all classes, from whom he has received tokens of personal kindness which, while life lasts, he will ever remember; and as an expression of a deep solicitude to promote the diffusion of the Gospel in that land to which his labors have been more particularly directed.

MOORE, WILSTACH, KEYS & CO., *Publishers,*
25 West Fourth Street, Cincinnati.

Practical Landscape Gardening.

By G. M. Kern. Containing 22 Illustrations and Plans for laying out Grounds, with full directions for Planting Shade Trees, Shrubbery and Flowers. Third Edition. One vol. 12mo., Muslin. Price \$1 50.

Mr. Kern has produced the right book at the right moment.—Putnam's Magazine.

His suggestions are in an eminent degree valuable, and his opinions, (which are expressed in clear, concise and lucid diction), easily interpreted by even the most limited conception, fairly assert his claim to a station in the foremost rank of rural improvers.—N. Y. Horticulturist.

It abounds in useful and tasteful suggestions, and in practical instructions.—Northern Farmer.

It is a very timely and valuable book. o o Better adapted to the wants and circumstances of our people than any other upon the subject.—Ohio Cultivator.

No one can long walk hand in hand with Mr. Kern without being sensible that he is in the hands of one who is worthy of all confidence.—Louisville Courier.

Has so nobly succeeded as to render his volume an invaluable acquisition to all.—Boston Traveller.

It is plain in its details, and will be more valuable to the million than any work on the subject of Landscape Gardening yet published. The mechanical execution of the volume is the very perfection of printing and binding.—Ohio Farmer.

Admirably calculated to meet the wants of the public.—Boston Atlas.

By a careful perusal of this little volume, which will cost but \$1 50, the purchaser will probably find that he has learned what he has been all his life wishing to know, and what will be worth to him more than ten times its cost.—Nashville Whig.

He descends to the minutest details of instruction, so that his book may be taken as a manual for the practical operator.—N. Y. Evangelist.

Grape and Strawberry Culture,

The Culture of the Grape and Wine Making. By ROBERT BUCHANAN. With an Appendix, containing Directions for the Cultivation of the Strawberry. By N. LONGWORTH. Sixth Edition. One volume, 12mo., Muslin. Price, 63 cents.

It contains much opportune and instructive information relative to the cultivation of these two delicious fruits.—Michigan Farmer.

One of the books which pass current through the world on account of the great authority of the author's name.—Hoboken Gazette.

There are no men better qualified for the undertaking.—Louisville Journal.

It deals more with facts, with actual experience and observation, and less with speculation, supposition and belief, than any thing on this topic that has yet appeared in the United States. In other words, a man may take it and plant a vineyard, and raise grapes with success.—Horticulturist.

We can not too strongly recommend this little volume to the attention of all who have a vine or a strawberry bed.—Farm and Shop.

This book embodies the essential principles necessary to be observed in the successful management of these fruits.—Boston Cultivator.

We have on two or three occasions said of this little book, that it is the best we have ever seen on the subjects of which it treats. A man with ordinary judgment can not fail in grape or strawberry culture, if he tries to follow its advice.—Ohio Farmer.

MOORE, WILSTACH, KEYS & Co., Publishers,
25 West Fourth Street, Cincinnati.

..Will prove more generally useful than any other work yet published on
Geology."

The Course of Creation.

By JOHN ANDERSON, D. D., of Newburgh, Scotland. With a Glossary of Scientific Terms. One volume 12mo., Illustrated, muslin. Price, \$1 25.

It is thoroughly scientific, but popular in its style, and exceedingly entertaining.—*Zion's Herald*.

The author's style is clear and engaging, and his graphic descriptions seem to convey the reader at once into the fields of geological research to observe for himself.—*Ohio Observer*.

Another valuable contribution to the cause of truth and sound science. Its value is very much enhanced by the Glossary of Scientific Terms appended to it by the publishers; for scarcely any one of the sciences has a larger number of terms with which ordinary readers are unacquainted than geology.—*Presbyterian of the West*.

We commend the volume to all who would be instructed in the wonderful works of God. Chapters such as that on the "Economic History of Coal," and those on "Organic Life" and "Physical and Moral Progression," have a special value for the student of Divine Providence.—*N. Y. Independent*.

Dr. Anderson is evidently well skilled in geology, and writes with a freedom and vivacity rivaled by no writer on the subject—except Hugh Miller.—*Methodist Quarterly Review*.

This book is intended for general readers—and such readers will be entertained by it—but it is none the less thorough, and enters boldly into geological inquiry.—*Boston Advertiser*.

One of the most interesting and valuable works on Geology that we have ever met with. The author is a thoroughly scientific man; but his scientific accuracy does not prevent the work from being understood by unscientific readers; it is a *very readable book*.—*Louisville Journal*.

Poetry of the Vegetable World.

A popular Exposition of the Science of Botany, and its relations to Man. By M. J. SCHLEIDEN, M. D., Professor of Botany in the University of Jena. Illustrated with Engravings. Second American, from the London Edition of Henfrey. Edited by ALFONSO WOOD, M. A., author of "The Class Book of Botany," etc. One volume, 12mo., muslin. Price, \$1 25.

Schleiden is one of the most distinguished and most accomplished botanists of the present day. The exhaustless beauties of the vegetable world, its spiritual aspect, lies beyond the reach of mere science. Herein lies the charm of this work. While its author has everywhere exhibited the principles of science in the most attractive and perspicuous style, he has also contrived to blend with them the imaginative and the spiritual, and thus to render his work the exponent of the relations of the plant to the human soul. He has shown that the multiform vegetables of the material world are all ministering spirits. In a word, science and poetry are beautifully and harmoniously blended together.—*Merchant's Magazine*.

The originality of its views, the poetic charm of its illustrations, and the large amount of positive instruction which it imparts, will recommend it to every reader of taste and intelligence.—*Harper's Magazine*.

Prof. Schleiden's capital treatise on the teachings of the vegetable world would pass muster with the most rigid utilitarian that ever existed. It is as interesting as the most attractive romance, as beautiful as nature, and as pleasing as the finest poem.—*Boston Atlas*.

It is an interesting, amusing and instructive work.—*Philadelphia Pennsylvanian*.

MOORE, WILSTACH, KEYS & Co., Publishers,
25 West Fourth Street, Cincinnati.

Service Afloat and Ashore

During the Mexican War. By LIEUT. RATHAEL SEMMES, U. S. N., *Late Flag Lieutenant of the Home Squadron, and Aid-de-camp of Major-General Worth, in the Battles of the Valley of Mexico. One volume, 8vo. Price, \$1 75. Illustrated with numerous Lithographs in beautiful style, by Onken, and an official Map*

His original descriptions are drawn with great felicity. He is a lively and spirited narrator. His battle sketches are extremely vivid, and produce a deep impression on the imagination. His pictures of social and domestic life in Mexico are apparently true to nature, and present the attractions of a romance. Criticisms the military operations in a decided partisan spirit, but with evident ability.—N. Y. Tribune.

He is bold, capable, and courageous. He can wield a pen or a sword with admirable force and dexterity. As a writer, Lieut. Semmes is clear and cogent. The first forty pages of the volume are occupied with a description of Mexico, its government and people; and we know of no description of the kind, which brings the condition of things in that unhappy country so distinctly before the mind of the reader. The whole volume, as a work of intellect, is worthy of a high place in the department to which it belongs.—Louisville Journal.

Sailors are said to be persons of strong prejudices. And it is no small praise to the author, to say that we have never read a history evidently so fairly written, with regard to the merits of the numerous claimants of military glory. We shall take our sailor and soldier out of the ranks, and see what he has to tell of a more amusing nature than battle fields. After sailing about the Gulf, and cruising from Vera Cruz to Mexico, and back again with our author, we have arrived at the conclusion that he is as pleasant a companion as one might desire upon a similar journey, and so commend him to the favor of the reading public.—Literary World.

Burr and Blennerhassett.

The Life of Harman Blennerhassett, comprising an authentic narrative of the Burr Expedition, and containing many additional facts not heretofore published. By WILLIAM. H. SAFFORD. *Third Edition. One volume, 12mo., muslin. Price, 75 cents.*

A volume on a subject of great interest. The fate of Blennerhassett, tempted from an earthly Paradise by the wiles of Aaron Burr, and induced to risk his life, fortune and honor on the ill-fated scheme of that brilliant adventurer, has excited sentiments of pity and indignation in all who have heard of it. Mr. Safford has given us at length the interesting narrative.—Daily Times.

A substantial addition to the history of our country.—Presbyterian Witness.

Written by a judicious and able hand. The life of the scientific and distinguished Blennerhassett will be sought and read with deep interest.—Christian Age.

The materials for this volume have been gathered from the best sources.—Presbyterian.

One of the most interesting personal sketches that has lately been given to the press. It delineates in graphic and true colors the rise, progress and disastrous conclusion of the great "Burr Conspiracy."—Ladies' Repository.

A man of cultivated tastes and peaceful disposition, he left his native country because it was rent by political discord, and went in search of a home in the New World—where he might pursue his favorite studies undisturbed. In an island of the Ohio he found the realization of his hopes. But his secluded habits did not content him; and herein lies an invaluable lesson. Let it be scanned and remembered by such as would exchange a life of active usefulness for unprofitable repose. We were made not to vegetate, but to live and act.—Home Journal.

MOORE, WILSTACH, KEYS & Co., *Publishers,*

25 West Fourth Street, Cincinnati.

Scenes and Legends

Of the North of Scotland. By HUGH MILLER, author of "Footprints of the Creator." One volume, 12mo., muslin. Price, \$1

A delightful book by one of the most delightful of living authors.—N. Y. Courier and Enquirer.

In this book, Hugh Miller appears as the simple dramatist, reproducing home stories and legends in their native costume, and in full life. The volume is rich in entertainment for all lovers of the genuine Scotch character.—N. Y. Independent.

Fascinating portraits of quaint original characters, and charming tales of the old faded superstitions of Scotland, make up the "Scenes and Legends." Purity of diction and thoughtful earnestness, with a vein of easy, half-concealed humor pervading it, are the characteristics of the author's style. Added to these, in the present volume, are frequent touches of the most elegantly-wrought fancy; passages of sorrowful tenderness that change the opening smile into a tear, and exalted sentiment that brings reflection to the heart.—Citizen.

This is a book which will be read by those who have read the other works of this distinguished author. His beautiful style, his powers of description, his pathos, his quiet humor and manly good sense, would give interest to any subject. There is no part of the book that is not interesting.—Louisville Journal.

This is one of the most unique and original books that has been written for many years, uniting in a singularly happy manner all the charms of fiction to the more substantial and enduring graces of truth. The author is a capital story teller, preferring what he has to say with no learned circumlocutions. We can not now call to mind any other style that so admirably combines every requisite for this kind of writing, with the exception of that of his more illustrious countryman, Scott, as the one Hugh Miller possesses.—Columbian.

The contents of the book will be as instructive and entertaining, as the exterior is elegant and attractive. Hugh Miller writes like a living man, who has eyes, and ears, and intellect, and a heart of his own, and not like a galvanized skeleton, who inflicts his dull repetitions of what other men have seen and felt in stately stupidity upon their unfortunate readers. His observation is keen, and his powers of description unrivaled. His style is like a mountain-stream, that flows on in beauty and freshness, imparting enlivening influences all around. His reflections, when he indulges in them, are just and impressive.—Christian Herald.

Tales so romantic, yet so natural, and told in a vein of unaffected simplicity and graphic delineation, rivaling Hogg and Scott, of the same land, will command a vast number of admiring readers.—N. Y. Christ. Intel.

The interest of its facts far exceeds romance.—N. Y. Evan.

This book is worthy of a place by the side of the world-renowned volumes which have already proceeded from the same pen.—Phil. Chronicle.

Roving Adventures.

By GEORGE BORROW, author of "The Gipsies in Spain," "The Bible in Spain," etc. With fine Portrait. One volume, octavo, muslin. Price, \$1 50.

He colors like Rembrandt, and draws like Spagnoletti.—Edinburgh Review.

The pictures are so new that those best acquainted with England will find it hard to recognize the land they may have traveled over.—National Intel.

We could hardly sleep at night for thinking of it.—Blackwood.

MOORE, WILSTACH, KEYS & CO., Publishers,
25 West Fourth Street, Cincinnati.

Life of Dr. Chalmers.

Life of THOMAS CHALMERS, D. D., LL. D., edited by the REV. JAMES C. MOFFAT, M. A., Professor of Latin, and Lecturer on History in the College of New Jersey, Princeton With a Portrait. Second Edition. One volume 12mo., muslin. Price, \$1 25.

Professor Moffat has, in this handsome volume, with great tact and taste, managed to condense the history of the interesting, exciting, and useful career of Dr. Chalmers. It is a book for all to read who would trace not only the blazing track of a great genius, but who would see genius, talent and power all combined for the good of man. Dr. Chalmers combined the great and the useful in a large measure, and was at home both with the distinguished ones of the earth, and with the humblest of his fellow men, and was admired and loved by all.—Cincinnati Gazette.

As an orator, a philosopher, a professor, a philanthropist, a successful parish minister, and a learned divine, Dr. Chalmers stood foremost, not only among the great men of Scotland, but of Christendom.—Commercial.

The memoirs of such a man as Dr. Chalmers should be in the hands of every one. His life is a grand moral lesson—a golden example—a gospel of the 19th century. His splendid talents, his intense application, his strenuous zeal, his glowing faith, and his humble spirit, might each have illuminated a distinct individual, and made him famous;—united, they dazzled, enlightened and warmed the world.—Times.

Chalmers moves before us—Chalmers speaks to us—we pass from chapter to chapter, and page to page with the man we venerate, and catch the inspiration of his genius and his goodness. The author's idea of the work he attempted to make is ours of that which he has accomplished. We like the plan of letting such men as Chalmers speak for themselves in their biographies.—Christian Herald.

Prof. Moffat has succeeded, and we can not but believe his labor will be widely appreciated.—Presbyterian.

There is not much writing about the man. He is rather brought upon the stage to speak and act for himself.—Christian Press.

Thousands will heartily thank Professor Moffat for inviting them to so rare an intellectual feast.—Daily Ancient Metropolis.

Moffat's Æsthetics.

An Introduction to the Study of Æsthetics. By JAMES C. MOFFAT, D. D., Professor of Greek in the College of New Jersey, Princeton. One volume 12mo., muslin. Price, \$1.

The title of this book may frighten some worthy people, with whom Æsthetics is something mysterious, and, therefore, fearful. But the volume is a pleasantly written and quite attractive treatise upon the beautiful in art—art of all kinds and of every branch. Prof. Moffat seems to us a sound and clever writer. He does not assume to be original, but is systematic and clear, and very readable. The arguments are illustrated by anecdote and quotations.—Boston Post.

Prof. Moffat has succeeded in making his definitions accurate, and his distinctions clear and tangible. He has brought the aid of strong common sense to his task, and while far from making up a volume of dry detail, has presented the subject in such a light as to make it intelligible to all minds of ordinary strength.—Western Christian Advocate.

The work of Dr. Moffat of Princeton, is simply what it proposes to be. In simplicity of arrangement, and in the transparent beauty of its style, it is, we think, far better adapted for a text book, than many another treatise of more pretensions and fame.—Cin. Gazette.

It is a profoundly elaborate treatise, evinces a highly philosophical mind, and can scarcely fail to secure to its author a recognized place among the lights in the department of which he has treated.—Puritan Recorder.

MOORE, WILSTACH, KEYS & CO., Publishers,
25 West Fourth Street, Cincinnati.

Romanism not Christianity.

A series of Popular Lectures, in which Popery and Protestantism are contrasted; showing the incompatibility of the former with Freedom and Free Institutions. By N. L. RICE, D. D., Pastor of the Central Presbyterian Church, St. Louis. Embellished with a fine Portrait of the author, engraved on steel, by Jewett. Third Edition. One volume, 12mo., muslin. Price, \$1.

EXTRACT FROM THE PREFACE.

"The controversy between Romanism and Christianity seems now destined to be the great controversy of the nineteenth century. In Europe and America, Rome is making renewed and vigorous efforts to regain her lost power; but the United States is her favorite field of missionary enterprise. The extent of our territory, the cheapness of our lands, the fertility of our soil, and our free institutions, hold out strong inducements to immigration from Europe. These, with other causes no less potent, are flooding our country with immense crowds of foreigners, the very large majority of whom are ignorant and degraded; and a still larger number have learned from infancy to yield implicit obedience to the teachings and the commands of the Roman clergy. This rapidly increasing population is placing in their hands a tremendous power, which may well excite apprehensions in the minds of Americans.

"The Roman clergy, too, would seem to have become the friends of popular education, and are zealously engaged in establishing, in every part of our country, and particularly in the great West, permanent institutions for the education of the youth of both sexes. To aid them in this work, large sums of money are annually transmitted by societies in Europe, whose object is, to extend the influence of Popery. And although the clergy disclaim any design to interfere with the religious views of Protestant youths, thus inducing large numbers of Protestants to patronize their schools, they do boast, in their letters to their European patrons, of the number of converts gained there from our ranks.

"The time has come when it is most important that every man who is the friend of true religion, or of free institutions, should understand the character of this growing influence; when Protestants should know what are the differences between us and the church of Rome, and on what grounds they protest against her exclusive claims. They will be zealously, plausibly pressed in every part of our land; and therefore it is our duty to place an antidote, if possible, in the hands of every family and every individual.

The Puritans and Pilgrim Fathers.

A History of the Puritans and Pilgrim Fathers. The Puritans in England. By REV. W. H. STOWELL, Professor of Theology, Rotherham College. The Pilgrim Fathers. By D. WILSON, F. S. A., Scot., author of "Cromwell and the Protectorate," etc., etc. One volume, 12mo., muslin. Price, \$1 25.

It is the record of the hero age in English history, and of the origin of modern social and religious liberty. This portable and cheap volume will undoubtedly enjoy what it richly merits, a wide circulation.—Zion's Herald.

The entire story is written in a spirit of unusual candor and fairness, neither seeking to gloss over their faults, nor to depreciate the staunch and often heroic virtues of the admirable men whose lives it portrays. The author displays a degree of enthusiastic veneration for the worthies whose lives and deeds he sketches, which, while it in no way detracts from his merits as a reliable historian, will not fail to affect pleasantly every American reader of his pages. We commend the volume to the attention of the reading public.—Western Christian Advocate.

There is no history in which the American scholar should feel a deeper and more lively interest than that of the Puritans and Pilgrims, whose principles are at the foundation of our government, and whose virtues are interwoven with our history as a nation.—Newcastle Courier.

MOORE, WILSTACH, KEYS & CO., Publishers,
25 West Fourth Street, Cincinnati.

Three Great Temptations.

The Three Great Temptations of Young Men. With several Lectures addressed to Business and Professional Men. By REV. SAMUEL W. FISHER, D. D. Fourth Edition. One volume 12mo., muslin. Price, \$1.

CONTENTS.

THE SIRENS,	THE SLAYER OF THE STRONG,
THE WINE-CUP,	THE PLAY-HOUSE,
THE CARD-TABLE,	THE WEB OF VICE,
THE CHRISTIAN LAWYER,	THE PATH OF INFIDELITY,
THE MOSAIC LAW OF USURY,	COMMERCIAL MORALITY.

A work of unusual attraction. We know not where we have seen these subjects so impressively, yet so properly and guardedly examined. Far above common-place specimens. They expose dangers of terrible imminence, and urge persuasions of incomparable importance, in a way that offends not the taste, yet reaches the heart and engages the thoughts.—N. Y. Evangelist.

Able and often eloquent. . . . A work which may well be put into the hands of youth just entering upon life.—N. Y. Observer.

We shall put the book by upon one of the choice shelves of our private library.—Boston Congregationalist.

The author's style is not less clear and forcible than ornate and eloquent.—Detroit Herald.

Characterized by earnestness, eloquence and adaptation to the end had in view.—N. Y. Recorder.

Paints in vigorous language the horrible consequences of vice.—Boston Post.

We would that every young man in the land could be persuaded to read it carefully.—Louisville Recorder.

The Christian Profession.

A series of Letters to a Friend, on the Nature, Duties, Necessity, Trials and Supports of the Christian Profession. By JOSEPH CLAYBAUGH, D. D. Second Edition. One volume 16mo., Muslin. Price, 75 cents.

Extract from a letter to the Publishers, from Rev. Dr. Allen, of Lane Theological Seminary:

Messrs. Moore, Wilstach, Keys & Co.:

Dr. Claybaugh's new work on the Christian Profession I have examined with considerable care and much gratification. The practical truths connected with the subject are presented with so much clearness and force that the book can not fail, it seems to me, to be of great value to all Christians, and especially to those who are just entering upon a religious life. The sentiments are so Catholic that all Christians will be able to use the work with like satisfaction and profit.

Yours truly,

D. H. ALLEN.

All that is necessary to instruct the inquiring in respect to the nature, duties, importance and necessity, peculiar trials, supports and consolations of the Christian profession, is here presented in a series of fourteen letters, written in an easy, familiar and graceful style, and with an unction suitable to the subject. It is just such a book as pastors need to put into the hands of youth of their congregations. It should be in every family and every congregational library in our church.—The Preacher and Presbyterian.

The book is most appropriate to the times. . . . We should be glad to see these letters extensively circulated.—Christian Herald.

MOORE, WILSTACH, KEYS & Co., Publishers,
25 West Fourth Street, Cincinnati.

Hart's Mississippi Valley.

A History of the Valley of the Mississippi. By ADOLPHUS M. HART, author of "Notes and Incidents of American Revolutionary History," etc., etc. One volume 12mo., muslin. Price, \$1 00.

Nelson Cross, Esq., at a meeting of the Historical and Philosophical Society of Ohio, reported on the "History of the Discovery of the Valley of the Mississippi." Mr. Cross, at the conclusion of his report, says: "From a careful review of Mr. Hart's work, and a comparison of its leading points with other histories, I am of the opinion that the facts which the author has therein presented, may be relied upon as true; and much credit is due to him for his industry in gathering together so much valuable information concerning the discovery and colonization of the Mississippi Valley.

A succinct compilation from authentic documents of facts in the history of the Mississippi Valley, to the latest dates. The work bears the marks of industry and discrimination.—N. Y. Tribune.

Carries the story along spiritedly, and constitutes a trust-worthy authority.—N. Y. Times.

Easy flowing narrative, and graphic descriptive style, add greatly to the interest of his work; while the useful information it contains, commends it to all who desire to know how the great West has been peopled, and its resources developed, amid the vicissitudes and obstacles which the early pioneers and subsequent settlers encountered.—Nashville Banner.

A Buckeye Abroad.

Or Wanderings in Europe, and in the Orient. By SAMUEL S. COX. Third Edition. Illustrated. One volume, 12mo., muslin. Price, \$1 25.

The narrative is lively and stirring.—Courier.

One of the very best of its class of travel narratives.—Knickerbocker.

The thoughts and observations of a thoroughly American scholar.—N. Y. Times.

We have read this book with a great deal of satisfaction. In his vigorous, ornate style we recognize much of the glowing force of Gibbon.—Providence Journal.

The Kingdom of Brass.

Or the History of the World from the Birth of Alexander the Great to the Birth of Christ, including the History of Judea during that period. By R. B. BEMENT. One volume 12mo., muslin. Price, \$1 00. Just ready.

Merry Old England,

And her History. By MISS JULIA CORNER. One volume, 16mo., muslin. Price, 40 cents.

MOORE, WILSTACH, KEYS & Co., Publishers,
25 West Fourth Street, Cincinnati.

THE GREAT AMERICAN TEMPERANCE TALE,

Mrs. Ben Darby,

Or the Weal and Woe of Social Life. By A. MARIA COLLINS. Third Edition. One volume, 12mo., muslin. Price, \$1.

The object of this Tale is to exhibit in different phases—in high life and in low life—the accursed effects of intemperate drinking; the bane of social life, the curse of civilized man. The characters are well and sharply drawn, and the various scenes are described with much spirit and graphic effect.—Boston Traveler.

It is not often that we read a story of any kind, but we have broken our practice, and have read this book, not only with pleasure, but with a gratification which but very few novels have ever afforded us. It is a quiet and simple, but still striking and effective picture of American social life.—Chicago Tribune.

Has so many thrilling passages and well drawn characters, that you read it with absorbed attention. It can not fail to achieve for Mrs. Collins an enviable popularity.—Christian Herald.

Let this book circulate. It has a beneficent aim, and is the vehicle of admirably told and most salutary lessons.—Presbyterian.

We know of no passage anywhere, more uniquely beautiful, more intensely absorbing, more overpowering in the pathetic, than the thirty-fourth chapter. It is indeed a gem. We doubt whether the celebrated chapter devoted to the death of Eva, in Uncle Tom's Cabin, is superior. It is certainly the most powerful temperance tale that we have ever perused.—Journal and Messenger.

Graphic, truthful, chaste, and deeply affecting, the story winds itself into our feelings, and we become absorbed in the plot, as if we beheld before our own eyes the realities of the author's delineations.—Daily Sun.

Early Engagements,

And Florence, (a Sequel). By SARAH MARSHALL HAYDEN. Second Edition. One volume, 12mo., Muslin. Price, 75 cents.

The title indicates the character of this volume. The scenes are Southern and Western, and the characteristics of each are faithfully portrayed. The plot is well laid and replete with interest. The object of the author is to show some of the evils resulting from early marriage "Engagements." She would teach the lesson that

"Evil is wrought by want of THOUGHT,
As well as want of HEART."

The style of the work is charming, and evinces deep thought and charming purpose. It is eminently calculated to interest all classes of readers.—Buffalo Express.

The subject discussed is one of deep interest; one that never loses its importance, and when so pleasingly presented in the garb of a finished domestic narrative, as is this work, must have many eager students. Written in a style of great freshness and piquancy, we heartily commend it to our friends.—Louisville Courier.

A very interesting and exciting story, which, while it is read with the deepest interest, will at the same time convey instruction that may prove of inestimable value.—Troy Times.

It is essentially a tale of passion—of passion purified by religious principle.—Republican.

A pure story of the heart's affections. The characters are sustained with great dignity and truthfulness to nature.—New York Observer.

MOORE, WILSTACH, KEYS & CO., Publishers,
25 West Fourth Street, Cincinnati.

NCE TALE,

COLLINS. Third
price, \$1.

a high life and in low
of social life, the curse
and the various scenes
traveler.

ve broken our practice,
gratification which but
ole, but still striking and

, that you read it with
an enviable popularity.

vehicle of admirably told

l, more intensely absorb-
th chapter. It is indeed
to the death of Eva, in
tainly the most powerful
essenger.

winds itself into our feel-
before our own eyes the

nts,

DYDEN. Second Edition.
75 cents.

e scenes are Southern and
portrayed. The plot is well
s to show some of the evils
d teach the lesson that

ought and charming purpose
—Buffalo Express.

never loses its importance,
d domestic narrative, as is
Written in a style of
to our friends.—Louisville

it is read with the deepest
at may prove of inestimable

ed by religious principle.—

The characters are sus-
New York Observer.

& CO., Publishers,
th Street, Cincinnati.

Unequaled by any other Edition in this Country, and similar to the cele-
brated Aldine Edition.

The British Poets.

MOORE, WILSTACH, KEYS & CO.,

Now offer to the Trade, at Publishers' Prices, a complete Collection of the
British Poets, from Chaucer to Wordsworth, embracing the whole Works of
the most distinguished Authors, with selections from the Minor Poets. Ac-
companied with Biographical, Historical, and Critical Notices. Edited by
F. J. CHILD, Boylston Prof. of Rhetoric and Oratory in Harvard College.

This series of the British Poets has secured the unqualified commendation of the
press and the public, in all parts of the country, so that the success of the underta-
king is firmly established. It is universally acknowledged to be the best edition ever
issued, both in point of editorship and mechanical execution, placing it out of the
reach of competition.

Each separate work is sold by itself, and may be obtained in the following styles of
binding:

Black Cloth, gilt lettered,	Per vol., 75 cts.
Half Calf, gilt, sprinkled edges.	" \$1 50
Half Morocco, gilt edges.	" 1 75.
Full Calf, gilt, marble edges.	" 1 75.

Sixty-nine volumes are ready for delivery, comprising the following:

AKENSIDE, 1 volume.	MILTON, 3 volumes.
BEATTIE, 1 "	PARNELL, and
BUTLER, 2 "	TICKELL, 1 "
CAMPBELL, 1 "	POPE, 3 "
CHURCHILL, 3 "	PRIOR, 2 "
COLERIDGE, 3 "	SHAKSPEARE, 1 "
COLLINS, 1 "	SHELLEY, 3 "
COWPER, 3 "	SPENSER, 5 "
DONNE, 1 "	SURREY, 1 "
DLYDEN, 5 "	SWIFT, 3 "
FALCONER, 1 "	THOMSON, 2 "
GAY, 2 "	VAUGHAN, 1 "
GOLDSMITH, 1 "	WATTS, 1 "
GRAY, 1 "	WHITE, 1 "
HERBERT, 1 "	WORDSWORTH, 7 "
HERRICK, 2 "	WYATT, 1 "
HOOD, 2 "	YOUNG, 2 "
KEATS, 1 "	

NOW IN PRESS, AND TO BE ISSUED SHORTLY.

Moore, 6 vols.; Byron, 8 vols.; Marvel, 1 vol.; Montgomery, 4 vols.; Skelton, 3
vols.; Scott, 7 vols.; Chatterton, 2 vols.; Chaucer, 6 vols.; Addison, 1 vol.; Southey,
8 vols.

The remainder of the series will be issued as fast as the volumes can be prepared.

Pulte's Domestic Physician.

Homeopathic Domestic Physician, containing the Treatment of Diseases, with popular explanations of Anatomy, Physiology, Hygiene and Hydropathy; also an abridged Materia Medica. By J. H. PULTE, M. D. Sixth Edition. Enlarged with special Hydropathic Directions, and illustrated with Anatomical Plates. Twenty-first Thousand. One volume royal 12mo., half morocco. Price, \$1 50.

For home practice this work is recommended as superior to all others, by Dr. Van-Cerburgh, of New York, Dr. Hull and Dr. Rossman, of Brooklyn, Dr. Grangor, of St. Louis, and others of equal celebrity in different portions of the country.

It is very comprehensive and very explicit.—N. Y. Evangelist.

A very lucid and useful hand-book. Its popular language and exclusion of difficult terminology, are decided recommendations. Its success is good evidence of the value of the work.—N. Y. Times.

This appears to be a very successful publication. It has now reached its sixth edition, which is a revised and enlarged one; and we learn from the title page, that twenty-one thousand copies have been published. Various additions have been made to the Homeopathic directions, and the anatomical part of the work has been illustrated with engravings. The work has received the approbation of several of our most eminent practitioners.—Evening Post.

Pulte's Woman's Guide.

Woman's Medical Guide; containing Essays on the Physical, Moral and Educational development of Females, and the Homeopathic Treatment of their Diseases in all periods of Life, together with directions for the remedial use of Water and Gymnastics. By J. H. PULTE, Professor of Obstetrics and Diseases of Women and Children, Emeritus Professor of Clinical Medicine in the Western College of Homeopathy, author of "Homeopathic Domestic Physician," etc. One volume 12mo., muslin. Price, \$1 00.

From Dr. Joslin, one of the most distinguished Homeopathic physicians in the country:

NEW YORK, May 26, 1856.

Messrs. Moore, Wilstach, Keys & Co.:

GENTLEMEN:—Woman's Guide, by Dr. Pulte, beautifully and correctly depicts her physical and moral development in the different stages and relations of life, and is replete with excellent directions for the management of herself and offspring. The book is highly creditable to its author, as a scholar, a philosopher and a Christian, and is better calculated than any other, on the same subjects and within the same compass, to remove many false notions and pernicious practices which prevail in society. Respectfully yours,
B. F. JOSLIN.

The style is beautiful and simple, the language appropriate, and the subject, intricate and delicate though it is, made clear to the comprehension, carrying conviction to the reader of the truthfulness of the author's remarks, and the necessity of living according to his advice. We have never met with anything of the kind so complete, and so admirably arranged.—Daily Times.

As a contribution to popular hygiene, it may be ranked among the most judicious and instructive works on the subject that have yet been given to the public. The delicate topics of which it treats are discussed with great propriety of sentiment and language, while the copious information with which it abounds is adapted to lead to the formation of correct and salutary habits.—N. Y. Tribune.

It is a careful and judicious work, worthy of explicit attention, and mothers, whether of the Homeopathic faith or not, will find it to their advantage to acquaint themselves with Dr. Pulte's hints.—Columbian.

MOORE, WILSTACH, KEYS & Co., Publishers,
25 West Fourth Street, Cincinnati.

cian.

with popular explanation, abridged Materia Medica, Hydropathic Directory. One volume royal

others, by Dr. Van- n, Dr. Granger, of St. country.

exclusion of difficult evidence of the value

now reached its sixth the title page, that tions have been made work has been illusion of several of our

ide.

and Educational devel- ses in all periods of Life, tics. By J. H. PULTE, ritus Professor of Clin- Homeopathic Domestic

hic physicians in the York, May 26, 1856.

d correctly depicts her nations of life, and is f and offspring. The r and a Christian, and within the same com- ich prevail in society. B. F. JOSLIN.

and the subject, intri- on, carrying conviction the necessity of living the kind so complete,

ng the most judicious n to the public. The ricty of sentiment and s is adapted to lead to

ention, and mothers, advantage to acquaint

o., Publishers, reet, Cincinnati.

Teste on Diseases of Children.

A Homeopathic Treatise on the Diseases of Children. By ALPH. TESTE, Doctor in Medicine, Member of several learned Societies, etc. Translated from the French, by EMMA H. COTE. One volume, 12mo., muslin. Price, \$1 25.

It is the only treatise on the Homeopathic plan expressly devoted to the diseases of children. With great completeness of detail, it describes the principal diseases to which that age is subject, together with their appropriate remedies. As a manual of domestic practice, it must be welcome to the receivers of Hahnemann's system.—N. Y. Tribune.

This is an excellent work. . . . It is distinguished by clearness of statement, practicalness of direction, and by originality of observation. What renders it particularly valuable to families is the simplicity of its directions, obviating the doubt and uncertainty which attend the attempt to administer medicines according to most Homeopathic works.—Cleveland Leader.

Croserio's Obstetrics.

A Homeopathic Manual of Obstetrics; or a Treatise on the Art of Midwifery may derive from Homeopathy. By DR. C. CROSERIO, M. D. M. D. M. D. Membre De La Société Hahnemannienne De Paris, etc., etc. Translated from the French, by M. COTE, M. D. Second Edition. One volume, 12mo., muslin. Price, 75 cents.

It is only necessary to have it known that Dr. Croserio is the author of the above work, to induce each practitioner of our school to seek a copy of it without delay. It is one of those few practical works which will aid practitioners at the bedside of the sick. . . . The volume may seem insignificant, because it contains only 153 pages; but our readers can hardly conceive of the amount of information which the author has contrived, in the clearest manner, to express in a few words. . . . The practice is purely Homeopathic.—Am. Jour. of Hom.

Shows what Homeopathy has done, and can do. . . . We take pleasure in recommending it to Homeopaths.—North West. Journal of Hom.

Having read the original, we can pronounce this a good translation. . . . We think it a very excellent work; such a book as has long been needed in Homeopathic practice, one manifesting in itself a great deal of close and patient study and research.—Philadelphia Journal of Hom.

Rapou on Fever.

Typhoid Fever and its Homeopathic Treatment. By AUG. RAPOU, Docteur en Médecine De Faculté De Paris. Translated by M. COTE, M. D. One volume, 12mo., muslin. Price, 50 cents.

The original work, of which this volume is a translation, is understood by the students of Homeopathy to be one of the most valuable treatises on the subject that exists in medical literature. It contains many original and striking views on the characteristics of fever in general, while its practical directions in regard to the specific disease of which it treats, can not fail to suggest important hints to the intelligent practitioner of every school. An interesting feature of this volume is a spirited discussion of the use of blood-letting, and of water in the cure of typhoid fever. The translation, which is from the pen of an eminent Homeopathic physician in Pittsburg, presents the views of the writer in neat and compact English. In the prevailing uncertainty of the profession with regard to the fatal scourge, to which this work is devoted, its lucid reasonings, must prove acceptable to a wide circle of medical readers.—New York Tribune.

MOORE, WILSTACH, KEYS & Co., Publishers,
25 West Fourth Street, Cincinnati.

Renouard's History of Medicine.

A History of Medicine, from its Origin to the Nineteenth Century, with an Appendix, containing a series of Philosophic and Historic Letters on Medicine of the present Century, by Dr. Renouard, Paris. Translated from the French, by C. G. Comegys, Prof. Inst. Med. in Miami Medical College. One volume octavo, muslin, \$2 50. Sheep, Price, \$3 50.

SYNOPTIC TABLE OF CONTENTS:

I. AGE OF FOUNDATION.

1. PRIMITIVE PERIOD: From the Origin of Society to the Destruction of Troy, 1184, B. C.
2. SACRED or MYSTIC PERIOD: Ending with the Dispersion of the Pythagoreans, 600, B. C.
3. PHILOSOPHIC PERIOD: Ending at the Foundation of the Alexandrian Library, 320, B. C.
4. ANATOMICAL PERIOD: Ending at the Death of Galen, A. D., 200.

II. AGE OF TRANSITION.

5. GREEK PERIOD: Ending at the Burning of the Alexandrian Library, A. D., 640.
6. ARABIC PERIOD: Ending at the Revival of Letters in Europe, A. D., 1400.

III. AGE OF RENOVATION.

7. ERUDITE PERIOD: Comprising the Fifteenth and Sixteenth Centuries.
8. REFORM PERIOD: Comprising the Seventeenth and Eighteenth Centuries

From Professor Jackson, of the University of Pennsylvania.

PHILADELPHIA, May 1.
My Dear Sir—The work you have translated, "Histoire de la Médecine," by Dr. P. V. Renouard, is a compendious, well-arranged treatise on the subject.

Every physician and student of medicine should be acquainted with the history of his science. It is not only interesting, but of advantage to know the views and the interpretations of the same pathological condition investigated at the present day, in past ages. They were handled then with as much force and skill as now, but without the scientific light that assists so powerfully modern research. Notwithstanding great and truthful ideas, our valued facts and observations drawn from a study of nature, are to be found in every era of our science, and in all the systems and doctrines that have prevailed. They are available at this time, and should not be neglected. Truth, like the diamond, does not lose its brightness or its value from being imbedded in a worthless matrix; it requires merely new setting to display its beauty and its worth.

Very truly yours,

SAMUEL JACKSON.

The best history of medicine extant, and one that will find a place in the library of every physician who aims at an acquaintance with the past history of his profession. There are many items in it we should like to offer for the instruction and amusement of our readers.—*American Journal of Pharmacy.*

From the pages of Dr. Renouard, a very accurate acquaintance may be obtained with the history of medicine—its relation to civilization, its progress compared with other sciences and arts, its more distinguished cultivators, with the several theories and systems proposed by them; and its relationship to the reigning philosophical dogmas of the several periods. His historical narrative is clear and concise—tracing the progress of medicine through its three ages or epochs—that of foundation or origin, that of tradition, and that of renovation.—*Am. Journal of Medical Science.*

Is a work of profound and curious research, and will fill a place in our English literature which has heretofore been vacant. It presents a compact view of the progress of medicine in different ages; a lucid exposition of the theories of rival sects; a clear delineation of the changes of different systems; together with the bearings of the whole on the progress of civilization. The work also abounds in amusing and instructive incidents relating to the medical profession. The biographical pictures of the great cultivators of the science, such as Hippocrates, Galen, Avicenna, Haller, Harvey, Jenner, and others, are skillfully drawn. Dr. Comegys deserves the thanks of not only the members of the medical profession, but also of every American scholar, for the fidelity and success with which his task has been performed.—Harper's Magazine.

MOORE, WILSTACH, KEYS & CO., Publishers,
25 West Fourth Street, Cincinnati.

medicine.

Century, with an
ic Letters on Medi-
. Translated from
Miami Medical Col-
e, \$3 50.

ENTS:

e Destruction of Troy,
rsion of the Pythago
Alexandrian Library,
A. D., 200.

ian Library, A. D., 640.
urope. A. D., 1400.

th Centuries.
ateenth Centuries

sylvania.

PHILADELPHIA, May 1.
a Medicine," by Dr. P.
subject.

ed with the history of
ow the views and the
at the present day, in
ill as now, but without
Notwithstanding great
om a study of nature,
ms and doctrines that
t be neglected. Truth,
being imbedded in a
s beauty and its worth.
SAMUEL JACKSON.

a place in the library
t history of his profes-
ould like to offer for the
d of Pharmacy.

ce may be obtained with
s compared with other
e several theories and
g philosophical dogmas
d concise—tracing the
f foundation or origin,
edical Science.

*in our English literature
e progress of medicine in
a clear delineation of the
on the progress of civili-
cidents relating to the
tivators of the science,
r, and others, are skill-
bers of the medical pro-
ess with which his task has*

O., Publishers,
street, Cincinnati.

